



WAY OF CHOICES

BOOK 01

Mao Ni

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Way of Choices

(Ze Tian ji)

(择天记)

by

Mao Ni

(猫腻)

Synopsis

To pick is to choose. This is a story about choices. Three thousand worlds full of gods and demons, with a daoist scroll in your hand, you are able to control the entire universe...

At the beginning of time, a mystical meteor came crashing down from outer space and scattered all over the world. A piece of it landed in the Eastern Continent. There were mysterious totems carved upon the meteor. Through viewing these totems, mankind comprehended the Dao and established the Orthodoxy.

Several thousand years later, the fourteen years old orphan Chen Changsheng left his master to cure his illness and change his fate. He brought a part of a marriage vow with him to the capital, thus beginning the journey of a rising hero...

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation Hypersheep325; Pipipingu, Translator Emeritus @ [Binggo&Corp Translations](#)

Translations Edits by bbkgs @ [Binggo&Corp Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Prologue

The world is relative.

The Central Continent and the Great Western Island are separated from each other by the ocean, but they are distantly opposite of each other. The east has a high altitude, so it seems the sky is also higher. There the clouds rise up from the sea to dry land, without stopping they float endlessly. In the end they gather together, in the entire year they will not scatter.

This is the tomb of clouds—the grave of all clouds in the world.

In the innermost depths of the tomb of clouds sits a lonely mountain. The summit leads to the endless sky; no one knows where it goes.

Tales say the world is made up of five continents. Each continent has its own different landscapes. Only those who possess the lifespans of immortals can see all the different landscapes. To normal people, the tales are tales. They do not know where the other continents are, do not know how to reach them, do not know that the lonely mountain within tomb of clouds leads to the path to the other continents.

Naturally, there is also nobody that has seen the scenery high above the clouds. Here, the serene clouds are like white silk spreading out in all directions, seemingly without end. Above the endless sky mirror is black endless abyss, inside are countless number of stars.

Suddenly, two stars light up, getting brighter and brighter, they quickly reach the sky mirror. When those two stars arrive before the mirror, it becomes clear that they are not stars but two balls of holy fire.

On this mirror surface that separates the real world from the abyss appeared a spider web of cracks, but in a moment it was restored.

Those two balls of flame, through some magical means, appeared on the other side of the mirror surface in the real world. In the thin atmosphere, the two flames burned incessantly, warping the air and causing it constantly change shape—those are not balls of flame, but eyes.

The entire world, because of this grand descent, is in an uproar. Light is constantly being reflected; on the surface of the clouds appeared a long shadow like a mountain. The space began to warp, as if it was about to break.

A great golden dragon emerged from within the clouds.

The distant sun was completely obscured by its enormous body. The entire world above the clouds consequently grew dim, all around the air rapidly grew colder, and ice began to crystallize in the clouds. The countless rays of light became strange flickers on the crystal surface. Heaven and Earth changed colors; truly this dragon was an awe-inspiring existence.

The great golden dragon looked down upon the world, its eyes indifferent.

The view above the clouds, it had already seen many times.

The dragon flew towards the lonely mountain on the horizon. As it approached, its terrifying dragon body submerged itself into the cloudy abyss, completely vanishing from sight. The endless quantities of fog were cut open by that terrifying dragon's body. The crags and cliffs of the lonely mountain are extremely precipitous; no plants grew there, not even moss. The deathly stillness made it seem like a tomb.

Just like this the dragon flew through the foggy abyss. Many days and nights passed. Who knows how far it had flown, but it had never left the fog. It met no other beings, but one could faintly see that on the mountain crags appeared moss. The fog had also grown thicker, or perhaps the pressure it gave off was the cause. The fog began to change shape into many crystals. These water droplets also made the air moister.

The dragon bore these transformations with no interest, continuing to fly downward.

The plant life within the lonely mountain gradually grew more and more abundant; the air moister, the water drops pooled in the cliffs gradually became countless thin, leaf-sized streams. These countless thin streams of water flowed down the cliffs into the fog.

As the golden dragon gazed upon these countless streams of

water, the look within its eyes became more concentrated, the two divine flames grew more serene—this place was the tomb of clouds, but it was also the source of all water.

Of these countless streams falling from the lonely mountain, the dragon chose one.

The golden dragon flew silently along this single water way, flying countless days and night, almost as if it would repeat again, until suddenly...the fog in front of him scattered.

Before the fog, was the earth.

The bottom of the clouds was flat and smooth, calmly rising and falling in accordance with the ground. Perfectly protecting the space between the clouds and the earth was five feet of distance. Coincidentally this was the height of the average man, as if the Creator himself had fashioned this space. This space that was five feet tall, the surface seemed to go on endlessly, with faint rays of light, but no sun to be seen. On the surface flowed countless streams of water.

The fog dissipated on the dragon's body, revealing a small stream.

This small stream originated from the moist dew of the lonely mountain. Clear, tranquil, and cold, in the stream there was a wooden basin, in the basin were several layers of cloth, on the cloth was an infant—the infant's complexion was blue, eyes closed, it was clear that it had just been born not too long ago.

The mist over the stream was like the blossoms of a flower, opening countless thousands of petals, clustering, rushing, scattering, making a chi chi noise; then a golden dragon even larger than a palace slowly emerged from the mist and made its way to the riverside.

The 5 foot space between the mists and the river was quite narrow to the dragon—the golden dragon’s physique was hidden within the mists, part of its head was also hidden within the mists. It made the dragon seem all the more majestic, mysterious, terrifying.

The golden dragon quietly waited by the riverside.

The wooden basin floated on the water, bobbing up and down.

In this insignificant wooden basin was this abandoned, eyes closed, blue-faced, newly born infant.

.....

.....

The fog gradually scattered, everything returned its serene and tranquil state.

However, this peace was only temporary...in the deepest depths

of the mist, all the way till the lonely mountain; all at once there were countless mournful sounds, panic-stricken whistling and howling!

In this seemingly lifeless world, there was in reality many birds and beasts. Everywhere within the fog was the sound of many flapping wings. There was also the sound as if a unicorn was heedlessly destroying countless tens of thousands of trees in its rush to escape; there was even the extremely brilliant cry of a phoenix!

A string of divine and intangible fire emerged from the river side and spread to the horizon. The moist grass suddenly became incomparably dry, even the plants within the water suddenly curled up!

The golden dragon remained expressionless, noble, and apathetic; lord of all under Heaven.

All the beasts in the world under the clouds all fled, the dragon paid no attention to it. Even if the phoenix fled, the dragon paid no attention to it. The dragon only stared at the small stream, stared at the wooden basin floating on the stream. From the lonely mountain fell tens of thousands of little streams, but the dragon looked at only this particular stream. After 30000 years, the dragon only descended to this world for this infant in the wooden basin, who could shift its gaze?

A very thin piece of silk slowly fell. This piece of silk was golden on the outside; on the inside it was a divine pure white, it seemed as if it was giving off its own light. The front of the piece of silk

was very thin, but gradually grew thicker towards the end until it grew as thick as an arm. The surface of the silk was perfectly smooth. It seemed to penetrate the depths of the cloudy abyss, making it even more beautiful.

This piece of silk seemed to be made of gold or jade, giving off a very heavy feeling. But in fact it was very light, swaying with the breeze from the brook, as if it were dancing, wanting to touch that wooden basin, only to again draw back.

It was the golden dragon's whisker.

Now, the divine fire within the golden dragon's eyes was no longer in that eternally calm state, the eyes had gone from apathetic to pondering, as if hesitating over something. The two dragon whiskers, like two soft fingers, lightly touched the edge of the wooden basin floating on the river, as if gently stroking it, but in reality not touching it at all.

This golden dragon had already lived countless years, possessed unimaginable knowledge, yet this simple wooden basin presented to it an unsolvable problem—the mood within the dragon's eyes became more and more complex: there was longing, vigilance, hesitation, and finally, struggle, perhaps unintentional, perhaps intentional. A slight change in the breeze, the edge of the wooden basin that should have touched the dragon's whiskers swept past, until finally the whiskers were able to touch the wooden basin for the first time, even brushing the infant's ear!

This light touch brought about a violent reaction—the two divine fires within the golden dragon's eyes suddenly exploded, becoming

a myriad of stars. Within that ocean of stars came an undisguised callous and greedy desire!

This desire, it was praiseworthy, it was moving.

It praised life, it was moved by life.

It was life's most primal longing.

The golden dragon gazing at the wooden basin, opened its mouth, dragon's breath like broken jade poured out.

The infant's eyes were still closed; it simply did not know what would happen in the next moment.

A shadow enveloped the stream.

Dragon's breath surrounded the wooden basin on all sides.

In the next moment, the wooden basin and the infant within would become the golden dragon's food.

At this moment.

A hand was put on the edge of the wooden basin, pulling it out of the river!

This was a hand covered with scars; thin, weak, and small.

Hua hua, the water's surface was broken. That pair of hands pulled the wooden basin and ran to the creek edge.

The owner of that hand was a three or four year old Daoist boy.

The boy pulled the basin to the stream edge and hid it between a stone and his own body, then drew a sword from his belt and turned to look at the terrifying, enormous golden dragon's head.

This was a very strange boy.

He was blind in one eye, missing one ear, when he was running on the water one could tell that his legs were somewhat crippled. From his empty sleeve, one could see that he also only had one hand.

No wonder he had to first put the basin behind his back before he was able to pull out the sword.

Seeing that enormous dragon head above the water, the small boy's complexion was pale. His teeth were chattering, not because of the ice cold water from the stream, but because of the fear in his heart.

This was his first time seeing a real dragon. He didn't even know what a dragon was; only that it was terrifying. Yet he did not flee, but held that flimsy looking sword and tightly and securely hid

that basin behind him.

The golden dragon gazed indifferently at the boy, only a being as strong and powerful as it could tell that deep within the abyss of its eyes were anger and cruelty.

The boy did not say anything, face pale, fear extreme, but he did not let go of the basin.

The golden dragon grew angrier, dragon's breath encompassed both sides of the stream, and death was coming.

The sword was left in the water, the boy took the basin and held it to his chest.

The golden dragon's scales rubbed against the mist, bring about countless divine fires, causing the water within the stream to boil.

At this moment, a middle-aged Daoist appeared on the by the stream.

The middle-aged Daoist looked upon the golden dragon with a calm expression.

The heavenly fire over the stream was suddenly extinguished.

The golden dragon looked upon the middle-aged Daoist and spoke a dragon word!

This dragon word was extremely long, almost as if it continued on forever without stopping, it surely contained an extremely complex meaning, hearing it was like listening to a most complicated piece of music, but also like the sound of nature's most horrifying storm, it was a mixture of unimaginable power!

The middle-aged Daoist looked at the golden dragon and spoke one word.

It was a single syllable word, its pronunciation extremely strange and difficult to understand, it did not seem like a human language at all, a fragment seemed to contain endless meaning, overflowing with ancient meaning.

The golden dragon understood, but it did not agree.

Then the fog over the stream fiercely rose up.

Dragon's breath was sprayed everywhere, the moist grass and trees suddenly turned into a frightening scene of fire.

That small Daoist boy with his back to the river simply had no idea what was going on, his head was bowed down in fear, his eyes shut, holding the wooden basin tightly to his chest.

.....

.....

Who knows how much time passed, the stream side at last grew quiet.

The small Daoist boy gathered up his courage and looked behind him, but only saw the clear water of the creek. The fire on both sides of the creek had already been extinguished, only the burned trees and roasted stones attested to the terrifying battle that had occurred.

From the cloudy abyss came a dragon cry. This cry was full of anguish, unwillingness, and regret. The dragon was telling the world's five continents about how his own hesitation had brought about such profound regret.

The Daoist boy was frightened badly. With his one hand holding the wooden basin, the boy limped onto shore and walked to the middle-aged Daoist's side, timidly looking up towards the cloudy abyss.

The middle-aged Daoist reached out his hand to put out a fire on the boy's shoulder.

The Daoist boy thought of something, and with difficulty raised up the wooden basin.

The middle-aged Daoist reached over to the wooden basin and gently took up the infant; his right hand took the cloth and

wrapped it over the infant's body. His brows creased.

“Your fate...is definitely not good”, he said with pity as he looked upon the cloth-wrapped infant.

.....

.....

In the Eastern continent's East, there is a small town called Xining, outside of this town there is a small stream, by this small stream is a mountain, on this mountain there is a temple, in this temple there are no monks, only a middle-aged Daoist and his two disciples cultivating the Way.

The hill is a nameless hill, the temple is abandoned. Of the two disciples, the elder is called Yu Ren, the younger is called Chen Chang Sheng.

Xining was within the Zhou country. 800 years ago, the Great Zhou Dynasty made the Way the state religion. Down to the present Zhengtong era, the state religion united the country as one. It was indeed worthy of respect. If speaking reasonably, a master and his two disciples ought to have lived a life of silk clothes and jade rice. But Xining was too remote; the abandoned temple was even more remote, other people were rarely seen, so they could only live a very plain life.

Daoists naturally practice the Way. Presently there are countless

ways to cultivate, but that middle-aged Daoist's method of teaching the Way compared to other sects was completely different. It did not specify any specific cultivation method, it did not care about absorbing light from one's fated star, nor did it care about refining the mind; it only emphasized one word: Memorize.

From his childhood, Yu Ren was memorizing the texts of the Way. Chen Chang Sheng, from the moment that he could open his eyes, was placed before the yellowed and old books. The first thing he could recognize was a room full of texts on the Way. After he learned how to talk, he learned how to recognize letters, and then he learned how to memorize the characters in the classical texts on the Way.

Reciting and studying until able to memorize backwards, this was the life of those two disciples.

When they awake at dawn, they are memorizing books. Under the scorching sun, they are memorizing books. In the evening, they are memorizing books. When the spring comes and flowers blossom, when the summer storms thunder, when the autumn wind blows, when the winter snow chills; they are in the row of crops, by the riverside, under the tree, by the plum flower; holding the classics of the Way in their hands, studying, memorizing, not knowing the time gradually passing by.

The abandoned temple has a room completely filled with classics of the Way. When Yu Ren was seven years old, he was bored and counted them. There were 3000 of these books. In these 3000 books, one book might have several hundred words, or perhaps several thousand. The shortest classic, the Classic on Gods, was

only 314 words. The longest was the Longevity classic which had more than 200000 words. These books were the entirety of what they had to memorize.

The elder and younger disciple ceaselessly memorized, only seeking to remember, not seeking to understand. They knew early on that their master would never answer the questions they asked, only say: “Just memorize, and understanding will naturally come.”

To those children who studied the Way but lived leisurely lives, this sort of life is hard to imagine. Fortunately this green mountain is very out the way and was rarely visited by people, so there were no external things to distract and the mind could concentrate. These two disciples’ temperaments were exceptionally good. Unexpectedly they did not find this lifestyle to be dull, just going from day to day memorizing, not realizing that several years have passed.

One day, the sound of studying that had gone on for several years suddenly ceased. Two children sat upon a stone, shoulder to shoulder, a book propped open on their knees. They both took a glance at the book, then at each other, both at a loss at what to do.

They had already memorized to the last book, but they had no means to continue because they could not understand. The words on this classic were unfamiliar—to be precise the words were very odd, the radicals and strokes were all recognizable but the character as a whole was a queer thing, how to study? What does it mean?

The two children returned to the temple and found the middle-

aged Daoist.

The middle-aged Daoist said: “In all the 3000 classics of the Way, you have read up to the very last book, this book has 1601 words. In all the time that the Way was passed down, no one has been able to completely understand the meaning within this book, how could you two?”

Chen Chang Sheng asked: “Teacher, even you could not understand?”

The middle-aged Daoist shook his head and said: “There is no person that would say what they truly understand and do not understand, I also cannot say.”

The two disciples looked at each other and felt some regret. Though they were only children, they had memorized all the 3000 classics of the way but one; of course they would not be happy. Of course, they were not ordinary children, from the time when they were in ignorance they had accompanied each other in studying the classics of the Way, their personalities were also rather relaxed, so these two people were prepared to turn around and leave.

At this moment, the middle-aged Daoist continued speaking: “... but I can read it.”

From that day, the middle-aged Daoist began to lecture on the method to read the last classic of the Way, one by one imparting the pronunciation of the characters. These pronunciations were

particularly monstrous and strange. The syllable was simply, but it required the use of some certain throat muscles and also had some specific requirements. In short, it was not the sort of sound that a normal human being could produce.

Chen Chang Sheng did not understand at all, he was like a little duckling, obediently copying his master's pronunciation. Yu Ren occasionally thought back to many years ago by that creek side, when the master faced that monstrous beast and spoke those words.

Yu Ren and Chen Chang Sheng spent a long time grasping the pronunciation of those 1601 words, but still did not grasp the meaning. When asking the middle-aged Daoist they still could not obtain the meaning. In fact, they had already spent an entire year on this last book. Afterwards, they began their usual method, holding the last book in their hands and reciting, until at last they had it memorized.

When they thought they had at last brought an end to their life of memorizing the classics of the Way, the middle-aged Daoist required them to study the classics a second time. With little choice, the children were compelled to repeat their studies. Perhaps because this was the second time studying the classics of the way, they felt it was even more exhausting, they even felt like speaking bitter words.

It was also at this time that they began to question, why did their master want them to study these classics? Why not teach us to cultivate? Obviously in the classics of the Way was written how Daoists should practice the Way, it should be correct to pursue

longevity.

When Yu Ren was ten and Chen Chang Sheng was six and a half, in the autumn, a white crane came. It brought with it a silk document. On this document were a birth date, a marriage document, and a letter—some high official that the middle-aged Daoist had once saved wished to fulfill a promise he had made.

The middle-aged Daoist saw the marriage document and laughed so hard he could not speak, and then looked over at his two disciples. Yu Ren waved his hand and pointed at his blind eye, smiling as he rejected the idea. Chen Chang Sheng had a frustrated expression. He did not understand the meaning, in confusion he had somehow ended up taking the marriage document, and now it turned out he had a fiancée.

Later on, every New Year, that white crane would return, bringing from the capital that noble man's greetings, along with some meaningful small gifts for Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng slowly came to understand what marriage meant. Often at night, by the starlight he would look at that marriage document sitting in the drawer. He had some feelings he could not speak. Towards his similarly aged fiancée, he had some happy, some embarrassed, mostly frustrated feelings.

In this peaceful life of studying, when Chen Chang Sheng was ten years old, there came on unfortunate accident. On a night, he was on his 72nd time in his memorization of the 1601 words of the last classic, when he suddenly felt a strange feeling in his body, he began to drift away in this forest on the green hill. His body began

to emit some sort of beautiful scent.

It was not the smell of a flower, nor was it the smell of a fruit, nor was it some sort of perfume. To speak of taste, while it was blown on the night wind for a while it did not scatter. To speak of its smell, it floated on the end of the nose, faintly discernable, but not a smell anything in the mortal world could produce. Incapable of grasping, but extremely alluring.

The first to notice Chen Chang Shen's situation was Yu Ren. When he smelled the rare scent, his expression grew severe.

In the tree covered and remote parts of the green mountain, there were lion roars and tiger cries, there were cranes dancing and dragons rushing, there were the thunder-like cries of frogs that originally only emerged in the summer. In the east of the green mountain, where no people dared to enter, from the misty abyss emerged an enormous shadow, who knew what sort of creature it was. Under the greedy and reverential gaze of countless creatures, Chen Chang Sheng emitted his rare scent, his eyes closed asleep, not knowing when he would wake.

Yu Ren on the couch suddenly began to fan himself. He wanted to fan the smell on Chen Chang Sheng away, since this smell was making him salivated and giving him strange and terrifying ideas. He fanned himself to fan away these thoughts.

The middle-aged Daoist did not know when he came to the side room, stood beside the couch, and saw the sleeping Chen Chang Sheng. He spoke one sentence that only he could understand: "The reason is once again appearing?"

A night passed.

The dawn light covered the green mountain, the scent coming from Chen Chang Sheng suddenly disappeared. One could no longer pick up the slightest scent. Chen Chang Sheng returned to his normal self, and the myriad monsters of the green hills and the monstrous shadow also took their leave.

Yu Ren looked at his sleeping junior brother and stopped panicking, letting out a long breath. He wanted to wipe off the cold sweat on his forehead when he realized that his arm, from an entire night of fanning himself, was incapable of movement.

Chen Chang Sheng opened his eyes and woke up. Though he was fast asleep all night, he knew that there was some problem. He saw the painful expression on his elder brother's face and his pale complexion and asked: "Master, what's wrong with me?"

The middle-aged Daoist looked at him, and was silent for a long time before saying: "You are ill."

According to the middle-aged Daoist, Chen Chang Shen's sickness was due to a congenital deficiency. The body's nine channels were not connected. Last night's scent was because the spiritual energy had nowhere to circulate, it could only emit outwards. This scent carried with it a human's essence, which carried a unique scent. This was a kind of strange disease.

"Then...does master know a way to treat it?"

“No, no person can treat it.”

“An incurable disease...this is just fate, right?”

“Yes. It is just fate.”

.....

.....

After his tenth birthday, the white crane no longer came to the green hills. The capital's side cut off information, as if the matter of the marriage document had never been raised before. Chen Chang Shen stood by the creek side, looking to the west, began to recall this situation.

Of course, he was thinking about a lot of things. His illness, his fate...his health was not poor, besides that he easily fell asleep, he looked to be very healthy. He did not seem like a person that would die young. He even began to doubt his master's prognosis. But if his master's prognosis was correct, what then? Chen Chang Shen resolved to leave the abandoned temple to see the flourishing secular world. Besides himself wanting to go see, he also wanted to see the legendary Mausoleum of Books, and he also wanted to return the marriage document.

“Master, I'm going to leave.”

“Where are you going?”

“To the capital.”

“Why?”

“Because I want to live.”

“I said before, your illness is fate.”

“I want to change my fate.”

“In the past 800 years, only three people have succeeded in changing their fate.”

“Those were all extraordinary people?”

“Yes.”

“I am not, but I would like to try.”

The capital, Chen Chang Shen wanted to go, regardless of if he could treat his illness or not, he always wanted to go. Not only because he wanted to change his fate, but because the marriage document's other party was also in the capital.

He packed his luggage, took Yu Ren's small sword, and turned to

leave.

This 14 year old Daoist priest descended the mountain.

Chapter 1 - I've Changed My Mind

“What kind of youngster is he?”

“Very firm. He sat for an hour without changing his posture. He took only one drink at the very beginning, likely for the sake of courtesy and hasn't done so since. On his first drink, he merely touched the cup with his lip. It seems like he isn't acting with restraint but rather, he is acting with caution. He shows deep thoughts, an alert mind and possibly even a degree of animosity.”

“He seems to be a smart person, at the very least, not stupid... how old is he?”

“Fourteen.”

“I also remember that he should be around that age.”

“Yet his maturity makes him seem older than he really is.”

“Just a normal person?”

“Yes...his presence of Qi is ordinary. He hasn't even experienced Purification. Though we can't tell his potential, he is already fourteen, so even if he starts cultivating from the start again, it is unlikely that he will have a bright future ahead of him.”

“Even if he has a bright future, how can he compare to the

disciple of the Longevity Sect's headmaster?"

"Madam, is that marriage contract real?"

"The authenticating object is real so the marriage contract is real."

"How could the Elderly Master had.....arranged such a marriage for the young Lady?"

"If the Elderly Master had not died, maybe you would be able to obtain the answer open the door, I am going to see him."

Along with a sound, the door slowly opened. The sun shone into the room and lit up all the corners, alongside the Madam's pretty face and the half piece of jade pendant in her hand. The nanny who spoke to her before, stood in the corner and was entirely hidden by the shade. It took some effort to see her.

With the nanny's support, the Madam walked towards the outside of the room. She walked slowly like a thin willow whisked by the wind. The expensive gold hair clip in her hair and the pendant on her clothes did not make any sound which appeared to be somewhat strange.

The yard was very dark. On the grassland, there was a tree so huge that even ten people couldn't encircle it. At the two sides of the road, there were no maids or servants. Far away though, faintly, you could see people kneeling down. The atmosphere

around the place was very heavy, like the cold weapons exhibited in the parlor.

The Master of this estate is the great Zhou Dynasty's well accomplished Divine General of the Eastern Decree, Xu Shi Ji. The Divine General managed the estate like he did his troops. The estate had always been quiet and serious and because of the event that occurred today, all of the maids and servants were driven out to a side yard. The atmosphere on the estate was depressing. Even the spring wind blowing from the outside seemed to be frozen.

Madam Xu passed through the courtyard and arrived at the side yard. With her eyebrows slightly stirred up, she stopped to look at the youngster in the room,

That youngster wore a really old Taoist robe that had lost its color due to overwashing. He had a soft and immature face, upright eyebrows, and bright eyes, showing an inexpressible temperament that seemed as if he could see the truth of many things.

The youngster put his luggage aside. The luggage looked really ordinary but at the same time it was well organized. Not even a speck of dirt could be found; even the hat tied on the luggage was very clean.

What made Madam Xu cautious and annoyed by this, was the fact that the tea on the table was now cold, yet the youngster still kept a calm expression. She couldn't see any irritation on his face, which suggested this youngster possessed patience that people at his age didn't normally have.

This would be a really hard person to deal with.

Fortunately, most people like him were usually very arrogant.

.....

After he entered the Divine General's Estate and conversed with the nanny for a few minutes, no one bothered him. After sitting in the room for an hour, he was inevitably bored. But Chen Chang Sheng was used to boredom when he was a child, therefore he was able to stand the boredom.

Silently he spent his time memorizing the sixth chapter of Hua Ting Scripture word by word. He was waiting for someone with authority to arrive so he can hand back the marriage vow to the Divine General's family. After completing this task, he had a lot of personal matters to attend to.

He took a sip of the tea to moisten his dried lips. He wasn't careful or suspicious like how the nanny thought he was. He just thought it would be impolite to use the bathroom as a guest in someone else's house after drinking too much water. In addition, although the cups at the Divine General's Estate were all [luxurious china](#), he wasn't used to drinking from someone else's cup.

(TL Note: luxurious china means that the plates and cups were made out of glass and are high priced/quality)

(bbkgs note: it's actually Ru ware ceramics)

He has a bit of OCD regarding using other people's things.

He stood up and bowed toward the well dressed lady. He guessed that she was probably Madam Xu of the Divine General's Estate. He thought he could finally finish this business and move on. Chen Chang Sheng reached into his pocket and prepared to take out the marriage vow.

Madam Xu stopped him in a relaxed and non-urgent manner. She sat down on a seat and accepted the tea from a maid. She looked at him and calmly said . "Did you visit the Mausoleum of Books? What about the Nai He Bridge? The sight of ivy at the Imperial Palace is also beautiful."

Chen Shang Sheng thought it was Madam Xu's polite way of starting the conversation, but he didn't think it was necessary to chat. But because an older person was talking, he couldn't be disrespectful. He answered in a simple manner, "I haven't yet. I'll go see them in the future."

Madam Xu's hand that held the tea cup stopped in mid air, "So basically, after arriving to the Capital, the first thing you did was come to the Divine General's Estate?"

Chen Chang Shang answered truthfully, "I didn't dare to delay."

"Is that so."

Madam Xu raised her head and gave him a cold look. She thought to herself, a poor youngster from the countryside wasn't attracted by the fancy sights of the Capital and rushed straight to the Divine General's Estate to talk about marriage. It's funny how he was in such a hurry.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't know why Madam Xu replied "Is that so". He stood up and reached into his pocket once again, wanting to give back the marriage vow. Since he decided to do so, he didn't want to waste anymore time.

But his action caused another misunderstanding. Madam Xu looked at him and her eyes turned colder, "I do not accept this marriage, even if you take out the marriage vow, it is of no use."

Chen Chang Sheng didn't expect to hear this, he was stunned for a moment.

"The Elderly Master was saved by your Master and thus, settled this marriage..... It seems to be a fancy tale?"

Madam Xu looked at him and continued coldly, "But it is nothing more than just a tale, a drama. It can't happen in real life. Who would believe this?"

Chen Chang Sheng wanted to explain that his intention was to forfeit the marriage. But after hearing these insulting words and seeing the disdainful expression on Madam Xu's face, he couldn't open his mouth. His hand was still in his pocket, touching the marriage vow written by the Prime Minister. The paper contained

the birth date and time of a certain young girl.

“After the Elderly Master passed away four years ago, this marriage doesn’t exist anymore.”

Madam Xu looked at the youngster in front of her and continued, “I know you are a smart person, then we should talk like smart people. The thing you should worry about is not continuing this marriage, but rather how you can obtain enough compensation for giving up on the marriage. What do you think of my suggestion?”

Chen Chang Sheng took his hand out of the pocket but the marriage vow wasn’t in his fingers. “Can I ask why?”

“Why? That is not a question a smart person would ask.”

Madam Xu looked at him expressionlessly and said, “Because, although your Master’s medical techniques are good, he is still nothing more than a normal Taoist, but we are the family of the Divine General. Because you are just a poor youngster who can only afford to wear an old Taoist robe while my daughter is the daughter of the Divine General. Because you are just an ordinary person and the Divine General’s Estate is not a place where ordinary people belong. Is my explanation clear enough?”

Chen Chang Sheng’s hands clutched tightly but his voice didn’t shake. “It’s clear.”

Madam Xu looked at the young face and decided to add a little

more pressure. She knew what the smart and prideful youngster couldn't stand. A little later she expect him to voluntarily give up on the marriage.

She placed the tea cup upon the table. She stood up and said. "The tea on your table is Butterfly Tea, it is worth five silver taels every 50 grams. The teacup is from the Imperial Kilns, it is more expensive than gold. The tea is cold, you didn't drink it, which means you are not worthy of the tea. You are just grass in rotten mud. You are not fine china, you are just broken fragments. You want to change your life by marrying into the Divine General's family? I'm sorry, it may please you, but I am not pleased."

Madam Xu's was calm. Although she didn't try to sound mean, she had already pushed him into the ground. She didn't speak with an intentionally condescending attitude, but instead the words felt like someone watching an ant from the sky.

These feelings were all received by Chen Chang Sheng.

Clearly it was all an insult. Especially when she said he was trying to change his life by marrying into the Divine General's family. It was unacceptable for any prideful youngster. To get back at her, most people would choose to argue angrily and take out the marriage vow, ripping it in half and throwing it upon Madam Xu's face, perhaps even spitting a few times.

That would be the scene Madam Xu wanted to see – if it wasn't because that marriage vow was too unique, she wouldn't have needed to think deeply on how to solve this issue.

The room was silent with no noise in sight.

She stared coldly at Chen Chang Sheng and waited for his outburst.

Yet, events completely fell outside of her expectations.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Madam Xu calmly and said, “I believe you are mistaken. My trip to the Divine General’s Estate was to give back the marriage vow to you. I wanted to forfeit the marriage from the start.”

The room was silent again.

The wind blew into the room and the leaves were swirling in the air.

Madam Xu was surprised, “Say that one more time?”

She didn’t notice that her voice was nervous, yet relieved. She didn’t care if the youngster was trying to cover up his embarrassment or wanted to forfeit the marriage, she wanted the promise to be nullified.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at her seriously and said, “Actually.....I came to forfeit the marriage.”

At the corner of the room, the nanny's expression changed.

Madam Xu's expression didn't change, but her hand landed on her chest.

The entire estate seemed to lighten up at this moment.

But Chen Chang Sheng's expression became serious.

He said, "But now.....I've changed my mind."

The wind in the estate turned cold again. The mood became oppressive.

Madam Xu suddenly felt that she had done something wrong.

She forcefully suppressed the uneasy feeling and tried to sound warm, "Why say this? If you've already thought it through, then why not....."

Before she could finish, she discovered that the youngster had no intention to continue to listening to her words.

Chen Chang Sheng picked up his luggage from the floor and put it on his back. He walked straight out of the room.

Chapter 2 - Why

As Madam Xu watched the youth's figure slowly disappear from the side reception hall, a layer of frost seemed to form over her face. She wanted to raise the teacup and take a sip of tea to moisten her somewhat parched throat, but she found that the tea in the cup had gone cold. She wanted to throw the teacup against the floor to vent her emotions—naturally not caring for how expensive Ruyao porcelain was—but she didn't want anyone else to hear the sound and know the current state of her emotions.

Her mood at the moment was extraordinarily unpleasant. She was able to understand the meaning the youth wanted to pass on to her—'My deepest apologies, this might make Madam displeased, but at least it will make me happy.' Or perhaps it was because she had said similar words to him previously: 'You want to use my Divine General's Estate to change your life? My deepest apologies, although it might make you very happy, it will make me very displeased.'

In truth, from beginning to end, the youth had acted very courteously. He had only needed to say two sentences with completely different meanings and then turn around to succeed in communicating his meaning. Perhaps this could also be considered a sort of talent.

The nanny's face was also extremely gloomy. Walking over to the Madam's side, she whispered, "Are we just letting him leave like this?"

"I originally thought that he was only a proud youth, but now I

know that he's actually a treacherous and crafty villain. If he really came to my Divine General's estate to seek some sort of benefit and was so cautious that he didn't even drink a mouthful of tea, how could he possibly have dared to bring the marriage contract into the estate? As a matter of fact, from beginning to end, did anyone actually see the marriage contract?"

Madam Xu understood the nanny's meaning. Her complexion a little gloomy, she said, "But since he's a smart person, he should understand very clearly that if he wanted even more benefits, he should not have taken everything to such extremes at the beginning."

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng was very confused by what had happened today. He had clearly come to end the engagement, so how did it end up this way? He was even more confused because even though the Divine General's estate certainly had many methods of disposing of this engagement, why had the seemingly shrewd Madam Xu chosen the stupidest method?

There were many things that he could not understand, so he no longer thought about them. It was just that when he thought about those overbearing words Madam Xu had said to him in the reception, he couldn't but be very curious about the young lady of the Xu Estate. Just what did she look like? Was she beautiful? Of course, if she grew up in such an estate, her temperament would presumably not be too gentle and kind...

The Divine General's estate was massive, even larger than the entirety of Xining Village. As there was no servant to guide the way, he very naturally got lost. When he realized this fact, he was outside a quiet and beautiful forest. When he thought about those stories recorded in the books that described how some destitute son-in-law was murdered in the dark by his shameless father-in-law, he became somewhat uneasy, and yet it was because of thoughts like these that he found it rather dull.

Just then, he sensed a gaze resting upon his body. He turned his head and saw that at the head of the stone steps by the trees, standing under a stone arch, was a girl. He realized that he had not gotten lost, but had been deliberately guided here by someone else.

That girl looked thirteen or fourteen years old. Her clothes were gorgeous, and any random set of jewelry on her body would be worth more than everything he owned. She had a beautiful appearance, and if she were to grow just a little bit older, she would definitely become a lovely beauty. As her black eyes spun around, she seemed very cute. It was just that this gaze was exceptionally brazen, scorching harsh as it sized him up from head to toe.

Chen Changsheng was a little stunned. He thought to himself, could this be the young lady of the Xu Estate?

He had spent his childhood incessantly studying scriptures and so possessed a superb patience. He allowed her to continue sizing him up, not asking any questions.

Finally, that girl said her first sentence.

"Can even Daoist priests get married?"

Chen Changsheng noticed that her gaze was on his Daoist topknot, so he explained, "I'm not a Daoist priest. Even though I'm wearing a Daoist robe and have my hair tied up in a Daoist topknot, that's all just my everyday habit. It doesn't represent that I'm actually a Daoist priest."

The girl walked up to him and asked him with a stern expression, "Are you a normal person?"

Chen Changsheng stared blankly at her, then realized what she meant by 'normal person'. He responded, "Yes, I haven't cultivated yet."

The girl took no notice of the fact that he had said he hadn't cultivated yet, and not that he did not know how to cultivate. She stared into his eyes and very seriously asked, "Are you and the young lady really engaged?"

After hearing these words, Chen Changsheng realized that this girl was not the young lady of the Xu Estate like he had imagined. He slightly relaxed, but for some reason, he was actually a tiny bit disappointed.

"My lady is?"

"I am called Shuang'er, and I am the young lady's personal maid."

Chen Changsheng could never have imagined that there existed a maid that could wear such magnificent clothes. Coupled with the fact that there was absolutely no one else around, he finally had a clearer understanding of the status this maid and her young lady had in the Divine General's estate.

"I really am engaged to the young lady of your family."

That maid called Shuang'er sincerely said to him, "In the future, do not say these words again."

"Why?" Chen Changsheng sincerely asked back.

Shuang'er looked at his appearance and felt annoyed for some reason. "You are only a normal person, so how could you possibly be together with my family's young lady? Quickly turn the marriage contract into something good, or else it will do you no good later on."

Chen Changsheng looked back at her and sincerely asked, "Why?"

It was still this one word.

Shuang'er looked at this youth's upright appearance and suddenly began to somewhat empathize with him. "If you want to live, you should never mention this engagement to anyone, or else no one will be able to safeguard your life."

She felt that she was sincerely thinking the best for this poor youth from the countryside—although the young lady could not possibly marry him, there had once been an engagement between the two of them. The young lady also knew of this person's preconditions, and so it was only right that he be allowed to live—it had never even occurred to her that when these words fell into his ear, they would seem just like a shameless threat.

Chen Changsheng silently thought, would the Divine General's estate really dispatch an assassin against me? The books and dramas he had read all had similar stories, but now that the Divine Empress sat on the throne, who would dare do this sort of thing in the capital?

He replied, "If the Divine General's estate wanted me dead, then the Madam would not simply have let me go. If I did not see wrongly, that old nanny is likely a very formidable figure. Anyway, it's not like many people saw me. If they just killed me and buried me under the flowers to serve as fertilizer, who would know? Since I'm still alive, it's only right to think that there should be no problems."

Shuang'er grimly laughed, "Countless pairs of eyes are fixated on the Divine General's estate, so within the estate, you're actually rather safe. But if you were to leave the estate and continue to speak such drivel, just how long do you think you will be able to live?"

Chen Changsheng pondered this, then said, "I don't understand."

Shuang'er explained, "If you were to let people know that you and the young lady were engaged, what would the Longevity Sect think? And what about the Qiushan clan? Even if this were the capital of the gods, if those people wanted to kill you, no one would be able to stop them."

Chen Changsheng asked, "The Longevity Sect and Qiushan clan? What are these places?"

Shuang'er looked at him like he was an idiot. "You know absolutely nothing?"

Chen Changsheng was puzzled and inquired, "What should I know?"

.....

.....

There were some matters that this young Daoist boy from Xining Village did not know but which the entire world knew. For instance, that the Great Zhou Dynasty was currently in the Zhengtong era, or that the Divine General of the East Xu Shiji was deeply trusted by the Divine Empress, that his father had been the previous dynasty's Grand Minister, and that his current status came mostly from his daughter.

Xu Shiji only had one daughter, Xu Yourong, and she was the reincarnation of the Heavenly Phoenix. She possessed an

unimaginable latent talent and at a tender age succeeded at Purification. When she was twelve, she traveled south to Holy Maiden Peak to study the Heavenly Tome Monoliths. It was rumored that she had already broken into the upper level of Meditation. Her reputation had spread throughout the world, and she received the adoration and respect of all. She was reckoned to be the sole candidate for the next Holy Maiden of the Radiant Divinity Faith.

Whether it was in experience, bloodline, teachers, or background, she was in every aspect a nigh perfect young girl. Her admirers were naturally countless, and it was even rumored that the legendary bloodthirsty young demon prince was one of her most zealous worshippers. Yet whenever the topic of discussion turned to where Xu Yourong's blossoms might eventually fall, the people would often suggest only one name. It was a similarly dazzling and brilliant name.

Qiushan Jun.

The Qiushan clan was the greatest clan of the south. This generation of the Qiushan clan had produced a young child with shocking talent and absolute brilliance. He was called Qiushan Jun and it was said that he was the reincarnation of the Divine Dragon. He was the eldest disciple of the Longevity Sect and the head of the Divine Kingdom's Seven Laws. He cultivated under the guidance of the sect elders of the south. This year, he was eighteen years old and was already acknowledged as the person on the Eastern Continent most likely to be the greatest expert in the coming centuries.

The Divine Dragon and the Heavenly Phoenix, Qiushan Jun and Xu Yourong, were brother and sister, sharing the same sects and teachers. They were truly this generation of youth's most dazzling object. It was simply impossible to find a third youth that was equal to them.

The entire world knew that Qiushan Jun had always loved Xu Yourong and had always been waiting for her to grow older. The seniors and disciples of the Longevity Sect, the Great Zhou Dynasty, and the people of the Qiushan clan all felt that this was a match made in heaven. Mo Yu of the Great Zhou Imperial Palace had even once said that even the Divine Empress thought highly of this famous story.

And yet, there suddenly appeared a young Daoist boy with a marriage contract who had come to the general's estate.

He said that he was Xu Yourong's fiancé.

If this matter were to get out...

Perhaps the entire continent would be stupefied.

.....

.....

The flower garden was quiet. Some bamboo leaves were blown by the wind past the stone arch.

"Now you know." Shuang'er looked at Chen Changsheng and said, "You are just a normal person, cut off from the young lady's world by a vast river of stars. You will never be able to cross it. For your own good, it's best that you completely forget about the matter."

Chen Changsheng had truly not imagined that the girl he was engaged to was actually such an extraordinary figure. He thought about this and then asked, "Why did the Madam not tell me this?"

Shuang'er answered, "Because the Madam was afraid that after you learned of it, you would come up with more requests."

He lifted his head and asked, "Why did you tell me this?"

Shuang'er replied, "Because the young lady sent me a letter mentioning you. The young lady is a kind-hearted person. Although she won't marry you, she also isn't willing to let you die without knowing what's going on. In addition...I feel that you should be a smart person. After learning these things, you should know yourself well enough to make the only right decision."

Chen Changsheng replied, "I understand."

With these words, he began to walk over to the other side of the stone arch, treading upon the bamboo leaves and making them rustle.

Shuang'er was at a loss. She thought to herself, just what is he doing?

Chen Changsheng suddenly stopped and turned back.

Shuang'er exhaled and her petite hand gently rested against her chest, waiting for his decision.

Chen Changsheng looked at her and asked, "I want to leave—which way should I go?"

Chapter 3 – This Is A Crude Name, But It Is My Name

It took a while for Shuang'er to come to her senses.

She could see that this Daoist youth was not deliberately teasing or playing with her, but rather had truly not taken her words to heart. Seeing the youth's calm and serious expression, she began to get angry for some reason.

She hatefully declared, "You will die."

Chen Changsheng opened his eyes wide and replied, "Everyone will die."

Shuang'er retorted, "You know that this is not my meaning."

Chen Changsheng very earnestly replied, "Thank you for telling me these things."

Shuang'er's face was extremely unsightly. "The Madam wanted to end the engagement. Your response was to get payback. What need was there to insist on getting angry and saying that you came to end the engagement? Could it be that you thought that this was the only way you could recover a little face? If that really was the case, then whatever, but why did you have to change your mind at the end? Such a fickle look is really not appealing."

"In truth...I really came to end the engagement. It's not important whether you believe it or not. It's just that right now, I really don't want to end it anymore."

"Why?"

Chen Changsheng cocked his head as he pondered this question. A smile gradually appeared on his young and tender face, because he had found an answer that he could convince himself with. "Because...you never asked me for my name."

Shuang'er did not understand.

"From the moment I entered the estate until now, whether it was the Madam or you, none of you asked me for my name."

Chen [Changsheng](#) looked at her and seriously said, "I am called Chen Changsheng. I know that this name is very crude, but Master hoped that I could live forever. The intention was very good, so I've always used this name."

(TN: Changsheng ‘长生’ of Chen Changsheng means long life/longevity.)

While he was saying these words, his eyes were very bright and his expression very upright.

Shuang'er abruptly felt that this seemingly normal Daoist boy seemed to be emitting a sort of light. Probably from that serious temperament? She understood his reason, and then she

mysteriously felt a sense of shame.

From the moment he entered the Divine General's estate until now, no one had asked him his name. But he had never shown any anger or seemed to suffer any humiliation. Whether he was talking to the Madam or Shuang'er, he had always acted very courteously, not lacking in any aspect of etiquette, even to the extent that he felt rather stuffy. However, the wondrous thing was that those people that made him unhappy were even unhappier than he was at the end.

It wasn't that he was specialized in making other people unhappy, but rather that he very earnestly did the things that he thought should be done. No matter if it was ending the engagement or changing his mind, he felt it was all right and proper. He was absolutely certain, so much so that it made people feel like they couldn't object. Consequently, those people that he made unhappy would eventually become so depressed that it was very difficult for them to be happy again.

Shuang'er had grown up in the Divine General's estate. Because of her young lady, her status was exceptionally high. Even the Divine General and his Madam did not say any harsh words to her. She had never before encountered a person like Chen Changsheng and was very unused to this sort of feeling. She subconsciously began to feel uneasy. Perhaps to convince Chen Changsheng or to convince herself, she strengthened the tone in her voice and said:

"In the entire continent, only my young lady has the true blood of the Phoenix! She is unique!"

"In my senior brother's notebook, there is a phrase which I've always felt to be very reasonable. Today, I will give it you in the hopes that you will be able to seriously learn from it in the future. He said: Every person in the world is unique."

Chen Changsheng sincerely said to her.

.....

.....

At the end of the long street was a simple stone bridge. Under the bridge flowed not the Luo River, but an unremarkable little stream. Chen Changsheng walked onto the bridge and then turned to look back at the general's estate. He saw countless quiet, but still bustling, great houses and beautiful gardens, the Xu Estate standing out amongst the rest as the most eye-catching and illustrious. He couldn't help but shake his head.

On arriving at the capital, he had not gone to any of those famous sights, nor was he in a rush to head to the Mausoleum of Books. Rather, he had freshened himself up a little by the Luo River and then headed directly to the general's estate—he wanted to end the engagement. He was truly in a rush. If he became wed to the young lady of the general's estate, if his illness could not be cured, was there any need to involve the other side? Even if it could be cured, it would most likely waste many years of time.

He did not want to waste the years of her youth, yet he had not imagined that in the Xu Estate, he would encounter that

arrogance, that contempt, that ridicule. Now that he thought about it, after he turned ten, the temple no longer received any gifts from the other side. The two sides had cut off relations, perhaps indicating that the other party had long had the intention of breaking the contract. He had come today to voluntarily annul the engagement, so it should have been achieved very effortlessly, an affair which both sides should have been delighted to see. But he did not think he would encounter this sort of display, and as a result, he had decided to change his mind on the spot.

He had not cultivated and he wasn't a Daoist priest either, but he had studied the Daoist scriptures since he was a child and had been deeply influenced by them. Taken together with his gloomy future prospects, among the three thousand great Daos, he had chosen the one of following his heart. The so-called "following his heart" was to do everything in a way that left him with a clear conscience. Journeying ten thousand li from afar to come to the capital and end the engagement was following his heart. To not end the engagement was also following his heart. The Divine General estate had been discourteous, so he did not want them to follow their hearts, because if he allowed that, it would be difficult for him to accord with his heart's desire.

Of course, even now, Chen Changsheng only wanted that Madam who concealed coldness behind a kind face and the maid who only looked at the sky to feel a little anxious. After a few days, he would naturally return the marriage to the other side. Human life was beyond value. The young lady Xu's happiness was always more important than the cold reception and arrogant gazes he had received. He still felt this way.

However, in the end, it still made people feel very unhappy. At

times, Chen Changsheng himself would forget that he was only fourteen years old. In the end, he was still but a youth, possessing his own pride and dignity. After being humiliated, there would always be some emotion.

He walked down the bridge and bought two sesame seed cakes from a stand by the street. Crouching on a stone by the stream, he nibbled on the sesame seed cakes while gazing at the distant Divine General's estate. His mood was a little sour. He knew where this emotion had arisen from, but he also understood that if he let this emotion flood through him, it would harm his body, and would be of no help in resolving this problem.

On the distant Luo River, reflections sailed across the surface of the water like clouds. On the long street opposite the river were wolf riders that had come from the west. Even separated by such a distance, it was still possible to smell the rancid stench arising from the mouths of massive wolves. A dark shadow drifted across the river. He lifted his head and saw the snow-white wings of a Pegasus as it towed a grand and luxurious carriage north. In an arrow tower on the distant city wall, Red Falcons entrusted with carrying military information were constantly flying in and out. In the even more distant azure sky, the city guard's flying carriages were on patrol, looking just like those bothersome dragonflies outside a temple.

This was the capital of the Great Zhou Dynasty. There were countless mystical scenes that someone from the rustic countryside would find very difficult to imagine. Chen Changsheng gnawed on the sesame seed cakes and opened his eyes wide, taking in these scenes with relish while comparing them to the records in the Daoist Canon. He didn't know when he would

get the chance to see those legendary mystical spirits, like the Spirit Tortoise which was said to have supported the stone pillars of the Li Palace for more than three thousand years, and maybe there were still those incomparably noble and awesome dragons spoken of in legends in the Imperial Palace. It was said that the rarest and most respected Golden Dragon had not appeared amongst humans for tens of thousands of years. Would he have an opportunity to see it in the future? That's right, there was also the legendary Phoenix...

The sesame seed cake was very delicious and also very hard, so eating it was quite the chore. Chen Changsheng had originally thought that he had cast the bitter experience he had in the Divine General's estate to the back of his mind and successfully dispelled his sour mood, yet when he thought of the word 'Phoenix', he very naturally thought of the true blood of the Phoenix that he had just heard about today. He thought about that young lady Xu who possessed the true blood of the Phoenix, and then he thought about those little gifts he received all those years ago...

He looked at the final bit of the sesame seed cake in his fingers and vacantly stared at it for a while. Only then did he put it in his mouth, carefully chewing it thirty-two times before swallowing. From his sleeve, he removed a handkerchief, which he used to wipe the crumbs off his hand. Standing up and taking up his luggage, he disappeared into the crowd.

He had not noticed that not far from him in the corner of a street, an unremarkable carriage was parked. On the shaft of the carriage in some unremarkable place, the slightly dim crest of a blood-red Phoenix could be seen. Of course, even if he could see it, he would still not know that this crest represented the estate of the

Divine General of the East. After the young lady of the Xu Estate was born, the Divine Empress had bestowed the blood-red Phoenix on the Divine General's estate as a new crest. This was a supreme honor and also a sort of proclamation.

The warhorse hitched to the front of the carriage had the blood of the Unicorn. Its eyes that looked at the flowing water under the bridge seemed very cold. The eyes of the old lady in the carriage were also very cold, but hidden within were also astonishment and wariness.

She had been following Chen Changsheng ever since he left the Divine General's estate. She had not imagined that the youth would be so calm after seeing the capital of the Great Zhou. He was completely unlike an inexperienced child from the countryside. This was because she did not know that this youth had grown up with countless scrolls. Within these scrolls, he had seen countless sights, traveled countless li of roads.

.....

.....

Xu Shiji sat in his study, his body which was tall and sturdy as a mountain emitting a faint smell of blood. In a tree, more than ten zhang away on the other side of the window, a kingfisher bird was so alarmed that it buried its head in its wings and didn't dare to make a single noise. That powerful Qi which carried a bloody scent about it was proof of this Great Zhou Divine General's power, and also indicated that his current mood was very terrible.

What made his mood so violent was that half of a jade pendant on his table.

"Back then when Father was Grand Minister, he had the deep trust of the Divine Empress and, following orders, was sent to Mount Tai to preside over the book burning ritual of reporting to the Heavens. The demons wanted to disrupt this affair, and sent Gong Yangchun to assassinate Father. Father was heavily wounded. Even when His Holiness personally came to Mount Tai, Father could not be cured. It was only when a traveling Daoist passed through Taishan County that father's injuries were finally cured. Thus, we have this marriage contract."

Madam Xu said in a low voice, "From the looks of it, that Daoist truly does seem to have some skill."

Xu Shiji lifted his head and looked out the window at the azure sky. "In this boundless universe, the winds follow the tiger and the clouds follow the dragon, and there exist an innumerable number of experts. In the field of medicine, that Daoist could be called a saint, so naturally he can't be ordinary. Or else why would father betroth Rong'er to that person's descendant?"

Madam Xu was somewhat uneasy and advised, "At the moment, the most important thing is that marriage contract...if that Daoist's background is not impressive, if he isn't someone important, it's not necessary to be too overly cautious."

Xu Shiji's expression was cold. "Let that young Daoist wake up a

little."

Madam Xu's voice dropped even lower, such that one would have to listen carefully to hear clearly. "That little Daoist doesn't seem to be someone that will take his leave for any random benefits. If he continues to harass us, what then? During next year's opening of the Mausoleum of Books, the southern sects will definitely send a diplomatic mission. At that time, I'm afraid they will formally go to the Imperial Court to propose. We can't let anything go wrong."

Xu Shiji narrowed his eyes like a fierce tiger about to sleep. "Then we just burn him into ash and toss it into the Luo River."

The rainy season would arrive in the next few days and the Luo River was on the verge of rising. Whether it was bones or ashes, when thrown into the Luo River, they would all quickly disappear.

Chapter 4 – Heavenly Dao Academy

Just like every morning for the past fourteen years, Chen Changsheng woke up at five o'clock. Before he opened his eyes, he took five breaths to calm his mind. He got out of bed, put on his shoes and clothes, made the bed, then began to wash his face and rinse his mouth. This done, he went to the front hall of the inn and ate a bowl of duck meat porridge and four meat buns piping hot from the first batch. He returned to his room and used last night's old tea to rinse his mouth. He looked at a copper mirror and tidied up his clothes, and then he walked out into the small courtyard.

This was not Xining Village's small temple, so he didn't need to cut firewood and fetch water. He turned to the newborn morning fog and the distant daylight which passed through it, closed his eyes, and began to calmly think. In his mind, he silently began to recite the scrolls of the Dao. Only when he felt refreshed did he consider his homework complete. He exited a side door and walked onto the street which was gradually beginning to get more lively. In an extremely unremarkable fashion, he mixed into the crowd and started his day.

In his hand was a list naming various schools in the capital. After asking for directions to the first school from the market manager, he quickened his steps. He did not notice that a carriage followed behind him, nor did he realize that the horse had the blood of a Unicorn. And he even less noticed that the shaft of the carriage carried the gloomy crest of a blood-red Phoenix.

Countless years ago, the Heavenly Tomes descended to the earth and the minds of the people were opened. They developed into countless areas of study, but despite countless changes, none of

them departed far from the original. They were all chasing the original source, and they were all included in the Daoist Canon—agriculture, business, and every other subject. As for the standard for evaluating these things, it was publicly acknowledged that the most authoritative standard was the Grand Examination held by the Great Zhou Dynasty each year.

The Grand Examination was first created by Emperor Taizu of the Zhou Dynasty. Whether entering the court to become an official, entering the army to become a general, or entering the Orthodoxy to become a priest, the scores from the Grand Examination were the most important criterion. Crucially, Emperor Taizu decreed that only those who ranked in the three banners had the qualifications to enter the Mausoleum of Books and look upon the Heavenly Tomes. Because of this rule, innumerable experts from around the world would congregate at the beginning of the year in the capital. In the very first Grand Examination, Emperor Taizu stood on the city wall and looked down at the geniuses of the various sects of the continent as they swarmed like fish to get in. He laughed and said a set of very famous words that also established the status of the Grand Examination.

The various kingdoms of the south, especially the Longevity Sect and other sects, were naturally extremely displeased by this rule. In their view, although the Mausoleum of Books was in the capital of the Great Zhou, the Heavenly Tomes were divine rocks that had descended to earth, so it was only natural to think that they were the shared wealth of the entire continent. For this reason, the south boycotted the Grand Examination several times, and the relations between both sides grew even worse.

However, the Mausoleum of Books was far too important to cultivators. Although the Great Zhou Dynasty was powerful, it could not risk facing condemnation for its monopoly over the mausoleum. The various powers of the south were also incapable of resisting the enticement of entering the Mausoleum of Books and viewing the Heavenly Tomes. Even in that period when the demons were pushed back and the two sides began to gradually distance themselves from each other, the south continued to resist on the surface, but there were still many experts from various sects who came in a private capacity to participate in the Grand Examination.

Finally, when the Divine Empress took power, the Zhou Dynasty at last reached an agreement with the southern powers. The various kingdoms and sects of the south could voluntarily send a diplomatic mission to take part in the Zhou Dynasty's Grand Examination. The evaluation would also be performed jointly by both sides. In addition, the students from the south could not accept the titles and offices conferred by the Zhou Dynasty. Everything else was considered equal. In the same way, under this new agreement, the Grand Examination received a new name.

Over countless years, the Grand Examination had selected countless experts. It was said that every one of the present experts who stood at the peak of the continent had once come to the capital of the Great Zhou and participated in the Grand Examination. And everyone knew for a fact that the present Pope of the Orthodoxy and the elder of the south's Holy Maiden Peak had both once been well-known figures in the Grand Examination. Not to mention how several geniuses from the Demi-human race in the west had transformed into humans and taken part in the test. Even a certain prince of the demons had risked coming to the capital, but the previous Pope had seen through his disguise, and

the demon prince was turned into gray ash by the Pope's divine technique.

Those were all stories from many years ago. Now there were different questions on everyone's minds. Would the Longevity Sect's Qiushan Jun take part in next year's Grand Examination? How many of the Divine Kingdom's Seven Laws would enter the first banner? Would Xu Yourong break through beforehand and leave Holy Maiden Peak to return to the capital? Would that cold-blooded and mysterious genius expert in the wastelands of the demons appear before the common people for the first time, or would he continue his bloody mutual chase with the demon experts? Besides these things, what most concerned the people of the capital was which geniuses from the schools of the capital would cause their eyes to light up.

Yes, the capital had many schools. When the Divine Empress took power, the government was ruled harshly, but the style of government was well ordered and the lives of the people began to gradually improve. Over the past several decades, the world had been at peace and had entered a period of prosperity. Many schools had popped up like spring bamboo after the rain. In the last few years, there were even many private schools that especially focused on the Grand Examination, where experts of the Orthodoxy taught in secret. Of course, the most famous schools were also the most powerful, or those whose history was the longest. Amongst them, there were two schools whose history was even longer than that of the Zhou Dynasty.

Chen Changsheng's list had six schools. The Heavenly Dao Academy which he was heading to was ranked first on the list. The fact was that in the entire continent, the Heavenly Dao Academy

had the qualifications to be ranked far in front—for almost two hundred years, students of the Heavenly Dao Academy had obtained the first rank of the first banner in the Grand Examination twenty-four times. The students that studied here were all extraordinarily gifted. This academy had produced many priests of important positions for the Orthodoxy, had consecrated countless cultivating geniuses for various sects. Most importantly, the current Pope of the Orthodoxy had once been a student of this academy.

The Heavenly Dao Academy had obtained the best scores throughout the history of the Grand Examination, so it was naturally the most difficult to enter, yet it still had the greatest number of people attempting its examination. Chen Changsheng walked over to the entrance of the Heavenly Dao Academy and saw the majestic and imposing school gate constructed of dark jade. When he saw the academy name which had been personally written by Emperor Taizu, he very naturally began to feel admiration and yearning. But soon after, this sensation was completely dispelled by the bustling market-like environment around the gate and the pungent smell of sweat and ink. He subconsciously lowered his head.

Before he left Xining, he had already calculated the time. The moment when he arrived in the capital was precisely when the great schools were recruiting new students for the springtime. He could also imagine that the people applying for the Heavenly Dao Academy would be many, but he could not imagine that there would be such a frightening number. Especially that crowd of youths leaning around by the gate with naughty expressions, pointing at people in the crowd. Their presence made him feel somewhat out of place.

The clothing those youths were wearing was all very similar. It was mostly black with a golden belt tied around the waist. It was probably the uniform of the Heavenly Dao Academy. Chen Changsheng knew that these youths were likely those old students that had not passed the Grand Examination at the beginning of the year. These people were proud and arrogant, but because they had failed the Grand Examination, they had rather foul moods. They would definitely not show a good face to these new students that had come to take the examination for the Heavenly Dao Academy. Hearing their sharp and unkind words, seeing the mockery in their eyes, he inadvertently lowered his head even more.

He didn't lower his head because he was afraid, but rather because he was somewhat of a clean freak, both physically and mentally. So he did not want to smell the stench of sweat coming from the crowd, nor did he want to hear those words.

"Look at that idiot over there, he looks just like a pig! There are still even some pockmarks on his face! Why does he want to stick a fan in his neck? Does he think he's Lord Huanyu? He didn't even think about how those layers of fat on his neck are almost about to snap that fan in two."

"You're right, look at how unstable and weak his footsteps are. At most, he only went through Purification two months ago. It's highly likely that he hasn't even toughened his muscles and bones before. To actually dare to come test for my Heavenly Dao Academy, just what does he think this place is? The Orthodox Academy? Haha...I really don't understand just what all these idiots are thinking. Could it be that with that weak and pitiful spiritual sense, they can become well-read in the Daoist Canon?"

"Well-read in the Daoist Canon? Even that bookworm Gou Hanshi would not dare to say these words, right? You sympathize with the bitter experience that idiot will go through in a while, but I sympathize with his father and mother. To suffer some humiliation is only second in importance, while the money spent beforehand can't be gotten back. If I were that idiot fatty's parents, I might as well take the money and go to the altar and buy a few pills for him to eat, make him lose some weight, and at least get him a wife."

"And so what if he gets a wife? Even the Cold Plum Pill only affects himself. In the future when he has seven or eight sons and daughters who are all as fat and stupid as him, raising a pack of pigs, are you telling me that's a good thing?"

Those students were heartily laughing while unrestrainedly discussing these examinees. Their words were exceptionally difficult to listen to, and they didn't even attempt to control their volume. Perhaps they even meant for the targets of their jeers to hear their commentary. It was extraordinarily repulsive. The fat youth that was the subject of their discussion was blushing, but he didn't dare to protest, because what those students said was the truth. He truly had only gone through Purification some ten-odd days ago. To get into the Heavenly Dao Academy had always been a near impossibility. Crucially, even if his luck was so good that it defied fate and he was able to enter the academy, he still would not be able to offend these seniors.

As Chen Changsheng walked through the crowd, he heard these filthy words and his brows slightly rose up. He thought to himself that if they were talking about him, he didn't know if he could hold back. Fortunately, his head was lowered and his air was far too

normal. Amidst the crowd, he was very unremarkable and very difficult to notice. Luckily, he avoided being ridiculed and very smoothly passed through the dark jade gate and entered the academy.

Because he was thinking about these things and had his head lowered, he did not notice that on the two sides of the stone path that led into the Heavenly Dao Academy, there were two huge stone walls. On these walls were carved strange flowers and spirits, and in the middle, tightly packed together, several hundred names were written. It seemed like some sort of list. Many gazes rested on these names, fervent and admiring.

The family members and servants that followed all the prospective students were forbidden from entering the Heavenly Dao Academy, so once he walked into the academy, the environment suddenly became much quieter. Chen Changsheng extracted a pure white handkerchief from his sleeve and wiped the fine beads of sweat off his forehead. After taking a breath, he felt somewhat more comfortable. Following the student in front of him, he lined up at the end of a very long queue.

The people taking the test to enter the Heavenly Dao Academy were many and the line was very long. It looked just like the legendary Hundred Zhang Branching Snake said to live in the west in the land of the demi-humans. It extended from that distant building all the way to this grass lawn. In the middle, it even passed through a clear stream. Many prospective students stood on the wooden bridge crossing the stream. Struck by the cold wind of the beginning of spring, their faces were so frozen that they seemed a little ashen.

Very quickly, people emerged from that distant building, all young men and women. Their faces were as ashen as those of the people on the bridge and were extremely unsightly. Since they weren't frozen, they had definitely not done very well on the examination. When the people still in line saw their dazed expressions, they instantly grew more nervous and were no longer in the mood to chatter.

Chen Changsheng didn't know anyone, so he naturally didn't chat with anyone. He looked at the distant building and thought it was rather interesting. Right now, he was concerned about whether the entrance exam for Heavenly Dao Academy was like what was described in the books, whether it still used that sort of method. Why was it that the people that had failed had come out so quickly in a wave? Or was it that the Heavenly Dao Academy's test really had changed?

The crowd incessantly moved forward, crossing the lawn and stream, but before they had even gotten close to the building, the line came to a bamboo shed. Seeing the solemn-faced Heavenly Dao Academy teacher sitting behind the stone table, seeing that rock on the table that was black as obsidian, Chen Changsheng realized what it was. He remembered an old lawsuit he had seen in a scroll and was a little stunned.

Chapter 5 – The Blue-Clothed Youth Thirty-Six

The youths that attended the Heavenly Dao Academy's new student examination, under the orders of that solemn-faced teacher, came forward one by one, took up the stone, and tightly held it for three breaths of time. In the vast majority of the cases, the black stone would faintly glow in their hands, with very subtle differences of brightness. There was only a small minority of cases where a person took up the stone and the stone did not change whatsoever.

That black stone had a very ordinary name: the Sensory Stone. In the Daoist Canon, there was a scripture that described all sorts of fantastic items that could be found in the world. This scripture was called the "Classic of All Things". In that scripture, Chen Changsheng had once seen a picture of this stone and understood its magical properties—this black stone innately contained an energy similar to spiritual intent. It only needed to touch the body of a human for it to send a strand of energy into the body and stimulate the body's true essence. Then, similar to fishing, it would take a strand of that person's true essence and return to the black stone. The more abundant the true essence of the stone's holder, the stronger the spiritual sense, the more the black stone would take and the brighter it would glow. After many years of attempts, humanity had finally figured out a set of rules, allowing them to use the degree to which the black stone shone to determine how strong a person was.

Every year, the Heavenly Dao Academy's entrance exam had too many applicants, resulting in this extra entrance assessment. There was a constant line of people stretching out their hands to

grip the black stone, which would perhaps grow brightly or dimly. Some people continued forward into the building ahead while others were coldly instructed by the teacher to leave the line. The atmosphere of the line was very oppressive.

One youth gripped the black stone, but the black stone gave no reaction. When it was indicated that he should leave, the youth became exceptionally desperate. He wailed and asked for another chance as he tightly gripped the stone, unwilling to let go. He was quickly dragged off by the Heavenly Dao Academy's handymen. Besides provoking a burst of ridicule, it had been meaningless.

The assessment continued. Those people that could make the stone glow had expressions filled with joy. Those that could not make the stone glow were disheartened to the extreme.

From the other side of the stream, the sneers of the old students could be faintly heard. The face of the teacher overseeing the Sensory Stone assessment was growing increasingly unsightly. From the beginning of the assessment in the morning until now, several hundred people had already held the Sensory Stone. Although there were many people that were able to make the Sensory Stone glow, proving that they had already succeeded at Purification, compared to previous years, this year's examinees were far too ordinary. In this batch of examinees, there had been only one at the third grade of Purification, and there was not even one person that had accomplished a perfect Purification. As for the prospect of a genius who had managed to enter Meditation at a tender age, they were completely impossible to find. The teacher's mood was naturally not very good.

The cultivation of humans was very different from that of the demi-humans and the demons. At the very beginning, they would focus on opening the heart and mind, becoming aware of and nurturing the spiritual sense. By means of knowledge, they would understand the principles of heaven and earth. By borrowing the spiritual sense and the strength of heaven and earth, they could use this energy to temper and refine their bodies, starting from the skin and the hair, and then the muscles and flesh, until finally the energy penetrated into the marrows of the bone. The body was refined until it became strong and sturdy, possessing enough strength to lift a stone. The body was so healthy that it was unafraid of normal illnesses. For this reason, it was called [Purification](#).

(TN: The Chinese term for Purification is '洗髓', which literally means marrow-washing.)

The demons were naturally born with bodies as hard as metal or stone. If a human had not gone through the step of Purification, it would simply be impossible to stand up to a demon in hand-to-hand combat. For this reason, in the human armies, a soldier would at least have to succeed at Purification before satisfying the requirements for becoming one of the elites. Apart from this, Purification had an even more crucial importance which reflected itself in another aspect—besides strengthening the muscles and bones, Purification could also open the mind, substantially increasing one's ability to remember and analyze. To use a remark from the Daoist Canon to summarize, it was to see a whole new world!

'The Three Thousand Great Daos' was only a general way of speaking. The world's ancient books and records were as boundless as the sea. Countless ink characters represented countless pieces of knowledge. If one did not undergo Purification, opening the mind

and clearing the heart, how could one possibly dare to step into the sea in search of knowledge? If one relied only on bravery to charge in, then it was highly likely that one would instantly get lost, have their bones and muscles dashed to pieces by waves ten thousand zhang high, and then die. This assessment that the Heavenly Dao Academy had added in recent years, when considered from this angle, was extremely reasonable. If someone was unable even to succeed at Purification, then what qualifications did they have to cultivate those profound methods?

Yesterday in the Divine General's estate, Chen Changsheng had admitted twice that he had never cultivated. Naturally, he had also not succeeded in Purification. This also indicated that in a short while when he went to hold that black stone, the stone would not change at all, and he would be expelled from the line of examinees by the teacher. Yet strangely, his expression was very calm as if he wasn't very concerned at all.

At this time, he was already very close to the table. In front of him, there were only three people. At the very front of the line was a youth dressed in a very thin set of blue clothes. That youth walked up to the table and, without waiting for the Heavenly Dao Academy teacher to speak, directly reached out and lifted up the inky Sensory Stone. For some reason, everyone suddenly felt a bit nervous.

Perhaps it was because that youth seemed far too calm.

The capital at the beginning of spring was covered in a layer of clouds and the sun was obscured behind them. The Heavenly Dao Academy was quiet and beautiful, when suddenly, the grass on

both sides of the stream began to shine with a dazzling radiance. The tender green shoots of grass seemed to turn into fine branches of jade, the remnants of the morning dew becoming pearls. In the clear waters of the stream, the slender fish swimming about turned their eyes to the sky and went stiff from the sudden burst of light.

The people subconsciously covered their eyes, thinking that this was light from the sun breaking through the clouds. In the next moment, they realized that even the loveliest spring sunshine could still not possibly be this bright. If this was not sunlight... then where did this light come from?

The light gradually faded and everyone's eyes also began to somewhat adapt. The crowd put down the hands they had used to cover their eyes and saw that the teacher from the Heavenly Dao Academy had opened his mouth wide, his face looking like it had just witnessed something inconceivable. Simultaneously, they also discovered the origin of the light—it had come from that blue-clothed youth's palm. At this moment, the pitch-black Sensory Stone seemed to have become a blazing rock taken from the mouth of a volcano, emitting countless rays of light from between that youth's fingers. It was almost like it was on fire!

"Meditation Realm...it's actually...Meditation Realm?"

So said the teacher from the Heavenly Dao Academy, his voice shaking. At the moment, he was looking at the blue-clothed youth like he was a precious piece of jade. He quickly stood up and walked over to the youth, then lowered his head to greedily examine the youth's palm and the light leaking from it. No one felt like this teacher was lacking self-control. It must be known...that

blue-clothed youth's complexion was still a little childish. It was very obvious that he was no older than sixteen, and yet he was already at the Meditation Realm!

What did this mean? What was a genius? This was a genius? The old students at the other side of the stream had long since ceased their mocking and ridicule. As they stared at the bamboo shed, they looked like they had seen a ghost. The student that had previously said the most difficult words to listen to was even so shocked that he slid down the stone stool he had been sitting on. He didn't even notice the pain being sent from his butt and said in a stunned and trembling voice, "How could it be? Senior Guan Bai only entered Meditation at sixteen... This kid...this kid maybe grew up with a young face? Or else how could it be possible?"

At this time, a cold and elderly voice came from behind them.

"Is it still impossible if I say he's Tang Thirty-Six?"

"Tang Thirty-Six? He's Tang Thirty-Six?" When the crowd heard this name, they were even more shocked. Somebody said, "He's already ranked thirty-sixth on the Proclamation of Azure Sky... why did he leave Wenshui and come to the capital? For next year's Grand Examination? Ah, but with his ability, there shouldn't be a problem if he wanted to enter the Mausoleum of Books."

Another person explained, "Tang Thirty-Six is extremely proud and aloof, not putting himself under anyone. Don't even speak of the Divine Kingdom's Seven Laws, he wouldn't even put himself under that wolf cub in the north. Since he wants to attend next year's Grand Examination, it's definitely because he wants to

change his name. As such...he naturally needs to come to the capital ahead of time. Since it's the capital, it's only natural that he enters our Heavenly Dao Academy."

Hearing the name Tang Thirty-Six, all the students began to think about the rumors concerning this youth from Wenshui, and they all couldn't help but gasp in amazement. Another person said, "He may refuse to submit to the other members of the Seven Laws, but would he dare to challenge Qiushan Jun?"

"It's impossible for us to know that, but from the degree to which the black stone lit up, perhaps he held back. Even if he's not at the initial level of Mediation, he must not be very far."

The crowd was caught up in discussion when suddenly they remembered that elderly voice. They turned their heads in amazement and realized that the owner of the voice was the Heavenly Dao Academy's most dreaded Vice Principal Zhuang. They couldn't but yelp in alarm, then clasp their hands and repeatedly bow to him, before scattering like birds and beasts.

.....

.....

Whether an expert or genius, it was only right and proper that both be baptized by the gazes of the crowd. The young men and young ladies participating in the Heavenly Dao Academy's assessment had not recognized this blue-clothed youth, so they were even more shocked. As they looked at his back, they revealed

shocked and reverential emotions. Chen Changsheng looked at the blue-clothed youth with admiration. He didn't have this sort of talent, so he was truthfully rather envious.

The blue-clothed youth walked forward with a cold expression and shortly entered that building in the depths of the Heavenly Dao Academy. However, the assessment for the remaining people had to continue. In a while, it was finally Chen Changsheng's turn. He walked up to the table and looked at the somewhat coarse surface of the black stone on which one could faintly make out countless fine holes. He hesitated for a few moments, then took the black stone, held it up to his eyes, and began to carefully examine it.

He clearly sensed a cool and delightful Qi seep out of one of the small holes on the black stone. Following the course of his palm, it entered his body and then began to quickly circulate through his meridians, attempting to head into an even deeper place in search of his true essence. That cool strand of Qi clearly did not have its own will, so it naturally also had no ill intentions. He did not resist it in any way, letting it search throughout his body. Of course, even if he wanted to resist, he didn't have the ability to. Only he clearly understood that there was a problem with his meridians. Until he began to treat it with his own hands, that strand of Qi would not find anything. Since there was no true essence to bring back, there was no response from the spiritual will, and so the black stone naturally did not glow.

Nothing beyond the expected occurred. The black stone was still a black stone, calmly resting on his palm.

He placed the black stone back on the table and looked at the teacher from the Heavenly Dao Academy. Then he said, "It didn't glow."

In the eyes of the bystanders, he had just taken up the stone and then put it back down again. It was such an obvious fact, and yet he had confirmed it so seriously. Inevitably, it seemed somewhat ridiculous. Strangely, no one laughed. Seeing his upright expression, everyone felt it was a little odd...those youths that previously failed to make the black stone glow would always be somewhat ashamed because of their failure and depression. There would even be people like that shameless youth from before that would weep bitter tears. But he...was far too calm.

Could it be that he didn't realize what this meant? It didn't seem like that was the case.

The teacher wrinkled his brow. He was originally supposed to wave his hand to indicate that Chen Changsheng should leave, but because of the indescribable silence hanging over them, for some reason, he asked, "You don't know how to cultivate?"

"I have not cultivated."

Chen Changsheng said the words that he had repeated twice in the Divine General's estate.

The teacher looked at him expressionlessly, his meaning being, why aren't you leaving on your own?

Chen Changsheng bowed and gave his regards, then left.

However, the direction he left in was not towards the main gate of the Heavenly Dao Academy, but towards that building.

The teacher was stunned, then understood what he was planning to do. He furiously bellowed, "Stop!"

Chapter 6 – Joy Upon Opening The Book

Chen Changsheng stopped and turned his head back at the teacher. He was somewhat puzzled, but when he remembered those previous scenes, he understood why the teacher was angry—those examinees that failed Purification, upon reaching this point, would retreat in disappointment. That teacher had thought that his response would be the same, but he had continued forward. Presumably, this had made the teacher somewhat unhappy.

He wasn't willing to waste time on meaningless arguments and misunderstanding. He sincerely bowed to the teacher who was just getting up and straightforwardly explained, "Teacher, I am not looking to make trouble."

The teacher had just been prepared to scold him and ask him just what he intended by making trouble in this dignified examination. When he suddenly heard these words that had come before he could say anything, he couldn't but be a little dazed and he choked somewhat on his words. He coughed twice, then shouted, "Then why aren't you quickly getting out!"

Those youths that were behind Chen Changsheng in line to take the test were already somewhat anxious and impatient. Seeing that he was unwilling to leave, they thought he was acting in a very shameless manner. They were very angry and added their own scolding to the teacher's shouts. There were also people that mocked him by saying that he had gone crazy from failure.

The ridicule and laughter fell upon Chen Changsheng's ear, but his expression did not change. He seemed nothing like a fourteen-

year-old youth, so calm that it made others feel helpless. He looked at the teacher and gave him another extremely courteous bow, then said in a very orderly fashion, "I have not cultivated, but I can still take the Heavenly Dao Academy's entrance exam."

The teacher was at a loss, not understanding what this youth was trying to say. Since he hadn't even succeeded at Purification, how could he possibly have the qualifications to continue on to the exam? Had there ever been an exception in the past few years? Even if there had, just why should there be one for him?

Chen Changsheng explained, "According to the regulations of the Heavenly Dao Academy, chapter seventeen, law four, in a footnote for article eight, the entrance examination is the only criterion for entering the academy. Eleven years ago, the Department for Purging Officials also ruled as such."

Seeing his simple clothes, the teacher was subconsciously prepared to reprimand Chen Changsheng. It wasn't that he was a snob, but because he simply didn't believe it. How could this youth who had clearly come from the middle of nowhere know more about the regulations of the Heavenly Dao Academy than him who was the most specialized in recruitment and who had overseen this examination for many years? What footnote...did the academy regulations have such an article? Why didn't he have any inkling of it?

Yet just as he was about to call someone to take this youth away, he suddenly heard the words "Department for Purging Officials". He couldn't help but pause in shock and restrain the words that were about to leave his lips.

The Department for Purging Officials had originally been an unremarkable organization under the Ministry of Personnel. As the Divine Empress began to take the reins of power, she placed the department in the hands of a man she exceptionally favored, an official called Zhou Tong who was famed for his ruthlessness. Under his care, the Department for Purging Officials suddenly took on a completely different appearance. Who knew how many ministers and generals that were still loyal to the Imperial clan had died in that seemingly ordinary building? Gradually, this name caused all of the Zhou Dynasty's officials and ministers to tremble in fear.

Although the Heavenly Dao Academy was not under the jurisdiction of the Department for Purging Officials, it was difficult to not be somewhat afraid. What made this teacher feel most uneasy was that because the Department for Purging Officials wanted to wash away its vile reputation, it paid particular attention to its reputation amongst the common people. In redressing the wrongs of the people, it worked strictly by the book. If the regulations of the Heavenly Dao Academy really did have this article that the youth had mentioned, then there really might be some trouble...

Seeing Chen Changsheng's calm expression, this teacher suddenly lost some of his confidence. After a few moments of hesitation, he wrinkled his brow and yelled a few words of criticism towards the back of the line, then turned around and left, going off to some place. The crowd's scolding and teasing gradually ceased, devolving into hushed whispers. No one knew what was going on.

After quite a bit of time, the teacher finally returned, and the emotions in the eyes he turned to Chen Changsheng were somewhat more complex.

Chen Changsheng understood that the teacher most likely had gone to check the academy regulations and had seen the footnote he had mentioned. He had relentlessly read books in the temple ever since he was a child. All Three Thousand Scrolls of the Great Dao were in his head, countless books and chapters memorized until he could recite them from back to front. His reading was so extensive that he had even read the various laws and ceremonies of all the various kingdoms countless times. Naturally, he would not remember incorrectly.

"Even if you continue on to the examination, you still won't have any chance. Why waste your time?"

The teacher said to Chen Changsheng impassively, his expression very stern.

Chen Changsheng replied, "This student would still like to try."

The teacher asked, "You haven't succeeded at Purification, so how can you complete those questions? In addition, it could harm your mind. Are you sure you want to take it?"

These words were not false. Once a person had undergone Purification and cleared the heart, the greatest difference between them and a normal person, besides the strengthening of the body, was the disparity in the power of the spiritual sense. This was

something that came naturally and could not be changed through human strength. Without Purification, it was assuredly impossible to work on these difficult problems. There was even a high chance of heavily injuring oneself. For this reason, this assessment, with the table in the bamboo shed and the Sensory Stone on the table, became an unavoidable hurdle. Anyone who could not make the black stone glow was eliminated. This had already become convention, or even common sense. This was why none of the failures had objected, until a special case like Chen Changsheng appeared.

Chen Changsheng bowed. "This student really does want to take the test."

The teacher's face was somewhat unsightly. He thought, since you've managed to waste your own time by luckily happening upon that rule as well as wasting everyone else's time, if you want to go, then go. And if your spiritual sense is really so damaged that you become an idiot, then that will also be a calamity you brought on yourself.

"Then go."

Chen Changsheng bowed again. Without saying any more, he walked out of the bamboo shed and headed towards that building in the depths of the Heavenly Dao Academy.

That teacher also said nothing more to him. Turning to the remaining students, his face like a sheet of ice, he said, "Next."

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng was the only person in more than a decade to take the entrance exam without passing the Sensory Stone Test. The youths that observed the scene from a distance had an incomprehensible feeling well up within them. Those who knew a little more did not make much of it—to take advantage of a loophole was only taking advantage of a loophole. Without having undergone Purification, his memory, analysis, and calculation ability would be insufficient. It was simply not possible to work on the Heavenly Dao Academy's entrance exam. Chen Changsheng's actions were at best an amusing interlude.

That building was the Heavenly Dao Academy's 'A' building. When Chen Changsheng entered that building, many people objected to his presence, except for that one person who had already finished his examination and, as was right and inevitable, succeeded in entering the Heavenly Dao Academy: that blue-clothed youth called Tang Thirty-Six. In fact, he stared very intently at Chen Changsheng. He also did not think Chen Changsheng could pass the exam, but he appreciated Chen Changsheng's serious, even stubborn, strength, because it reminded him of himself. At this time, the Heavenly Dao Academy's Vice Principal appeared by his side. Smiling, he asked, "Do you think that youth has a chance? I don't think so. Who was the last ordinary person to enter the Heavenly Dao Academy? That was Wang Zhice. But on this continent, it has been several hundred years since a person like Wang Zhice appeared."

Wang Zhice was once a legendary individual of the continent. In the final years of Emperor Taizu, he entered the Heavenly Dao Academy at the age of sixteen. He was a normal person that had never cultivated before. After he graduated from the Heavenly Dao Academy, he served as a common secretary in the Imperial Court right up until he was forty years old. One night when he was forty, a long whistling noise was suddenly heard throughout the capital. In one night, Wang Zhice comprehended the Dao and began to cultivate. In a few short years, he had arrived at the summit. In the end he became the second-in-command of the allied armies in the war against the Demon race. In the campaign that defeated the demons, he played a decisive role. Even now, his portrait was still hanging in the [Lingyan Pavilion](#).

(TN: The Lingyan Pavilion was an actual building constructed in the Tang Dynasty by Taizong to commemorate twenty-four officials for their service to the empire.)

The human world had not seen Wang Zhice for a long time.

Tang Thirty-Six replied, "I also do not think he can pass, and even less think that he is the next Wang Zhice, but I think that if you wanted to become an existence as great as Wang Zhice, you would have to at least be like that youth, possessing a spirit that doesn't know the meaning of defeat as well as living a strict life style. I never thought geniuses were anything much. The scariest people are those who are very hard on themselves."

The Vice Principal shook his head and said: "When Wang Zhice was in school, on cold days when the ground was covered in snow, he would be eating frozen porridge while his hands never left his books. Can that youth study to that extent?"

Tang Thirty-Six replied, "At the very least, that youth is much stronger than all those other mediocre people."

The Vice Principal glanced at him, then said, "As expected of Tang Tang, whether it's people or things, you always look at them differently from the rest."

Tang Thirty-Six wrinkled his brow and said, "Please call me Tang Thirty-Six."

The Vice Principal laughed. "Entering my Heavenly Dao Academy, this name of yours will have to change again."

Tang Thirty-Six said seriously, "That's inevitable."

The Vice Principal glanced at the building and smelled a very faint but beautiful fragrance spilling from the window. He asked, "Will you continue to wait?"

Tang Thirty-Six replied, "Yes."

The Vice Principal asked, "Why?"

Tang Thirty-Six answered, "Although he has no chance of passing, I really want to know just how much he can score."

.....

.....

The examination book on the table was extremely thick, almost like a small mountain. Chen Changsheng did not know the exact specifics of this book, so of course he was a little anxious—everyone knew that the reason the Heavenly Dao Academy was extremely difficult to enter was that its entrance exam encompassed everything. From the true meaning of the Dao to debates on the Heavenly Tomes to the art of war, everything was included. There were often even questions on agriculture. Even if someone had reached a perfect Purification, if they wanted to finish all the questions by the time the incense burned down, it would still be an arduous task, to say nothing of a normal person.

Chen Changsheng sat before the table and closed his eyes for the period of five breaths, then opened his eyes and opened the examination book to the first page. As he did so, his mood was very complicated. Of course, there was a little curiosity about the unknown as well as some disquiet of unknown origin, but there was also a little expectation.

His fingers suddenly became rigid. A strand of uncertainty flashed across his eyes that were bright like mirrors.

Everyone said the Heavenly Dao Academy's test questions were very difficult. If it was testing on comparing religious passages, it would often be taken from the most obscure and hard-to-find passages, but why...did this first page's first question seem so familiar? The thirty-first debate between Cen Shenzi and the seventh-generation Pope on true meaning? When did he last see

this? It was when he was three years old...this was a small and unremarkable passage from the Huainan Commentary of the Nanhua Classic. But he had already seen this commentary and memorized it, and when he was five and eleven, he read it and memorized it all over again.

Why was it familiar? It was because these words had been engraved into his heart.

Chen Changsheng was a little puzzled, but he was still a youth, so he was even more filled with joy. He stopped thinking about it and took up his brush and began to use the chapters and passage within his mind. Those penetrating insights of those great masters he copied onto his paper. Then he turned to the second page and he was not surprised to once again see familiar passages...

The Great Dao encompasses all things, and the Heavenly Dao Academy's entrance exam questions were contained entirely in those Three Thousand Scriptures.

He could recite those Three Thousand Scriptures from back to front.

How could this sort of test be difficult for him?

Chapter 7 – The Meeting Of Chen And Tang

When the incense burned out, there was a metal clang indicating that this round of examinations had come to a close. Chen Changsheng walked out of the building with the rest of the prospective students, paying no attention to the peculiar gazes thrown in his direction. Following the directions, he proceeded towards a stone plaza behind the lake, where the results would be announced, waiting for dusk when the final examination would conclude.

The majority of the other students remained in the front of the building, exchanging answers with each other or complaining about the test's difficulty. When he arrived at that place behind the lake, the stone plaza was very quiet. Standing by the lake was only the blue-clothed youth who had previously released that great light. He thought that geniuses would inevitably be proud and aloof, so he didn't walk forward. Unexpectedly, the youth approached him instead.

"I am called Tang Thirty-Six," the blue-clothed youth said.

Chen Changsheng was rather astonished. He didn't think that this youth would come over and take the initiative to chat. He tidied up his clothes and said courteously, "My surname is Chen (陈), written with 'ear' (耳) and 'east' (东), Chen Changsheng."

Tang Thirty-Six stared blankly at him, as if he hadn't expected this youth's name to be so crude. Even the master of a wealthy family in the countryside would not give his son such a name. After a moment of silence, he said, "This name is actually sincere

and honest; it's not right for me to say it's lacking."

Chen Changsheng thought, your way of speaking is also actually rather sincere, only your name is also very strange.

"I am called Chen Changsheng....because when I was small, I was sick. Master hoped that I would live until I was one hundred. What about you? Why are you called Tang Thirty-Six? It can't be that you're the thirty-sixth child in your family? How can your family have so many people? Where is your home? With so many brothers and sisters, won't it be too noisy when you're studying?"

Tang Thirty-Six was struck dumb.

To directly inquire about the origins of one's name was a very discourteous thing to do. Moreover, he had a very chilly face which strangers did not like to approach. Those people who did not know the origins of his name, no matter how curious they were, would still restrain themselves in front of him, not daring to ask him directly. This youth had just so casually asked him this question, and then had even added more questions on top of it.

In fact, Chen Changsheng's thinking was very simple. In this capital that he wasn't familiar with, in this Heavenly Dao Academy full of cold looks and ridicule, this person who was clearly a genius had taken the initiative to come forward and introduce himself, so it was only right and proper that he give back even more enthusiasm and kindness. At the very least, he should take initiative to exchange pleasantries and chat about something.

Ever since he was a child, he had lived together with his master and senior brother. Master rarely said anything, and Senior couldn't even speak, so he simply had no clue how exchanging pleasantries should go. He seemed somewhat stiff and awkward, and although he wanted to relay his kind intention to this youth, it was very easy to cause misunderstanding, just like yesterday in the Divine General's estate.

Yet what was interesting was that not only was Tang Thirty-Six not unhappy, but on the contrary, he found Chen Changsheng very honest and very sincere. The thing Tang Thirty-Six most wanted to do throughout his life was to be a true person, but all the people he encountered were either mediocre people or sham believers. To suddenly encounter a person like Chen Changsheng made him feel very satisfied.

"In my clan, there truly are many people of the same generation as me, but we all study in our own homes, so it's not noisy. The reason I'm called Tang Thirty-Six is not because I'm the thirty-sixth child in my family, but because last year when I turned fifteen and first entered the Proclamation of Azure Sky, I was placed thirty-sixth. I thought it was very humiliating, especially when compared to that girl and that wolf cub...so I changed my name to Tang Thirty-Six to always remind myself that my current cultivation and strength are not adequate. Yeah, it seems I've answered all your questions. Yes, I've answered them all."

The conversation above was the first social interaction Chen Changsheng had since he left Xining and came to the bustling capital. At the same time, it was also the first social interaction Tang Thirty-Six had after he left Wenshui and came to the capital. At the time, Chen Changsheng was fourteen years old and Tang

Thirty-Six was just about to turn sixteen, so they were both somewhat confused and inexperienced in the aspect of socializing. This conversation was undoubtedly rather choppy, interesting and amusing, but many years in the future, history would prove that this social interaction was a rousing success. It could even be said that after the treaty signed between Emperor Taizong and the chief of the demons, this was the most successful and most important social interaction in history.

"How many questions did you answer?"

Tang Thirty-Six asked. He truly was rather interested in this answer, because even though he felt Chen Changsheng was just an ordinary person...in reality, he probably wasn't an ordinary person. When he saw how pale Chen Changsheng's face was, he realized that his question was inappropriate. Those problems had been like an ocean. Even a genius like him had felt somewhat strained. It was obvious that Chen Changsheng had severely consumed his mental strength. Looking at the circumstances, the final result would probably not be any good.

"There were some questions on cultivation that I really couldn't answer. Spiritual sense, true essence, and also the burning sun of Star Condensation..."

Chen Changsheng very honestly answered. In his heart, he felt rather lucky. He had studied the Daoist Canon since he was a child, so those seemingly complex academic questions weren't very difficult at all for him. Instead, it was those questions on cultivation that he really couldn't answer. Fortunately, this was only an exam for prospective students after all, so there were not

many questions in that field.

As Tang Thirty-Six listened, he felt that something was a bit off. These were the questions that he couldn't answer...could it be that this kid actually answered all the other questions? He took note of the fact that on the other side of the lake, a teacher carrying a thick examination paper was quickly walking off to some place. That teacher's mood seemed to have been severely shaken, and he almost fell over as he climbed the stone steps. He couldn't help but be a little startled. When associating this with the words Chen Changsheng had just said, he couldn't help but get an idea that even he found hard to believe. Could it be that this fellow really wanted to give everyone a shock?

"The rest...you're sure you answered them all correctly?"

"I don't dare say for certain...there are two versions of 'The Grand Supreme Mantra for Clearing the Heart'. In the year the Orthodoxy was established, they released an edited version. Afterwards, everyone always used the edited version, but the era mentioned in the question was before the year fifteen-seventy-three, so I didn't know which version to use. In the end, I was forced to put down an answer for both versions. I'm just afraid that it will anger the teacher and lose points."

When Tang Thirty-Six heard these words, he couldn't help but fall silent.

He only knew one version for that question, and he had only answered for that version.

After a while, he looked at Chen Changsheng and said, "I always thought it was me and that other guy who were the most arrogant amongst this generation of youth. I didn't think that you would actually be more arrogant than me."

Chen Changsheng was puzzled. He thought to himself, just how am I arrogant?

.....

.....

The results were posted.

Chen Changsheng's name was actually not there.

Chen Changsheng silently stood in front of the list for a very long time.

The eyes that looked at him from the crowd were rather unkind, carrying a sense of ridicule and disdain. If Tang Thirty-Six were not at his side, many nasty words would probably have been said already.

"I don't understand," Chen Changsheng said.

Tang Thirty-Six also did not understand. He believed that this

youth that could even make him feel close and sincere would not tell lies. Since he said that he had answered most of the questions correctly, he should have answered them correctly. Then even if he wasn't ranked at the very front, his score should have been more than enough to make the list.

Chen Changsheng sought out the teacher that had been responsible for the Sensory Stone assessment and said, "I would like to check my paper."

That teacher was tidying up some random miscellany and didn't look directly into that calm and resolute gaze. "Since you used the regulations to obtain the qualifications to take the exam, then you should also know...my Heavenly Dao Academy's exam papers can not be checked again. This acts as a sign of respect to the Heavenly Dao Academy. If you did not pass, then you did not pass."

Chen Changsheng gazed silently at him for a long time, then turned and left.

.....

.....

"Although he didn't say anything, you knew what he wanted to say...this sort of kid who's angry but won't say anything bad is truly amazing." Tang Thirty-Six looked to the other side of the lake at the back of the youth that was slowly fading away. He turned to some person and said mockingly, "For the Heavenly Dao Academy to not take this sort of talent is really amazing."

"You're older than him by two years, but you call him a kid. That's really interesting."

The Vice Principal of the Heavenly Dao Academy said, "Even more interesting is, how did you know what he wanted to say?"

"He wanted to say, you will definitely regret this...I know this because if I were to suffer such treatment, I would definitely say these words."

"The Heavenly Dao Academy will regret rejecting a normal student?"

"He is not a normal student. He is a genius like me."

The Vice Principal of the Heavenly Dao Academy was silent for a few moments, then said, "I saw that youth's exam paper. For him to be so erudite without Purification, he truly can be called a genius. Even compared to Wang Zhice back then, he's not too far off. If this were a normal situation, I absolutely would have recruited him into the academy and then personally instructed him. It's just a pity that it's not possible this time."

Tang Thirty-Six looked back at him and asked, "Why is it not possible?"

"Because someone paid a visit."

"Who?"

"The Divine General's estate."

"The present-day continent has one [Dufu](#), Five Saints, the Storms of the Eight Directions, and the countless freaks on the Proclamation of Liberation, and that's not even mentioning the demon guys hidden out in the wilderness. Admittedly the thirty-eight Divine Generals are strong...but what sort of place is the Heavenly Dao Academy? Actually listening to the orders of the Divine General's estate?"

(TN: Dufu can also mean 'dictator' or 'sole ruler'.)

"Your father entrusted you to me, so I won't hide this from you, but you can't speak of it anywhere else...a mere Divine General's estate is naturally incapable of influencing my Heavenly Dao Academy, but that Divine General's estate is different, because it is the estate of the Divine General of the East. The master of that estate is called Xu Shiji."

"Xu Shiji...even if he's doted upon by the Divine Empress and his power is formidable, in the end, he's just a Divine General."

"But his family has a Phoenix..."

Once he heard the word 'Phoenix', the cold arrogance on Tang Thirty-Six's countenance was impossible to retain and instantly melted away. After a long period of silence, he mumbled, "...Chen Changsheng, that guy, actually managed to provoke that Phoenix? Just what sort of person is he?"

The Vice Principal calmly replied, "It's of no concern what sort of person he is, he's still only fourteen. Even if he were to be enlightened again, it would be too late. The world has too many geniuses, and so if he had even more potential, so what? Previously, I compared him to Wang Zhice. If he really does possess Wang Zhice's willpower and destiny, then what does it matter if he is or is not in the Heavenly Dao Academy?"

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng did not know that his failure had to do with the Xu Estate. He thought that he had most likely taken the place of some influential official's son and so had suffered under the tricks of some person. Although this was his first time wading into worldly affairs, he had seen in the Daoist Canon and the plays many unbearably dark and filthy cases of mutual deception, and so he could only remain silent. Besides remaining silent, what else could he currently do?

He left the Heavenly Dao Academy and went to the second school on the list. He still did not notice the carriage with the blood-red Phoenix crest following him in the distance.

Chapter 8 – Seizing The Stars

Presently in the world, cultivation relied mainly on the Daoist method promulgated by the Orthodoxy. The primary source of true essence was the vast sky of stars—the Faith of Light paid particular attention to the word 'light', and what illuminated the night sky was precisely starlight. To break through Meditation and enter Ethereal Opening, and then Star Condensation, to lean upon the energy the myriad stars spilled over the world and to remold the ordinary human body and soul: this was the ultimate goal of cultivation. From this, one could see what sort of status the word 'star' held in the world of cultivation. Every country and every sect had its own star observation platforms, and the scenic spots on the great rivers were covered with countless buildings which looked up towards the stars. Yet it was very rare to see names like 'take the stars' or 'wrest away the stars', because this seemed rather disrespectful towards the stars.

But the second school on Chen Changsheng's list was shockingly called precisely the Star Seizer Academy.

Star Seizer—this academy had taken such a completely domineering name, and yet the Orthodoxy had no complaint. This matter had always been so domineering.

In the entire world, only this academy dared to use such a name, and only this academy had the qualifications to use such a name.

Because this academy was under the direct management of the Great Zhou army. Over countless years, it had nurtured countless brave and unswerving youths, and the generals it had produced

were as numerous as the stars. Many years ago, in that world-shaking war with the demons, the humans had initially been forced to the brink of collapse. The entirety of Star Seizer Academy, from its principal down to the average student, rushed out to the battlefield, taking the place of their fallen comrades. Of ten that went out to the battlefield, eight or nine would die there. After the great war, the once-great academy was now decayed and desolate as a tomb. Based on this, the Star Seizer Academy obtained a respect that no man could hope to reach and possessed a nigh unimaginable grandeur.

If such an academy wanted to use Star Seizer or even Star Burning as a name, just who would complain?

The entire world had a deep understanding of Star Seizer Academy's bloody and cruel, yet glorious, history, and Chen Changsheng was no exception. His master had placed Star Seizer Academy as second on the list, but the reality was that in Chen Changsheng's heart, Star Seizer Academy was ranked first. Thus, although his failure to get into the Heavenly Dao Academy had upset him somewhat, he didn't care too much.

He believed that Star Seizer Academy would definitely not practice favoritism like the Heavenly Dao Academy, or at the very least it would not be so excessive about it.

Thinking like this, he arrived at the stern Star Seizer Academy and began to prepare for the second examination.

As expected, Star Seizer Academy was different from the Heavenly Dao Academy. Although the school gate was also

surrounded by a dense mass of people, the entire place was very quiet without any sort of random noise, perhaps because of the hawk-like gazes of those fully-armored elite troops, or because of that stone monolith densely covered with the surnames of those officers that had died for the country oppressing the mood.

After filling out a simple application form and receiving a number plate, slightly over six hundred young prospective students were escorted by several military officials into the academy.

Similar to the assessment of the Heavenly Dao Academy, the Star Seizer Academy had also prepared a pre-examination, and its goal was similarly to eliminate those ordinary youths who had not yet succeeded at Purification and to relieve the pressure on the formal entrance examination. It was just that the Star Seizer Academy inevitably had a more military character to it, so its method was much simpler than the Heavenly Dao Academy's and also much more straightforward—this place had no Sensory Stone, only a stone plate.

This stone plate was very large, very much like a millstone—in fact, it was precisely the millstone from the kitchens behind the Star Seizer Academy that had been temporarily removed, and it weighed three hundred catties. Those examinees that could lift up this millstone and carry it up the thirty stone steps would be considered to have passed the first assessment and have the qualifications to take the formal entrance examination.

With a weight of three hundred catties, unless one had successfully purified and tempered the bones and muscles to be as

flexible as a pine tree, it would be very difficult to lift it up, let alone carry it for so long up those steps. Upon seeing that millstone, many youths who had not succeeded at Purification suddenly paled. Many people lowered their heads in dejection as they stepped back. Even youths who had succeeded at Purification but still had unsteady cultivations judged that they couldn't do it this year. One by one, they shook their heads, unwilling but helplessly forced to abandon their hopes. Of course, there were some ordinary youths who bravely relied on their body's natural strength to attempt to overcome this challenge, but none of them succeeded.

To not have undergone Purification but to manage to lift the millstone was not actually a rare sight in the Star Seizer Academy's new student examination. For instance, the White Tiger Divine General currently guarding Sangharama Pass had not undergone Purification in the year he entered the academy. However, relying on his inborn divine strength, he actually managed to easily take up that millstone and hurl it right over to the other side of that lake...

But this was not a common event.

The military instructor felt it somewhat regrettable. Looking at the time, he decided to quicken the process. He let the examinees voluntarily report their levels and then allowed the examinees that had succeeded at Purification to attempt the test first. Afterwards, he let the ordinary youths try.

Regrettably, by noon, there were still no ordinary youths able to produce a miracle.

Just as the crowd was beginning to lose interest and preparing to leave, a tall and sturdy youth carrying his number plate walked in. He easily lifted the millstone and then clomp, clomp, clomp, clomp, he easily climbed up those thirty stone steps. His breathing was steady and his face wasn't even red. He even brought the millstone back to its original position.

The crowd was in an uproar.

That youth raised up his hand to the crowd and then proudly walked back up the stone steps into the depths of the academy. Amusingly, he was born too simple and honest. No matter how much he tried to show off his arrogance, he just seemed rather cute in the eyes of the crowd. There was no teasing, only a warm laughter.

After the sturdy youth departed, many people began to speculate on his origins until finally some person abruptly mentioned that a green tattoo had been faintly discernable on the youth's ankle. The crowd were all so amazed that they had no words. This was because...it signified that this youth was highly likely to possess demi-human blood. There was even a high chance that he had come from the land of demi-humans in the west!

Over the past several centuries, because the humans had united with the demi-humans in resisting the demons, although their relationship could not be described as friendly, it could still be described as harmonious. Some demi-human nobles that could transform even lived in the human world. There were definitely some living in the capital of the Great Zhou—but in the end,

humans and demi-humans walked different paths. The government and the common people of the human world would usually refrain from mentioning this topic, thinking it fine as long as those demi-humans did not cause any trouble.

When that stalwart youth who was suspected of being a demi-human succeeded in lifting the millstone, he seemed to have pushed open a door. Soon after, two youths who were hunters from the Great Old Mountains relied on the innate strength of their bodies to lift up the millstone and walk up the stone steps. Although it seemed very arduous, it still won a wave of cheers.

That military official at the top of the steps who was keeping score with his black brush seemed to be very satisfied with this year's grades.

As time passed, it was finally Chen Changsheng's turn. When the crowd saw this still childish youth, they gave a few kind words of encouragement and then paid no more attention. It was too obvious that this youth was too young and had not fully matured. He wasn't even as strong as those two hunters, let alone that stalwart demi-human youth. It seemed impossible for him to lift the millstone no matter how one looked at it.

At the Heavenly Dao Academy, Chen Changsheng had relied on his familiarity with the regulations of the academy to pass through the Purification selection. Now at Star Seizer Academy, perhaps he had thought of another method, but maybe because he had been affected by the stern and yet passionate atmosphere of the academy or perhaps because he simply wanted to try, he didn't do anything strange.

He walked over to the millstone and slowly crouched. He firmly gripped his hands on the millstone and took five slow and deep breaths. He poured all the strength in his body into his waist and his arms and with a grunt, exploded with strength!

The crowd in front of the slanted stone steps suddenly grew quiet. Those spectators that had just been chatting were so stunned that they forgot what they were about to say. With their mouths agape, they stared at this scene.

The millstone slowly rose up. Finally, Chen Changsheng raised it up to his chest, no more, no less, passing the assessment's standard by a single inch!

His face was somewhat red, but his expression was still calm. There were no signs of panic or anxiety in his eyes.

Boom! The scene erupted in applause. The spectators incessantly cheered the youth on, using the rhythm of their cheers to help the youth move his feet.

Chen Changsheng took one step forward. It was just one step, but his knees began to tremble.

To lift up the millstone was one thing, but to lift this weighty millstone and walk up those stone steps was another thing entirely.

His breathing became somewhat ragged and his face grew increasingly red.

He didn't make a single sound, but from his slightly bulging cheeks, it could be seen that he was forcefully clenching his teeth.

Step by step, he walked towards the stone steps.

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng truly had not undergone Purification. Logically, his flesh and bones were only at the level of an ordinary youth. It would even be proper that they were weaker than an ordinary youth's, given his childhood illness. But it was precisely because he was ill, and with a difficult-to-cure illness at that, that the three people in Xining Village's old temple, including Chen Changsheng, were concerned with his body first and foremost.

From the moment he could understand, he had been forced to recite the Three Thousand Scriptures of the Dao in the old temple. At the same time, that eccentric Daoist priest who was his master had begun digging up medicinal herbs and boiling them together so that he could bathe in it. Senior Yu Ren would take up thorns and wooden sticks and beat him so as to toughen his body. In these ten-odd years, the people he was most familiar with were these three people in the old temple and the smell that he was most familiar with was the smell of books, medicine and wooden sticks.

After a long period of treating and beating, his illness had not been cured and it was impossible for him to obtain the innate divine strength of that demi-human youth, but his originally incomparably feeble body was at least no longer as weak as an ordinary person's. It could even be said that his body was slightly stronger than normal. Although he was only healthy and strong on the surface, it still made him very happy.

A youth that been ill since he was a child and then been enveloped by a dark shadow at the age of ten would certainly care more about his body than other people, pay more attention to the details. Thus, today at Star Seizer Academy, when he silently walked up to the millstone, he was only thinking about using his own strength to pass this assessment.

He wanted to lifted up this heavy millstone to prove some things to himself and simultaneously express his gratitude to his master and senior.

.....

.....

One step, two steps, three steps, four steps.

Chen Changsheng's breathing grew heavier and heavier, his face more and more unsightly. The black hair bound tightly in a bun had long since been drenched in sweat, but the expression in his eyes was still calm and assured.

The cheers and encouragement from the two sides of the stone steps had already come to a stop. Everyone was looking at the bowed youth as he strenuously walked forward, trembling and swaying his way up the stone steps. They were very concerned and yet filled with admiration. There were several times when it seemed like that youth was about to fall, but he seemed to pull strength from some place and actually endured!

The military instructor at the top of the steps looked at Chen Changsheng, his eyes filled with admiration.

.....

.....

Seven steps, eight steps, nine steps.

Chen Changsheng's steps had become slower and slower.

The praise in the military instructor's eyes was growing ever more. He was very surprised by the level this youth had shown—as a member of the military, he cared about the willpower and bravery that Chen Changsheng showed. He had already decided. Even if Chen Changsheng could not bring the millstone to the top of the steps, he would still let him pass this preliminary examination. As for if it would affect the academy and the Great Zhou military's reputation...

The military instructor gazed at the nervous crowd and his heart

felt a little more at ease. He thought to himself that it shouldn't be. It seemed that the vast majority of the crowd believed the same as he did.

An earnest and hardworking child was worthy of a special reward.

.....

.....

While he thought about these things, the military instructor became somewhat absentminded. He wasn't looking at the stone steps until at a certain point, he awoke from his stupor and realized that the faces of the crowd had abruptly changed.

He turned his head and saw that there was an extra person by his side.

It was an extremely exhausted youth, drenched in sweat.

The military instructor thought that he didn't have to make things difficult for himself anymore. He smiled and patted the youth on the shoulder.

Chen Changsheng had walked to the top of the steps.

That weighty millstone lay at his feet.

He had succeeded.

Chapter 9 – Did I Do Something Wrong?

Chen Changsheng had successfully entered the formal entrance examination for the Star Seizer Academy. This time, it was not like the Heavenly Dao Academy where he had been greeted by ridicule and cold gazes. What awaited him were earnest hopes and warm, encouraging gazes. This made him feel very warm and very determined, putting him in an excellent state of mind.

When the various schools of the capital recruited students, they emphasized different things. The Heavenly Dao Academy stressed the teachings of the Orthodoxy and talent in cultivation. Star Seizer Academy did not care as much about cultivation. The Great Zhou Army had always believed that cultivation was something to worry about after entering the academy. They cared more about the military achievements of those examinees, as well as their sense of discipline. For this reason, the test for Star Seizer Academy did not have as many questions as that of the Heavenly Dao Academy, but the form of writing questions, and even one's name, was subject to an incredibly strict standard. In addition, the questions primarily emphasized battle simulations and battle analysis.

If Chen Changsheng could be said to have a talent, then his memorization of those many books from the time that he was a child could be said to be his greatest talent. Just like with the Heavenly Dao Academy test, the moment he opened up the scroll, he found the first question he saw to be very familiar. The Three Thousand Great Daos were all-encompassing—this could be said with certainty. The contents of the countless fields of study which were as numerous as the stars in the sky were all within them, so it was only a matter of course that those famous military strategies and those renowned battles from history were also included. As for

the war between the humans and the demons, it was even more so described in exquisite detail. He remembered those things, so he naturally wouldn't answer incorrectly.

Chen Changsheng very smoothly concluded the examination and then went with his fellow test-takers to the front of the Military Discipline Building to await the announcement of the final round of results. Standing in front of a statue of a divine beast that represented the strict military discipline of the Great Zhou Army, he began to recall the contents of the test and confirmed to himself that there shouldn't be any difficulty with entering the Star Seizer Academy. Relaxing somewhat, he looked at that sour-faced demi-human youth and then stood on his tiptoes to give the youth a few kind pats on the shoulder in consolation—it was clear to see that this demi-human youth with innately divine strength did not have too much understanding of the military strategies and battles of humans, and had tested rather poorly.

The sun was about to set behind the mountains and its warm light illuminated the cold iron fence that lay between the divine beast and the Military Discipline Building. The light caused a marvelous and enchanting feeling to arise. As Chen Changsheng stood in the light and gazed at that stone wall which was still as empty as an open field, his face was brimming with happy smiles and expectations for the future.

But he did not know that soon after, he would still receive bitter disappointment.

.....

.....

"Why?"

That officer who had been in charge of supervising the millstone-lifting assessment, as well as that other solemn-faced military instructor, stood in front of a desk, asking the middle-aged general sitting behind it. This officer's face was abnormally ashen, making it blindingly obvious that he was just barely suppressing his anger.

The middle-aged general was expressionless, his eyebrows like two ink silkworms. Unangered and mighty, he listened to his subordinate's indignant questions. He slightly wrinkled his brow and said, "Is this how you ask questions to your superior?"

The two military instructors halted at these words. One of them pointed out of the building at the setting sun and said, "Although we are the only ones that have seen that exam paper, many of our colleagues are paying close attention to that examinee called Chen Changsheng. Although my manners may be rude, if our colleagues were to find out this conclusion, they would also have similar questions."

The middle-aged general asked, "In the end, he's a youth that hasn't even succeeded at Purification. Why do you care about him so much?"

That military instructor angrily took one step forward, stabbing his finger out at that exam paper on the table which had been kneaded around so much that it was basically waste paper. He said,

"Sir, you have also seen that exam paper. Sir should clearly understand that in these past ten-odd years, in all the previous entrance examinations, there has never been such a perfect exam paper. Whether it's adherence to the writing format or analysis of battles, there is not a single gap, not a single miswritten character. Even his brushstrokes were exactly the right thickness. Yes, it is impossible for that child to become a heroic and powerful Divine General like Sir, but he can definitely become one of the finest staff officers!"

The middle-aged general silently contemplated this, then said, "This order came from the palace. I have no need to explain it to you."

That military instructor was astonished by these words. After a while, he awoke from his daze and, his voice a little heavier, said, "But...I need to give that child an explanation."

The middle-aged general lifted his head and glanced at him. "Then have him come over. I will give him an explanation."

.....

.....

As he walked into the strict building and saw the candle burning on the table, Chen Changsheng was silent. The two fists hanging by his side gradually clenched tighter. His face was rather pale, perhaps out of exhaustion or anger, or maybe both. When he saw that the stone wall still did not have his name, he was truly

incredibly furious, countless times more furious than yesterday when he had encountered those contemptuous and cold gazes in the Divine General's Estate.

Because he had extreme expectations of entering Star Seizer Academy, and he had extreme expectations for Star Seizer Academy, and now all his expectations, in that moment he saw that list, were completely turned into disappointment. The efforts he had paid for this seemed to have become a joke. Just why had all this happened?

He required an explanation.

The middle-aged general seated behind the table said he would give him an explanation, and he wanted to know what it would be.

"My apologies."

The middle-aged general stood and stared coldly at him like a fierce beast staring down at a little white rabbit, but the two words he said were 'my apologies'.

"As a soldier of the Great Zhou, I must betray my own principles. My deepest apologies.

"My actions may harm the reputation of Star Seizer Academy. My deepest apologies.

"You have the ability and a future. You are but a child, but I must

temporarily put a halt to your future. My apologies.

"I cannot tell you why this is. My apologies.

"But I believe that you will quickly find out the reason. I hope that you will be able to give me an opportunity to amend my mistakes."

After Chen Changsheng finished listening to these words, he remained silent, then turned and left.

.....

.....

The next day at five o'clock in the morning, Chen Changsheng woke up as promptly as he had woken up yesterday and as he had for the previous fourteen years of his life. He washed his face and rinsed his mouth, put on his clothes, cleared his heart, and then left the inn, continuing on his path of education.

Following the order of the list, he went to two other schools. The bitter experiences at the Heavenly Dao Academy and the Star Seizer Academy had naturally made him rather depressed and unhappy, but he was the person in the world that most valued time. He was not willing to waste his time on meaningless anger and depression, only on worthwhile subjects. This sort of appearance gave people the feeling that Chen Changsheng was a person undaunted by setbacks.

Yesterday's bitter experiences did not seem to affect him in any way. He assiduously prepared, and prudently took the exam. Using the knowledge stored up in his mind and his tenacious will, he was able to successfully take the entrance examinations for these two schools—from the moment he saw the contents of these tests, he believed that he could successfully pass—then without any sort of surprise, he failed to make the list.

After his two previous experiences, Chen Changsheng was no longer disappointed, or perhaps it could be said that he was already numb to it.

He keenly understood that there was definitely someone secretly targeting him. As for who...that answer was also extremely obvious.

At dusk, he walked out of the fourth school and finally saw that carriage from the Divine General's Estate, displaying that old and dull blood-red Phoenix crest which nevertheless was extremely disturbing. Of course, he only saw it because the carriage had been specifically parked in front of the school's gate precisely so that he could see it.

When Chen Changsheng saw that carriage, he knew the answer was about to be revealed.

Although he had already guessed at the answer, in the end, it was a rather different feeling from when he saw those exam papers.

The middle-aged woman emerged from the carriage and walked over to him.

"You are just a child...simply not worthy of making the Divine General's Estate do so many things."

The middle-aged woman walked up in front of him and said impassively, "But we still did all these things because we were very concerned that you were too young to fully recognize the situation. Thus, we very diligently displayed our power for you to see. You should be fully aware now that as long as we do not agree, there will never be a day in the Great Zhou Dynasty where you can stick out your head."

Chen Changsheng remembered her. In the Divine General's Estate, she had been the first person he met. He clasped his hands and bowed in greeting, then straightened his body and said nothing.

A strange expression flashed across the middle-aged woman's eyes. She did not imagine that even in this situation, this youth would still be so calm, even remembering to bow to her. This sort of composure truly made one feel helpless, even uneasy, but she had to finish this task.

"What we want, you should clearly know...if you agree, everything that we have taken from you can be returned. Heavenly Dao Academy, Star Seizer Academy, Temple Seminary...you can choose whichever one you want. If you want to learn something, you can learn it. If you want to follow some teacher, you can follow. After you complete your studies, if you want to enter the

army or enter the Orthodoxy, or enter the court to become an official...all of this can be yours to choose."

The middle-aged women said with a solemn expression, "And if you do not agree, the experiences of the past two days will be a scene that will repeat itself for the rest of your life."

Chen Changsheng continued to remain silent, saying nothing.

The middle-aged woman continued, "You are a smart person and should understand very well what you should choose."

Chen Changsheng looked at her and finally said one sentence: "Senior wrote in his notes that smart people don't live happy lives, so it's better to pretend to be confused."

The middle-aged woman chuckled, then said, "But you really are very obedient, very smart. You didn't tell the matter of the engagement to anybody...or else you would already be dead."

Chen Changsheng finally confirmed that in the past two days, someone from the Divine General of the East's Estate had always been following him.

The middle-aged woman continued, "Of course, you must not misunderstand...what I spoke of just now was only a possibility. The Divine Empress sits upon the throne and the Divine General's Estate has always followed the law. It has never bullied anyone, only desiring to help others. We only require that you pay

something...something that you were originally prepared to pay, and then we can help you obtain much."

What he had originally been prepared to pay was naturally that marriage contract.

They could help him obtain much, but those things were things he could have obtained to begin with.

Chen Changsheng suddenly felt that when compared to the bustling capital, the forests in the mountains behind the old temple were rather beautiful.

He gazed at the middle-aged woman and suddenly opened his mouth. "Nanny, did I do something wrong?"

The middle-aged woman was at a loss, finding herself momentarily speechless.

She had lived in the capital for more than a hundred years. She had watched the young lady marry into the Xu Estate and watched the son-in-law grapple for better and better prospects. She had grown accustomed to seeing the high officials of the imperial court and those otherworldly experts. She had grown used to mutual deception and crafty plots, but she had never imagined that she would hear such words. These...seemingly childish, but incredibly difficult-to-answer words.

So she could not answer it.

Chapter 10 – What Day Will I Soar Up To The Azure Sky?

"It seems like I didn't do anything wrong."

Chen Changsheng looked at the middle-aged lady and said, "Since I didn't do anything wrong, why do I need to change anything?"

As he said these words, his expression did not change. Only his breathing had become somewhat more rough in a fashion that was very difficult for someone to notice.

Only his senior brother knew that this little detail signified that he was already extremely angry.

The middle-aged woman took on a much more solemn expression and asked, "Are you not afraid of death?"

"I...am very afraid of death." Chen Changsheng's voice was as unyielding as iron. "...So as soon as I came to the capital, the first thing I did was go to the Divine General's estate to end the engagement, just like how after I tested into the Heavenly Dao Academy or Star Seizer Academy, I was prepared to choose a day to go back once more and end the engagement...but I must sincerely apologize, I really have changed my mind now."

The middle-aged lady stared at him, her gaze slightly chilly.

Chen Changsheng calmly returned her gaze and said, "Unless you acknowledge that it was you that did wrong and remember my name."

The middle-aged woman was quiet for a long time.

"In fact, I very much admire you."

She looked at Chen Changsheng with complex emotions in her eyes. "Over these past few days, I have been living your life with you. I've never encountered a youth at your age who is so disciplined. And in those four entrance examinations, you displayed things that are rarely seen, very worthy of praise...there were even times when I thought, if I had a daughter, it would not be a bad choice if I married her off to you."

Chen Changsheng didn't know what to say, but once being complimented, one must always give some sort of response. After thinking about it, he said two words, "Thank you."

At this sort of occasion, to say 'thank you' was somewhat amusing, somewhat cute, and very respectful.

The middle-aged woman pointed behind him at the stone wall behind the school's gate and said, "But regretfully, no one in the world believes that the young lady should be married off to you."

Chen Changsheng followed her hand and only saw that dense collection of names written upon the stone wall. This was behind

the main gate to the school, so if it was not the list of successful entrants, then what list was it? He suddenly recalled that yesterday behind the main gates of the Heavenly Dao Academy and the Star Seizer Academy, he had also seen similar stone walls, both of which had been engraved with many names.

At the top of this stone wall, a set of words was engraved: "[Good wind, let me borrow your strength to soar up to the azure sky.](#)"

(TN: This line is from a poem in 'A Dream of the Red Chamber', otherwise known as 红楼梦, specifically Chapter Seventy. 青云 means 'azure sky' and can also be taken to mean 'a high government position'.)

Seeing this line of words, Chen Changsheng remembered certain records in the books and realized that what was engraved on the stone wall was the legendary Proclamation of Azure Sky.

The experts of the continent were innumerable, but geniuses always began as youths—the Proclamation of Azure Sky was a ranking of experts under the age of twenty. Those names that appeared on the Proclamation of Azure Sky were all without exception those inner sect disciples that had received the full attention and care of their respective sects and kingdoms, or else abnormally gifted geniuses. As long as they did not fall and were not eliminated midway, these names would all ultimately become true experts.

The schools of the capital as well as the schools in other places would all have the Proclamation of Azure Sky placed near their main gates. The schools wanted to use these dazzling and brilliant names to excite their students into grasping bravery and entering,

and increase the camaraderie with their fellow students. But the final result was not very good—these students clearly understood that they had no chance of entering the Proclamation of Azure Sky. Those names filled them with envy and reverence, and even despair.

The Proclamation of Azure Sky did not ask about knowledge, cultivation, teachers, or gender, only whether one was weak or strong. The only restriction was that those upon the list could not exceed the age of twenty. There were many cases where people of relatively low cultivation defeated experts of high cultivation and were thus ranked higher. This garnered many comments expressing discontent.

Back when the Pavilion of Heavenly Secrets first released this ranking, this sort of evaluation criteria drew many questions, but the Pavilion of Heavenly Secrets's answer was simple and powerful—one's level of knowledge or cultivation, or even training, spirit, and temperament, was unimportant alone. Only when they were finally combined together did they form a comprehensive strength, and what the Proclamation of Azure Sky evaluated was comprehensive strength. And the best method of judging this was only victory or defeat.

Chen Changsheng's gaze moved across those names on the Proclamation of Azure Sky. Those names were all very strange to him. From time to time, he would spot a particularly unusual surname, perhaps belonging to some youthful expert from the land of demi-humans, or it might be a young genius from the Earth Tribe that lived in the forests of the south. Suddenly, he saw at the thirty-sixth rank the name of Tang Tang and remembered how back in the Heavenly Dao Academy, that blue-clothed youth had

explained the origins of his name of Tang Thirty-Six. He couldn't help but laugh, very much feeling the pride and luster of this name in Tang Thirty-Six's place.

Finally, his gaze came to the highest part of the stone wall, seeing that name that hung up there. It was so high up that it seemed rather lonely, so lonely that it seemed even more proud and cold. It was a name that he knew, a name that he should be very familiar with: Xu Yourong.

"The Proclamation of Azure Sky records all of the young geniuses of the world. My Great Zhou Dynasty is bursting with talented individuals. From the divine capital alone, there are ten-odd people on the ranking. The Heavenly Dao Academy has four and the Star Seizer Academy has three, but compared to those places in the south such as the Longevity Sect and Scholartree Manor, this is not too exceptional. Only after the young lady entered the rankings did the north and south finally become even..."

The middle-aged lady looked at the wall. It was difficult to hide her pride, but there was no need to hide it. She indifferently said, "...Two years ago, the young lady entered the ranking for the first time, directly ranking at first place. From that day onwards, it never fell once. Those young geniuses behind her don't even think about catching up to her—even drawing close to her is very difficult."

Chen Changsheng silently looked up at the name at the very top of the stone wall. Over these past four years, he had kept that marriage contract with him and had looked through it many times. He knew her maiden name and was also well aware of how old she

was. By his calculations, this young lady of the Xu Estate had entered the Proclamation of Azure Sky at the age of twelve and had since been unequaled...sure enough, the blood of the true Phoenix was incredibly extraordinary.

The middle-aged woman withdrew her gaze and turned to Chen Changsheng, respectfully saying, "You truly are very outstanding. Without even succeeding at Purification, you still have the ability to enter those schools and academies. However, this disparity between you and my young lady is too vast...it has nothing to do with effort, nothing to do with talent, nothing to do with working hard. If you continue to forge ahead on your path, I believe that you will be able to reach a very high peak, but the young lady will have long since departed from that place. If you continue to obstinately pursue her, you will inevitably incur lightning sent down from the heavens."

Chen Changsheng was silent, and then he thought about that reincarnated dragon that the maid Shuang'er had mentioned, that genius who was publicly acknowledged together with Xu Yourong to be a match made in heaven.

"Qiushan Jun..."

The middle-aged woman did not think that he would know of Qiushan Jun's existence. She expressionlessly replied, "Two years ago, Qiushan Jun had always remained at the top of the Proclamation of Azure Sky."

Chen Changsheng asked, "Why did he leave the ranking? Because he did not want to lose to Young Lady Xu?"

The middle-aged woman replied, "Two years ago, Qiushan Jun advanced early past the latter stage of Meditation. Now he is the shining star of the Proclamation of Golden Distinction."

Chen Changsheng sighed, realizing that it would be very difficult to find any solace from this matter. Those people were simply too high up, while he, let alone achieving a place on the Proclamation of Azure Sky, was even finding it an arduous task to get into the lists of successful entrants for these schools.

He asked, "Previously, Miss said that the disparity between me and Young Lady Xu had nothing to do with talent or effort. Then, what does it have to do with?"

The middle-aged woman answered, "...It only has to do with fate. Even if you were the most outstanding normal person, you would still be just a normal person, while from the moment my young lady was born, she was not an ordinary person. You were born a human, she was born a Phoenix. The distance between the two is like that between heaven and earth."

"So...it turned out be fate again, huh."

Chen Changsheng sighed regretfully, then lapsed into a long silence. Finally, he gazed at the middle-aged woman and said, "Although Miss probably won't believe me, I came to the capital for the precise purpose of changing my fate...although it has nothing to do with the engagement, the word 'fate' really lacks any sort of persuasive power to me."

The middle-aged woman was slightly stunned. She did not expect that even after she had explained everything so clearly, he still was not willing to let go.

As the sun set in the west, Chen Changsheng walked to the other side of the street, following the crowd to an even more distant place.

The middle-aged woman noticed that at the very start, his head was somewhat lowered and his body was somewhat crooked, making him look rather lonely and exhausted. But soon after, his body gradually straightened and his head gradually lifted up, and he once again looked calmly upon the crowd and the distant setting sun.

As the youth's body was bathed in the light of the sunset, it seemed to be ablaze.

.....

.....

"I've never encountered such a disciplined youth. His diet and daily life are all strictly controlled by himself. He doesn't have a single bad hobby or addiction. He treasures his time, so much so that I always feel like something is chasing him, or else constantly lashing him with a whip. And yet he doesn't give off the feeling of apprehension to the people around him. It's easy to see that he very much enjoys the pleasure of living, or perhaps he enjoys life

itself...it's just that he's a little of a clean freak. On the first day, I counted that he washed his hands seven times, and he owns at least five handkerchiefs."

In the Divine General's estate, the middle-aged woman stood in front of Madam Xu and expressionlessly expounded, "Madam, I must note that this child is not bad. If we give him the opportunity, he will definitely mature quickly. If he were to have a few more lucky encounters, then perhaps he could have excellent future prospects."

Madam Xu had not imagined that this woman who had loyally followed her for several decades would actually speak on this child's behalf. Wrinkling her brow, she asked, "What are you thinking about?"

The middle-aged woman said, "Of course we can't marry off the young lady to him...but rather than this current beating and humiliation, wouldn't it be better to just kill him? Or else later on if he gets the chance to reverse his fortunes, although the estate will not be afraid, it'll still bring us some trouble. Besides...I think that this youth's conduct is not bad. There's no need to act like this."

This sort of logic would probably be very difficult for the average person to grasp, but Madam Xu understood. She had not imagined that this woman would truly praise Chen Changsheng. Then she recalled those words Xu Shiji said that night in his study and gave her a profound glance. She said, "There are many people watching the Divine General's estate...especially those old fools who can't let things go. If a scandal were to come from the estate, even if it has

no effect on the grand scheme of things, the Divine Empress will assuredly be displeased. Thus, we must conduct ourselves prudently. To use the most peaceful methods to obtain that marriage contract would naturally be for the best. However, if, in the end, that youth continues to hold on to his pitiful self-respect or attempts to obtain an even greater profit from us, then we can only let him noiselessly die. That will also bring its own set of troubles, but to remove the source of these troubles is also a method."

.....

.....

Shuang'er returned to her room and then stood by her table, gazing off vacantly at nothing for a while. Thinking about that conversation she had heard by the door to the Madam's rooms, she felt her emotions to be in a rather disorderly and uneasy state. After downing half a pot of cold tea, she still felt like she hadn't cooled down enough. She knew that for her to be able to eavesdrop on such a conversation was only because the Madam had wanted her to hear it...the Madam knew that she often sent letters to the young lady and so had deliberately let her listen. This was naturally so that she could tell the young lady about this matter, the equivalent of informing her. It was naturally impossible for the young lady to be married off to that fellow called Chen Changsheng, but was it necessary to use such method? Would the young lady agree?

She walked over to the table, spread out a piece of paper, dipped her brush in ink, and then after a few moments of contemplation,

began to write a letter.

Chapter 11 – These Two Kids

It was still obviously the beginning of spring, but today was rather hot. Chen Changsheng didn't know if it was because of the weather or if it was because his mood was off, but in brief, by the time he had walked back to the inn, his clothes were soaked in sweat. They had also become somewhat filthy after collecting dust from the road. As a lover of cleanliness, his mood became even more depressed, right up until he saw that person.

It was a youth dressed in blue. He stood right in the middle of the lobby, his chin angled slightly upwards, his expression indifferent. He simply didn't care about how much inconvenience his standing in this place would cause to others. He was proud like a wild crane. Nowhere in his eyes could be found those chickens that were at this very moment lowering their heads to peck at their food.

This inn was close to the Mausoleum of Books, so many people passed by it. It happened to be precisely meal time, so the people coming in and out of the inn were like a tide, and yet no one dared to approach him. The blue-clothed youth was like one of those lonely stone pillars in the Luo river, parting the tide when struck. The scene was somewhat strange—Chen Changsheng recognized this blue-clothed youth, but those people in the inn didn't. Then the reason for such a strange scene as this was presumably that something had already occurred. He was rather astonished. How could he have appeared here? Did he come here looking for him? But why did he want to find him?

He walked up to the blue-clothed youth, bowed in greeting, and then didn't know what he should say next.

The blue-clothed youth was precisely that Tang Thirty-Six who happened to meet Chen Changsheng at the entrance exam for the Heavenly Dao Academy. His name originated from his ranking on the Proclamation of Azure Sky. Amusingly, he was like Chen Changsheng in that neither of them was very skilled at communication. After returning the greeting, he also didn't know what to say, and the scene very quickly became awkward.

The inn was dead silent. Not daring to disturb Tang Thirty-Six, the customers in the inn all had their heads lowered as they ate their food, not daring to make the slightest sound or commentary. But there were many gazes resting on those two youths. Many people were very curious to see what would happen next.

An awkward scene was a very embarrassing matter. An awkward scene under the gazes of numerous onlookers reached the peak of embarrassment, especially when Tang Thirty-Six wanted to show his open-mindedness and familiarize Chen Changsheng with a side of himself. Fortunately, in the end, he was still a bit older than Chen Changsheng, so after a moment's contemplation, he finally found a question to break this awkward atmosphere. He said, "A guest has come, but you don't invite him to sit?"

This caused Chen Changsheng to awake from his stupor and invite him into his room. Taking out a dozen or so copper coins, he asked the waiter of the inn to brew a pot of tea. In a moment, the tea was brewed. There was one table, one teapot, and two tea cups filled to seventy percent full. Chen Changsheng invited him to drink, and then the situation once again fell into awkwardness.

A long period of silence was really very embarrassing, and Tang Thirty-Six truly found it hard to bear. Going straight to the point, he asked, "You haven't succeeded in passing an entrance examination yet, right?"

Chen Changsheng honestly replied, "It's my fourth time failing to make the list."

After a period of silence, Tang Thirty-Six said, "I know it's because the Divine General of the East's estate is moving behind the scenes."

Chen Changsheng raised his head. He was surprised that this youth actually knew of this inside information about this matter, but he didn't know how much this youth knew. Now carrying a hint of suspicion, his gaze was naturally somewhat different from before.

Tang Thirty-Six's impression was that Chen Changsheng was a normal youth with promising talent, an amiable disposition, and a laudable spirit. Now he came to the sudden realization that this kid's gaze was as sharp as a dazzling blade. He couldn't help but be a little surprised and narrowed his eyes. He became even more interested in what Chen Changsheng was hiding.

What made Tang Thirty-Six somewhat depressed was that when he said, 'Divine General of the East's estate', Chen Changsheng was obviously shaken, but he didn't give the answer that Tang Thirty-Six wanted, only remained silent like a useless quail. He was somewhat angry and his two eyebrows shot up like two swords being unsheathed as he yelled, "Could it be that you're not angry?"

That you're not furious?"

Chen Changsheng raised his head and glanced at him, and then slowly rolled his eyes.

Tang Thirty-Six was just then drinking tea and almost spit his tea out. He had not imagined that this old-fashioned and even inflexible kid would also have this sort of childish side.

Chen Changsheng thought, I'm so depressed that I feel like I'm about to die, but do I really have to let you know?

He wasn't even willing to reveal this matter of the engagement to other people, so why would he reveal that it was the engagement that caused this injustice of him failing four entrance examinations?

At this point, the engagement was still a secret between him and the Divine General of the East's estate—even if the Divine General of the East's estate continuously beat him down, even if that middle-aged lady's words made him very angry, he was still not prepared to announce this matter to the world. It wasn't because he was scared of the Divine General's estate's threats, and even less that he was afraid that the Divine General's estate would have him killed. It was because, in the end, he still believed that he would return the marriage contract to the Divine General's estate, so what need was there to make noise about this matter until it was the talk of the streets? The young lady of the Xu clan might be cold and aloof, as vile as her parents, but since the Divine General's estate would have apologized by then, was there any need to make it harder for this girl to marry someone else in the future?

Yes, he believed that he would ultimately end the engagement because he firmly believed that the Divine General's estate would one day apologize to him. In addition, he didn't want his own name to become widely known because of the young lady of the Xu family. Perhaps it was pride, perhaps it was stubbornness, but in brief, he wanted to persevere for a while. His view of this world was still that he should persevere upon this path of innocence.

.....

.....

Very interestingly, Chen Changsheng had clearly said nothing and Tang Thirty-Six knew absolutely nothing, but Tang Thirty-Six had managed to roughly comprehend Chen Changsheng's intention. Without cause, he was filled with even more admiration for Chen Changsheng. Draining the cup of warm tea in one gulp, he patted Chen Changsheng on the shoulder and said, "I really admire you."

Although he was a young genius ranked thirty-sixth on the Proclamation of Azure Sky, an existence that stood amongst the human crowd like a crane that no one dared to provoke, in the end, he was still a youth. As a result, his actions somewhat feigned maturity and as he said those words, his gaze and posture made it seem like he was looking down on Chen Changsheng. If it were another person, they would probably feel very uncomfortable, and perhaps some people would directly get angry, but Chen Changsheng did not. He understood that this kid was expressing kindness and consolation, only it was very obvious that this kid

rarely did this sort of thing and so came off as rather clumsy.

He said, "Thank you."

Tang Thirty-Six replied, "Verbally expressing thanks is not enough. Treat me to a meal."

It was still a very clumsy way of showing kindness and a desire to make friends—Chen Changsheng suddenly felt sympathetic for this kid. He thought to himself, I'm afraid this kid spent his entire life cultivating. No wonder his cultivation is so profound at such an age, but his way of dealing with others is a complete mess. I really don't know how he'll deal with it in the future.

He had always thought about things in a very focused manner and so looked rather stupefied. Tang Thirty-Six couldn't help but shake his head at this sight, very much sympathizing with this kid. He thought to himself, I'm afraid this kid spent his entire life reading books. No wonder he could remember so many books and teachings at such a young age. His way of dealing with others is a complete mess. I really don't know how he'll deal with it in the future.

In brief, neither kid had the qualification to sympathize with the other kid. Receiving each other's sympathetic and friendly intentions, they once again began to continue that social interaction they had started in the Heavenly Dao Academy.

Chen Changsheng had the inn waiter bring over the menu. After calculating that the money his master had given as well as that

which his senior brother had privately gifted him was enough for him to live out several years of good life in the capital, he didn't spend any more time thinking about it and pushed the menu over to Tang Thirty-Six. "Order what you want...yeah, this is the first time I've ever treated anyone to a meal."

He had no idea that these words caused Tang Thirty-Six to sympathize with him even more. Tang Thirty-Six thought, just what hole in a mountain did this kid come out of?

Chapter 12 – A Friend That Makes Others Speechless (I)

Chen Changsheng had said 'order what you want'. In Tang Thirty-Six's view, the words 'order what you want' could equally mean ordering whatever dish he wanted or interacting with him whenever he wanted. Filled with sympathy for Chen Changsheng, Tang Thirty-Six did not pay much attention to price when he ordered dishes. Taking up the menu, he casually ordered a few of the inn's signature dishes. The first two dishes were flying sparrow soup and a steamed two-headed fish...as he was ordering, he glimpsed that Chen Changsheng's brow was creased. Thinking that he didn't have enough money, Tang Thirty-Six felt a little regretful. He said to the waiter, "I don't need the double-headed fish anymore, switch it out for a perch. And also...switch the flying sparrow soup for water shield soup."

Just as expected, Chen Changsheng's brows relaxed.

Tang Thirty-Six smiled, thinking to himself, I really can observe everything down to the smallest detail and have a good understanding of others. He casually said, "Also add on a bowl of plum blossom dumplings with deer meat filling."

Chen Changsheng wrinkled his brow.

Tang Thirty-Six glanced at him, then said, "Change that to...bring a bowl of braised pork."

Chen Changsheng's brow was still wrinkled.

Tang Thirty-Six was rather displeased. He thought to himself, it's a bowl of fatty pork; on a normal day at home, I would even be too lazy to eat it, and you still aren't willing to pay for it?

He said to the waiter, "Bring over a plate of cold fishwort in sauce! And add on a plate of pig ears in chili oil!"

Chen Changsheng still had that same appearance, his face brimming with disapproval.

Tang Thirty-Six was really quite annoyed now. He said, "It seems like this is your first time treating someone else to a meal and you don't quite understand the ways of the world, so I won't say anything about it."

Chen Changsheng was a little surprised. He asked, "Where was I wrong?"

Tang Thirty-Six scolded, "Just because you don't have enough money doesn't mean you should show such an expression in front of your guest! It really makes people irritated! Since you're a man, your head can be cut, your blood can flow, but you must never lose face! Even if in a little while you have to sell off your big furskin coat, so what?"

He had believed this reasoning of his to be very proper and thought the feeling of teaching a friend to be rather nice. Chen Changsheng, on the other hand, felt it to be somewhat weird. He asked, "Is this what it means to slap your face to make it look more

imposing?"

Tang Thirty-Six was a little incensed at these words and asked, "Where did these words come from?"

"This is a common saying in Xining," Chen Changsheng sincerely explained.

Tang Thirty-Six was stunned as he thought to himself, is this what I was asking about? Just as he was about to fly into rage, he heard Chen Changsheng say something else.

"...Also, I don't have a big furskin coat."

The room became somewhat quiet.

Tang Thirty-Six forgot about getting angry. He thought that this matter was truly far too distressing and this kid was really too pitiable.

He had only seen elders and senior brothers of his clan and school who were down on their luck frequently taking up their furskins and exchanging them for wine and food, but no one had ever told him how people who were so poor to not even have this would treat someone to a meal without losing face. As for him...in the first place, he had never lacked for money. Secondly, he had never treated anyone to a meal before.

He looked at Chen Changsheng and firmly said, "I will treat you

for this meal."

Chen Changsheng found this a little odd and asked, "Why?"

Tang Thirty-Six gazed at him with a gentle expression. "You don't have a big fur coat, so you definitely don't have any other valuable things. How could I let you treat me?"

Somewhat innocently, Chen Changsheng said, "But...I do have the money."

.....

.....

The scene once again became awkward.

Tang Thirty-Six had a rather ugly look on his face. He asked, "Then previously when I was ordering food, why was your expression so nasty?"

Chen Changsheng recalled the previous scene and comprehended what was going on. Rather embarrassed, he explained, "Because... you ordered flying sparrow soup, famous for being very warm and known for its excessive dry properties. In the autumn and winter, it's very helpful, but now it's spring. Drinking this sort of soup can easily cause an excess of heat and isn't good for the body."

For this kid to be considering these sorts of questions was completely out of Tang Thirty-Six's expectations. He asked, "Could it be that all the other dishes are no good too? Those are all signature dishes though."

"The double-headed fish is a fish from the deep ocean, living off a diet of fish, shrimp, and sea snakes, so its body has accumulated a lot of poison. It would be fine if it were boiled in water, and it would be perfectly fine as soup, but to steam it in broth is not healthy. In addition, we are just two people, and too many meat dishes is also unhealthy. Especially the braised pork, which uses the pork belly. It's far too fatty, so it's best not to eat it."

Finally, Chen Changsheng added, "The pig ears in chili oil really are rather good, but chili oil really isn't. As for the fishwort, eating too much will upset the stomach and disorder the heart. For the body, it's also..."

"Stop!"

Tang Thirty-Six couldn't hear anymore—Chen Changsheng's words were like a fly, buzzing round and round his ear, making him feel very uncomfortable. Anyone would become unhappy if they were happily ordering food and heard the phrase 'it's not healthy' repeated so many times—it was naturally impossible for every type of food to be healthy, but who would pay attention to these things when eating? And to focus on it with such severity? If Chen Changsheng were some old man who valued his health, that would be fine, but he was clearly just a fourteen-year-old youth...

"So what if it's not good for your body? Don't tell me I'll die if I

eat it?"

Chen Changsheng earnestly said, "You won't die on the spot, but you'll definitely die a little earlier."

Tang Thirty-Six felt like he had nothing to reply to this. Very curious, he asked, "Then what do you eat normally?"

Chen Changsheng replied, "Two taels of meat, beef or lamb being best; two catties of vegetables, wild herbs being best; sweet potatoes and grains can be eaten at will; every two days, I eat one freshwater fish, with scales is best; lastly, I don't drink soup."

Tang Thirty-Six asked, "How long have you eaten this way?"

Chen Changsheng replied, "From the moment I could remember, I've always eaten this way."

This time it was Tang Thirty-Six's turn to wrinkle his brow.

He felt that these foods even sounded bad. If he really ate these for fourteen years, just how miserable of a life would that be?

He felt himself sympathizing more and more with this kid.

.....

.....

As they ate, the two were very quiet. Tang Thirty-Six felt that the dishes were too ordinary while Chen Changsheng felt that the dishes were too unhealthy. In brief, they were each dissatisfied in their own way. Of course, it was impossible to reconcile these two matters. The flavor of food and the pursuit of health was always the area of the [three outlooks of humans](#) with the fiercest clashes.

(TN: The three outlooks are the outlook of the world, the outlook of life, and the outlook of value.)

Just like this, Chen Changsheng's first time treating someone to a meal hastily concluded. With two full cups of tea in front of them, the two casually chatted about the contents of the Heavenly Dao Academy's entrance exam. Tang Thirty-Six also asked about the particulars of Chen Changsheng's experiences at the Star Seizer Academy and the other two schools. He displayed his incomprehension and doubt about how the Great Zhou military could also be influenced by the Divine General's estate. Afterwards, they ran out of things to talk about.

Newly acquainted friends in their first few conversations would always give stories from their childhood and their experiences growing up, seeking some common hobby. However, the stories that could be told by these two from their childhoods were so dull and monotonous they could make someone rise up in anger, so it was impossible for them to do this. In order to avoid the excessive embarrassment of looking each other in the eyes without anything to say, Tang Thirty-Six stood up and began walking around the room with his cup of tea. As he paced from the living room to the balcony and back, he thought, for this kid to be able afford such a large room with such high rent so close to the Mausoleum of

Books, it's obvious that he's not lacking in money. My previous misunderstanding was truly rather ridiculous.

When he wandered up to the display stand in the living room, Tang Thirty-Six's gaze inadvertently fell on the stand and found it impossible to pull away—there was a sword there.

That sword was very delicate, not much longer than an ordinary dagger. Moreover, it was very slender and gave off a very graceful air. The sheath was an ordinary leather sheath and the hilt of the sword was very ordinary. It gave off a thoroughly ordinary air without any place that could attract a gaze, and it lacked any dust or bloodstains. In brief, this sword was ordinary to the extreme, and yet it made him want to get close to it.

Tang Thirty-Six stretched out his hand to grip the dagger.

Chen Changsheng's hand obstructed him, gripping the handle of the dagger before he could.

Tang Thirty-Six glanced at him.

Chen Changsheng looked back at him and said, "This is mine."

Tang Thirty-Six was still holding the teacup. As the steam wafted up from the teacup, his handsome face amidst the steam seemed all the colder. "So I can't touch it?"

Chen Changsheng noticed that he was rather unhappy and

somewhat uneasy, but he continued to persist, "You should first ask me. After I agree, you can hold it."

Tang Thirty-Six drew back his right hand, flicked his sleeve and returned to his seat, placing the teacup in front of him on the table.

Chen Changsheng was somewhat embarrassed, feeling that he had done something wrong—actually, he didn't really think he had done something wrong, but this was his first friend after all. When he saw his friend being unhappy, he felt rather confused. Walking up to the table, he offered the dagger in his hand.

Tang Thirty-Six raised his head and glanced at him, then continued to ignore him.

Chen Changsheng moved the dagger even closer.

Tang Thirty-Six refused to take the dagger and said, "You do things without the slightest grace."

Chen Changsheng was helpless. He thought to himself, just who is lacking in grace here? Just who is acting all ill-tempered like a small child? He couldn't do anything except return to the stand and put the dagger back. Turning his head, he asked, "Did you come find me for something?"

"In the capital, since I've gotten to know a person like you, after hearing about this matter of yours, I would naturally come to see.

There's no need to thank me, I'm just that sort of passionate and generous person." With an indifferent expression, Tang Thirty-Six continued, "Of course, on the basis that I relatively admire you, you must know that I admire very few of my peers. You should feel honored."

Chen Changsheng was stunned and said, "Then...thank you?"

"Is saying thank you enough?"

"Didn't I just treat you to a meal?"

Tang Thirty-Six stood and said to him, "I've decided to accept you as my younger brother."

Chen Changsheng asked, "What does it mean to be your younger brother?"

Tang Thirty-Six very sincerely explained, "It means that from now on, you'll follow me as I mess around."

Chen Changsheng very sincerely explained, "That's not okay, I still have a lot of things to do. I don't have any time to give you."

Tang Thirty-Six was a very proud youth and took pity on Chen Changsheng as an unrecognized talent, this being the reason he would visit him at this inn. Since Chen Changsheng would not accept, he naturally had nothing more to say. He was just somewhat puzzled. "What things? Continuing to take entrance

exams? Just why do you need to get into these schools? What's the reason for your persistence?"

Chen Changsheng asked, "And you? What's your goal in the capital?"

"I want to take part in the Grand Examination, to take first place," Tang Thirty-Six declared proudly.

Suddenly, he remembered that young Phoenix in the south at Holy Maiden Peak. If she were to come back ahead of time...

"I want to take second place in the Grand Examination."

He corrected himself, but then he abruptly remembered Qiushan Jun. If that person participated in this year's Grand Examination...

"Fine, my goal is third place in the Grand Examination."

Tang Thirty-Six finally confirmed, "But in the end, what I want to do is inscribe my name on the monolith in front of the Mausoleum of Books."

"Really far-reaching and ambitious. Admirable, admirable."

Chen Changsheng sighed in admiration, then suddenly thought of a certain matter. "Then won't you have to change your name to Tang Three?"

Tang Thirty-Six couldn't find a response, so he changed the subject. "And you? Just what is your goal in coming to the capital?"

Chen Changsheng honestly said, "I also want to take part in the Grand Examination."

Tang Thirty-Six hadn't really imagined this, but he wasn't too shocked.

Chen Changsheng replied, "I've never thought about second or third place."

Tang Thirty-Six advised, "People truly have to know themselves, but you can't lose your self-confidence. Don't forget, you just need to enter the three banners of the Grand Examination to be able to enter the Mausoleum of Books..."

Speaking up to this point, his voice abruptly came to a halt, because Chen Changsheng once again spoke.

"I want to take first place."

Chen Changsheng looked at him and said, "I can't take second or third. I can only take first."

Silence.

Tang Thirty-Six was suddenly taken with the impulse to turn and leave.

He realized that today, he had often strayed into circumstances that made him speechless.

Because the things this kid did, the words that he said, often made him speechless and want to spit blood.

Chapter 13 - A Friend That Leaves You Wordless (Part 2)

“If my observations aren’t wrong, you should be..... an ordinary person!”

“Yes, I haven’t officially started cultivating.”

“The Grand Examination’s first place?”

“Yes, I can only get first place.”

Tang Thirty Six’s question was straight forward and sharp, but Chen Chang Sheng’s answer was serious and calm. It was like describing an extremely basic thing. Like how people should eat both meat and vegetables to keep balance within their body, don’t eat things that are too salty or oily, and should sleep early and wake up early. They would have a healthy body this way – Life was eat, drink, digest, and sleep. It’s not wrong. This attitude of viewing something formal as everyday life is nice – but the problem is, getting first place in the Grand Examination is not your ordinary everyday life.

Since he could only get first place, then he will get first place. This statement seemed logical and understandable, but it didn’t make any sense. Just like how a weak child could say he wants to pull out a whisker of the most powerful Golden Dragon and use it as a sword. It’s a nice fairytale, but if someone actually said that in real life, it would only be regarded as sleeptalking.

That person would be treated as mentally retarded or an idiot. Of course, he may also be a genius like no other.

There is a fine line between a genius and an idiot and that line is probability itself.

Then which side should a person like Chen Chang Sheng, who disregarded the line and believed in himself no matter what, be placed?

Tang Thirty Six is prideful and narcissistic, but today, he found a person who seemed as if he should be calm or perhaps stiff, innocent or perhaps naive, that made him feel an ultimate annihilation in the field of pride and narcissism. – Speaking logically, foolish words from an idiot can't move a true genius like him, but the problem was – when Chen Chang Sheng said a silly thing like this with his sincere and determined eyes, Tang Thirty Six couldn't rebuke or mock him. In the depths of his heart, he felt that the possibility of the impossible actually happening, might truly exist!

Why was this? He has never met a person like Chen Chang Sheng before. – He did things correctly in a correct way, therefore he was bold and he is righteous. – Therefore you can't find a way to reply to his comment. This wordless feeling, that's why Tang Thirty Six didn't reply and held his speech to himself. If Tang Thirty Six knew that Chen Chang Sheng left Madam Xu, the middle aged woman, and that maid Shuang Er at the Divine General's Estate, wordless as well, then he would feel comfort and become sympathetic towards them.

After finishing the tea and almost eating the tea leaves in the cup, Tang Thirty Six finally woke up from the previous shock. He looked at Cheng Chang Sheng, whose expression didn't change in the slightest, as if he hadn't said the previous sentence. Tang couldn't help but shake his head and think to himself 'This guy seems more interesting than I had thought.'

"There is not even a year of time left although I respect your desire, speaking logically, I really can't give you any words of blessing because that would make me seem fake. I only want to warn you, the Divine General's Estate won't easily give up."

Tang Thirty Six didn't know what grudge was between Chen Chang Sheng and the Divine General's Estate, but he thought that the Capital was under the Divine Empress' rule. If the Divine General's Estate used some down low tactics to interrupt Chen Chang Sheng's future, they wouldn't do anything that was way out of hand.

Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a while and then spoke, "I will try to avoid them."

Tang Thirty Six asked, "But are you able to? Even Star Taker didn't accept you."

Chen Cheng Sheng answered, "This is the thing I didn't understand."

Tang Thirty Six said "The Divine General's Estate can't affect

Star Taker Academy, Xu Shi Ji has no ability to do that. I heard..... someone at the Palace spoke, that's why I'm really curious about your problem with the Divine General's Estate. What is the secret that even managed to drag the Palace into this matter?"

Now Chen Chang Sheng knew the reason why Star Taker Academy didn't accept him. He felt shocked and was left speechless. After returning to his senses, he felt much better – The Star Taker Academy that he respected so much was facing an invincible force. That's why they did some disrespectful actions.

The next question was, why was there the invincible force?

Let's not speak of the faraway and mysterious West Continent. There were many preeminent places on the Central Continent that ordinary citizens cannot approach. For example, the big factions in the south, the Snow City in the north..... but since Zhou Dynasty lead the humans to victory in the war against Demon race, the Zhou Empire's Imperial Palace became the most invincible power.

Rumors said that there were countless cultivators guarding the palace. Other rumors said that there was an old eunuch that was at the Star Fusion realm. Some rumors even said that there was a loyal and powerful giant dragon!

In his fourteen years of life, Chen Chang Sheng had read many things about the Imperial Palace through literature, but he never thought that he would have relationship with this powerful, fearful, and far reaching place. Thinking about the words Tang Thirty Six said, he was wordless, he didn't understand.

“There are countless dogs serving the Divine Empress, Xu Shi Ji is a relatively scary one. But even he had no way to move the people in the Imperial Palace to put pressure on Star Taker Academy. Even if he could, he wouldn't have needed to use so much of his resources. Then, something he didn't need to use too many resources on, but the people at the palace would be willing to do voluntarily.....”

Speaking up to this point, Tang Thirty Six's clouded mind suddenly became clear. Looking at the young face of Chen Chang Sheng, his thoughts were a little messy – Did this guy who didn't even know how to treat a guest, really.....have a connection with the Phoenix?

He was on the verge of asking Chen Chang Sheng what was going on. But today he had learnt of Chen Chang Sheng's temperament. Since he was unwilling to speak, then no matter what happens he wouldn't say anything. At last, Tang Thirty Six said, “.....The most important figure at the Divine General's Estate has always been her. You have to know this.”

After saying this sentence, he looked at Chen Chang Sheng's eyes for a long time.

Cheng Chang Sheng was silent for a long time and suddenly he asked, “What kind of person is.....She?”

Tang Thirty Six's expression didn't change, but a tsunami rose in his heart. From this sentence of Chen Chang Sheng's and the slight

change in his expression when he said the words, Tang Thirty Six knew that there was trouble between him and that Phoenix. But he still didn't know what kind of problem it was.

“It's hard to describe her as a person. There is nothing special with her personality in rumors or from other people's descriptions.”

Said Tang Thirty Six, realizing that it was hard to explain. Then he saw Chen Chang Sheng's eyes and suddenly realized something.

“She.....is very similar to you.”

“She is also a person that makes others speechless.”

“Of course, the reason for you making others wordless is that your attitude is too calm and your words are too direct. People feel so melancholic after hearing you speak that they want to cough blood..... rumors say she doesn't talk much and doesn't appear in front of others often either. But she is similar to you, she also makes people cough blood.”

Chen Chang Sheng was confused.

“She doesn't need to speak, she doesn't need to mock, she doesn't need to look down on others..... She just needs to exist. She just needs to stand there and it is enough for people to become melancholic and cough blood. I will speak the truly, those people include me. She had the bloodline of the Sky Phoenix and

awakened herself when she was very little. Her way of cultivation was smooth and she is intelligent. Despite her talent, her effort is also top notch as well. Everything about her is of the best..... don't you think people like that are out of hand? Even a genius like me feels hopeless in front her. A person like this, that leaves others speechless is truly hateful.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and said, “Both of you are friends that leave others speechless. But your ways are completely different. She is truly....special. Many people think that perhaps only Qiu Shan Jun can face this kind of girl and be calm?

After finishing his sentence and seeing that Chen Chang Sheng didn't say anything. He then said his good bye and left the tavern.

After the blue shirted youngster left, Chen Chang Sheng cleaned the table until there was no dust left upon it. He didn't go wash himself or read a book, which was rare. He walked to the center of the yard and moved a bamboo chair under a tree. He looked at the beautiful stars in the sky through the scattered leaves and flowers. There was no expression on his face.

He had heard the names of Xu You Rong and Qiu Shang Jun once again. Although his expression didn't change, his mood did. Putting everything aside, he was still a teenager. Although he dislike the sour feeling, it had risen from within his heart twice since he arrived at the Capital.

He was angry that he failed to be accepted by the academies four times due to the Diving General's Estate. The Imperial Palace sent people to pressure Star Taker Academy, not for the Divine General

but for her, which made him angrier. With the anger on top of the sour feeling, he realized that he disliked that girl named Xu You Rong more and more.

When he was little and lived in the temple, he said to his senior that he may hate people, but he wouldn't dislike them.

But now he started to dislike that young girl.

Yes, even if she was the genius. The Sky Phoenix that left all the geniuses from different factions speechless, in Chen Chang Sheng's mind she was still a little girl.

He remembered very clearly, she was born on the eleventh of November and that she was younger than him by three days.

Even if she was younger than him by one day she was little, let alone three days.

He really disliked that woman named Xu You Rong.

Chen Chang Sheng's mood became worse and worse. He thought to himself 'Why did master arrange such a marriage for him?' He got off the chair and took out a scroll made of bamboo from his belt and put it into the deepest box in his luggage. Then he started to wash his face and hands. After washing himself clean, his mood got much better.

There was a marriage vow in that box. He had received the little

thing made out of bamboo from the capital when he was eleven years old. He remembered the white crane that had delivered the message along with the vow. He remembered the words in the letter and he remembered, after that day, the white crane never came again.

Tonight.

A white crane landed on top of Holy Maiden Peak in the south.

Under a sky full of stars, a young girl sat next to the cliff.

Chapter 14 - Xu You Rong

In the current era, the Orthodoxy used the glory of the Heavenly Tomes to dominate the field of religion. Since the Mausoleum of Books was located in the Capital, the Altar was naturally also located in the Capital. Before the Zhou Dynasty came into power, all Popes had come from the Shang Dynasty. Now that the Shang had collapsed and Zhou had risen to power, every Pope naturally came from Zhou. A dynasty built around the Capital was already powerful, but it was also protected by the Orthodoxy, which naturally made it become the center of the human world.

Compared to the Shang Dynasty and the Zhou Dynasty, the southern Central Continent had multiple powers in it. There were many kingdoms, factions, and sects. Although they seem to be scattered all over the place, the number of cultivators in each group couldn't be disregarded. It almost seemed as if the southern region had more cultivators than the Zhou Dynasty had. Of these major powers in the southern region, the most influential were Holy Maiden Peak's Nan Xi Institute, the Longevity Sect, and the clan of Qiu Shan.

After ending the terrible and bloody war between humans and demons, the southern powers felt that they had sacrificed a lot and wanted to rise in power and status. They believed the Mausoleum of Books to be a holy artifact that belonged to the entire human world and shouldn't be controlled by the Zhou Dynasty alone, in the same way, the interpretations of the Heavenly Tomes shouldn't be controlled by the Pope, who represented the Orthodoxy.

For this reason, the southern powers debated and argued with

three emperors of the Zhou Dynasty, previous and current, about the procedure and even the name of the Grand Examination. In addition, from within the Orthodoxy, a split occurred, giving rise to the Southern Faith. Although the Southern Faith still belonged to the Orthodoxy, it only viewed the Pope as a spiritual leader. Its affairs were actually handled by the Holy Maiden.

Holy Maidens of the Southern Faith were always the strongest cultivators. But because they needed to balance out the struggles between the multiple powers in the south and had no army for back up, their actual power and status was lower than that of the northern Pope. Nevertheless, they were always the most respected and glorious characters in the south. They held the same power and status as the northern Pope did, spiritually and religiously.

Since the Holy Maiden of the Southern Faith was such a special title and status, it was always appointed to a southern lady. There hadn't been a single exception for several thousand years. Only up until now was there a possibility for an exception.

Every Holy Maiden of the Southern Faith came from the Nan Xi (Southern Creeks) Institute. Because of this, the mountain that this sect was located on was named Holy Maiden Peak. And currently there is only one successor at the Nan Xi Institute.

That successor is a girl named Xu You Rong. She is the reincarnation of the Sky Phoenix. Her talent in cultivation was unmatched. She understood the essence of the Scriptures of The Way and arrived at Holy Maiden Peak when she was just twelve years old. All of the teachers and masters of Holy Maiden Peak were shocked and disregarded her status as a Zhou citizen and

announced to the whole world: she will be the only female disciple of the Nan Xi Institute's inner circle. This meant that if there were to be no interference, this young girl named Xu You Rong would become the next Holy Maiden of the Southern Faith, a religious leader that can stand up to the North's Pope!

The night was dark and heavy with stars scattered across the sky. They never seemed to move and yet they also seemed to relocate with every moment. The quietness was both enjoyable and scary. There was nothing but silence in the mountains during the night. Suddenly, a sharp chirp broke through the clouds and a white crane landed from the night sky.

As star light shone upon it, the white crane in the darkness seemed surreal, as if it were formed of paper and contained no dust. The scream of the crane filled the entire cliff. Perhaps it was because of the time, the night slowly faded into oblivion and white lights appeared on the eastern skyline. The dawn has arrived.

The girl who sat on the cliff took down her luggage from the white crane and picked out the letter. She opened it without much care and read it silently. During the reading, her thin eyebrows raised a couple times, but she was mostly calm. The pupils reflected the weak sunlight like the surface of a lake. The beautiful complexion contained youth but no immaturity.

Because the southern region is very humid, when the sunlight grew stronger, mist started to form. The light was scattered by the wet air and landed on her face, making it appear softer, thus, her

visage didn't appear clearer, but it was all the more beautiful. This beauty contained a trace of holiness and righteousness.

“That kid is very strange. He claims to have come to cancel the engagement, but for some weird reasons, he regrets his decision. I don't know what is he trying to do. I originally thought he felt embarrassed and said so intentionally to feel better but after a while I felt that this was not true because when he was speaking, he was very calm and without anger.”

“Granny watched him for several days. I heard that this kid would wake up promptly at five o'clock in the morning everyday. He, like a wooden man, treats everything seriously. Also he has mysophobia, sounds like those evil perverts you told me about before and makes people scared. Fine, Miss, I admit that he didn't look so bad. When I was talking to him, I thought he looked handsome which making me feel close to him, but the scary thing was that that was my first time seeing him.”

“ That kid didn't speak of the engagement to the public or anyone else. I am not sure if he is smart or just stupid. Anyways, the family has always sent people to stalk him. Miss, I always thought that the kid is very hypocritical. He thinks so much and demands much more. I will take a look at the most current situation. If he still wants to twist the matter, His Grace (the Divine General) and the Madam may start preparing to do something.”

“Miss, even though I think that kid doesn't deserve to die, I don't approve of his actions. He holds the engagement and mocks the demesne (the estate) thinking he has a strong backing. I feel that he

is full of vengeance. Furthermore....I heard that the Qiu Shang clan will come to the Capital next year to propose a marriage. What if that rascal tries to cause trouble?"

.....

The young girl who sat on the cliff read the letter quietly. Her clothes fluttered along the morning wind. Her dark hair floated lightly like silk. They all added some awe-inspiring character to her beauty.

After reading, she remained silent for a while and whispered to herself: "He actually went to the Capital?"

The white crane was waiting silently on a side while the girl was reading. Even when it was squatting down, it had half a man's height. After seeing the girl close the letter, the white crane turned around. It used its mouth to get a pen brush from somewhere and the brush tip was filled with ink. The place where the ink was produced was unknown, but it actually emitted a cold fragrance.

The girl smiled and touched the white crane's slippery thin neck. She took the pen brush and prepared to give a reply but for a moment she did not know what to write.

She had been close to her grandfather since a very young age. If her grandfather hadn't passed away, she might not have left the Capital and came to the Nan Xi Institute at the age of twelve. Even the white crane by her side was given to her by her grandfather. If her grandfather wanted her to do something, she would definitely

do it butengagement was definitely not ok.

The little Taoist priest from Xi Ning Village should have the last name of Chen?

She slightly frowned, recalling the things she heard in childhood, realizing that she had no impression of the little Taoist priest.

She remembered that her grandfather specifically asked the current Pope to notarize the engagement. Only the male side could cancel the engagement. She then remembered what Shuang Er said in the letter. Her thin eyebrows stirred up a bit and she thought silently. Was that little Taoist priest really that bothersome and hypocritical? She remembered that when they were young, she didn't have the impression that he was that kind of person.

She knew that many people in the Capital, including her father, all wished that she would represent the Zhou Dynasty and marry to the south, and that they would absolutely not allow the little Taoist priest to influence this. Even more extreme, they most likely would kill him if he tried. She thought that this little Taoist priest was truly stupid and dumb. Did he really think that he could gain an advantage from the Divine General's Estate simply because of his little cunning brain?

Thinking of this point, she felt somewhat unhappy.

Unhappiness was a rare feeling for her. She was not sure if it's because the little Taoist priest didn't know how to protect himself or....

Fine, that little Taoist priest was truly irritating.

Fine, no matter how much the little Taoist priest has changed, the engagement must be canceled.

Yet.....there was no need to hurt him.

With a sharp scream, the white crane carried the girl's two letters and flew away into the cloud. With the morning gale and sunlight, it flew to the distant Capital.

The girl placed her brush into the water and stood up. She walked on the cliff wearing a cotton shirt and placed her hands behind her back.

Her eyes were young but they were filled with an extraordinary attitude.

She is the world's sole existing young phoenix.

She is the next Holy Maiden of the Southern Faith.

She is first upon the Proclamation of Azure Clouds.

She is Xu You Rong.

She was still innocent. She had a kind of innocence that was not mischievous but naive.

She smiled brilliantly. The kind of brilliance she showed was not of emotion, but of spring wind.

She did not wish to care about the world and its people. What people considered to be related to her, were actually not related to her at all. Such as the engagement she was about to leave behind in her memories, and perhaps, even Qiu Shan Jun.

She had to admit that senior Qiu Shan Jun was very strong, to a nearly perfect extent. He was the best husband to have in everyone's eyes, but why did that matter to her?

This was all very, very good, but this was not what she wanted.

Of course, the little Taoist priest was even less of what she wanted.

What she wanted to do now was to sit on the cliff and enjoy watching the snow, hearing the rain, reading, reading, and more reading.

Within books, there contained a grand Dao. One scroll already surpassed countless lovers.

She solely concentrated on revering The Way. Who could stop her?

.....

Chen Chang Sheng left the inn, walking to the second to last school on the roster his Master gave him.

He really wanted to know what Miss Xu would do today to make him fail.

Of course, even if he failed again, he wouldn't change his mind.

What he had done ever since he was young was to watch the temple, sweep the snow, eat medicine, read, read, and more reading.

Within books, there contained a grand Dao. One scroll already surpassed a thousand mountains and seas.

He solely concentrated on seeking The Way. Who could stop him?

Chapter 15 - A Black Goat

Chen Chang Sheng walks in a very peculiar fashion. Its uniqueness was due to the fact that his walking manner was very robot-like. He always did things systematically which included walking. He would always raise his legs a certain height, bend at a constant angle, and walk the same distance with each step. He looked straight forward and only looked at the places near him. He kept his chest up not too pretentiously straighten up but to naturally look like a green pine tree. His dark hair was tied up tightly, which was no longer tied with a Taoist hair clasp, but instead casually tied with a fabric cloth, which showed meticulousness. His cloths were also very common. Because they were probably washed many times, they had turned white and were extremely clean. Even on the surface of his shoes, there wasn't any dirt which was very cultured of him. As he walked, a short sword tied on his waist moved slightly back and forward. This sword, like him, was also very common.

A few days ago, he kept this short sword in the inn. Today was his first time taking it with him. The common sword symbolized an uncommon meaning. During his conversation with the mid-aged lady, he learned that if Dong Yu General's Mansion really wanted to continue to do anything, this short sword was his preparation. Yet this short sword was like his personality, very regular and common, extremely unnoticable. It could not be compared to the legendary "Frozen", "Two Ends," "Thorn". It wouldn't even compare to the weapons possessed by people walking on the sidewalk. So how could it help him?

Outside of the inn, he unsurprisingly saw the carriage from the Dong Yu General's Mansion. Under the sunny sunshine, the bloody phoenix label on the wheel became much clearer as if it were

burning. The warhorse that possessed noble bloodline of unicorn, headed up arrogantly and looked down on him.

Walking pass that carriage, he held the handle of his short sword but after a while he loosened his hand. After a long time, he finally arrived at the destination. He was somewhat surprised that his destination was actually so close to the Royal Palace. Standing by the street corner, he could clearly see the lofty royal buildings, and it seemed that he could even smell the scent of the palaces' history.

Walking into the Hundred Blossom Street, his confusion intensified. Would a place so close to the Royal Palace actually hide a school? Then why was it so deserted? Finally at the end of street, he saw the entrance door to the school. The walls on two sides were covered by ivies and sunlight passed through leaving an extremely diluted and mottled shadow. There wasn't a name sign.

Was the school here? He wanted to ask someone but the street was very quiet. Unlike the crowded streets outside of the Heavenly Academy and Startaker Academy, the street had no one around. He stood for a long while but still no one passed by. The only thing he could see around him was the broken school entrance door. This place was close to the Royal Palace, but it looked like a wasteland that no one would bother to ask.

He walked to the wall beside the entrance door and pulled the dense ivy branches away. He eventually saw a word carved on the wall. That word was "Guo"(nation). The previously vivid paint in the deeply carved word had already faded away due to years of erosion. Even the wall's surface itself had a signal of exfoliation.

Thinking about the name of the school, Chen Chang Sheng was slightly surprised. The words carved on the wall confirmed that the school he was looking for was really here. He couldn't help but feel even more confused. The previous schools his master chose for him were the most famous and excellent schools in the continent, why was this school so deserted and quiet?

When he was thinking, his hands still held the ivy. He then pulled it down again and saw the second word. It was the word "jiao"(teach). He did not have time to feel depressed. He pulled the ivy that no one had taken care of for many years and slid down quickly. He then shook the dirt to fly up from the ground.

Chen Chang Sheng walked back a several steps to prevent himself from touching the dirt.

The ivies fell and the dirt gradually settled. Shortly the wall that had not seen the sky for many years had finally appeared in front of people again.

On the old wall four words were carved.

"The Traditional Academy."

The words deeply carved into the stone did not have much paint on it. Instead there were only stacked dirt and the dead leaves that fell from the ivies last year. The corners of the words were even eroded harshly by wind and rain. If people didn't look carefully enough, they wouldn't have seen the words that were carved.

Staring at the wall, Chen Chang Sheng remained silent for a long time. He felt somewhat sad and frustrated. He who solely concentrated on the way of xiu xing would rarely show any emotions like now. Yes, now he just wanted to turn around and leave — such a shabby school, even if he got in, how would it help his life?

He looked up at the sky, ascertaining that there was still some time. He decided to take a look at this shabby school. If it was not good, then he would go to the last school on the roster

His hand touched the door and lightly pushed.

“Zhi Ya.”

After many years, the Traditional Academy’s entrance door was finally opened up again.

.....

The carriage from Dong Yu General’s mansion stopped by outside of the Hundred Blossom Street. The arrogant white horse slightly lifted up his head and felt really bored. Inside the wagon, the mid aged lady’s feeling was not as calm as the horse’s. She felt heavily confused. She whispered to herself, “Why did he come here?”

She understood clearly that the school located at the end of the Hundred Blossom Street had already fallen, but she also knew that

this youngster seemed to be very good at bringing people surprises. She didn't dare to neglect his actions. She pointed her finger lightly toward a direction indicating to the white horse to pull the wagon in, but at that moment, another carriage was driven across from the sideway blocking the front.

The Hundred Blossom Street was very narrow. It could only fit one carriage at a time. Now that the carriage brutally blocked in the front, the carriage from the General's Mansion obviously couldn't enter. The mid aged lady frowned slightly and felt somewhat unhappy. But because she knew that this place was really close to the Royal Palace so she did not yell at the opponent to move away immediately.

However, while the mid-aged lady didn't even get angry, the white horse could no longer bare it. It possessed unicorn's bloodline, how could it permit a little black donkey to block its way? He trotted up angrily and was about to shout and scare the other off, but the animal in front of the wagon slowly turned its head and gave it a glance.

It was not a black donkey, but a black goat. Its hair was as slippery as silk and apparently it was not a regular animal.

The most surprising thing was its look, so deep and cold, like some legendary being above the cloud.

If the white horse was noble because of its unicorn bloodline, then this black goat's elegance was entirely originated from itself. In front of the black goat, the white horse was like an easily irritated mischievous child and the goat was like one of the royal

family standing high above the masses.

That black goat turned around and gave him a glance.

The white horse was about to shout angrily but after seeing the black goat's cold and indifferent look, it immediately became quiet. Its eyes showed fear. His front hoof suddenly lost energy and could no longer support its heavy body. The white horse heavily fell on the ground. Its entire body was shaking and it did not dare to stand up. It was as if the white horse was submitting itself to the rule of the black goat.

The mid-aged lady rushed out of the wagon. Seeing the white horse kneeling on the ground, she felt dumbfounded and could not say a word. This horse was the only son of the General's mount and was extremely arrogant all the time but now it had become a coward. When she turned and saw the black goat, she suddenly remembered something. When she looked towards the green carriage again, she felt extremely horrified.

She kneeled down as fast as she could and made a salute to the green carriage. Her face was pale and she didn't dare to speak at all.

An old voice came out of the green carriage.

"I want to go in first, Does Hua Nanny have any problem?"

Hearing this sound, the mid-aged lady felt slightly calmer. The

person who came was not that girl, but the girl's nanny. As to why the nanny knew her last name was Hua, she did not have to think at all. Of course, she would know everything.

Inside the green carriage was also a nanny, but compared to her, a nanny in the General's Mansion, that nanny must be the most famous one in the capital. Even Zhou Tong, who scared off the royal family members, officials, and the Generals, had to smile to this nanny if he met her, so why did she matter so much?

"Nanny must be joking. I did not recognize you before, so I did not show enough respect. I hope nanny will accept my apology."

The mid-aged lady spoke with a slightly shaken voice. She felt lucky that she did not criticize the carriage before, but even so she still did not dare to hide her previous disrespectful thoughts. Because according to legend in front of that black goat, any concealment was seeking death. Moreover she knew that only if she apologized would the nanny feel satisfied.

If Dong Yu General's Mansion had not been closely related to that girl, she wouldn't even dare to explain right now, but instead chop off her hand as an apology.

The nanny inside the green carriage asked, "Are you stalking that youngster?"

The mid-aged lady did not dare to look up and carefully replied "yes." Until now she was sure that the girl in the palace had always known about these things.

That nanny said, “You don’t have to today.”

The mid-aged lady felt a bit surprised. With her head down, she asked with a shaking voice, “Can nanny explain please?”

The nanny’s voice contained no emotion: “Do I have to explain everything to you?”

The mid-aged lady bowed down as an apology and did not dare to say a word.

That black goat glanced at her before it turned back and pulled that green carriage to the end of the Hundred Blossom Street.

It wasn’t until after a really long time did the mid-aged lady dare to look up. Although she lifted her face off the ground, her face still looked pale.

The nanny in the green carriage, indeed did not have to explain anything to others. Even if the opponent was the General’s Mansion.

Because she was Mo Yu’s nanny.

.....

Glory from the distant past can be seen faintly from the

construction that the school had but it lacked traces of humans and was all broken down.

Chen Chang Sheng stood by the lake. He looked at the extremely long wild grasses under his feet and had nothing to say. The reason why he decided to come in and take a look previously was because he remembered reading the records of this school in the Scrolls of Way. It could be named using “the Tradition” as its prefix. The school had a long history. It used to be an extremely strong and cultivated countless outstanding students. However.....why would it become so rundown now?

The water in the lake was flowing silently. The buildings were old and no one was here.

He had many questions to ask but he did not know who to ask.

At this moment, a sound came from behind him.

He turned back and saw a black goat.

The black goat gave people a weird feeling.

If common people were in his situation inside a quiet environment and saw such a black goat, most would subconsciously feel scared or at least they would jump away, but Chen Chang Sheng didn't. He really like this black goat. This black goat was very clean just like him. He picked some grass from the side of the lake, took out a handkerchief from his sleeve to wipe

the water on the grass, and delivered it to the black goat.

The black goat looked at him silently. It turned its head and appeared confused. It was as if it didn't know what Chen Chang Sheng wanted to do.

No one had fed this black goat grass before.

Even people like prince Chen Liu or the Prince didn't dare to feed it grass.

Everyone in the palace knew that it only ate the fruits Mo Yu picked by hand.

“Eat. It doesn't have water so you won't get diarrhea.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at this black goat and shook the grass in hand and said seriously.

The black goat understood what this youngster meant. Its look changed a bit as if it just saw an idiot.

How would Chen Chang Sheng know? So he continued to put the green grass up.

The black goat felt a bit annoyed but for no reason, it kind of liked this youngster's smell.

It hesitated for a while but eventually stepped up and bent down its head a bit. It took several grass from Chen Chang Sheng's hand and slowly began to eat.

Under the tree not so far away, an old lady who had a yellow poplar cane in her hand was looking at the scene. The wrinkles on her face were slightly shaking just like the grass touched by the wind.

Even when she saw the previous queen smother the prince, she had not felt this much shock.

Chapter 16 - A Single Academy

The reason why the elder woman was shocked was because she knew how prideful and indifferent the black goat was. It was raised by Lady Mo Yan herself. It liked cleanliness so much that it became a strange habit that only the unique Unicorns could rival. Not to mention that the wild grass was grown around the lake. The goat wouldn't even look at the food that royal relatives carefully prepare for it much less this type of grass. But at this moment, it just accepted the wild grass from the newly met youngster and ate it!

What the old woman saw next was even more shocking to her. After the black goat finished the wild grass, it didn't leave but instead it rubbed its head against the palm of the youngster. It seemed to like the touch of the young boy.

Why is this? The elder woman wrinkled her eyebrows slightly and walked to the lake with the aid of her wooden cane. Looking at the youngster sitting in front of the black goat, she noticed the naturally friendly aura around him. Her mood settled a little, but immediately became insecure. A person who could calm her down like this could be of danger. She had to be alert around him.

Chen Chang Sheng stood up and looked at the elder woman "Madam, is this your goat?"

The elder lady squinted her eyes slightly, "Do you know who I am?"

Chen Chang Sheng was a little surprised, “No, I do not.”

The elder lady asked indifferently, “Then why did you call me Madam?”

Chen Chang Sheng was confused. he thought ‘How else can I address a lady of her age? The woman in the carriage of General’s Mansion was a madam. The dish washer in the tavern was a madam. Even the chief on the boat was madam. There are countless madams in the world, what is the difference?’

The elder woman saw his confused expression and realized that she thought too much. She realized that her alertness toward the youngster was unnecessary. She couldn’t resist but wrinkle her eyebrows again and felt that something was wrong. She knew that the alertness and indifference present in the few exchanges of lines were originated from her liking of the youngster.

This young boy was so ordinary but it was easy for people to be attracted to him. The black goat and herself were both attracted to him easily. Why was this?

The elder woman looked at the ruined buildings and thought back to the glorious days of this place. She also thought of the bloody and horrific stories behind it. When she thought of the specialty of this youngster, the insecurity in her heart grew stronger. She decided not to waste anymore time and said directly, “You can call me Madam Ning.”

Chen Chang Sheng bowed and greeted, “It’s a pleasure to meet

you, Madam Ning.”

Madam Ning said, “If you knew that the reason Starseeker Academy didn’t accept you was me, do you still think it is still a pleasure?”

The cold air of early spring spread when the wind blew across the dense grass. All was silent.

Chen Chang Sheng straightened his back and looked at the elder lady. He was surprised. Yesterday, Tang Thirty Six said in the tavern that the General Mansion had no power to influence the Starseeker Academy and his result was the command of someone in the royal palace. And this Madam Ning.....Was she the one?

“You dare to hold that marriage vow and walk around the capital. I don’t know if you are truly brave or just an idiot.” Madam Ning said expressionlessly.

Chen Chang Sheng remained silent for a while, “No one cares about me besides the General’s Mansion.”

Madam Ning said “If people knew that you are the fiance of the Phoenix girl, millions of people will come to murder you.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “I’m still alive, which proves that the General’s Mansion doesn’t want others to know about the existence of this marriage vow.”

Madam Ning looked at this at asked, “What if the General’s Mansion wants to kill you?”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent once again but replied shortly afterward, “Since the Divine Queen is in power, they must care about the entire plot.”

Madam Ning raised her eyebrows slightly. She didn’t expect that this fourteen years old youngster could see through the true reason for the careful actions of the General’s mansion. “As time goes on, the pressure on them will increase. There will be a day that the General’s Mansion wouldn’t want to be caution anymore.”

“Then I will resist.” Chen Chang Sheng held the sword handle around his waist tightly.

Madam Ning looked at the ordinary short sword around his waist and mocked, “You don’t know how to xiuxing and want to use a single short sword to defend against the xiuxingist in the General’s Mansion? What do you think this short sword is? A legendary weapon? Can it compare to the Frozen of the First emperor or the Thorn in the hand of the family of Qiu Shan?”

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t speak.

“Even if you don’t hand back the marriage vow, you can still live.”

Madam Ning said, “But you can’t tell anymore about the

marriage vow. Even if the Demon Emperor came here himself, your life will perish.”

This sentence wasn't exactly threatening him because it wasn't a threat. It was just stating a true fact – if the Demon Emperor couldn't save his life, then no one in the world will be able to protect him. Madam Ning represented the command of the Zhou Royal Palace.

Chen Chang Sheng must admit it but he felt wronged in that he had no other options. But what Madam Ning said was also good news to him. He just didn't understand. Why did she harshly crush his future in the Starseeker Academy the day before but now changed her idea?

“Someone wants you to live and want you to be undisturbed. My lady doesn't like to see a changing variable. Because of this she didn't like you to have a future of possibilities. This used to be a messy situation....”

Madam Ning looked at the buildings of the Classical Teaching, which were in ruins. She suddenly smiled and said. “Who could've thought that you would jumped into this exhausted well yourself. Now I can solve this problem.....”

Chen Chang Sheng's attention was attracted by the latter information of her sentence, therefore he missed the previous words.

Future? possibilities? exhausted well? problem?

He suddenly grew insecure. From the words of Madam Ning, he felt that walking into Classical Teaching might be a big mistake.

He said without hesitation, “I haven’t decide to enter the Classical Teaching.”

Madam Ning looked at him “You must enter the Classical Teaching.”

“Why?”

“You walked here yourself, therefore it’s your choice.”

”I changed my idea.”

“Sorry, but I’m not Madam Xu.”

Madam Ning looked at him expressionlessly, “I can care less if I kill you.”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a long time. He knew he couldn’t reject, but he was still unsatisfied.

“I didn’t take a test or receive an acceptance letter.”

“The Classical Teaching has no principal or teacher, therefore

there is no test. But it can still accept students.”

Madam Ning took out a thin piece of paper and handed it to him. “This is a recommendation letter from the Pope himself. You are able to enter any academy.”

Without waiting for a reply from Chen Chang Sheng, she said without emotion “But you can only enter the Classical Teaching.

Chen Chang Sheng took the paper and looked at the sloppy signature and the fancy yet difficult stamp on the signature. He didn’t know what to say.

He didn’t know that he had the chance to see the signature of the Pope during his life. He should be excited, but it was hard for him to be excited due to the situation he was in. Looking at the color of the signature and the stamp, it wasn’t made recently. But the name of the academy was recently filled and should be the work of this Madam Ning.

”First, don’t tell anymore about the marriage vow. Second, you will live. Third, no one will disturb your future.”

Madam Ning looked at him expressionlessly and he responded, “Deal.”

After saying all this, she turned around and walked out of the Classical Teaching. Although the wild grass growing around the lake was tall, it couldn’t touch her simple dress.

For a person of her status, it's an impossible and meaningless thing for herself to talk to a youngster of fourteen years old.

The words she previously spoke were true. If a person is dead, what's the point of a marriage vow? Although she thought nicely of the youngster, how many nice youngsters die in the capital every year? If it wasn't for the letter from last night, maybe he would be dead already. If he is a smart person, then he would be able to guess who let him live, and he would know what to do next.

It was the best choice for everyone. Maybe except for him, but who cares?

Thinking about this, Madam Ning walked further and further away.

The black goat followed her. But before they walked out of the door, it turned its head and looked at Chen Chang Sheng for a moment.

Chen Chang Sheng stood around the lake. He held the piece of paper in his hand and remained silent.

Even now he still didn't know the true identity of that Madam Ning, but he was forced to accept a trade.

He didn't know the truth behind his trade, but he knew that if he accepted it, it would be beneficial for everyone – he knew more

than anything else that maybe others thought he would not benefit from this trade, but in reality he obtained the benefit the moment he held the paper.

Therefore he wasn't angry, he was just a little sad.

Chen Chang Sheng's intention of coming to the capital wasn't for the marriage to the girl named Xu You Rong. It had no connection with General Mansion, the Royal Palace, or other names that had no relation with him. He didn't want anything to do with these places either. The only thing he desired were books, xiuxing, and the championship of the Great Trail.

Before the Great Trail was the Semi Trial, and it will be open next month. He didn't know how to xiuxing and didn't reach Purification yet. He would have no chance to pass and obtain the permission to enter the Great Trail. How then will he obtain the championship? Because of this, he had to enter one of the six academies on the list.

Those six academies were the oldest and best academies in the history of the capital. Since there were ivies growing outside of the walls of these academies, they were referred to as the Ivy League – only the students of the Ivy League were able to enter the Great Trial without going through the Semi Trial.

Now, he finally became a student of one of the Ivy League. It seemed that his wish was fulfilled, but.....there was too much ivy growing on the walls of this academy.

This was the road his master and senior planned for him before Chen Chang Sheng left Xi Ning Village.

But it was clear that they didn't know that the once glorious and historical Classical Teaching was now in ruins.

Chen Chang Sheng stood around the lake and watched the academy which was not much different from a graveyard. He couldn't resist but to question his future.

After a long time, he woke up in a breeze of spring. After breathing deeply five times and pushing out the last bit of discomfort in his body, he folded the thin paper neatly and stored it within his shirt. Chen Chang Sheng followed the old path in the grassfield and walked towards the depths of the academy.

Chapter 17 - The New Student Of The Tradition Academy (Part I)

Chen Chang Sheng deeply cared about time.

Realizing that the one he had to marry was a phoenix, he continuously suffered humiliation and suppression from people with high positions. Even the royal palace appeared.....If he was a normal youngster, he probably already would feel extremely depressed or have some mental traumas, but he did not have time to feel upset. He did not have time to get angry because the thing he lacked the most was time.

When he sees a goal, Chen Chang Sheng is the type to go for it without hesitation. He would not think back and forth and he did not need to shout out, but he simply stayed determined and insisted on competing for time.

His current goal right now was to obtain the first place on the Great Trial in a year.

To him who still did not successfully purify, this goal was truly too far away. Yesterday after he announced his goal in inn, even the most arrogant and narcissistic Tang Thirty Six was completely wordless. Although others would think the goal to be a dream, Chen Chang Sheng did not change his mind at all, but instead cherished every second because he knew that this goal was very far away.

The Tradition Academy was broken and declined but so what?

The buildings are conquered by green ivies and the stones from them are about to fall off but so what? Chen Chang Sheng didn't care and he didn't have time to care. He determinedly and dedicatedly walked on his own path. He left the lakeside and walked deeper into the school. He was prepared to find people inside and start his school life immediately....

After half an hour, he stood in the court alone. The entire ground was filled with wild grasses. He could faintly hear insects humming, but there was only him looking around blankly.

He did not find a single soul in the academy. Previously he thought that no matter how broken and deserted The Tradition Academy was, it had at least some teachers or even a janitor. But how could one anticipate that after he searched the entire school, not to talk about man's shadow, he could not even see any traces proving that people had come here recently.

There used to be a majestic teaching building behind the center garden of the Classical Teaching, but now it was all in ruins. Any structures above second floor were destroyed. Only half of the fountain and stone lion was left. A few green plants were growing out of the leftover of the stone lion and blossomed purple flowers, both beautiful and melancholic .

It clear to him that the ruin of the academy wasn't due to the erosion of wind and rain nor the doing of time. There should've been a terrible battle ten or twenty years ago and the teaching building was in the radius of the fight. Chen Chang Sheng thought silently and shook his head. He headed for the relatively persevered building to the right.

That building was built with stone and wood and was about several yards tall. The stone wall was full of ivies and moss. The paint on the walls and windows were all gone. It looked extremely poor. There was a label on top of the stone stairs and it took him quite a while to recognize the words on it. He later determined that the building was probably a library.

He walked towards the window and looked into the building. Although the light was a little dim, he still observed the inside clearly. There were shelves upon shelves of books inside. Chen Chang Sheng was a little surprised because he didn't expect that after years of neglect the Classical Teaching still had this many books. Even if the Tradition didn't confiscated them, did the government not care as well?

Book was the first thing he touched in this world and the object that he was most familiar with. Books are just like milk to a baby for normal person as they are for him. He was naturally close to books because it could offer him spiritual comfort. – As he was looking at countless books through the window, mysteriously his negative mood turned a little upbeat.

He walked to the front door and was about to push in until he saw a bronze lock on the knob. The lock was grey and dull and it was some old relic. It was hard to tell how long the door was left undisturbed but the most important thing was that there was a powerful presence inside the lock.

Chen Chang Sheng thought there was a strong enchant in the lock.

No wonder after the Classical Teaching was left neglected for so many years, its storage of literature was still perfectly safe from thieves and bandits. After realizing this, his mood got even better. But he didn't know how to open the locket because he didn't have the key. He also didn't know if there was still a key. Even if there was a key, where is it? Whose hand was it in?

He didn't even know who to ask because there was no one in the academy to ask.

But he wasn't bothered because even though he couldn't enter no one could either. Following his previous path he walked towards the dorms of the academy. The dorms were consisted of dozens of small buildings and they were a big part of the campus. Everywhere tall greens and ivies were growing. Perhaps it was a nice environment back in the days, but now it's kind of gloomy and dark.

He randomly chose a door and opened it. The first thing he experienced was the musty smell. He saw the dust and spider web and decided to break the window inside the room. He realized that it will be hard to clean and will take a long to organize. He shook his head and left. Chen Chang Sheng thought it would be a long time before he could to move from the tavern to here.

Standing on the stone path outside of the small building and looking at the dense forest covering the sun and sky, he heard the chirping of the insects and birds. He felt the gloomy setting of the dark forest and felt that the truth was lost in time. Chen Chang Sheng slowly closed his eyes.

Ten or twenty years ago, countless talented young students were walking on the stone path shoulder to shoulder or sitting on the chairs together. Sometimes there would be clashing of swords in the forest. Everywhere was filled with the chanting of the Scroll of the Way. Sometimes laughter could be heard from the small buildings behind him. From far away, the sound of the bell from the royal palace could be heard and the students were running happily with bowls in their hands.

He opened his eyes and all of these scenes vanished. The only things left were the lonely forest and the small buildings that had been destroyed.

The Classical Teaching was located in the very center of the capital and was the neighbor of the royal palace but it had been forgotten by the entire world.

The once happy and glorious place was gone. The laughter and chatting was no where to be found. There was only him standing alone in the forest.

He suddenly felt sad but it was only for a short duration. This feeling quickly vanished from within him.

He felt nice here, if he could see those images once again.

Chen Chang Sheng was able to see the peak of the Classical Teachings. He was able to see the talented young students and the images from the past. It's not because he had some special abilities or because he was daydreaming, it was because he read literatures and stories about this academy.

He pulled down the ivies from the stone walls of the academy and saw the label "Classical Teaching". Many records of the Scroll of the Way flashed into his head and transformed into actual information. These information became images which were carved into his brain. Chen Chang Sheng suddenly realized he actually knew a lot about the history and events of this school.

It was not complicated or hard for Chen Chang Sheng. If he could remember the most insignificant note in the Law of the Heavenly Academy and the complex military rule of the Starseeker Academy, then it's only natural that he also remembered some history and legacy of the Classical Teaching. The Three Thousand Scroll of the Way contained too many information.

Maybe he was the only student of the Classical Teaching and maybe, as Madam Ning mentioned, it didn't even have a teacher. But since he was going to start studying in the Classical Teaching, then he must start working. For example, he needs to obtain the key to the library. He needs to request for fundings. – He remembered very clearly, the Zhou government gave every school educational fundings. If the academy exist, then the funding will be given yearly. The Starseeker obtain their share through the military while the Classical Teaching receive their share from the Department of Traditional Education.

The lucky thing was, the key and name list of the Classical Teaching should also be stored and saved there.

Chen Chang Sheng left the Classical Teaching and followed the instruction on the map. Not for long, he arrived at the Department of the Traditional Education – it was a relatively unnoticeable building. There were only thirty steps of stone stairs in front of it. Although the columns were very tall, they were still very unnoticeable because there were dozens of evergreen planted outside of the building and covered the whole scene up.

No matter how bright the daylight was, it was hard to light up everything inside.

The department of traditional education's entrance had very little people. After a long time, a priest wearing black robe would occasionally pass by. Chen Chang Sheng walked up the staircase and felt a bit strange. Then he noticed that behind the building there was a very crowded place. Many people were chatting about something there.

Walking into the department of traditional education, he found the related officers and said "I want to get student roster and key."

"What student roster and key?"

That officer murmured with his eyes slightly narrowed. His face was chubby and contemptuous, but not to look down instead simply because he almost fell asleep in the spring wind dreaming about something fantastic.

Chen Chang Sheng increased his volume and said, “The Tradition Academy’s student roster and key.”

The officer slowly opened up his eyes, yawned, walked to the window, and washed his face. Finally having a clearer mind, he walked back to the desk and looked at Chen Chang Sheng irritated. He took out files from the drawer and said “Say your school’s name again.”

This time, Chen Chang Sheng paid more attention on pronunciation and said with a clear articulation and a mellow and full tone, “The Tradition Academy.”

That officer did not even think. He felt that this name was completely strange. He stopped looking in the file, looked up at Chen Chang Sheng, frowned and said, “Since when does the capital have such school? Is it registered? Did it pay all the taxes? Who authorized it?”

“It’s not a new school, it’s The Tradition Academy.”

The....Tradition....Academy.

That officer frowned and thought for a while, feeling that he had heard this name before but couldn’t remember. In the past ten years, he had made countless contacts with various school in the capital, but he never heard a school named The Tradition Academy....Suddenly, he remembered.

Chen Chang Sheng did not know what happened.

That officer said with a slightly cold voice “Are you joking?”

Chen Chang Sheng felt a bit strange, thinking that what kind of jokes are you trying to make?

That officer stood up suddenly, heavily pat the desk and shouted, “Do you think this is a place for jokes??!!!”

Chen Chang Sheng wanted to say something but didn’t get a chance.

That officer angrily scolded: “Which school are you from! How dare you make fun of teachers!”

Chen Chang Sheng said innocently: “I am really a student of The Tradition Academy.”

That officer looked at him as if he was staring at an idiot and said, “Lie, keep lying.”

Chapter 18 - The New Student Of The Tradition Academy (Part II)

Let's not talk about the Southern sect yet, but only the northern one. The Tradition was located in the capital. There are six Holy Churches and the Talented Church is the one responsible for educating the youth. It included the regulation of Heavenly Academy, Classical Teaching, Priest Academy, and dozens of other schools. The Talented Church was actually in the same department as the Zhou Educational system. The Holy Educational Department was the common title that citizens called the department. Since the department represented power, religion, and knowledge, no one bothered to offend it and it worked in peace.

Chen Chang Sheng stood in the empty hallway and was covered in the shade of the giant stone column. He turned his head back towards the room and remembered the yelling of the officer. He thought to himself, the quality of the building of the Holy Church was for sure exquisite. Its soundproof system was so perfect that no one outside of the room heard the yelling of the officer.

There were more than ten thousand of students in the capital and they were all under the regulation of officers and officials in this building. It's easy to say that they were extremely busy most of the time. Above the shiny malphite floor, countless feet wore all kinds of boots and moved around the building. Although the crowd was like waves in the sea, there were no noise besides the footsteps.

No one took noticed of the youngster under the shade of the stone column and no one voluntarily went to talk to him. A long time had passed and the sun had moved from the east to the west.

The shade finally moved from his body to an eastern position. It wasn't until afternoon that someone noticed his presence.

Maybe because the Holy Church was almost closing, people's mind got a little bit loose. Different kind of voices started to appear in the building and wasn't as quiet as it was in the morning. A whisper was heard behind Chen Chang Sheng. The whisper was so low that it sounded like rats were biting on something and made his ear itchy. Instinctively Chen Chang Sheng lowered his head even more.

“What is that youngster doing standing there? I think he stood there for almost the entire day.”

“Oh, you talking about that kid? I asked around during lunch and heard he got yelled at by Officer Xin..... They say he was here to request of this year's educational funding and wanted to pick up some stuff?”

“Funding? Wasn't it already released by February? Which of the academies didn't get their share? It's impossible! Judging from the aggressive style of those academy principals, if we actually owed them money, they definitely can't endure it until today. Besides, even if we did owe them, why would they send a student to pick up the funding?”

“I agree. That's why Officer Xin didn't care what he said and told him to leave at once. But I don't know why this youngster is still unwilling to leave.”

“Which academy is this kid from?”

“I heard it’s the Classical Teaching.”

“What?”

“The Classical Teaching.”

There was a wowing in the crowd and then came laughter.

“This joke sure is meaningless. No wonder Officer Xin was so mad.”

“Who doesn’t know that Classical Teaching has been empty for so long? There in’t even any teachers left, speak less of students. I guess it’s just some pranks for the freshmen in some academies and that kid was unlucky enough to be picked by the seniors. They commanded him to pick up some stuff from us or he wouldn’t be able to pass the prank.”

“Well, these welcoming parties sure are becoming less and less logical and respectful.”

“For sure. They even dare to come to the Holy Educational Department to pull off some pranks.”

“Ugh, so which academy do you guys think this kid is really from? Aside all this, this prank seems to be interesting

nonetheless.”

“Should be the Starseeker Academy. That youngster has been standing there for the entire day and his posture didn’t change once. What kind of academy besides Starseeker could have this kind of student?”

“I think not. The military rules in the Starseeker are extremely strict. The welcoming pranks in the past few years at most were stealing some darts from the supply camp. Why would they come to the Holy Educational Department? I think the best bet would be the Heavenly Academy. The students in that academy are familiar with this place and are not afraid of it. Even if they do get in trouble, the kids just need to call their family to help them out. The department wouldn’t go into a big mess with such small things.”

In the eyes of these officers, that youngster with his head down standing in the hallway should be some sad newcomer who got bullied by his seniors. When they are discussing, they forgot to avoid Chen Chang Sheng. Even though their voices were low, they were still heard clearly by the youngster.

Chen Chang Sheng had his head down looking at the ground. His shadow constantly moved on the ground. When it was about to touch the stairs, he realized that he wasted half a day waiting and felt a little gloomy. After hearing these discussions, he realized why previously people were so mad and did not allow him to go in.

How could he make the other believe him that he was actually the first freshman of the Tradition Academy after so many years? Even if they believed in it, how could he, in the shortest time, get the keys to the library, the roster of the school staffs, the school seal and the money from them? He did not want to waste time like he did today waiting to be received.

There was a bell coming far away from the direction of the Royal Palace. Moments later music came from the direction of the Mausoleum of the Books. Chen Chang Sheng thought of something, looked up, walked to the room that he kicked him out before unhesitatingly. Such sudden actions drew many people's attention immediately.

He pushed the door and went in. He walked to the table and spoke to the person behind the table: "Hi, I want to get the Tradition Academy's roster, key, and money."

That person was the officer Xin that people previously mentioned in the discussion. Watching Chen Chang Sheng leave and return, he became angry. He slammed down on the table and yelled: "I told you to stop bothering me! How dare you to say this again! Do you really want me to get people to hit you twenty sticks and then expelled you from school?"

Chen Chang Sheng said seriously: "Then you have to let me become an official student first."

Officer Xin took a deep inhale. He suppressed his own anger and

said coldly, “Which school are you from?”

Chen Chang Sheng said: “The Tradition Academy.”

When he said this, his emotion was very calm. No matter what, he was going to insist on. No matter what you ask, he could always calmly repeat that answer: I am a new student from The Tradition Academy — It doesn't matter if you believe me or not, I am standing here and I will.

“No matter The Tradition Academy, or the Heavenly Academy.”

Officer Xin felt that he was going to get crazy. “Even if you are Prince Chen Liu's younger brother, today I will still let you know the consequence of ignoring teachers.”

“Here is my recommendation letter.”

Chen Chang Sheng took out that thin sheet from his clothes and left it on the table.

Officer Xin originally wanted to grab the sheet and rub it into a cluster and then push it into this annoying youngster's mouth. But before he did, he glimpsed a familiar name on the sheet. He was dumbfounded and subconsciously took the paper to confirm that he did not hallucinate the name. This name and handwriting indeed looked somewhat familiar.

Where did I see this name and this handwriting?

Officer Xin frowned as he pondered hard, but he couldn't find the answer. Deep down in his heart he faintly felt insecure.

Then he suddenly realized whose name that was and whose handwriting it was.

Although he never saw the handwriting on the paper and never saw that name first person, he knew the name and the handwriting. The reason why it's familiar was because the name of the department of traditional education had the same handwriting as the words on the paper. While that name was known to every disciple of The Tradition, but it could not be discussed and written because that name....was already divine.

The following moment, Officer Xin saw clearly the red stamp on the paper.

He felt that his legs suddenly lost their power and they faintly twitched. He had acrophobia and such symptoms only occurred when he went to visit Moon Temple in the Palace of Intellectuals.

Officer Xin wanted to take a drink of tea but his hands were shaking so badly that he dropped the cup on the floor.

He looked towards Chen Chang Sheng and his lips slightly quivered. He could not control himself at all nor his voice.

At this point he eventually believed that Chen Chang Sheng was a

freshman of The Tradition Academy because no one dared to forge the name on the paper to lie about that miracle.

“Actually...you(in respect form in Chinese) haven’t taken this letter out.....you are a really humorous kid.”

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and put a lot of effort to smile. He wanted to tap the youngster’s shoulder, but he did not dare to.

The word “You”(in respect form) was not related to being a child at all and it was even more awkward to describe a child as humorous.

Chen Chang Sheng understood why officer Xin would act so ludicrously now. He felt somewhat helpless and explained: “I was going to take it out before, but you never gave me a chance.”

“Sit please, tea will be up later. I am going to get the things ready for you.

Officer Xin took the paper and greeted him enthusiastically. He then unhesitatingly turned and walked out and began to run speedily in the empty but stern hall.

The people that followed Chen Chang Sheng did not expect to see such a scene and felt very surprised.

In the depth of the Holy Educational Department, or known as the Talented Church, there located the largest room in the entire territory. Inside were diverse kinds of plants and flowers. Some were blooming while some were dying. But most of them are waiting patiently in their buds. It seemed like all of the flowers in the world were concentrated here.

In the depth of the flower forest was a huge scripture. Carved upon it was the scene of the appearance of The Books. In front of the scripture was a large writing table.

Officer Xin stood in front of the writing table. His expression showed that he was clearly nervous and sweats were running down his forehead. But it was clear that he wasn't as embarrassed as before when he was in front of Chen Chang Sheng. He said "In the name of Divine Queen....I swear to Heaven, I really didn't know....that he brought such a recommendation letter, or I would've....."

"Or you would've done what? Or you wouldn't have let that kid stand in the hallway for an entire day?"

Another officer stood up behind the writing table. It was hard to tell his age, but his eyes were full of wisdom and kindness. From the style of his dress, he should be the pope of the Talented Church. This means that he was the most powerful figure in the entire Talented Church, but it was hard to tell from his soft expression and kind speeches.

“The stamp and the signature on this letter is all real. The color of the writing and the folding of the letter are all authentic, but most importantly is this paper.....The handwriting of the Pope is truly beautiful. Even after viewing it many times, I’m still impressed by it. I remember ten years ago when the Pope was invited by the Divine Queen to teach the prince and Lady Mo Yan.....”

The Pope of the Talented Church was named Mei Li Sha. He looked at his personal officer and suddenly the smile on his face vanished. He said coldly, “Fine, these old things shouldn’t be brought up again. It doesn’t matter what’s the background of this young student Chen Chang Sheng, nor does it matter if he’s the first student of the Classical Teaching for ten years. The important thing is, what does this event represent?”

“Is the Pope planning to reopen the Classical Teaching?”

“If it’s true, how should we, the subordinates, react and help him?”

“All of these you need to realize and learn.”

“Learn about its meaning and spirit.”

Chapter 19 - The New Student Of The Tradition Academy (Part III)

Learn whose spirit? The pope's? What spirit? Officer Xin then thought to a deeper level and wondered why the Pope gave his approval. Even after he looked in to the deepest part of his soul, he would only understand a tiny bit of what the Pope's intentions were out of the vastness of his plans that were as vast as the Milky Wave.

When Officer Xin walked out of the Archbishop's room, his face was pale from thinking about Archbishop's comment and it didn't calm him down at all. He had a few conjectures on what the purpose of the Pope was but he wasn't sure what was correct and what was wrong. Did the Pope really decide to revitalize The Tradition Academy? Why wasn't there any sign in the capital? Why would he pick such a young student to do such thing? The most important issue was without the historical problem of The Tradition Academy resolved, who dared to touch this part?

As he got closer to Chen Chang Sheng's location, he had to make up his mind and come up with a decision. When he was about ten footsteps away from the room, he had made up his mind on his plan of actions and made a fake smile. "Here are the roster and the key, but you probably don't know, even if there are actually anyone on the roster, we can hardly find them."

Chen Chang Sheng took the roster and flipped through it. He saw that the pages were very old and that next to most names there was a word "left". He asked "Then what should I do?"

Officer Xin thought ‘How is this my problem?’ Although he said that to himself, he absolutely couldn’t speak it out loud. He had already decided that he would not support the Traditional Academy and not get involved in the plans of super powers. He would fulfill his duties that were within his range of powers that were provided to him like giving money and giving people if Chen Chang Sheng required.

“You think...Studying in The Tradition Academy, what do you still need now?” He looked into Chen Chang Sheng’s eyes and asked tentatively.

“Whatever I want?”

“If you want me to sent the teachers at the Heavenly Academy to The Tradition Academy.....then I probably can’t.” Officer Xin laughed and said. He knew that what he just said was not humorous, but rather appeared somewhat helpless.

Chen Chang Sheng said “I want people.”

Officer Xin’s smile gradually faded and said seriously “How many?”

Chen Chang Sheng replied seriously, “A large amount.”

Officer Xin’s face didn’t change, but his two hands were gradually getting cold. He thought that it was really what the Archbishop had guessed. The Pope’s attempt at revitalizing The

Tradition Academy must have had hidden objectives. Otherwise why would the first thing this young student asked was people and asked for so many? If there was really something that violated the taboo, what should he do?

“Can I ask...why do you want so many people?”

He said each word seriously and carefully and stared into Chen Chang Sheng's eyes. Although Officer Xin's face was extremely serious, he was prepared to refute his statement and run right away quickly.

Chen Chang Sheng did not feel his nervousness. Even if he did, he could not understand. “The Tradition Academy is not small. Most buildings are too old and broken. The buildings can be fixed slowly but to study in the building it needs to be cleaned. If I don't have enough people to do the work, then it will take away a lot of time from my studying.”

When Officer Xin heard this, he took a deep breath not due to fear but surprise. Worrying that Chen Chang Sheng would regret, he said unhesitatingly: “The needed revenues will be given immediately, and the needed workers will also be sent out. I will then send some miscellaneous affairs over, no, actually, I will take them myself to you.”

After he said this, he friendly pat Chen Chang Sheng's shoulder, held Chen Chang Sheng's arms, and walked him out of the department of traditional education. The scene drew many attention from the surroundings because the usually serious Officer Xin was actually being so kind to such a young looking

student. This scene sparked many discussions in the department.

.....

“Chen Chang Sheng actually went in the Tradition Academy?”

“Yes....after Nanny Ning left, he shortly went to the department of traditional education.”

The study room located inside the Dong Yu General’s Mansion fell silent immediately after the short exchange.

Xu Shi Ji’s face was indifferent and he looked at the worrisome Nanny Hua. “Since it’s that side’s intention, then don’t worry about it for now.”

Madam Xu who was worried said “Why was there such a sudden change?”

Xu Shi Ji said “I ask her to help solve the issue with Startaker Academy. It was not for that little kid. Sacrificing such a big favor, I originally wanted to tell this engagement to her. I had hoped that she would report it to the Divine Queen but she took it in her own hands and whatever she does is reasonable.”

Madam Xu was still worried and said “The problem is what Nanny Ning said ‘leave that kid alive?’ Why would the palace care about him?”

Xu Shi Ji glanced at Nanny Hua.

Nanny Hua looked down and whispered “Last night, Shuang Er went to the palace saying that the lady sent a letter regarding him.”

Madam Xu heard this and was a little displeased. “This kid, why did she send a letter for some stranger instead of her parents?”

Xu Shi Ji wrinkled his eyebrows. He didn’t want to hear this talk. “Marriage is a big thing that only parents can take part in and speak. Even the Divine Queen herself wouldn’t mind this kind of business. So what are you worrying about? Let’s give some way to Lady Mo Yan and let that youngster live. If he still won’t stay down, then we can re discuss this matter again.”

Lady Xu said, “I’m just afraid that this kid may actually be successful and powerful in the future. If he does then what happens if he wants to take revenge on the Mansion?”

Xu Shi Ji suddenly laughed. The laugh held a mystery that made the others feel like there was more to the situation and the event than what they thought it was. “Powerful and successful?”

Lady XU looked at his smile and was a little afraid. She didn’t dare ask any further and waved her hand at Nanny Hua for her to leave. She said in a lower voice, “Previously Prince Chen Liu invited you to a gathering, are you going to attend or not? Although he is well liked by the Divine Queen, his status is still a

bit special. I feel it would be inappropriate.”

.....

Many years ago, after the last rebel of the royals was put down by the Divine Queen’s bloody actions, all of the people who contained royal bloodline has been expelled from the capital and were sent to different provinces for inspection and watch. Only Prince Chen Liu was allowed to stay in the Prince Mansion of the capital due to his young age.

Perhaps it was due to his young age, the Divine QUEen allowed him to enter the palace and study with the princess and Lady Mo Yan. These two lived together, drank together, and ate together. They created a strong bond between each other and the Divine Queen watched him grow up. Therefore she liked him a lot. Even after Chen Liu became an adult the Divine Queen didn’t expel him from the capital but instead granted him a Prince status.

Of course, besides the long term relationship and the good reputation, many people thought the reason that the Divine Queen treated Prince Chen Liu so well was because the Prince Liu reminded her of her dead sons.

But no matter what, Prince Chen Liu was still a member of the royal family. His blood was that of a royal’s. No one doubted that the Divine Queen was still suspicious of him. Because of this, it would be inappropriate for Xu Shi Ji to have supper with Prince Chen Liu when Xu Shi Ji was a general that served under the Divine Queen.

.....

After listening, Xu Shi Ji stayed silent for a moment and said, “It’s fine. The prince has invited me multiple times, if I still don’t go due to my status, the prince will surely be unhappy and the palace may speak negatively of me. They will call me an official who doesn’t interact is not a good official. Besides, the Divine Queen sees through everything. She knows that the reason Prince Chen Liu wants to contact me is to create a relationship with the Family of Qiu Shan so they can take care of his father living in the south. Since this is out of filial obedience, why would the Divine Queen care? In addition, the father of Chen Liu stayed down for his entire life. It wouldn’t be unexpected for her to directly summon him back into the capital.”

Lady Xu didn’t speak a word but she was a little nervous. She knew Xu Shi Ji’s personality more than anymore else. He always stayed quiet and never expressed his feeling about anything, but now he spoke so much to explain this. For sure it wasn’t meant for her, then who is he explaining to? It was easy to understand that even himself was unsure of the meaning and liability of these words.

But even then, he still wants to attend the invite of Prince Chen Liu. What did this mean?

After Xu Shi Ji finished his sentence, he wrinkled his eyebrows and noticed he behaved unusually. After calming down a little, he looked at his wife and smiled “You don’t have to worry.....that kid won’t have any future. The reason that Lady Mo Yan made him

enter the Classical Teaching was to destroy his future.”

Although the name of Classical Teaching may seem terrific. it was prefixed “Classical”. It sure wouldn’t be worse than the Heavenly Academy or the Starseeker Academy. In fact, in the previous several hundred years or even before that, the Classical Teaching was the best and the hardest academy to enter in the capital.

But now, the Classical Teaching is in ruins and forgotten by everyone. It had no reputation inside the educational field. If it stayed silent like the previous years it was fine, but if a little action was heard from it, it would be mocked by everyone. Why else would the teachers and students all leave the academy in such a short period of time?

The reason that the Classical Teaching had fallen into ruins was all due to an event that happened several decades ago. That year the principal of the Classical Teaching was an archbishop of the Tradition and the senior of the Pope. His status in the Tradition was only lower than that of the Pope and was respected all over the world. Even the Virgin of the Southern Sect was placed below him. It was truly an exception in the history of the Tradition.

Speaking logically, after arriving to a status like this principle of the Classical Teaching, he should be more than satisfied. But the human heart was just like the stars in the night sky, it was hard to count and understand. After trying to obtain the position of the Pope but failed to win the support of the Divine Queen, he got help from the royals and tried to rebel against the ruling of the Divine Queen and lost miserably in one night. The principal was defeated

by the Pope and a massacre occurred in the Classical Teaching.

There were people who tried to restore the academy's former glory after that one night. But under the eyes of the Divine Queen and Pope, no students who graduated from the Classical Teaching could have a bright future. Only after two years, no student attended the Classical Teaching and the only thing teachers could do was to leave.

Just like this, the once glorious and prestigious became a gloomy ghost academy.

Only until several decades later, the Classical Teaching welcomed a new student.

The name of that new student was Chen Chang Sheng.

“Accepted?”

“No, that's expelled.”

“New student?”

“No, that's an abyss of no return.”

Xu Shi Ji concluded expressionlessly.

Chapter 20 - The First Page

Even if it's an endless abyss, it's still possible to climb out. The reason why Xu Shi Ji could make such judgement on Chen Chang Sheng's destiny was because after Chen Chang Sheng got out of The Tradition Academy abyss, there were still two words that would suppress him-the Divine Queen and Pope.

The Pope was kind, gentle, and had started to forget the past. He remembered the friendship between the Principal of the Tradition Academy and himself. He was unwilling to let the Tradition Academy become real history so he closed his eyes and ignore the problem, but what about the Divine Queen? That year the Tradition Academy was the main source of the power struggle. The old royal families had employed them as an army to fight against her. How could she permit the Tradition Academy revitalize and shine again?

Anyone would know, in the Divine Queen's dictionary there was never a word called "pardon." Countless royal family members lied in blood and Zhou Tong who could scare infants from crying were apparent evidence. The Tradition Academy wanted a rebirth? Unless the Divine Queen abdicated or died it would not happen. But would the Divine Queen abdicate? Could anyone kill her? No, that abyss would always be an abyss.

Chen Chang Sheng returned to the inn. As usual he spent fifteen minutes to wash his face and brush his teeth. He washed his clothes, used towels to rub his wet hair until it dried up, wore up clean clothes, held a pot of green tea, walked to the tree in the yard, sat on a bamboo chair, and began watching the stars.

Because he is very concerned about time the most, Chen Chang Sheng would only allow himself to take a few glances at the beautiful evening sky and stars. After obtaining some spiritual power from the stars which stayed in permanent positions, he took out the recommendation letter with the Pope's signature on it. He began to replay the events that happened today and the encounters he had.

After standing in the hallway in the department of traditional education for half a day, he remembered that he received a recommendation letter. He understood what the Pope's signature meant. The change in officer Xin's attitudes toward him were too obvious. It brought him a lot of advantages but at the same time made him question many things.

Why would Nanny Ning give this recommendation letter to him? If they only wanted him to shut up or give back the engagement, he believed that these people who possessed unimaginable power had countless ways. Out of all the methods they had, this method of using the recommendation was the hardest to understand. It felt like someone was compensating him for some debts.

What was the opponent trying to compensate for? Was it for his silence regarding the

engagement? Or was the Tradition Academy really not a good place to go to? He clearly remembered that Nanny Ning had said this was the best choice for everyone but it does not apply to him. What problem was the Tradition Academy having?

He knew the glorified history the Tradition Academy had, but the event in which the Tradition Academy became a ghost school occurred in more than a decade ago. Because the event occurred far too recent, there were no recorded history when the Divine Queen is still in power. He could only make some guesses based on officer Xin's reaction – Officer Xin's enthusiastic and friendly attitude, but at the same time wanted to keep his distances from him. The Pope's recommendation only worked to some extent, suggesting that the issue regarding the Tradition Academy could even offset the Pope's influence to some extent.

He thought about the problem but he did not understand. He decided to not continue wasting his time guessing. Even if there was a problem, he wouldn't care anyway. What he wanted originally wasn't what those big figures did not want to give. He did not want this engagement. He simply wanted to obtain a permit to directly participate in the Great Trial, simultaneously, he needed to read a lot of books.

Master didn't lie about there being many books collected and stored in the Six Ivies.

Chen Chang Sheng woke up at five, cleaned up, ate, and prepared according to the same schedule he followed in the past fourteen years. He spent a bit more time on packing and moving them to the wagon, which called last night. Along with the morning sunlight shining on his right shoulder, he left the inn that he lived in for several days. He marched forward to the Tradition Academy near the royal palace North of the city.

He did not check out because he did not lack money and because

he knew that he definitely would come back. On the day he comes back, he wouldn't stand on the balcony behind the inn and look in a daze at the Mausoleum of the Books far away. Instead, he would definitely walk into the Mausoleum of the Books, see those legendary tablets closely.

In the depths of the Hundred Blossom Street, unlike the quietness that was common in the past decades, noises filled the block and several hundred servants and workers were busily working. Seeing the leftover torches on the ground, it was easy to see that these workers have pulled an all nighter working and hadn't rested.

Chen Chang Sheng moved the luggage near the lake and discovered that Officer Xin never appeared. He trusted his guess more, and it was good that the things Officer Xin promised him was prosecuted without trouble. He looked as the academy that looked liked a cemetery yesterday slowly restore its former glory.

The ruined buildings weren't easy to fix in a short amount of time. But with hundreds of people working on it, the appearance of the buildings looked much better. Especially the small buildings in the woods because they were cleaned up very nicely. After the rotten smell vanish, people can start living in them right away.

The hundreds of people working busily to restore the academy were the lowest rank of servants from the Department of Holy Education. They were responsible for the cleaning of the Heavenly Academy and such tasks in the past years. Although they didn't understand the reason to clean and organize the ruined Classical Teaching, they still did their work expertly. Even working all night

didn't affect their progress rate.

After checking the buildings around him, it was clear that the cleanup process was basically done. Chen Chang Sheng carried his luggage and walked into another building right next to the library while the servants were looking at him curiously and respectfully. As he entered, a wave of rotten smell hit him. Although it was less intense than yesterday, it was still strong enough to be detected. It seems that even with the sun and wind, it would still take a few days for the smell to vanish.

Chen Chang Sheng disliked the rotten smell, therefore he didn't stay after he set his luggage in the building and left right away. His destination was the library right next door.

Following his request from yesterday, the library wasn't cleaned by the workers. The key was in his hands so even if they wanted to help they couldn't enter. The workers were all busy cleaning up the main buildings and there were not a single person around. The surrounding was filled with silence.

Chen Chang Sheng walked up the stairs and arrived at the front door. He took out the key that he obtained from the Department of Education and stuck it into the keyhole. After the key was stuck inside the keyhole, the green rust was scraped up and fell onto the ground.

The key was twisted slightly and smoothly. Chen Chang Sheng

detected clearly that some of the system inside the bronze locket was activated and returned to its original position, The presence that he detected earlier also hid inside the deepest parts of the locket. The entire process was magical.

He pushed the door and entered. The first thing he saw was rows and rows of bookshelves. The bookshelves occupied most of the library and it was hard to see the end of it. It gave him a sense of visual stimulation. Countless books were packed upon the shelves, and Chen Chang Sheng was happy to see this image. When he noticed that the dusts weren't as much as he saw yesterday, he was even happier.

The Classical Teaching was in ruins for many years. The desks and chairs inside the other buildings were stolen and sold. There wasn't even any bed left in the dorms. Officer Xin requested the department to speed up the cleaning and repairing process last night. Since this library was closed, it was protected very nicely.

Chen Chang Sheng got some cleaning tools and cleaned around the library for a bit. Suddenly he noticed the floor and shiny and reflective, it was actually made from the expensive sandalwood. He shook his head, he thought to himself, who would've knew that this academy was so rich during its peak, but fell into the dusts for so many years?

What should he do next?

It's time for him to xiuxing.

Chen Chang Sheng found an index in the drawer of the library and walked into the long shelves. It didn't take too long for him to find the first book he desired.

The book's title was "Purification".

The name of the book was simple, just from a single glance you know it talked about the process and instructions of the Purification Stage. But due to its simplicity, it was also common.

To defend against the Demon race which held powerful strength and enormous talents, it was forbidden to keep the basics of xiuxing and ways of Purification as a secret in the human world – of course, the large sects have their own ways – but the basics of xiuxing was just like the stone pillars of the Mausoleum of Knowledge, everyone could see and study them.

This book of Purification was a xiuxing instruction that could be bought from any city or village.

But Chen Chang Sheng never read it, because during the past fourteen years in his life, his master always told him it was unnecessary. It won't be late for him to study when it was his time to study. When he asked when it would be his time, Chen Chang Sheng's master never answered him. Right before he left Xi Ning and said he will travel to the capital and visit the Mausoleum of Knowledge and Temple Ling Yan.....

That day, his master finally said to him, “Then, you can start xiuxing.”

He picked up the “Purification” and walked to the door. He sat on the mobbed floor and used the sunlight to read. He opened the first page.

Logically speaking, he should be excited or even nervous at this moment.

But he wasn't.

During this process, there was not a single change in his expression. It was very calm, it seemed like he underwent this process countless times.

If others were watching this scene, they wouldn't have guessed that it was his first time reading books about xiuxing.

In the General's Mansion and the Heavenly Academy, he said this sentence, “It's not that I can't xiuxing, it's just I haven't started to xiuxing.”

He had millions of chances to start xiuxing, but it wasn't his time yet.

He waited for a long time, and this day finally arrived. Perhaps he waited too long and he was too exhausted to be excited. All that was left was calmness.

He flipped open the first page of the book.

There started out with a single line.

“The meaning will be understood after hundred times of reading.”

Chapter 21 - Way Of Reading

The first page was just an introduction. There were only a sentence in it and the rest of the page was blank. The sentence attracted every reader's eyes and no one can miss this line when they flipped open the book.

Normally when people read this line, they would first think thoroughly about the actual meaning behind this sentence. Then with their own understanding, they would continue to read. But Chen Chang Sheng was different, he didn't continue to flip to the next page. Rather he stood up and walked to a bookshelf and searched for couple of other books about Purification and skimmed through them quickly. After realizing every book's introduction contained the same opening sentence, he returned to his spot and continued reading. His mind was concentrated upon the white paper and there was no other distraction in his eyes except the book.

The wording of "Purification" was simple, but he read very carefully. Not much later he has already finished the first chapter. This chapter talked about the way to nurture one's spirit and mind. But he didn't stop after this chapter to think or try. He continued reading and quickly the following chapters' materials were all memorized in his head – they mainly talked about the way to nurture one's spirit, finding the Destined Star, and absorbing the Starlight into one's body.

He only used an hour to finish reading, and then he closed his book and started to meditate.

After taking ten deep breaths, he opened his eyes and started to flip through the pages again and re read the entire book.

This time he finished reading the book faster. It only took the amount of time to burn a few incenses.

Then he once again closed his eyes and thought about the materials in the book.

After a few breathes, he opened his eyes once again and started reading.

Even after repeating this procedure for a few times, the sunlight from outside of the window was still intense and burning.

He closed the pages of “Purification” one last time, however, this time he didn’t open it again.

He took out his ink and brush, but he didn’t open the book’s pages. He started to record his thoughts that popped up during reading and began to memorize the entire book.

Not for long, many words were written upon the white paper.

When Chen Chang Sheng finally set his brush upon the resting stone, the entire book of “Purification” was carved into his brain.

But the most important thing is, it’s not just memorization, it’s

understanding.

This is Chen Chang Sheng's way of reading.

This way was quite unique. His senior and him used almost ten years of continuous reading to create this precious technique. The old temple in Xi Ning Village may be unnoticeable, but the quantity and quality of the books stored in it was as deep and endless as the ocean. If they want to memorize all of them in such a short time, then they must use some special methods.

To use this method of reading, they don't need to read the book over and over and over until the cover was hanging off the pages. As a matter of fact, the books stored inside the old temple of Xi Ning Village looked just as new as when it was made. However, the contents inside the books were memorized entirely by the two apprentices.

The most important part of this method would be the last step, note taking. It didn't matter if he wrote the notes on a paper or inside his head. The meaning to it was to reorganize and accept the entire book. Only after completing this step, the reader could say he has completely transferred the wisdom in the book into his knowledge.

After reading "Purification" and closing its pages, Chen Chang Sheng didn't stop learning. Rather he continued to do so in his mind and notebook. But what is the purpose of learning? It's to practice. The reason he read "Purification" was to successfully Purify himself and begin the way of xiuxing.

The first step of the Purification stage was to concentrate one's mind. The mind is the human's core of spiritual strength. To explain it clearly, "it's the thought that counts". If one's thought was concentrated and strong enough, then it would turn into a certain power.

Although it may sound easy, in reality it's not. Even if an ordinary person struggled extremely hard and imagine that they can fly freely in the sky, they are still trapped on the ground. This is because the power of mind depends on the strength of one's soul, and the soul's strength depends solely on talent and is unrelated to one's effort. Even if an ordinary person tried his best, how would his soul's strength surpass that one of the reincarnation of the Sky Phoenix?

Chen Chang Sheng has prepared to xiuxing for many years. To be precise, it started when he was ten years old and an odd occurrence happened to his body. He kept on waiting for this day to come silently. He knew there were some problems with his veins, and that's why his master said his was ill. His nine main veins in his body weren't connected and his soul power couldn't circulate throughout his body. The result of this was that his spiritual power kept on leaking out. Although this occurrence has been suppressed by his master using medicine and herbs, it was still was a problem. Or why else would the black Sensory Stone in the Heavenly Academy's entrance test not detect any soul strength inside his body?

If his soul was not strong enough, then how could he solidify his spirit?

If there was no spirit, how would there be emission?

The first step of purification, how should he achieve it?

Chen chang Sheng did not feel disappointed like the people who found out they could not xiu xing, and of course he wouldn't feel hopeless.

He believed that years ago there must have been people with great wisdom that solved this problem beforehand already because there were so many people like him. In the scrolls of the ways he had read, there were often people who couldn't xiu xing in the beginning. Then they discovered a genius way and eventually became one of the strongest xiu xingists. One such example was Wang Zhi Ce. However he did not prepare to follow their steps because he never saw the same situation he had with in the books. Even his master said it's incurable then it's his destiny. He did not have extra time to fight against the destiny, he also didn't think he could find a new genius method in such a short amount of time he was given. He liked to follow the trend. He thought that even if he followed the existent method in the world, he would also be able to solidify his spirit and begin xiu xing. He trusted the ancients' wisdom more than anyone else.

“After reading hundreds of times, the meaning will reveal itself.”

All the books related to purification, had these marked words. Obviously, these words were the key to purification, which was what the ancients were trying to tell their next generations, but

which book should he read?

Chen Chang Sheng looked at a densely packed table of contents at the back of the Purification. He looked at the names showing different methods the authors wrote down and shook his head. He didn't expect that after coming to the capital, he still had to continue the life he had in Xi Ning Town.

If in the places like the Heavenly Academy or the Startaker Academy, if students needed to pass the purification stage, obviously there would be teachers telling them, the key of purification was to read massive amount of related books, so they could achieve the goal of strengthening soul, and therefore solidify their spirit at once.

Purification was simply the general principle. What one really needed to study were the forty nine books behind the cover.

Of course, this did not mean that all students had to read these forty books a hundred times in order to strengthen their soul to the extent they had solidified their spirit. Most of the time when they are reading, the readers' spirits would already be solidified and they would complete the process.

It's not true that the earlier the completion of the process the better. If one finished reading a book ten times and he solidified his spirit successfully, then this person would be the xiu xingist with the weakest spirit in history. Vice versa, the more books one read and the more times he read, his soul would become stronger and stronger and if he could still not break through that layer of thin paper after reading so much, then when he finally solidified

his spirit, his spirit would truly be strong.

If there was one who could finish reading all of the forty nine books in the Purification's table of contents a hundred times, then eventually he would solidified his spirit. He would have the possibility of achieving the perfect stage of purification. Such situation was extremely rare. Besides the lucky ones who possessed gifted inborn bloodlines, there is basically no one who could achieve it.

This was a very exciting process. As time passed the amount of books read and amount of times reread increased, one would expect oneself to become a genius with strong spirit. But also most likely, eventually one could not solidify his spirit at all, and could only stay as a regular person.

Hope and disappointment would continuously enlarge as the process of reading passed. Eventually this would become an extremely big gamble. The result of the game would only appear after you finished reading these books. After reading a hundred times, the result would automatically come out.

After reading a hundred times, the meaning will reveal itself.

That's what the quote meant.

After finishing "Purification" one time, Chen Chang Sheng didn't

feel any change occurred in his body and didn't detect any soul power. Which means of course, he didn't sense any spiritual strength. He didn't start immediately reading the books again, but rather he started calculating.

He was confident that his rate of reading was faster than that of a regular person. Then he probably didn't need to read a hundred times, perhaps twenty or thirty times would be enough. There were forty nine books on the index and using the average reading speed, he can finish seven books at most in one day. This means that he will finish reading all of the books once in seven days. Even if his speed increases over time, to finish reading all of these books for a hundred times would be approximately half a year. Does he have the leisure to read books for half a year? No. Then what should he do? For the first time after arriving to the capital he felt irritated.

If others knew his confusion now, they would definitely have a different feeling because in his calculation it's so obvious that he would have to finish reading all of these books a hundred times. Then he would begin solidifying his spirit and if he could actually solidify his spirit, in another words, from the beginning to the end, even subconsciously, he had always consider himself on the same level or even higher than those geniuses.

It was not a wonder that the first time Tang Thirty Six had met him Tang Thirty Six had thought Chen Chang Sheng was arrogant. He may seem quiet and had good mannerism, but in fact he has complete confidence in himself in some areas. This made people feel that he was arrogant and self centered.

Just when he was thinking, he felt a light breeze and a shadow covered him and the words on the book.

Chen Chang Sheng raised his head and saw a pretty young girl smiling coldly at him.

Because at this moment he was sitting on the ground, the girl was obviously looking down on him.

The young girl was Shuang Er from the General's Mansion. She glanced at the book he was reading and understood his actions. She mocked "You began to Purify yourself when you are fourteen years old, don't you think it's a little too late?"

Chen Chang Sheng replied "There are early and late comers to the Way of Xiuxing. Some started early but arrived late. Some started late but arrived early."

Shuang Er didn't expect to hear this kind of reply. She was stunned for a moment and mocked again "Forty Nine scrolls of book, one hundred times, ten days. This is the record that my lady set when she started to Purify when she was four years old. Start late but arrive early? How early can you get?"

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a moment, but he didn't know how to reply.

Chapter 22 - It's Just This Simple

“After reading hundreds of times, the meaning will reveal itself,” but some people only need ten days while others will require half a year. This kind of difference makes many speechless. Just like Tang Thirty Six had said, that girl often left others speechless. Chen Chang Sheng also didn't say anything either.

Secretly, Shuang Er was unhappy of Chen Chang Sheng's quiet and stiff reaction. Perhaps she thought that since he has a marriage vow with the lady, even if their status differed greatly at least he should show some sort of ambition or confidence?

Also from her point of view, if it weren't for her lady that wrote a letter from the Nan Xi Temple, Chen Chang Sheng would be dead already. How would he have the chance to enter the Classical Teaching and sit on a clean floor to read and xiuxing? Although she didn't need his appreciation, he shouldn't be silent either and treating it like nothing happened.

Shuang Er looked at him and shook her head. She took out a thin piece of letter from her pocket and handed it to him.

“Since you obtained the precious chance to xiuxing, then you should appreciate it and start from ground zero. Don't think of some strange way to boost yourself and place your hope upon others, especially women.” Suddenly she thought of something and said strictly “Xiuxing, is never simple. Even if you don't have any hope, I hope you won't self destruct. Do you understand?”

Chen Chang Sheng took the paper and was stunned for a moment. He didn't understand the what she was trying to say. He thought to himself, even if he had hid in an academy as gloomy as a cemetery to read and xiuxing, the General's Mansion and that Lady Xu still think of him as an obstacle?

The sun outside of the library was hanging in the middle of the sky. The tree leaves were rocking back and forth from the breeze. The sunlight scattered under the tree and landed upon the earth. Luckily it was still early spring so the temperature wasn't too hot. The piece of letter contained a girl's fragrance but had no trace of sweat.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the sentence upon the letter and remained silent for a long time.

“Look out for yourself.”

The penmanship of the words were neat, but had nothing special. The strokes were very straight, which seemed naive and cute. Although Chen Chang Sheng guessed that this sentence was written by Lady Xu from the south, he couldn't connect the girl who has this sort of naive penmanship with the talented girl who is famous throughout the world.

He understood the sentence and it seemed as if he could faintly see the expression on Lady Xu's face when she wrote this sentence. For sure she had a cold face and wrinkled eyebrows, which expressed her impatience and irritation. But mostly, it was indifference.

She only wrote a sentence for him, but the most important word was “Yourself.”

Yourself meant you.

You live.

You read.

You xiuxing.

You eat and sleep.

Chen Chang Sheng thought quietly for a moment and didn't think any further. He collected the letter and put it in his pocket. Then he stood up and walked to the bookshelf to find the forty nine books mentioned in the end of “Purification”. While he was searching, he thought about the words Maid Shuang Er said previously and wrinkled his eyebrows. His fingers slowed down during his search for the books. Does it only need ten days to read all of these books a hundred times? How did she accomplish this?

“Purification” was just a summary. The forty nine books mentioned at the end of it was the actual studying material. The students need to use the knowledge and wisdom in those books to open their mind and solidify their view of the world to strengthen their souls.

It was purely a xiuxing in the spiritual field. It started when the Books landed on earth and humans started to xiuxing. The first step of solidifying their souls was always the same method. It was concluded and measured by countless pioneers and the method was proven to be the most effective and had the highest success rate. Since words were the only physical form of thoughts, then in order to use the ancestor's thoughts to help them transfer mind into strength, words were the perfect bridge to connect the two.

Since this method was used throughout the human word, the forty nine books mentioned in the "Purification" were obviously recognized by everyone as the most helpful books to solidify one's soul. It began from 1582 when The Tradition created the index and it wasn't changed since then.

Chen Chang Sheng walked around the bookshelves and searched. Although he was familiar with the order of the books it still took him an hour to find all of the forty nine books and moved them to the floor beside the window. Then he placed them in order.

He didn't start reading immediately. Instead he went to the Street of Hundred Blossom and ate at a restaurant. Then he rested around the lake's grassfield for an hour. After satisfied by his relaxation, he returned to the library once again and picked up the first book and began reading.

Previously when he was finding the books, he checked the titles and made sure he never read these books . Although he was a bit disappointed, he was curious as well. What were the content of these books that they can help humans solidify their souls.

The first books that he picked up was “Discussion of Pu Men”. He was sure that he never read the book. When he opened the book and saw the familiar contents upon it, he thought he was seeing illusions similar to the entrance test of the Heavenly Academy.

Although this book was very thin, it felt heavy in his hands. He looked at the sentences in the books confused and discovered something with surprise. He had already read these materials when he was four years old, more precisely, he has already memorized this book entirely.

Except this book was named “The Scripture of Pu”.

He was for sure a little surprised. It felt as if he returned to the testing field of the Heavenly Academy. He always thought this type of good thing won't happen again but out of chance it occurred once more. It took him a while for him to return to his senses.

After returning from his daydream, he quickly opened the second book.

This book's name was “Collection of Mausoleum of Knowledge”.

He flipped through the pages as if a strong gale had blew open the book. He quickly realized that he had also read this book as well. The praises written by past poets for the Mausoleum of Knowledge were all in his head. Except when he first read these poems when he was five years old in the old temple of Xi Ning Village, this collection was named “Index of Fancy Poems”.

Chen Chang Sheng remained silent for a while and flipped open the third book.

Still the same.

He read this book as well, except the title was different when he read it while he was young.

The fourth book, the fifth book..... He quickly scanned through the forty nine books for once and knew that he read all of these books.

Just like this?

This is a surprise? Chen Chang Sheng picked up the “Purification” once again and fell silent. He thought silently but the corners of his lip raised a little. He closed his eyes, but happiness filled his heart.

He remembered the words that Shuang Er said when she left.

“Xiuxing, is never simple.”

He raised his head and looked outside of the window. The sunlight had scattered outside of the door. Although the wind is still blowing, there was no sign of anyone around. Chen Chang Sheng was a little disappointed. If that girl was still here, he really wanted to tell her that he may have a chance to solidify his soul faster than her lady.

But he thought again, Xu You Rong finished the forty nine books a hundred times to reveal its meaning. She successfully solidified her soul when she was only four years old. The little self pride that appeared in Chen Chang Sheng's heart quickly dissolved. He thought it was really was meaningless.

The next thing that he needed to do was to use the ways recorded on the "Purification" and use the words carved in his head from the forty nine books and transform the power of the words into fertilizers that can strengthen his mind. Then once and for all he will be able to solidify his soul.

If it was anyone else in this kind of critical moment, they will continue this process until they succeed. But Chen Chang Sheng looked at the sun and noticed it has already moved westward and dawn was here. He put down "Purification" and collected the books on the floor. Then he walked out of the library.

It was time for dinner.

Since he needed to eat dinner, he ignored the chance to change his life. If this is self-discipline, then this self-discipline was too strict and harsh. It was almost to the point of self-harming. But it could also be viewed as self confidence because he believe that chance wouldn't slip away.

From the entrance exam of the Heavenly Academy to these forty

nine books, Chen Chang Sheng already noticed some things. His master has already built the basic and the road for xiuxing. His master for sure wasn't just a regular Taoist.

The way of xiu xing was long and distant, but his senior and him read the entire Scroll of the Way when they were young and memorized countless literatures in their heads. This meant that he has already made his first step way before anyone else. He has already traveled ten thousand miles on the way of xiu xing, then of course he was able to arrive at the destination earlier than anyone else.

Chen Chang Sheng was always confident in himself, but upon realizing this he grew more confident. By now the night has slowly approached the capital and the sun was slowly setting in the horizon, but in his open heart, another red sun was slowly raising. Why would he be afraid of the darkness ahead?

After finishing his dinner, he returned once again to the library and boiled a pot of water. Then he made a cup of tea he bought in the street of Hundred Blossom. He sat on the ground and meditated for a long time. His eyes skimmed through the forty nine books that were lined up perfectly and finally stopped at the "Purification".

The words in the books slowly raised in his head. The contents returned from his childhood memory and became extremely clear. Then slowly they released a certain presence that followed the path that was mentioned in the first chapter of the "Purification" and continuously traveled in his mental world.

Many years ago in the old temple, he had already opened his mind. The only thing he needed to do now was to solidify his soul.

He closed his eyes and thought quietly but gradually he forgot to think.

To clear one's mind and see one's soul wasn't that difficult.

It just requires practice.

Time slowly went by and frogs started to make noise in the wetland outside of the library.

It was still early spring.

The night darkened and the stars brightened. The capital was still full of noise.

But the Classical Teaching was still quiet with its only resident inside.

The oil lamp inside the library was dim, but it seemed to never fade.

Suddenly, a light ring was heard in the building.

A breath of wind circled around the structure.

Chen Chang Sheng opened his eyes and confusion filled his pupils, but slowly it turned into calmness. Then finally they were filled with happiness.

He successfully solidified his soul in the time of one day and one night.

Xiu xing is just this simple.

Chapter 23 - The Sea Of Stars

Chen Chang Sheng successfully went on the path of xiu xing and no obstacles had appeared so far. If others knew about this, they would definitely feel confused. He himself did not feel anything himself, especially after he confirmed the meaning behind his master making him reciting the three thousand scrolls of way.

Of course, after all this was a happy thing... If he could solidify his spirit, then he could choose a star. If he could choose a star, then he could absorb starlights and purify. If he could purify, then he could meditate and self observe. If he could meditate and self observe, then he could reach heart seeking and understand the rules behind the nature. If he could reach heart seeking, then he could fuse the starlights onto his body and become immune to the diseases. If he could reach starfusing, then he could become a saint and eventually deity, jumping out of fate or at that time he no longer needed to change his fate anymore?

Yes, to Chen Chang Sheng the goal to xiu xing was always clear and it never changed. Maybe on the path of xiu xing he could pursue something else such as seeing some beauties that common people couldn't see, experience some feelings that common people couldn't experience, or return the humiliations he had back to those people that humiliated him, but these were all not important. What was truly important was the final goal.

He just solidified his spirit. He did not even complete the first step to xiu xing. He already began to think about the deification stage that only existed in the legend. Even Chen Chang Sheng knew that he was dreaming of something that was so far out of reach. If he told someone his dream, he would easily get laughed at

but at least he would never tell others about it.

In comparison to people his age, Chen Chang Sheng was relatively quieter. He dealt with things in a relatively calm fashion. Because of this people in Xi Ning Town often thought he was three or four years older than what he actually was. He understood clearly. He could solidify his spirit successfully in one day and night. The most important reason was his master built up a good basis for him since youth and had prepared him well, but this definitely did not mean he surpassed the true geniuses like Xu You Rong.

The second day morning he still woke up at five. He cleaned up and began eating his breakfast. What happened yesterday did not have any influence on his daily schedule. Only his slightly tired eyes showed that he was not as calm as what he appeared to be. He did not have a good sleep last night not because there were still a smell in the small building but because he was truly happy.

The Tradition Academy was still crowded. The workers were at the main building fixing and cleaning up. The library was still quiet. Because of his request, nobody came to bother him xiu xing.

Purification was the first stage of xiu xing. It could be separated into three steps. The first step was solidifying one's spirit, but also the premise of all. The second step was to find his destined star. This sounded like a very mysterious step, but Chen Chang Sheng did not really worry. What he was really worried about was the third step, absorb starlights onto his body and purify them. Until then, he would finally ascertain what impacts would the issues in his body cause.

.....

The so called xiu xing was to borrow the world's power. After the Books came to the world, humans began to xiu xing. They developed countless xiu xing methods. They tried infinitive ways. Some xiu xing methods absorbed fire, some were close to nature to absorb the power of fields, and eventually the Tradition was established. Because of human's infinitive years of experiments, humans' xiu xing gradually started to absorb power from the stars.

The high temperature magma in the volcanoes could be converted to the Qi in the human body, helping xiu xingists to become really strong. The power in the fields could also be used by the xiu xingists, but all of these energy sources were not as good as stars.

The stars were in the sky. Their locations never changed, continuously shining on the continent. People who lived on the ground only needed to look up to see the infinitive starlights. Since their youth, the stars had been silently accompanying them. To the continent and people living on it, star is light, is direction, is energy, and is time : because of its permanency.

Humans eventually chose to convert starlights into Qi. It was not largely related to these literal descriptions. The main reason to use starlight was because starlights were the purest energy source in the world. It contained no impurities and they were more mild than sunlights, magma, etc.

The Yao race could also absorb starlights. Moreover, they had a different body system so they did not need any xiu xing methods. They could directly absorb the starlights into their body and convert it into their own power. Because of this, any Yao race who could transform into human form always had huge amount of power.

In comparison to Yao, humans could not directly absorb starlights. In another word, directly absorbing starlights was inefficient for them. Therefore, humans creatively created a xiu xing method and starting from that day humans began the road to dominate the world.

— Light up the destined star.

At night there were infinitive amount of stars in the sky. It is as vast as the ocean. Its number was much bigger than the human population. If a human xiu xingist wanted to purify, he had to find the star out of the trillion stars in the sky that belong to him. That star would then be his destined star.

No one could explain the principle behind the destined star. Why was there an unbreakable connection between that star and you? Why could the star respond to humans from infinitive miles away? Even the greatest scholar in the history of the Tradition could not explain this phenomenon.

.....

Everyone had his own star. However, only the people who

successfully solidified their spirit could find the star that belonged to him and form an unexplainable connection. Eventually he would use his spirit to light up the star.

There were infinitive stars in the night sky. As long as you could emit your spirit, then you could find your star. Such connection was like many other relations, absolutely repulsive to others. As long as you establish a connection with your destined star, no one could rob it.

Then a problem rose, what kind of star was most suitable to be the xiu xingist's destined star?

There was basically an agreement on the continent. The farther the destined star, the better. Because infinitive generations of scholars in the Tradition tracked countless xiu xingists and investigated them, after collecting countless data and doing infinitive analysis, they ascertained that this theory was absolutely correct.

But why?

If xiu xingists directly absorb the destined star's energy, shouldn't the star be the closer the better?

In order to explain this phenomenon, the scholars of the Tradition built a model through reverse engineering based the reality. In this model, xiu xingists did not directly absorb the destined star's energy but rather used the night sky as a wall. To light up the destined star was like hammering a snag on this wall.

This would be a line tied between him and the night sky. Eventually using this line would swing back and forward. When that happens, the xiu xingist would be absorbing the starlight energy flowing in the night sky.

In this model, that shapeless line was like a wet cotton thread. The starlights in the night sky were like catkins that floated in the air during the spring. As the thread slowly swings in the spring wind, more and more catkins would stick it to. Eventually it would fall into the man who was holding the thread. If that thread was long enough, connecting from the tallest building in the royal palace to the top of the Mausoleum of the Books, then it could even wipe out all the catkins in the entire capital.

The scholar in the demon race, Tong Gu Si once proposed a harsh criticism to the theory from the Tradition. He thought this was an entirely non economical and a completely fake deduction. To this, the Pope at that time relentlessly rebutted. He said: “Only the established deduction could be the deduction closest to the truth.”

Next, the demon race scholar sent a letter to the entire continent. He asked in the letter: “after all, where is that line?”

If there was truly a line between the xiu xingists and the destined star, then the Tradition’s theory could be established. Because through observing the nature, it could be easily seen that the longer the line, the larger the amplitude. Therefore the energy produced was larger, like the previous catkin example.

The problem was, no one had actually seen that line.

The Pope answered concisely to this question in the capital. “Since there is connection between the destined star and xiu xingist, then there must be a line between the two. We cannot see and touch doesn’t mean it’s nonexistent.”

The demon race scholar Tong Gu Si then sent another letter to the entire continent. “Intangible things have no impact on this objective world. Then whether or not this line exists or not has no meaning to us. Then it should be nonexistent.”

To this comment the Pope pondered for several months. Then he created the most famous answer.

“The line, is fate.”

Yes.

The unexplainable connection, was fate.

The stars in the night sky reflected people’s fate.

.....

No one had taught Chen Chang Sheng how to choose a destined star. His master must had known, but he never taught it.

Of course, he remembered the sentence that Pope said. The three

thousand scrolls of way definitely had this famous story.

Since the relation between human and their destined stars was fate, he appeared to be very cautious. After all, after he was ten the word fate was what he cared about the most in the world.

From morning to sunset, he had been trying to be familiar with the emission process of the spirit. He did not know after the incident when he was ten, how much spirit he still had, but what made him content was, his emission process of spirit was not very different from what's written on the texts.

He closed his eyes. He let his spirit leave his sea of spirit and flow into the silent library. Even though he did not look, the surrounding faintly appeared in his brain. It was somewhat blurry, the lights were somewhat illusioned, and it was a completely new vision.

After night arrived, unlike other beginners who would still wallow in spirit's sensation to the environment, he did not linger for any longer. He unhesitatingly drove past the window with his spirit, flying towards the sky. He flew higher and higher, passing through the bird's thinnest feather, passing through the tiniest water particle in cloud, passing through the coldest flow of wind, and finally arrived between the infinitive bright spots.

That's the sea of stars.

Chapter 24 - Trillions Of Stars, Only One Destiny

The stars filled the sky and its light emitted and shined on earth. They contained enormous amount of energy and countless thin and mysterious waves around them.

Is this the so called destiny?

Chen Chang Sheng's soul flew to a higher place and travel past countless stars. Comparing to the vast space around him and the enormous energy held in the stars, his soul was so fragile and tiny. It was like a feather in a tornado and a rain drop in a desert. It seemed like it would be torn apart in the next moment and vaporized in the next second. But interestingly, none of the stars nor its energy harmed his soul in anyway.

There appeared to be a red star directly left of him. The surface of the star was burning violently and breathed fire around it. He didn't know how far that star was, but he knew it was extremely distant. However, that star appeared to be so close to his soul, which meant that this star was gigantic and could fill up his entire sensory space.

The burning red star was breathing an unlimited amount of energy in space and gave off a terrifying feeling. It seemed that if anyone got close to it, they would be burned into the purest energy. But it also attracts them and made them want to be melted and merge with it.

Chen Chang Shang was a little insecure but it was not due to fear. He knew that nothing in the sea of star would harm human's soul. This kind of insecurity was generated from the star's characteristic and contradiction between their presence. In other words, he didn't like it.

Therefore his soul continued to travel to farther locations. After surpassing a misty object, a blue star appeared in front of him. That star seemed to be lonely and extremely cold. Its surface was covered with frost and gave him a sense of rejection. His soul floated around there for a moment and traveled further.

There obviously was a limit for xiuxingist's soul to travel outside of their body. As they proceed to stronger stages, this limit grows. But only after they light up their destined star would the limit be removed. This is one of the unsolved mystery of xiuxing.

Chen Chang Sheng's soul continued to float upward and saw different stars and views. He traveled past a few quiet stars. Whenever his soul tried to approach them, it would be pushed out by an unseen force. He realized that those were the destined stars of others.

As he went further into the depths of the universe, the number of stars increased. Gradually there appeared many weird and strange stars. Some stars floats in the space and continuous shooting out starlight. Some seemed to grow arms out of them. Others looked like a child's toy. Some stars had bright wings like a magical bird and some gave off a presence of a beast.

For an entire night, Chen Chang Sheng's soul floated in the sea of

star. This situation was common in the human world, especially in the capital where countless powerful xiuxingists reside. Every night many people tried to light up their destined star, therefore no one noticed Chen Chang Sheng's soul.

Suddenly for a moment, his soul saw an extremely bright ray. It was different from the light emitted by the stars. It was more intense and thicker. He wanted to go and take a clearer look at it, but he faintly remembered something. He knew it was time to go back.

He opened his eyes and woke up. He realized that he was still sitting in the library of the Classical Teaching. Although it took him a while for his soul to travel to the depths of the sea of stars, it only took a moment for it to come back. He looked outside and noticed that the sky has brightened up. It was already morning.

.....

In the past fourteen years, Chen Chang Sheng's daily schedule was disrupted for the first time. During the day he slept a little, when night came he went to the library and continued his trip to the sea of stars. On the second journey, he had more experience and was also more familiar with the sea of stars in the night sky. He did not take a close look at the beginning sections of the sea of stars, but flew directly into the deeper regions. He wanted to see where he could travel to.

When the dawn was about to come, the suddenly brightened light woke him up again.

On the third night, he repeated this process. The fourth day, the fifth day, and every night he would use his spirit to travel farther and see more stars, but he still did not have the thought to stop going farther.

The path of xiu xing was long and far. He thought he should always try his best to travel farther.

On the sixth day, his spirit traveled to a place where he never reached. What he didn't know was, extremely few people's spirits could travel this far. One part might due to the strength of spirit. Another part was because the sea of stars he previously passed was seductive enough to capture the xiu xingists. Most people couldn't suppress their desire and lit up the destined star and begin purification right away. Looking from this angle, his resistance to seduction was indeed strong.

—That's only because he understood more clearly than anyone else what was truly seductive while living on this world.

But he quickly realized that rarely any spirit came here because his spirit traveled for a long time here. It was unlike the past five nights where most of the stars were lit up by others already.

Everywhere he looked the things he saw were new. The space was new, the stars were new. They were all waiting for him to choose any star.

Chen Chang Sheng's spirit still didn't stop. Because he felt that

he could still go farther and see more, he continued on.

On the seventh night, his spirit finally encountered an interference or met a wall. That's a shapeless, invisible, or even nonexistent wall. He knew the wall was there, but he felt hesitant for the first time.

What's beyond the shapeless wall?

He didn't know about this shapeless wall. Was it the crystal wall that separates the space? Of course he also didn't know, only the strongest creature such as Golden Dragon could pass through easily but he could guess that this shapeless wall should be hard to pass.

Yet he still wanted to try.

If this was an unbreakable wall, he already came to the edge. He would be satisfied only after bumping his head with it.

He wanted to try so he tried. He didn't have any hope, but....surprisingly, his spirit easily passed through.

Over there was still a sea of stars.

However, in comparison to the sea of stars he traveled before, his spirit actually felt more familiar with the sea here. It was as if he came back to his homeland.

His spirit continued flying up. As he did he became more and more light. Even in the empty stage, he knew that the connection between his spirit and his body was getting weaker and weaker. Maybe in any moment now it would break.

Then the light became darker, the number of stars gradually decreased.

Chen Chang Sheng could feel that this was the farthest he could travel.

Father ahead there faintly lied another sea of stars, like lights of ten thousand families.

He looked there and felt a little unfortunate but he knew it was time for him to make a choice.

His spirit spread out to the surrounding, attempting to find the star belonged to him.

Choosing the destined star to every xiu xingist was a hard question because there were too many to choose from. There was no rule. You could choose because you liked the color or you could just close eyes and randomly pick one.

Chen Chang Sheng did not encounter such problem. Because when he wanted to choose, the star appeared in front of him. In one glance he began to love this star, so he decided to make him his

destined star.

It was a red small star, in comparison to the one he saw in the beginning. It was obviously much smaller. On its surface there weren't any terrifying burning fire. All the lights and energy seemed to be hidden in the deepest part of the star.

That red star was very round. Its surface was very smooth. It looked like a little apple.

It was very cute, very pretty, and made people want to be close to it. It also made people want to take a bite out of it.

As Chen Chang Sheng thought so, his spirit flew there.

The night breezes blew softly and the frogs had already stopped making noise. Nothing but silent surrounded the library of the Classical Teaching.

Chen Chang Sheng sat on the clean ground and closed his eyes. Calmness was the only expression on his face.

Suddenly, he opened his mouth and closed it like he took a bite out of something.

Faintly it could be heard, the sound of him swallowing from his

throat.

Suddenly he started sweating and moisturized the floor beneath him.

At the end of the distant star sky, a red star lit up.

He opened his eyes and looked into the depths of the sky.

He couldn't see that star, but he could feel it.

Because, that was his star.

Just like the great Demon Scholar Tong Gu Si said, no one could see that string.

Therefore when Chen Chang Sheng successfully light up his destined star, there were no odd phenomenon that occurred in the Classical Teaching. There was no holy light that appeared in the night sky of the capital. This continent was just like usual, quiet and peaceful.

Plus his star was so far away from the surface of the earth. Although it showed a moment of brightness, it still couldn't be seen. Yes, that star was too far. So far that the priests of the Star Observation Platform didn't even notice it.

But it was seen by someone.

Because the Divine Queen was viewing the stars.

It was entirely out of chance.

If the weather was nice, the Divine Queen herself would view the stars on her balcony.

There was a little rain today, therefore she came out a little late.

Somehow she saw the entire duration of that star been light up.

But even she couldn't have known who light up that star.

Is that person in the capital or in the south?

Or in the Xue Lao City?

The Divine Queen looked deeply into the night sky and raised her dark eyebrows. Her voice contained no emotion.

“Interesting.”

Chapter 25 - Dew Platform And Herb Garden

[Lady Mo Yu](#) had long eyelashes. Due to the previous drizzle, tiny water drops hang from the tips of her eyelashes. This made her seemed very beautiful. Too bad after hearing the Divine Queen speak, she blinked and that rain drop fell down into darkness of the night in the Dew Platform.

(TL A: Or Mo Yan mentioned earlier in the story, the author has officially changed her name at this point because he liked this one better)

The Dew Platform was right in front of the royal palace and was several hundred feet tall. It was built purely out of bronze and was surely a majestic structure. There were thousands of night pearls decorated on the platform. Their light could be seen from even dozens of miles away, but tonight these night pearls didn't emit any light.

Mo Yu glanced towards the edge of the Dew Platform. The black goat was standing there as well and raised its head to stare at a certain direction in the night sky. Mo Yan looked back at the center of the Dew Platform and reassured that the Divine Queen was also looking in the same direction in the night sky. She was fairly confused.

“Your majesty, what are you looking at?” She asked.

Lady Mo Yu was respected throughout the Zhou Dynasty or even by the entire continent. This respect was not only due to her

background and her strength but also to her close relationship with the Divine Queen. There were less and less people who could talk casually with the Divine Queen in the world now.

Starlight shone upon the Dew Platform. Only the woman's back could be clearly seen.

It was just a simple back image, but it seemed like the representation of this universe.

This is because she was the first female emperor of this world. She was the master of Zhou Dynasty.

“Someone has lit up a star.”

The Divine Queen turned around and said indifferently.

Lady Mo Yu was silent. Every night there were xiu xingists lighting up their destined star, but even the Divine Queen can't see them. But today she saw it and stared at it for so long. What did this represent?

“That star is extremely distant from us.”

Hearing the Divine Queen's next sentence, Mo Yu thought she understood.

She thought for a while and said, “Even if it's further..... it

doesn't always represent a true genius."

The Divine Queen didn't speak.

Mo Yu acted like a little girl who was ignored by her elders and hummed. "The boy of the Family of Qiu Shan lit up his destined star when he was four years old. That star was the Dragon Star. Its distance could be ranked among the top ten in the recent a hundred years, but just that same night a small faction's apprentice also started Purification and his destined star was even further away from the Dragon Star. But does this mean that he could compete with the one of the Family of Qiu Shan? Purification is still determined by the strength of one's body, veins, and bones. How can a regular person match with one of the Dragon's bloodline?"

This was a valid example. Qiu Shan Jun was the champion of the Honor Roll of Green Cloud before he was eighteen years old. He was a genius recognized by the entire world. But that apprentice from the small faction was already lost in the crowd. No one remembered him except a person as knowledgeable as Mo Yu.

The Divine Queen explained. "The person who light up his destined star today was unique. The strength of his soul and the calmness of his spirit rarely exists in this world. I believe it was an elder who studied for over a century and suddenly understood the Way. He was just like Wang Zhi Ce from back then. They both endured the test of time and finally released their potential."

Mo Yu replied, "During the night when Sir Zhi Ce light up his star, the entire capital sensed his presence. How could it be

compared with tonight? Plus there were no shadow of the star being projected onto the ground, which means that it wasn't the power of a special bloodline. Even if he has potential, I'm afraid it would be limited as well."

The Divine Queen didn't turn back but it was clear she was smiling. "You are just a child. What do you know about xiuxing?"

Although Mo Yu was young, she was already a great xiu xingist of Starfusion stage. Both of the Zhou Dynasty and the southern xiuxing factions viewed her with regard. Even the Pope himself liked to compliment her. However, in the eyes of the Divine Queen, she was still a child who knew nothing about xiu xing.

How many people in this entire continent has the right to say this?

The Divine Queen was obviously one of them.

Therefore Mo Yu wasn't angry. She just stuck her tongue out toward the back of the Divine Queen.

She wasn't a little kid anymore, but she could still be innocent because the person she was facing was the Divine Queen.

The Divine Queen knew she was fooling around at her back, but she smiled and stayed silent.

Mo Yu walked up beside her and looked at the vast sky and the

stars. After viewing for a long time she suddenly asked. “Your majesty, the destined star.....Does it truly represent each and every one of our fate? Then can we see the future of our destiny?”

The Divine Queen replied “It could be interpreted as something else besides our destiny.”

Mo Yu asked curiously “What is the other interpretation?”

The Divine Queen looked deeply into the night sky and fell silent for a long time.

There used to be a distant star and it shined for a moment, but it couldn't be seen anymore.

The Divine Queen spoke, “Perhaps..... they are our destined doom.”

Chen Chang Sheng had lit up his destined star.

There were only a handful of people who had the chance to witness that moment.

Due to that invisible crystal wall, those people miscalculated the distance between that star and the surface of the earth. But even then, this distance could be ranked among the top in the human

history.

The Xue Lao City of the Northern Demon Race, the Mountain Virgin of the South, the Mountain Li of the Longevity Sect, and the Forgotten Valley of the Kingdom of Yao. Perhaps there were people who saw it, or perhaps they didn't. But if they did, they would treat this with great regard and try to discover the identity of the person who light up that star.

But this was unimportant. There were billions upon billions of stars in the night sky and they contained countless relationships and strings with humans. It was a world of unpredictability. No one not even Chen Chang Sheng could ever see that string. If even Chen Chang Sheng said nothing, then no one could know it was him.

But there were always accidents, or you can say exceptions.

Some people's level of xiu xing wasn't exactly high. Speaking logically, they couldn't even see the image of the destined star that was light up and talk less of following that string to tract Chen Chang Sheng down. But perhaps it was fate, the moment Chen Chang Sheng light up his destined star, that person was also looking at the night sky just like the Divine Queen. Perhaps also out of fate, she was also xiu xinging at that time and she released her soul into the ruined garden.

But the most important reason was that she had a special ability that made her close with the star. She could instinctively discover many things.

It was a talent or to be precise, it was her racial ability.

On the other side of the broken walls of the Classical Teaching was the Herb Garden.

She was in the Herb Garden that night.

She could clearly sense the calmness and endurance of the soul that light up that destined star.

She was curious of who the owner of that soul was.

She wanted to find him and ask him some questions. For this purpose, she didn't mind gifting him some precious treasures that were rarely found in the world.

Because her name was Luo Luo, and she was generous.

Chapter 26 - Accumulation

If Chen Chang Sheng started to directly absorb starlight into his body and started to purify his body, the girl who was spiritually in the Herb Garden, one wall away from the Tradition Academy could have used her inborn talent to track the remaining sensation to discover Chen Chang Sheng's location. Also, if his sweat that gathered on the floor did not strangely disappear along the wind or become invisible as it permeated on the floor, she might have been able to find him.

The problem was, at this moment Chen Chang Sheng again showed a personality different from common people. He unhesitantly resisted his temptation to achieve purification and directly went back to the small building. He took a shower and then went to sleep. The floor that he sat on did not have a single drop of sweat.

On the second day, Chen Chang Sheng deeply reread the Purification, especially the last part about absorbing starlights to purify the body. He even made annotations to understand it more thoroughly. After ensuring that he understood the contents completely, he went to the grassland next to the lake and took a rest until the sun lowered beneath the city wall. When night came, he ensured that his body and mentality were in good condition. He then opened up the library and started the purification.

His spirit spread out in air, but it did not pass through the library's roof and go into the sky. He knew he had already established a connection between the distant red star and himself. But the feeling was not real. To be accurate, the connection between the star and him did not leave any trace in his body nor in

his mentality. He was very certain that the star was there and no one could snatch it away.

Like what that Pope said that year: The line was actually there.

Chen Chang Sheng closed his eyes, calmed his mind, opened up his soul, and followed the method of Purification. He entered into an empty and absolutely relax state. Then he quietly waited for the starlights to solidify and come to him along that line.

Time gradually elapsed. The wind in night sometimes softened and sometimes solidified.

The forest outside of the library was completely silent. Yesterday the workers from the department of traditional education came and did some cleaning. Many branches were cut down and those broken branches were left on the ground. The scent of trees were sent far away by the night wind.

The reason why the scent of trees were strong was because of the transparent jelly like material flowing outside, which was sap. The Tradition Academy had a variety of trees including fruit trees, which made the area smell nice.

There was a very thick pagoda tree. Its branches that were near the ground were all chopped off. One of the broken parts looked like a scar. There were already a lot of “tree jelly” and as the wind blew, the saps flowed down the branches slowly. If the people who enjoy killing saw this image, they would feel that the pagoda tree’s arms was cut off and that blood was spilling out. However, under

the silver starlight the flowing sap was more like sweet honey.

After a really long while, the honey-like sap finally fell to the ground upon a patch of grass. For the lack of a better word, it luckily, or rather brutally, made an insect into the primary form of amber which meant that it would eventually be another insects' food.

A similar scene happened in the library too.

Infinite amount of starlights fell on that shapeless but also insensible line. The starlights solidified the line into a slightly dense essence. It then followed along the line and slowly fell to the ground. It is unsure of how far the starlights travelled but they went through the roof of the library and landed on Chen Chang Sheng's body.

The starlights were soft and the skin of Chen Chang Sheng's face became jadelike. But one moment later, the starlights, like sand and wind passing through his fingers, penetrated his body and could no longer be seen. Even so, his face was just like it was before as if nothing had happened.

As time passed more and more starlights continued to fall on him. These starlights seemed to have the ability to ignore all obstacles. They easily passed through his clothes, fell on the surface of his body, and went deep into his body. Their destination was unknown.

Chen Chang Sheng closed his eyes. He did not see any of these

images and did not know what had happened.

Not until the sun had fully risen over the capital and the chicken had started to tweet did he finally wake up.

He was somewhat excited. In the last fourteen years, he was rarely this excited. Because if he purified successfully, then he would step on the path of xiu xing. With this, regardless of whether or not he could get first place at the Great Trial, he would get some voice to his fate.

‘Such thoughts are not good for the body’ he said soundlessly to himself. Because he had an extremely mature attitude for his age, he was able to calm himself down quickly. Then he looked at his hands. His feeling slightly changed and his eyes were filled with confusion and bewilderment.

His hands did not change at all and were as clean as last night.

He took out a little round mirror and looked at his face in the mirror. Then he put down his little round mirror, pulled up his collar, and look at his body. He found out that nothing had changed and he was just as clean as he was in the past years.

A successful purification, should be like this.

According to the saying in the Purification, when humans lived, ate, drank, breathed, and absorbed nutrients, they also took the dirty Qi in the world into their body. Therefore they had to absorb

starlights into their body. Then they would use the stars' purest and softest power to completely expel the dirty Qi in their bodies.

However, Chen Chang Sheng's body did not have any change.

Because of his mysophobia, he loved to stay clean. But now he actually desired to see dirty and stinky black oils on his body. He felt that the oils provided him with evidence that the dirty Qi inside his body were excreted out.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the rising sun outside and remained silent for a really long time.

Suddenly, he put the back of his hand on the floor and rubbed against it hard. Not until he felt pain and a big red mark could be seen on the back of his hand did he stop and take a glance at his hand. He could faintly see a small blood streak and he realized that he indeed did not purify successfully.

When the starlights come, it first interacted with the skin. In the beginning of the purification, his skin was strengthened.

His skin did not change at all in comparison to yesterday.

Chen Chang Sheng remained silent. Originally he thought the problem with his broken vessels would only cause his soul to easily flow out. Later on, it would be very hard for him to convert starlights into Qi and keep them inside his body. Despite this, he thought he could at least complete the purification stage. He did

not know that he would not be able to purify himself.

The morning light gradually brightened up. He stood up and walked out of the library. Because he sat with his legs crossed the entire night. His body felt somewhat sore. He had to walk slowly. Looking from the back, he looked like a kid who had just recovered from a fatal disease.

Walking back to the small building, he saw that the water pot had already heated up on the stove. He felt a little upset. In accord with the Purification, he thought that when he came back, he would definitely be dirty so he got the hot water ready beforehand. Who could expect that he did not even have a single sweat.

He thought for a while and eventually decided to take a shower.

It was neither because he had sat on the floor for an entire night nor because the school was dirty.

His body had a serious problem which made him curse his body. He always thought his body was somewhat dirty.

He washed himself frequently. He loved to be clean and had a small degree of mysophobia.

He put the hot water into the big bucket by the corner of the wall, walked inside, covered his face with a wet towel, lied on the edge of the bucket, opened up his arms, and lied backward. He was exhausted.

Beneath the wet towel, he heaved an inaudible sigh.

At that moment, on the other side of the wall a faint sigh could be heard.

Chen Chang Sheng thought ‘sad people were actually anywhere.’

.....

No one knew that Chen Chang Sheng had attempted to purify. Even those who saw him lighting up his destined star didn’t know. Because purification was more common than lighting up the destined star, it didn’t matter if xiu xingists were at the purification stage or the starfusing stage. As long as he was xiu xinging, then he needed to do so night by night. Moreover, the people who could see the destined stars being light up couldn’t see the line. Because of this, they wouldn’t know who was on the opposite end of the line.

There was no limit to human’s self strengthening.

Purification was never a one day thing.

At night, Chen Chang Sheng walked into the library again and sat on the floor to continue xiu xing.

A fourteen year old kid aroused himself again from

disappointment and loss. The time taken was indeed too little. He had to appreciate all of his past experiences and the things that he would experience soon but of course the benefits that he experience won't be liked by others.

He had no time to feel disappointed, he could only keep trying.

If not succeed, then die. These five words were most prominent in his mind.

He calmed down again and began meditation. The infinitive dense yet invisible starlight essence followed its shapeless fate. It continued to fall from the high and far night sky and land onto him like spring wind coiling him up and not leaving.

The starlights, just like it had last night, soundlessly penetrated his body and became invisible.

This process continued for so long. Just before the sun rose, he woke up again.

He looked closely at his hands and did not find any change. He touched his forehead and did not find a single drop of sweat. The old clothes on him were still clean. The morning wind flew in from outside and blew on his sleeves.

He did not understand. Even though his body's vessels were broken, when his skin and hair had absorbed starlights, there were no changes.

Where did the starlight go?

He thought that the starlights had all spread into the air and transformed into nothing.

He did not know. He was confident that when he closed his eyes and meditated, the starlights had passed through his black hair and his hands, had passed through his old clothes and the little sword on his waist and had quietly entered his body. There was no loss.

It was like snow that passed through the wind and trees to fall onto the ground.

Not a single leaf carried any snow. This was an extremely rare occurrence.

Yet it actually occurred.

Now, this tree still looked green and was not white at all.

In actuality, the ground under the trees was being stacked with snow.

This was the so called accumulation.

One day, it would eventually rise.

Or explode.

Chapter 27 – Already Many Years

At five o'clock in the morning, Chen Changsheng opened his eyes. He wasn't waking up from his sleep, but from his state of meditation. After confirming that there was still no change with his body, he shook his head and returned to his room to take a bath. As he leaned against the edge of the wooden basin and allowed the slightly hot water to wash over his exhausted body and mind, the sighs passing through the wet towel became a mumbled question, "When will I be able to find a way?"

This wooden basin was around half the height of a human and was placed very close to the academy wall behind the house. In the next moment, he heard an extremely faint sigh from the other side of the wall, accompanied by a statement brimming with anxiety, "When will I be able to find that person?"

Chen Changsheng thought of that sigh he had heard last morning and took the wet towel off his face to turn and gaze at the wall. What confronted his eyes was a tangle of green ivy. The academy wall was very high, so he could not see the other side to know who was speaking.

It had been a very immature voice, most likely that of a female child. Every person's sorrows were not necessarily the same, but they were all sorrows nonetheless. Chen Changsheng suddenly sympathized with the girl on the other side of the wall, but he soon after realized that in his current situation, he wasn't qualified to sympathize with anyone else.

The following days passed in peaceful serenity. Every day, he

would read books in the library, and when night fell, he would draw the radiance of the stars into his body for Purification. Over the course of this Purification, he would always have his eyes closed in meditation, naturally unaware that the radiance had all seeped into his body. From an exterior perspective, there truly had been no change. This result was unavoidably rather discouraging, but he continued to diligently and incessantly cultivate, not affected in the slightest.

Just like his cultivation, the repairs of the Orthodox Academy progressed in a methodical manner. Although that Priest Xin of the Bureau of Ecclesiastic Education did not manage things from the front, there was no shortage of funds, and it all arrived promptly. Naturally, the artisans and laborers did not dare to slacken their pace.

As this academy wall that had been worn away by years of non-maintenance could not even block out sound, [wind](#) could also naturally pass through.

(TN: Wind, 风, can also mean news.)

The news that the Orthodox Academy was being repaired quickly spread throughout the capital. The matter of the Orthodox Academy gaining a new student was also gradually known to the populace. However, true reason for the Orthodox Academy's decline meant that people only dared to discuss these pieces of news in private. Nobody dared to inquire about this publicly, so the only effect of these pieces of news was to add to the number of conversation topics over the dining and tea tables.

Chen Changsheng did not know that a storm was gradually

building in the world outside. He continued to silently study and cultivate in that school in the depths of Hundred Flowers Lane, repeating a similar life and simply not feeling that his days were passing very dryly and monotonously.

On the surface, it seemed that he had stopped caring about whether he could succeed or not in cultivation. In reality, his mind was completely tied up with this matter. The proof was that it had already been several days since he had wiped the floorboards of the library, a rare occurrence for someone as obsessed with cleanliness as him.

That he had not succeeded in Purification did not mean that he had obtained nothing from this life of studying.

He read many books in the library, the majority of which he had already read in Xining Village, while there were some books regarding cultivation that he was reading for the first time. Upon comparing the two, he realized to his surprise that many of the words that he had read when he was small were related to cultivation.

When he was memorizing those Daoist scriptures as a child, he had no idea what those high incomprehensible words meant, nor was he able to obtain any definite explanation from his senior or master. He thought that they were words related to metaphysics and stopped brooding over them. Only after coming to the capital and reading these books on the initial phase of cultivation like On Purification in the Orthodox Academy did he understand. Originally, all the cultivation methods of the world, the precious experiences left behind by past experts, the techniques of certain

major sects not meant to be transmitted to the outside world, and even a few secrets of demon experts were all contained in the three thousand scriptures of the Daoist Canon in Xining Village's old temple!

What did this mean?

Who said that he didn't know how to cultivate? He just had not begun to cultivate, or at least this was what he originally thought. Now, he knew that this argument was incorrect. Who said that he had not begun to cultivate? No, from the moment he could speak, he had begun, he was already cultivating!

The three thousand scriptures of the Daoist Canon contained in Xining Village's old temple were countless fragments of knowledge related to cultivation. In the past, these fragments had been a thick fog within his spiritual world, but the cultivation techniques that he now understood had become extremely small specks of dust that formed nuclei in the fog. The vapor began to crystallize around these cores, bringing down a boundless downpour.

Chen Changsheng had begun an extremely fantastical trip, a wondrous journey. It could be said that he had comprehended by analogy, and it could also be said that he had been suddenly enlightened, like he had been jolted awake by a whack to the head. But in reality, the most ideal descriptor of the truth was those five words: rising abruptly through accumulated strength.

A bit more than fourteen years had passed since Daoist Ji had picked him up from the stream, and every day and every night of those fourteen years had been spent on relentless reading. Those

fourteen years of reading were a process of accumulation. He had already laid down an extremely thick foundation. Ultimately, all he needed was an opportunity, and then he could convert this knowledge that he had grasped over his fourteen years entirely into his own understanding of the world, and later on convert it into his own strength.

Just like a jar of gunpowder ignited by a spark.

A massive explosion occurred in Chen Changsheng's spiritual world. He voraciously read all the books in the library, grasping the laws of cultivation. Those fragments of information he had obtained from the Daoist scriptures of Xining Village were once more reassembled, once more reviewed, and then truly understood. With almost unimaginable speed, he comprehended the secrets of the cultivation world, grasped the details of those cultivation techniques. Solely in terms of cultivation knowledge, there were already frighteningly few people in the world with a more extensive understanding than him.

To be unable to succeed in Purification and yet suddenly obtain such a great harvest was a very delightful occurrence to Chen Changsheng, and also a consolation. Once his emotions settled down, he once more grew uneasy and confused. He walked to the window of the library and gazed in the direction of Xining Village in silence. The Daoist scriptures in that old temple were no ordinary objects, and his master was also naturally no ordinary man. He had helped him lay down such a firm foundation for cultivation, but why didn't he just teach him how to cultivate, rather than insisting that he only begin after coming to the capital? Was it just because his body's illness was not easy to treat and he wanted to see if he would have any lucky encounters in this

place?

Time passed, and in the blink of an eye, ten-odd days had gone by. No one from the Divine General of the East's estate appeared again, nor did that maid called Shuang'er come again. He was quite pleased that his calm life was not disturbed. But he was somewhat displeased that Tang Thirty-Six also never appeared. He had left his address behind at the inn, presuming that he would be able to find him. Fine, that fellow might be bitterly cultivating in the Heavenly Dao Academy.

The Orthodox Academy had only Chen Changsheng as its sole inhabitant. This was his own academy.

He quietly read and silently cultivated, gradually forgetting the world outside. He had already been forgotten by the outside world. On occasion, he would recall that conversation he had overheard in the Bureau of Ecclesiastic Education, think about the excitement of those initiation activities held by the Heavenly Dao Academy and Star Seizer Academy and feel somewhat envious, but he did not care too much. He had long grown used to this sort of dull and monotonous life—in Xining Village's old temple, when he was reading together with his senior, his voice was the only sound.

It was just that he had attempted Purification for so many days, but his body still remained unchanging. He could see no hope of success, but he would not give up. In the end, however, he had grown somewhat more indifferent. He decided that if he still could not succeed in the next few days, he would have to search the books for another method.

Indifference often made people lose a little drive, but it would make some people become more cool-headed—precisely Chen Changsheng's current mental state. He could not be said to have returned to his original mindset, but he had returned to his mindset at the very beginning of this process. Now that he looked at the floor covered in a shallow layer of dust, the brow of this youth that so dearly loved cleanliness creased in deep displeasure.

Most of this displeasure was aimed at himself. He felt that he had grown lazy.

He brought up some clear water from the well and began to clean the floorboards. As the dust was gradually cleaned, the floorboards that were wiped clean with water began to exude an extremely faint aroma. He was unaware of the sweat he had perspired on the night that he had lit up his Fated Star, so he was somewhat puzzled. This aroma was truly very faint. A single gust of the night wind was enough to make it vanish.

After he finished cleaning, he casually sat down and began to draw in starlight for Purification.

The Orthodox Academy was a picture of tranquil silence. He closed his eyes in meditation, utterly forgetting all things. He naturally could not hear the night birds in the forest that should have been resting but suddenly began to chirp, the sound crisp and moving. The croaks of frogs that had halted for several days also began to ring out once more, happy beyond compare.

A butterfly fluttered in from the window and rested on the floor beside him, unwilling to depart.

It was the piece of floor that he had just wiped clean.

.....

.....

Hundred Flowers Lane was a very ordinary street of the capital. Of course, it had once been very famous because the Orthodox Academy in its depths had once been very famous. Additionally, the Hundred Herb Garden at that end had also been very famous. That place was the Imperial Garden of the previous dynasty.

The most famous rebellion in the Great Zhou Dynasty's history had also occurred in the Hundred Herb Garden. At the time, Emperor Taizong, who was still a prince, was galloping his horse from his estate to the Imperial Palace but was ambushed at this place by the other princes. At that moment, Emperor Taizong had still been dressed in his night gown.

The ultimate conclusion of that rebellion was known by the entire continent: Emperor Taizong narrowly obtained the final victory and his imperial brothers were all executed on the spot, with several hundred of their followers simultaneously being beheaded.

Because of this bloody, rather inglorious history, the Hundred Herb Garden lost its status as an Imperial Garden and was placed under the custody of the Orthodoxy's Hall of Heavenly Virtue, to be used for growing medicinal herbs and spirit fruits. Perhaps

because the soil of the Hundred Herb Garden had absorbed too many nutrients from the blood, or perhaps because too many corpses had been buried beneath it, the medicinal herbs and spirit fruits planted here flourished. It once more became valued by the Imperial Court and was placed under strict guard.

In reality, extremely few people knew that the reason the Hundred Herb Garden was so heavily guarded, besides the precious medicinal herbs and spirit fruits growing within, was that it would often be used as a residence for important and powerful figures that would find it inconvenient to appear in public. For example, when the Divine Empress was first expelled from the Imperial Palace, she resided in the temple here in cultivation. It was also precisely for this reason that the Hall of Heavenly Virtue later on received enormous benefits.

At present, the Hundred Herb Garden was inhabited by another noble.

Under the old walls crawling with ivy was a table made of stone. A tea cup was on the table, and the cup contained the rarely seen and precious tea brewed from tea leaves freshly picked in the rain this spring.

A little lady was drinking tea.

Her face was childish, her pupils like black stars, her lips like red plums. She had long and slender eyelashes, and her pale white cheeks had two faint patches of red. She was a picture of astonishing beauty.

It was an extremely healthy sort of beauty, delighting both the body and mind of others, but never giving them any sort of distracting thoughts.

The girl herself was not much delighted. Her face was one of deep distress because she still had not found that person.

Chapter 28 – Climbing Over The Wall And Seeing A Black Robe

This young girl was called Luoheng, but her nickname was Luoluo. This was because ever since she was very young, she had a habit of adding a few words before her sentences. For example, when she was calling at the goshawk to land on her little hand or when she was calling for the enormous crocodile in the river to quickly take her to the other side, she would always say, "Lah lah, faster!"

Luoluo was fourteen this year, still very young. For certain reasons, her appearance and figure seemed somewhat younger than her actual age, charmingly childish. Just like her innocent appearance, from the moment she was born, she enjoyed riches, glory, and status, living a carefree life without any worries. This was still the case, even after leaving her homeland for the faraway capital.

She had already lived in the Hundred Herb Garden for almost a year. She rarely had contact with the outside world, so it was hard for her to not feel somewhat lonely.

She didn't much care about this, because the only thing she cared about was how to cultivate—in the aspect of cultivation, she had a few problems that she had been unable to resolve. Even her seemingly omnipotent father had been unable to resolve them, resulting in her journey of over a thousand li to the capital.

She had concealed her identity and attended classes in the Heavenly Dao Academy and Star Seizer Academy, even consulting

those brilliant instructors in private. She had even discussed related problems with the Guardians of the Imperial Palace. Regretfully, those problems continued to have no solution.

In her hour of deepest despair, she suddenly sensed one night that a star in the depths of the night sky had been lit up. She did not know where this star was, but she knew that the spiritual sense that had lit was very powerful, very serene. Moreover, there was clearly something different about this spiritual sense compared to those sent out by normal human cultivators. That she could sense all of this was purely because of her innate gift, so upon confirming that everything she sensed had been real, she wanted to find that person.

She wanted to place those questions that had perplexed her for so many years before that person, hoping that she would be able to get an answer.

But quite a few days had passed, and she had still not been able to find that person. Those subordinates she had dispatched, and even the Guardians and experts of the Imperial Palace assisting her, had not been able to find a single clue, which made her grow even more depressed.

Luoluo's mood was rather downcast, the expensive tea in the cup unable to attract any of her attention. In normal times, how could someone as skilled in the tea ceremony as her treat such fragrant and delightful tea with such disregard? How could she perform such an unreasonable action?

At this moment, she smelled an aroma.

Luoluo widened her eyes, her body growing somewhat stiff.

This was a very faint aroma, but upon entering her nose, it instantly bloomed, becoming extremely distinct, enchanting her like a bottle of fine wine. The Hundred Herb Garden contained countless rare treasures and strange fruits which produced all sorts of scents in the night, yet none of them could suppress this aroma!

When she was small, the valley she lived in was filled with wildflowers. Even in the early summer when the sun was beginning to rise and all those wildflowers bloomed at the same time, not even that aroma was this fragrant!

She was even willing to swear an oath to the profuse stars in the sky that she had never smelled something so good in all her life.

But this aroma was still so faint.

What sort of aroma was this? Where did this aroma come from?

As Luoluo thought of these things, she abruptly realized that the aroma had vanished. In but an instant, that aroma had drifted away, leaving not a single trace behind. She felt lost and disappointed, as if she had missed out on something very important in her life.

She walked several dozen steps west along the wall, towards the place where flowers were blossoming amidst the ivy. She realized

that the aroma was not coming from here and inadvertently turned her gaze to the wall overgrown with ivy. She faintly sensed that the aroma had come from the other side of the wall.

What was on the other side of the wall? Apparently it was the abandoned Orthodox Academy. Ever since she took up residence in the Hundred Herb Garden, that side had always been quiet and noiseless, just like a graveyard. However, from a certain day onwards, it began to grow livelier, as if something was going on over there.

Did she want to go over and see?

She had this vague feeling that this aroma was somehow connected to the person that she had been searching for.

The hand in Luoluo's broad sleeve slightly tightened, her emotions growing rather tense. Without turning around, she looked out of the corner of her eyes into the darkness.

The light emitted by the oil lamp behind that hanging basket of flowers fell into the darkness, seeming to deform somewhat before disappearing.

This meant that there was someone there, perhaps some powerful existence.

She knew who those people were. They were the clansmen responsible for protecting her. At the same time, however, they

were also the clansmen that limited her activities. Every time she wanted to go to the Heavenly Dao Academy or Star Seizer Academy, she would require a long period of preparation, and they would certainly not let her depart so late in the night.

Luoluo gazed at her shadow on the wall and felt herself very useless, very cowardly.

She suddenly began to giggle, shook her head, plucked a button from her left lapel, and then opened her palm.

This perfectly round button, ground from a rhinoceros horn, fell from her small hand to the floor.

There was a light clap.

Smoke enveloped the area by the academy wall, boring in and out of the ivy.

Swishswishswishswish, ten-odd figures shot out like arrows from various places in the darkness.

The middle-aged man at their head waved his palm, completely banishing the smoke, but realized that no one was by the wall.

These ten-odd people clearly possessed extraordinary cultivations. In the world, there wouldn't be many experts of their caliber. Yet now, their faces were abnormally pale and exceptionally fearful.

A person said with a trembling voice, "Prin...the young lady... she's gone."

The middle-aged man had an exceptionally gloomy expression. He softly yelled out, "Quickly report this to the palace!"

.....

.....

Luoluo had not gone far, she had just gone to the other side of the wall.

She believed that those clansmen of hers would not be able to find her in such a short span of time—because the seemingly ordinary button she had used was a Thousand Li Button.

The Thousand Li Button was a sort of magical artifact that could allow someone to instantly travel vast distances. Even when confronting an incredibly powerful enemy, one could use this button to escape. It was extremely precious, even worth the price of a life. Even places like the Great Zhou Imperial Palace and the Longevity Sect would only possess a few of these buttons.

Yet she had used one so casually, and she had used it to get past a wall.

Without a doubt, this was a recklessly wasteful way of doing things, and it was precisely for this reason that she was so sure her clansmen would not expect her to use a Thousand Li Button to simply climb over a wall. She should have enough time to find the source of that aroma.

As long as she could find that person, what did the use of a single Thousand Li Button matter?

She had always been a very generous person.

In the almost a year's worth of time that she had lived in the Hundred Herb Garden, she had once peeked her head over the wall to get a look at the Orthodox Academy, curious about that incident from ten-odd years ago. Several months had passed since then, and now that she had truly entered this place for the first time, she discovered that things had changed greatly.

It was still very peaceful, but the weeds growing along the lake had been cut down into a flat lawn. Through the starlight, one could see that the water grass in the lake had also been cleared up. The greatest change had to be the buildings. Other than the main hall, which had been damaged far too fiercely, the other buildings and pavilions were almost repaired like new.

In the deep darkness, only the library had lights.

Luoluo took a few steps in that direction but was suddenly confronted by a gust of wind. She closed her eyes, took a deep breath, and finally seized upon a hint of that aroma in the wind.

Her face instantly revealed an expression of reverie, knowing that she had not found the wrong place.

When she opened her eyes, her reverie had become vigilance, her childish beauty tinged with frost.

A person slowly walked out from the trees by the lake.

This person was dressed in a black robe that reached to the knees, the two sleeves also reaching the knees. The person seemed extremely neat and orderly, yet the head and face were covered by the black robe's hood, making the person seem completely mysterious.

Luoluo faintly smiled at this person as her right hand slowly moved to her left lapel, and secretly plucked off a button made of rhinoceros horn.

This was also a Thousand Li Button.

She did not know who this black-robed person was, but it was plain to see that this person had been waiting all this time for her to appear. That was the problem.

Ever since she was small, she had been taught to never place herself in any sort of danger. In addition, she could clearly sense that this black-robed man...especially the pitch-black object gripped tightly in his hands, posed a very serious threat to her.

So she prepared without hesitation to use a second Thousand Li Button.

She truly was very generous, very wasteful, because she had the right.

She opened her palm, and the button dropped to the floor.

Yet at that very moment, the man shrouded in a black robe also opened his palm.

The pitch-black object in his palm seemed to be made of metal. Its two ends were very sharp, its middle a little thick, and its surface was smooth. It looked very much like a shuttle.

This pitch-black metal weapon fell even faster than the button, and its sharp end deeply thrust into the loose, soft soil of the lawn.

With a burst of clacks, the smooth surface of the metal weapon was quickly covered in countless fine scales. These scales then burst apart and transformed into countless tiny pieces of metal that noiselessly shot off into the night sky.

With the shooting off of those pieces of metal, a powerful Qi instantly enveloped a circle several hundred zhang in circumference, the Orthodox Academy at its center.

The smoke gradually dispersed.

Luoluo's figure was still in its original position, a trickle of blood seeping from her lips!

The Thousand Li Button had not helped her depart!

She raised her head up to the night sky and saw that the descending starlight seemed to be slightly twisted.

She didn't know what sort of magical artifact that shuttle-like metal weapon was, but it had actually been able to seal off such a large space!

Her smile had already faded. She looked at the black-robed man by the tree and seriously asked, "To bitterly cultivate until the upper level of Ethereal Opening...oh, I forgot...you don't have that way of speaking on your side, but in brief, it's no easy task. You're sure that you want to be rendered into scattered ash and dispersed smoke, and for your family and relatives to be chased down and slaughtered for the rest of their lives until not a single one remains? To pay such an enormous price, is it worth it?"

This was not a threat, but a guaranteed outcome, so it was particularly forceful.

Any person that attempted to inflict harm upon her would inevitably have to suffer the boundless rage of the eight hundred li of the Red River.

"Then, they would first have to know who I am."

The black-robed man slowly removed his hood, revealing a plain and unremarkable face.

It was a middle-aged man possessing no special features whatsoever. If he were to be thrown into the crowds of the capital, absolutely no one would be able to recall his appearance.

Especially when he combed his hair into a bun.

Tonight, he did not disguise himself. His black hair spilled onto his shoulders, thus revealing those two black demon horns, exceptionally clear in the starlight.

This middle-aged man that was a demon said with unquestionable sincerity:

"Moreover, if I can kill Your Highness in the capital of the humans, let alone my life, I'm even willing to sacrifice my soul."

Chapter 29 – One Remark Startles The Wind And Rain

As the starlight spilled down from the night sky and passed through that invisible protective screen, it refracted strangely. As this light fell upon the middle-aged demon male's face, it made his face even more pale, just like the ice and snow in the north that never melted.

Luoluo raised her hand and wiped the blood from her lips as she asked him, "Do you plan to capture me or kill me?"

The demon man calmly replied, "If I capture Your Highness, it will be impossible for me to leave the capital, so with my apologies, I can only kill Your Highness here."

Luoluo stared at those two demon horns faintly discernable amongst his hair and asked, "It seems that you've waited for a very long time."

The demon man slightly bent his body and said, "From the moment Princess left her homeland. To be more precise, from the moment Princess crossed that river reeking with blood, I have always been waiting, waiting for this day to come."

Luoluo commented, "That really is a very long time."

"I've been away from my home for several years already, and more than a year has passed since I began this journey with Your

Highness. In the capital, I've been hiding like a mouse for the greater part of a year. My life was just silently watching Your Highness from the darkness, very monotonous and very dangerous."

The demon calmly recounted how he had lived in these past years. He spoke very indifferently, but in reality, it was a very cruel, even tragic life—to live in the city that was the heart of the human world for so many years, he inevitably had to pay an enormous price, especially in mental terms.

After a moment of silence, he gazed across the lake to the distant north, sighing, "I deeply miss the wind and snow of my home, I also deeply miss my wife and children. Thank you, Princess, for your mercy. Tonight, I finally have the opportunity to complete my important mission."

Upon hearing these two statements, Luoluo felt a little regret.

She had not expected that the demons had been constantly spying on her, following from her home all the way to the capital. With such far-reaching plans, so carefully and deeply thought out, once the demons snatched an opportunity, it was certain that they would be prepared for any eventuality.

What she regretted was that she was the one that had offered this opportunity to the demons. If she had not used her most ingenious method to escape the protection of her clansmen for the sake of finding that person, the demon man in front of her would probably still have to remain hidden, whittled away by his life in the human world until he turned old.

Gazing up at the night sky and seeing the clearly refracted starlight, she knew that this magical artifact had successfully divided the world into inside and outside. Although her clansmen were on the other side of the Orthodox Academy's wall, they would assuredly be unable to hear her calls.

At this place and time, no one else could save her, except herself.

Luoluo had confirmed her situation, but she actually grew calmer. As she gazed at the demon man, the childishness about her face was completely replaced with the will to fight. "Upper level Ethereal Opening is very strong, but not strong enough. I don't believe you're qualified to kill me."

"To live in the capital is not easy. There are too many human experts here. If I am too strong, it could easily alarm powerful figures like Mo Yu, the Great Zhou Imperial Palace would send a few Guardians, and then I would be dead, so I cannot be strong."

The demon man gazed at her and said, "My techniques are specialized in concealment. Although not particularly strong, they're not particularly weak either, just enough to kill Princess. Thus, I am the most appropriate, thus, the one that appeared before Your Highness today was me and not anyone else."

Luoluo said, "I want to know your name."

She spoke very calmly, seeming to look down on him from high above.

"I am called Mohe," the demon man obediently replied.

Luoluo said, "Mohe is a surname, not a name."

The demon man faintly smiled, his pale white face wrinkling like a sheet of paper. With this rather frightening look, he said, "Princess, it's meaningless to delay for time."

Luoluo began to laugh, the sound crisp and clear. With the night wind, it could be sent very far if not for that protective screen. At the least, the people on the other side of the wall would have been able to hear it clearly. The demon man seemed to have no intent of stopping her.

"I thought you didn't care about my delaying for time," she ceased her attempts and seriously said.

The demon man said, "After killing Princess, I will definitely find it very hard to escape the capital. So this period is most likely the final period of my more than one hundred years of life. For me to be able to speak with a person of such exalted bloodlines as Princess, I feel that my soul will be more easily soothed."

Luoluo opened her eyes wide and blinked slightly, asking inquisitively, "You're not worried that you will be discovered by humans?"

The demon man pointed at the metal pestle-like object on the

grass before him.

"This place is very close to the Imperial Palace," she kindly warned.

The demon man expressionlessly replied, "I have faith that even if the Divine Empress were looking at this very place right now, she would not realize what we are doing."

"Fine, I truly do admit that no one will come to save me."

Luoluo sighed. She was obviously miserable, yet also rather cute.

"Then, you are sure that you really can kill me?"

After saying this, her eyes suddenly became extremely bright, like two bright pearls. Her right hand took a leather whip from her waist. This whip was extremely long, so long that it ultimately piled up at her feet, and it was a mystery just how it had been stored on her waist.

"This is the legendary Falling Rain Whip?"

The demon man seemed very regretful, perhaps because he had seen a legendary divine weapon or for some other reason.

He turned his gaze back to Luoluo and said solemnly, "Regardless of how many rare magical artifacts are on Your Highness's person,

Your Highness must die tonight, because this is the Lord Military Advisor's plan, and so nothing unexpected can occur."

Upon hearing this sentence, Luoluo slightly tightened her grip on the whip, turning somewhat pale.

The Demon Military Advisor's reputation was one of the most terrifying of the continent.

Even her parents paid a great deal of attention to this person.

When that great war of the past concluded, the demons suffered a crushing defeat under the combined armies of the humans and demi-humans, but this did not mean the death of their country. They could bitterly persist in their cold realm of the north, and there were even signs of recovery in the past few years. Besides the cruel and powerful Demon Lord, who oversaw Xuelao City and stabilized the various great powers, the most important reason for this recovery was a military advisor that crafted plans for the demons. Whether they were outrageous plots or fair and open policies for governing the people, that human's shadow was always behind them.

Yes, that human's shadow.

The Demon Military Advisor was a human.

No one knew why a human was willing to betray his race and to give his utmost effort for the sake of the demons, but the entire

continent knew that this human was extremely respected by the demons. From this point alone, one could tell just how extraordinary this person was.

None of the Demon Military Advisor's plans had ever failed, and there seemed to be no gaps in his thinking. His control and use of the minds of people had long since surpassed the point of perfection and become an indescribable strength.

In these countless years, the expeditionary forces sent north by the humans were all thwarted by his crafty plots, to the extent that before the army had even set out, it had already failed. The damage inflicted by this person was even more than that inflicted by the terrifying Eight Great Hermits of the demons added together.

Countless human experts and demi-human braves had attempted to find the Demon Military Advisor and then assassinate him, but no one had ever succeeded. Besides an expert of the path of the sword belonging to the Longevity Sect, no one had even found him.

Even today, no one knew the name of the Demon Military Advisor, what he looked like, where he had come from, or what sort of past he had that would make him betray the humans and devote himself to the demons. There was even a legend that when the demons suffered their crushing defeat, this Military Advisor did not choose to return with the Demon Lord to Xuelao City, instead choosing to conceal his identity, and that even now, he was living in the human world. He might be the neighbor by one's side, he might be one's teacher, and he might even be a priest.

This was the most frightening aspect of the Demon Military Advisor.

People only knew that he often wore a black robe.

Many demon experts, when mentioning him, would all address him with deep respect: Lord Black Robe.

.....

.....

Luoluo gazed at the black-robed demon man standing by the tree, her heart gradually sinking.

If this was planned by the Demon Military Advisor, then it really might be very difficult to escape through sheer luck. Everyone knew that although the plans of the Military Advisor seemed simple, even casual, they had never contained any sort of gap—nothing unexpected would ever occur.

The demon man by the tree was wearing a black robe. He was most likely that Military Advisor's direct subordinate.

The metal artifact in the grass had cut off all changes to the world outside.

She had come alone to the Orthodox Academy.

No one else would be able to see her.

She would naturally die.

This trap was very simple, yet it was logically impossible to escape from.

She knew that she could only rely on her own strength to strive for survival.

She knew even more that the legendary Demon Military Advisor had definitely made extremely precise calculations on the strength of both sides. Just as the demon man had just said, he might not be very strong, but he was not weak either, just strong enough to kill her.

It was definitely enough to kill her.

She was able to see the strength of the man's cultivation due to her innate gift, but it did not mean that she could defeat him.

Based on human reckonings of strength, she was currently at the initial level of the Meditation Realm. With her age, this cultivation level was already sufficient to shock the world, yet in a life-or-death battle between mature experts, this sort of cultivation was not at all enough for her to survive.

"To be able to speak so much with the exalted Princess at the final moment of my life, I am very content."

The demon man slowly walked towards her and slowly raised his right hand, white rays of light seeming to shine through his fingers.

It was a ball of light condensed from true essence.

Luoluo sensed the terrifying Qi coming from the ball of light and slightly narrowed her eyes.

The demon man was wearing a pair of worn-out boots on his feet.

As the boots stepped on the lawn, they left no tracks behind.

During the day, the grass had been cut short, and now their shorn ends revealed a most pleasant aroma.

Apparently because they had been cut short, the grass seemed to have more strength, seeming to grasp at the demon's shoes.

No, that was only a momentary scene.

In reality, from the moment the demon man had taken his first step, his body had begun to blur and then vanish from sight!

Luoluo's eyes grew brighter as if wanting to illuminate the darkness.

She knew for this demon man to be able to hide himself in the human world for so long, it was definitely exactly as he said: his techniques must be extremely specialized in concealment. Yet she had not expected that her opponent could so easily vanish in the middle of battle.

In the next moment, the demon man appeared behind her!

His terrifying fist rumbled towards her back!

The demon man was far stronger than her, but even so, he had used his most powerful technique.

He had put all his true essence into this fist, all his emotions into this strike. Even though this strike would also cripple his hand, he did not care. As long as he could kill this girl, he was even willing to offer his life and soul, so what did he care for a hand?

Luoluo had no means of blocking this fist. In reality, she hadn't even been able to seize his tracks.

But her whip could.

The long whip in her right hand flicked out like a snake, the tail of the whip swishing through the darkness like a snake's tongue and piercing into the throat of the man.

At the same time, she opened her palm, causing a third button to fall to the floor.

The demon man's pale face was still indifferent, not caring about any of this, his fist still striking down.

Squelch.

A bloody hole appeared in his throat.

But at the same time, his fist fell on Luoluo's back.

Demons were born in the wind and snow amongst the mountains. Their strength became famous through mountains.

His fist was a mountain.

This mountain boomed against the girl's body.

It was a very brutal sight.

.....

.....

.....

.....

The button fell upon the ground.

With a puff of smoke, and before it could even disperse, Luoluo had turned around to directly confront this monstrous fist.

With this demon's strange movement techniques, there should have been no reasonable way for her to have the time to turn around, but she had done it.

Because she had used another Thousand Li Button in advance.

The Thousand Li Button could not help her overcome that invisible protective screen, but it could at least help her turn around.

But what could she do after turning around?

That terrifying fist was getting closer and closer, the light of true essence seeping through his fingers growing brighter and brighter.

Was it out of dignity that she had chosen to confront death head-on in her life's final moments?

No.

An unswerving determination appeared upon Luoluo's childish face.

With a clear cry, she tightened her tiny fist and fearlessly sent it flying towards the demon's fist.

Boom!

Floorboards were sent flying, dust billowed into the air, countless cobweb-like cracks appeared in the ground, and the trees of the forest which had just been pruned were sent toppling by the wind!

The night wind gently blew.

The dust gradually settled, revealing two people.

The demon man stood at his original location, the expression on his pale face abnormally complex as several trickles of blood slowly flowed down.

His black robe had already been cut into countless pieces, revealing his pale and robust body.

His right fist had become a mass of blood and flesh, the white bone visible.

The most terrifying injury was on his head.

His left demon horn had fractured from its base, and blood bubbled forth from it.

A slightly yellowed tusk was deeply embedded in his forehead, slightly trembling.

If this sharp tusk had been able to get just a little deeper, perhaps it would have already killed him!

The demon extended a hand to pull out this tusk, but for some reason, he did not dare touch it.

He knew that if not for the magical artifact given to him by the Military Advisor suppressing the entire battlefield, he would already be dead to this girl's sneak attack.

With this thought, his face turned further pale, somewhat fearful.

"This...is the Great Emperor's Tusk?"

He stared into Luoluo's eyes, his voice a little shaky, both pained and angered. "Truly as expected of the Princess said in the tales to possess countless treasures, actually possessing protective magical artifacts of this level! In the end, I still underestimated you."

Three Thousand Li Buttons, one Falling Rain Whip, and also one Great Emperor's Tusk.

The acquisition of any of them could make an entire family go bankrupt...no, they were treasures that any expert would bankrupt their families to obtain.

And all of these were in her possession and used unsparingly by her.

If the world's experts were to see tonight's scene, they would undoubtedly beat their chests and stamp their feet in endless lamentation.

But she would not, because she was Luoluo, and she was very generous, so she was first very generous to herself. And anyway, those things had originally been hers.

"I must admit that Your Highness's response was truly outstanding, your innate abilities as powerful as expected, but regretfully...this is a plan of the Lord Military Advisor. He definitely calculated the items on Your Highness's body and confirmed that they were not enough to kill me."

The demon used his hand to smear his blood all over his face. In the slightly crooked starlight, he seemed abnormally terrifying.

He finished, "I am still alive, so Your Highness will die."

Luoluo's situation was not at all good. A moment ago, she had used her sleeve to wipe her lip clean, but now another trickle of blood had stained it.

She stared at the demon as she lightly shook her whip. The long whip reflected the starlight, seeming to come alive in the darkness. No longer was it a snake, but a dragon.

A dragon amidst the wind and rain.

The Falling Rain Whip, seventeenth on the Tier of Legendary Weapons.

.....

.....

The demon disappeared, and howls surrounded the library. The lights leaking out from the library were like small boats amongst massive waves, dimming and brightening, disappearing and appearing.

Luoluo lowered her head and quietly stood, the Falling Rain Whip in her hands wildly dancing without end in the wind.

Drops of rain could faintly be seen.

Occasionally, a strand of cold Qi would break through the

darkness but be blocked by a drop of rain.

Occasionally, a harsh light would pierce through the wind, but then the wind would suddenly grow more hurried and form a protective screen.

The Falling Rain Whip could draw down the wind and rain from every direction. To protect the body, it was the finest weapon.

This was also the reason she had chosen the Falling Rain Whip as her weapon when she was leaving her home.

In the end, however, she was still just a girl at the initial level of Meditation. The gap between her and the demon was too great.

If her sneak attack with the Great Emperor's Tusk had not succeeded, the demon might have been able to use his vigorous true essence to directly oppose the might of the Falling Rain Whip, forcefully break through, and kill her, but the current situation was just as bad for her.

The movement techniques of this demon were far too bizarre. Following some incomprehensible trajectory, he traveled freely through the darkness.

Her whip could drive the wind and rain in all directions, protecting herself in an impenetrable wind, yet it could not seize upon her opponent's whereabouts. Naturally, it could not attack him either.

She could not attack, and how could she keep on defending forever?

No matter how intelligent the Falling Rain Whip was, it still required her soul to control. Every gust of wind or drop of rain consumed a part of her true essence.

Her breathing was becoming hurried. She did not know if she could last until her opponent's strange magical artifact lost its effectiveness, last until her clansmen could hurry over.

She still relied on her composure and willpower that surpassed her peers to persevere, to wait.

She was waiting for the instant her opponent truly revealed his body.

The magical artifacts she had brought with her had all been used, but she was still unable to escape. However, she still had the whip, and crucially, she was still hiding one more method.

Only she knew that although she was holding the Falling Rain Whip, she was using a sword style.

This sword style contained the words 'wind' and 'rain'.

The Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong.

This sword style's most frightening aspect was that it could condense an entire sky of wind and rain into a single point, striking at an opponent's weakest point.

The demon was already heavily injured, no longer at his previous strength. She believed that if she was given an opportunity, she could definitely kill him.

The problem was that although the demon had been angered by his wounds, he had not lost his sense of reason. He displayed extreme patience. Without a complete grasp of victory, he relied on his strange movement techniques to roam outside the wind and rain, not even giving her a chance to attack.

Luoluo suddenly felt rather wronged.

The techniques of demon experts had always been mysterious, so it was fine if she couldn't grasp them, but if she had been able to completely learn the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong, if she had truly been able to understand the true meaning of bringing down the wind and rain from all directions, what need would she have to be passive?

Why didn't the teachers of the Heavenly Dao Academy and Star Seizer Academy know how to teach her? If she was able to find that person from that night, would he really be able to teach her? Right, if it weren't for that guy, how could she have encountered this assassination? How could she have reached such a miserable state?

Yes, it was all that guy's fault.

Luoluo felt very wronged, so she no longer wished to be so generous. She decided that if she were able to find that person in the future, she would not send him so many gifts.

Perhaps cut the amount of gifts in half?

As she thought of these things, the battle continued.

Danger continued to approach.

A wound appeared on her neck, a result of the demon taking advantage of a gap in the Falling Rain Whip to deliver an almost fatal blow.

Not only did Luoluo feel wronged, she began to feel grief.

She really did not want to die.

She had always believed that living was the most fortunate thing, was the most beautiful thing—for the clouds on the horizon were so beautiful, and the clouds of the capital were very beautiful, at times like the hair of a lady on the street. The clouds of her home were also very beautiful, at times like the face of a young horse thief.

Moreover, even if she died, she could not be killed in the capital.

Because this would cause many innocent people to die, like the lady on the street or that young horse thief.

Luoluo continued to lose more and more blood.

The Falling Rain Whip gradually began to lose strength.

The demon continued to remain hidden in the darkness, his position unknown.

She felt very tired, and then a little sleepy.

The Falling Rain Whip moved noiselessly through the darkness, the falling wind and rain also made no sound, and that demon was absolutely silent.

The Orthodox Academy was completely silent, truly suitable for sleeping.

Besides cultivating and playing, what she enjoyed the most was sleeping.

She knew that she could not sleep, but she really was tired.

At this moment, a voice broke the silence.

In the darkness, the Orthodox Academy awakened.

Luoluo also awakened.

"The stars in heaven reflect the organs; let your true essence flow voluntarily. Bring your wrist up to your shoulder, and the wind and rain will be restrained."

Luoluo did not know who had spoken.

But she knew that these were the contents of the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong.

She subconsciously turned the wrist of the hand holding the whip, slightly bent her left knee, and her true essence voluntarily rose up. Ignoring those meridians mentioned in the sword manual, they followed the channels in her body, traveling through her organs, and reached her chest. Then, she felt the hand holding the whip grow hotter.

What next?

She thought, somewhat puzzled.

The night was still dark.

That voice rang out once more.

"Dou Zhen, Kui Liu."

These were two rather strange phrases.

But if disassembled, people living on this world would clearly understand what they were.

Dou and Zhen referred to two stars, in the east and west respectively.

Kui and Liu referred to two stars, in the south and north respectively.

The stars were eternally constant and unmoving, especially those famous stars. The people on the ground, old and young, would be able to clearly remember their positions.

Luoluo froze, not understanding the meaning. Were they directions?

Could it be that she should stab towards the Dou star? And then at the Zhen star?

Suddenly, she came to her senses.

Between Dou and Zhen, she could draw a line.

Between Kui and Liu, she could also draw a line.

The intersection of these two lines was a single point in the night sky.

Luoluo opened her eyes wide and turned to that spot.

The Falling Rain Whip in her hand had already stabbed at that point in the night sky.

The Falling Rain Whip bound together the wind and rain into a line, transformed it into a sword.

The Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong.

In the Orthodox Academy, the wind and rain was suddenly restrained, but sword intent flourished.

Squelch.

A spurt of blood shot out from the darkness.

At the same time came the shocked and furious cry of pain from that demon expert.

Chapter 30 – Old Books In Exchange For A New Day

.....

.....

Soon after, the voice rang out once more.

It was still four words, four stars, one coordinate.

"Su Shu, Tan Wei."

The Falling Rain Whip in Luoluo's hands complied with the directions, the raindrops and the wind completely condensing into a straight line in the darkness. The sword intent of Mount Zhong, the condensed wind and rain, as if disregarding time, accurately stabbed at that point in the night sky.

It was nothing but pitch-black darkness, but when the Falling Rain Whip stabbed, it came away once more with a spurt of blood and a groan of pain! Different from that cry of pain carrying shock and anger, this groan was more perplexed, and even faintly fearful!

Luoluo felt her true essence swiftly circulating through her body. It was clearly not flowing through the meridians required by the sword manual, yet it was still able to arrive at the hand holding the whip, and it even seemed more boundless than when she normally

practiced.

This confused her, but she felt even more elated.

In the following period of time, that voice would continuously ring out, at times speaking from the sword manual of the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong, telling her which technique she should use. At times, it would speak of how she should circulate true essence, yet these instructions were clearly different from what was laid out in the sword manual. Most of the time was spent with the names of the stars in the night sky.

As she listened to this voice, Luoluo felt like she had returned to when she was very young, together with her father atop a stone plateau as he pointed at the drifting clouds on the horizon and spoke of how to fight. Her emotions began to grow calmer and calmer, more and more cool-headed. She simply stopped thinking, letting her spiritual sense go where it wished. The Falling Rain Whip howled through the air like an extremely sharp longsword, continuously stabbing at the darkness!

Crackcrackcrackcrack. Countless collisions rang out through the seemingly empty darkness, the sound of the tenacious and terrifying Falling Rain Whip lashing against a person's body. It was followed by several dozen pieces of cloth dancing in the wind. When these pieces of cloth fell to the ground, it could be seen that they were all black.

Swishswishswishswish. The forward half of the frenziedly dancing Falling Rain Whip was already dyed red, countless spurts of blood having sprayed out from the darkness, yet the person

injured could not be seen. It was like some invisible brush, dipped in ink ground from cinnabar, was wildly scribbling in the darkness, an exceptionally eerie sight.

With a pained and furious shout, the demon expert was finally unable to conceal his tracks, and he dropped out of the darkness. The moment his two feet hit the floor, he stuck to the ground and rolled more than a dozen times. Only when he had retreated to the lake shore did he dare to stop.

The demon expert's body was covered all over in wounds inflicted by the Falling Rain Whip, all of them flowing with blood. His black robe had long since been cut into countless pieces, the remnants hanging in shambles over his body. He looked abnormally miserable and wretched. Just where had all his previous might gone?

His first thought after being forced out of the darkness was to retreat—the farther he could get from the Falling Rain Whip, the better. In his wretched withdrawal, he did not forget to pull that magical artifact out of the grass, because he had been beaten so badly that even his soul had grown disheartened.

He crouched on the lake shore like a dog, his right hand rigidly holding up the magical artifact to protect his head. His voice was like a broken bellows, hoarse and extremely grating on the ears, containing the emotions of shock, anger, resentment, and fear. Even now, he could not understand just what had happened.

"Who? Who is it? Get out here!"

He was able to obtain Military Advisor Black Robe's trust and take on such an important mission because this technique the demon expert was skilled in was a secret technique of Xuelao City, because he was extremely skilled in concealment. Only this way could he have lived for such an extended period of time in the human world. At the same time, it was also because he possessed a near unimaginably tenacious willpower. It was impossible for him to be disheartened over a momentary setback, but tonight's events had completely exceeded his ability to accept and were on the verge of breaking his will.

Because he was most skilled at concealing his tracks, but he had been completely seen through! That enemy that had never appeared seemed to know his techniques inside and out, was able to perfectly determine where he would appear next. Just how was this possible?!

"Just who are you! Show yourself!"

The demon expert looked around at the pitch-black Orthodox Academy, then he turned his gaze to the dimly lit library. He recalled that he had seemingly forgotten something, and his face covered in blood revealed an extremely fierce sense of unease, his voice shuddering.

The grass outside the library grew brighter, because the door had been opened.

Soon after, the lights dimmed once more, because a person had

come out.

A youth stood on the stone steps.

He was dressed in an old Daoist robe, a dagger gripped in his hands.

His face was somewhat pale, somewhat nervous, but his eyes were firm with no intention of cowering away.

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng had been in the library the entire time.

In these past few nights, he had always been in the library.

He was drawing in starlight for Purification.

The reason he had awoken from his meditation was not the fierce battle outside, but that the magical artifact used by the demon expert was interfering with the starlight descending from the night sky.

He had walked to the window and realized that an intense battle was unfolding in the darkness of the Orthodox Academy. He did

not know who the girl was, but upon seeing the man's demon horns, he naturally knew which side he should stand on.

Then, the demon man had disappeared into the night.

The long whip in the girl's hands noiselessly summoned a sky full of wind and rain.

At the very beginning, he simply did not believe that he could help this girl in any way. He had not even succeeded at Purification, and it was obvious that the girl and the demon were both very powerful people.

He stood in the corner by the window, silently watching the battle and cheering the girl on. He didn't make any noise because he did not want to introduce any more variables in this battle, did not want his existence to cause the girl to divide her attention.

A demon would naturally not care for the life or death of an ordinary human, but the girl might.

He would not miss even this sort of detail. He was a very detailed person.

But in the next moment, he realized to his shock that he really might be able to change the course of this battle.

The long whip in the girl's hand was clearly no ordinary weapon, but instead of using some whip style, she was using a sword style.

The Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong.

In the old temple of Xining Village, Chen Changsheng had once seen this sword manual. He remembered very clearly that it was within the fourth scroll of the 'Commentary on the Classic of Controlling Splendor'.

Of course, the secrets of the sword manual had mostly existed in the form of debates between distinguished Daoists of old. It was only a few days ago, after he had found corresponding books in the library, that he understood that those words were originally speaking of methods for circulating true essence and the forms of techniques too wonderful to describe with words.

He could recall this sword manual from back to front, and with his review in these past few days, he could naturally see that the sword style this girl had concealed in her whip movements only contained the form of pattering rain of the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong, but none of its cold and desolate intent. Moreover, there was clearly a problem with her method of driving true essence, or else her movements would not be so improficient.

Yes, his body did not contain a drop of true essence, but he had already begun to research methods of circulating true essence.

In these past few days when he had been comparing the knowledge in the library with that contained in his mind, he had attempted to break through the limits of his meridians to circulate true essence. For this purpose, he had made several hypotheses—it

was impossible to link his nine meridians, so if he wished to cultivate, he had to find a completely new method.

He did not know if this method would have any use, if it could control the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong, because he was just a normal person with no true essence. But at the time, that girl was already covered in wounds and was about to die before his eyes, so he had to take a gamble and hope that it could help her.

Thus that remark.

"The stars in heaven reflect the organs; let your true essence flow voluntarily. Bring your wrist up to your shoulder, and the wind and rain will be restrained."

Fortunately, the problems in true essence circulation the girl encountered when using the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong were very similar to his own situation.

Even more fortunately, she did not know who Chen Changsheng was yet subconsciously complied with his instructions.

And most fortunately of all, those hypotheses of Chen Changsheng's mind achieved success on her body.

The Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong finally displayed its true might.

.....

.....

"But how did you know where I was?"

On the lake shore, that demon covered in blood stared at Chen Changsheng and spoke, his voice furious and perplexed.

The Falling Rain Whip possessed shocking might, especially after the girl obtained Chen Changsheng's instructions and was able to use her true essence in the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong. Thus, as long as it could discover this demon expert's position, it would assuredly inflict heavy wounds upon him.

This was precisely the problem: how had Chen Changsheng been able to see his hidden tracks with a single sentence?

"Northern Snow, the Plum Step, and more than three thousand coordinates—all of these need to be firmly memorized."

Chen Changsheng walked to the girl's side, his dagger held up in front of his chest. As he stared at the distant demon expert, his expression was extremely vigilant, but his words were very casual. "In the past, I did not know that this was precisely the Yeshi Step, but I memorized them."

Yes, this was that most secretive movement technique of the demons, the Yeshi Step. With this foot technique, one could freely move in a fixed range. Crucially, one could borrow the heavenly

secrets of wind and snow contained within this movement technique to conceal one's own tracks.

Even amongst the demons, this movement technique was a secret that was not allowed to be passed down.

But when Chen Changsheng was very young, he had already memorized all three-thousand-plus positions, as well as their sequence.

At the time, he believed that he was reading a novel concerning preaching called 'Records on the Bewildering Mists of the Capital'. Only eight days ago, when he saw a book in the library containing the records of a senior of the Orthodoxy on his battles with demon experts, and compared the two, did he understand that the novel was actually a secret technique manual.

"So you were lying, you are not a person of the Mohe, your surname is not Mohe."

Chen Changsheng stared at the demon and solemnly concluded, "You are a person of the Yeshi tribe, your surname is Yeshi."

The demon expert froze, his complexion turning abnormally nasty.

There were too many things that had taken him by surprise.

He had originally thought that the youth in the library would not

have any influence on tonight's plan because that youth had not even succeeded in Purification.

He had not expected for that youth to almost break Lord Black Robe's plan.

What surprised him the most was that this youth cared more about the small lie, insignificant to the grand scheme of things, that he had told.

This made him very depressed, very sullen.

Then, he began to feel grief, muttering to himself, "The Lord Military Advisor truly does possess unparalleled wisdom. He calculated that I would not want to die, that I wanted to use the sacred artifact to help me depart...thus, he arranged for the strange you to appear."

Chapter 31 – When The Sky Was Falling, He Stood Before Her

Chen Changsheng didn't quite understand what the demon was muttering about. He moved towards the girl, doing as much as possible to put her behind him.

With a mournful face, the demon continued, "Because of your appearance, I cannot kill her, so I can only activate the sacred artifact. As a result, I will have to die together with you. This is the Lord Military Advisor's will; no one can defy it."

Chen Changsheng felt vaguely uneasy and tightened the grip on his dagger.

The demon stood up and sighed sorrowfully at Chen Changsheng, "Young one, I do not know you are, but I think that you would have definitely become someone extraordinary in the future. It is a pity that you will have to accompany me in death tonight."

Upon saying this, he raised up the metal magical artifact in his hands. With this action, the terrifyingly monstrous Qi descended from the sky. Countless slender and tiny pieces of metal flew back from the darkness. The invisible protective screen that had cut off the world vanished.

A black net that seemed as enormous as a mountain descended towards the Orthodox Academy.

"[The Heavenly Net](#)?" Luoluo muttered, her face slightly pale.

(TN: It is referred to as 烟罗, Net of Fog, here, but it is later referred to as the 天罗, the Heavenly Net, so I am translating it as such.)

Nineteenth on the Tier of Legendary Weapons, the Heavenly Net.

The sacred artifact of the demons.

It was said that it was the hunting net used by the first Demon Lord when he went hunting.

Once it descended, the heavens and earth would all be entrapped.

Nothing could break it.

Even those famed divine weapons and enchanted swords could not break it.

Based on principle, such a powerful magical artifact of the demons should have been ranked even higher on the Tier of Legendary Weapons, at the very least not behind the Falling Rain Whip. But because the Tier of Legendary Weapons had been drawn up by the Pavilion of Heavenly Secrets of the human world, its ranking was inevitably somewhat suppressed. More importantly, the Heavenly Net had once been severely damaged.

It was said that in the distant past, [the Heavenly Net was actually called the Yama](#), but it had been severely damaged by some peerless expert of nigh unimaginable power. It was no longer able to match up to its power when it was held in the hands of the first Demon Lord, so its name was changed to the Heavenly Net.

(TN: This paragraph is probably the main reason for this net's original name, 烟罗. 烟 and 阎 share similar pronunciations. 阎罗 was the name of the net before it was heavily damaged, but 罗 in this case does not mean net, but instead is used together with 阎 to form Yan-luo, the Chinese pronunciation of Yama, the king of the underworld. A similar pronunciation is the term 'arhat', which is translated in Chinese as 阿罗汉, a-luo-han.)

If it were still the Yama in its pristine condition, the moment it opened, it could easily render anyone under the net into nothingness. The Heavenly Net that was now seriously damaged could also cut off the heavens and earth, but in order for it to attack, it would require the user to give up their life essence blood as an offering!

This was why the demon had been unwilling to use this magical artifact to attack at the very beginning. Only when Chen Changsheng's one remark startled the wind and rain and he became heavily injured did he understand that it was impossible for him to kill Luoluo without any harm to himself, thus forcing him to activate this magical artifact.

To be forced into rushing towards death, he was naturally somewhat sorrowful.

As she stared at the falling black net, Luoluo was in shock, her

face pale. She had recognized this net, knew that even though the Heavenly Net no longer possessed the monstrous might of its past, it was not something a normal person could block.

Her Falling Rain Whip could definitely not block it.

The legendary Frost God Spear could probably break through it, but the God Spear was in the Imperial Palace, so who could come to their aid?

She raised her head to the black net in the night sky, the Falling Rain Whip stabbing out like a bolt of lightning, carrying the howling wind and rain with it.

There was only a thump.

The Falling Rain Whip was like a dragon serpent struck by lightning, its bones shattered into countless pieces as it retreated in ruin.

An unimaginably horrifying strength traveled through the whip into her petite body.

With a groan, she vomited blood and fell backwards to the ground.

Tonight's bitter battle had placed far too much of a strain on this fourteen-year-old girl, and she now found it impossible to hold on. Her vision was hazy as she teetered on the verge of

unconsciousness. The final scene she saw was that youth wielding his dagger and thrusting it at the pitch-black night sky.

This sword was very dull, very ordinary, and also rather short.

The youth's hand was raised up high, confronting the black and enormous net that was like the sky.

His actions were somewhat awkward, giving off a rather sorrowful feeling.

Because the difference was too great, he gave off the feeling of one that had too excessively overestimated their capability, a very hopeless act.

It was like a praying mantis raising an arm to stop a run-away carriage, like an egg crashing down from the Dew Platform onto solid ground.

Luoluo was very sad, very apologetic. If not for her, he would not also have to die.

Then, she fell unconscious.

.....

.....

Riiiip.

A massive tear suddenly appeared in the middle of the seemingly impregnable black net. The night wind that had been kept out for so long fiercely poured in through the center of the night, followed soon after by the true starlight, pouring down like a waterfall.

In the depths of the sky brimming with starlight appeared a fiercely burning cloud. This red cloud seemed to have appeared out of nowhere, instantly landing in the center of the Orthodox Academy. The grass on the lawn became slightly scorched, the tender leaves of the scholar trees curled in the heat, and the temperature began to incessantly increase.

This was a Red Cloud Qilin!

The front hoof of the Red Cloud Qilin heavily struck the demon expert's chest. With a crisp crack, the demon expert's breastbone was completely shattered. Vomiting blood everywhere, the demon's body sunk heavily into the grass, but his right hand continued its stubborn grip on the magical artifact.

There was yet another harsh crack!

A fiercely burning blade glow illuminated the night sky over the Orthodox Academy.

The demon expert's right arm was sent flying in a stream of blood, landing far away in the lake.

A middle-aged man was seated on the Red Cloud Qilin, his body covered all over in armor, similarly dark red in color. His expression was solemn as he stared down on the demon.

A tinge of despair flashed through the demon expert's eyes as he muttered, "So it was you...no wonder the Heavenly Net was broken."

Xue Xingchuan, the Great Zhou Divine General of the Heavens, mounted on a Red Cloud Qilin, wielding a divine blade that glowed with blood!

He was deeply trusted by the Divine Empress and had commanded the Imperial Guards for many years.

Of the thirty-eight Divine Generals of the Great Zhou, he was ranked second!

"Yeshi Tanlu, you really were hiding in the capital."

Xue Xingchuan gazed expressionlessly at the blood-drenched man under the foot of his mount and said, "Of course, you don't have the qualification to have this general search for you for so long, but I really wish to know, after you are sent to the Department for Purging Officials, whether you will be able to stop yourself from speaking of Black Robe's whereabouts."

The demon man was actually called Yeshi Tanlu. He had already

been in despair, but only after hearing these words did he realize that the humans had always been preparing to find the whereabouts of Lord Black Robe from his body, which only deepened his despair. When he realized that he couldn't even commit suicide, his despair reached its nadir.

What was a true expert? Xue Xingchuan was a true expert!

Before him, even if one wanted to die, they wouldn't succeed!

Swishswishswishswish. The sound of countless people cutting through the air resounded throughout the Orthodox Academy. In the night sky, one could even faintly see several flying carriages approaching at high speeds.

The scene of battle was extremely close to the Imperial Palace. Once the Heavenly Net was broken, countless people were naturally alarmed.

The true expert that was Xue Xingchuan was the first to arrive, the other Imperial Guards and palace experts arriving quickly in succession.

In the darkness, countless more figures jumped over the academy wall. When those people saw the scene, they were abnormally shocked. Without even paying attention to the demon under Xue Xingchuan's custody, they madly rushed to Luoluo and swiftly brought her away.

Xue Xingchuan knew the identities of these people and did not stop them. To be able to find in the capital the Yeshi tribesman most skilled in concealment, and even alive, thus perhaps getting even closer to that enigmatic Military Advisor, made him very satisfied.

But the final words Yeshi Tanlu said before falling unconscious...

Xue Xingchuan slightly wrinkled his brow. He was keenly aware that by the time he had hurried over, the Heavenly Net had already been broken.

Several Imperial Guards placed the demon under even stricter guard and dragged him into the darkness to await his even more miserable end.

The Red Cloud Qilin slowly turned so Xue Xingchuan could face the nearby youth, and he impassively asked, "And who are you?"

Chen Changsheng was still tightly gripping his dagger, still somewhat unclear on just what had occurred. On hearing this question, he awoke from his daze, returned his dagger to its sheath, and answered, "I am a student here."

Xue Xingchuan's expression turned a little strange. He had not expected for this unremarkable youth to be the rumored new student of the Orthodox Academy.

He glanced him over and knew that this youth was an ordinary

person. That dagger of his had also been extremely ordinary, so he knew that tonight, this youth had simply been caught in the crossfire. That this youth dared to take his dagger and stand before that demon made Xue Xingchuan somewhat admire him.

But this was just admiration.

No person dared to care about the Orthodox Academy. This was a cursed place.

He also did not want to care.

A person stepped forward to confirm Chen Changsheng's identity.

The Red Cloud Qilin stamped on the ground and rose. Driving the red clouds, it soon disappeared into the Imperial Palace.

Chen Changsheng stared at this sight in shock.

.....

.....

Very early on the morning of the next day, Luoluo awoke. Her body had always been different from an ordinary person's, and she had fallen unconscious last night primarily because of the strain on her body. She had not incurred any real injury and her mind had

long since recovered completely.

However, she did not immediately rise from bed. She opened her eyes wide and gazed at the intricate embroidery of her bed curtains. She thought of what had happened last night, especially that scene before she fell unconscious, which she found somewhat baffling.

That massive black net descended like the sky itself was falling.

Just when she thought that she would die in the next moment, she saw that youth stand in front of her and bring up his dagger to meet it.

Her father had always said that when the sky is falling, there would be someone tall to hold it up for her. These words had always displeased her, because she always felt that her father was teasing her for being so short, but now she suddenly rejoiced over the fact that she was so petite.

That youth was truly not very tall, but he was taller than her.

So when the sky was falling, he had blocked it for her.

For some inexplicable reason, Luoluo felt very happy and began to giggle.

Then she thought of something and got up in surprise. She called out, "Where is everyone?"

Ten-odd clansmen rushed over as fast as fire.

She asked uneasily, "He's okay, right?"

All the clansmen that were able serve her personally, whether man or woman, were all exceptionally intelligent. Upon hearing her question, they knew who she was inquiring after. A person reported, "Divine General Xue Xingchuan promptly arrived—that youth was not injured."

Luoluo patted her chest, still somewhat fearful.

"Then it's fine."

She got out of bed and said, "I'm going to go see him."

Those clansmen all glanced at each other then kneeled as one, some of their eyes even turning red.

Luoluo came to her senses and said awkwardly, "My apologies. In the future, I won't do anything like I did last night."

Her clansmen were comforted by these words. Had their little princess finally matured into an adult?

"But I really do want to go and see him."

Luoluo said very seriously to her clansmen, "He is a very important person to me."

This statement instantly made the entire room as silent as a grave.

When they associated these words with the fact that their little princess had sneaked out of the Hundred Herb Garden and been caught in the demon's assassination precisely because she wanted to meet that youth in the middle of the night...

Her clansmen were thoroughly shocked. Had their little princess finally matured into an adult?

Chapter 32 – Teacher, Just Accept Me

"I know that my actions last night were improper, so I once again apologize to you all, but he really is very important to me. None of you can stop me, nor should you attempt to stop me. Of course, I can guarantee that I won't leave your sight."

After saying this, she walked out of the room. As she did, her maids offered fragrant towels to wash her face and a goblet of water to rinse her mouth. While walking, she said to the clansmen behind her, "Even if you do accompany me, don't accompany me too closely. If you expose my origins and give him a fright, that won't be good."

Behind her, a middle-aged man and a beautiful woman glanced at each other, their faces slightly pale. They were the Guardian and Lady-in-Waiting dispatched by His Majesty to wait on the princess. Now that they were hearing their little princess's words, they could clearly hear the tempo of those folk tales about wealthy young ladies falling in love with destitute young scholars and naturally grew rather concerned.

"Guardian Jin, what do we do now?" the beautiful woman whispered.

The middle-aged man called Guardian Jin had an ashen expression, unsightly to the extreme. "All of you women that personally serve her don't even know what's going on, so how could I know? Guardian Li, if a problem occurs, it will be all your responsibility!"

Luoluo was escorted to the side gate of the Hundred Herb Garden. Then, taking the items that she had her subordinate prepare in advance, she mounted a seemingly ordinary carriage. After waving her small hand at her subordinates, she drove the carriage herself into Hundred Flowers Lane. As for those experts of her clan, they had long since concealed themselves.

This girl's way of doing things could really be described as with the vigor of a thunderbolt and the speed of the wind.

Guardian Li gazed at the gradually fading carriage, raising her sleeve to lightly wipe away the tears in the corner of her eye. She was somewhat anxious, yet also somewhat gratified. She said to Guardian Jin at her side, "Since the little Princess has begun to date, we must notify His Majesty and the Empress as soon as possible."

Guardian Jin's expression turned even nastier. "If we let His Majesty know that the Princess is deeply in love with a human, do you think we will be able to survive?"

Guardian Li noted, "Don't forget, didn't His Majesty also take a human woman as his wife?"

Guardian Jin angrily retorted, "To take a wife and to marry off a daughter, male and female, are these the same things?"

Guardian Li sneered, "If you have the capability, say these words to the Empress."

At these words, Guardian Jin was at a loss for words, his mind also at a loss.

.....

.....

The Hundred Herb Garden and the Orthodox Academy were only separated by an old wall. Even when taking the long way through Hundred Flowers Lane, the distance was extremely short. The carriage did not need to travel far before it drove into the old academy gate, now clear of ivy, and entered the interior of the academy which was still rather desolate, but now carrying hints of new life.

The Orthodox Academy was peaceful and serene. Deep within the thick woods, the singing of birds could be heard. An exposed corner of a house reflected the sunlight, giving it the appearance of colored glass. The stone lion fountain outside the main hall had been cleaned, the weeds removed. It still seemed somewhat weathered by time, but ultimately, it no longer seemed abandoned.

Luoluo led the carriage along the lake shore. Upon seeing the deep marks left on the grass and the overturned trees by the lake, she thought of that seemingly sudden assassination attempt that had actually been planned by the demons in secret for many years. Her body suddenly felt a little cold.

The Orthodox Academy was abnormally quiet, as if not a single person lay within. In reality, many experts were concealed here.

There were experts of her clan and also experts sent by the Imperial Palace. She was very sure that her safety was assured and her mood gradually began to relax.

The door to the library was tightly shut, but that lock was not in place. She knew that someone was inside.

She took in a deep breath, somewhat nervous, and began walking in that direction.

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng was reading a book, but in reality, his mind was wandering while he read, an extremely rare sight. He was also thinking of the events of last night.

His left hand caressed the sheath of his dagger as he silently recalled those scenes, hoping that it would not affect his studies in the Orthodox Academy. A demon expert had actually infiltrated into the capital for such a long time. Someone would have to take responsibility for this matter.

The girl who the demons had attempted to assassinate assuredly did not have an ordinary status. She should be okay now, right?

As he was thinking about those things, the sound of knocking could be heard from outside the library.

He stood up, walked to the door, and pulled the heavy wooden door open. Then, he saw the girl that he had just been worrying over.

This girl was very small, her eyes very bright, very big. Her eyelashes were very long, her lips very red. She was very beautiful, and when she widened her eyes and fluttered her eyelashes, she was very cute.

He had never interacted with such a cute girl before, so he fell into a momentary daze.

Luoluo widened her eyes and fluttered her eyelashes. Seeing how this youth looked like a silly goose, she became rather shy and also rather pleased, thinking, the methods taught to me by my Imperial Mother really are useful.

"Hello." Chen Changsheng finally awoke from his trance and took one step back.

Luoluo replied, "Hello."

Chen Changsheng seriously asked, "Might I ask, is there something you need?"

Luoluo froze, thinking, we just met last night and so many things happened. Could you possibly not understand what I came here for? For some reason, when she saw Chen Changsheng's serious

appearance, she couldn't help but grow more serious herself. Bowing, she said, "Many thanks for saving me last night."

The appearance of this girl so seriously bowing was somewhat clumsy because she really was rarely required to bow to others, especially after she departed her home and came to the capital—but it was precisely because of this so-called serious clumsiness paired with her beautiful face that created an absolute cuteness. At this time, she really was very cute.

Chen Changsheng felt it wasn't good to touch the skin of the opposite sex, and so his attempts to support her and yet not touch her were also rather clumsy as he repeatedly implored, "Don't mention it, don't mention it, it's what I should have done."

This was a very commonly seen conventional greeting, yet Luoluo was not willing to exchange courtesies. Straightening herself, her dark eyes slightly shifting, she asked, "Why is it something that you should have done?"

Chen Changsheng was a little taken aback. After considering the question for a few moments, he sincerely explained, "You're younger than me, and he was a demon. Since we're all humans, it's only a matter of course that I protect you."

Upon hearing "we're all humans", Luoluo chuckled, and then she noticed a certain detail in those words: he had spoken of protecting her, not saving her.

"But in the end, you still saved me."

She looked at Chen Changsheng and asked, "What can I give to repay you?"

Chen Changsheng seriously replied, "For you to come specially to express your thanks is enough."

Luoluo thought this over and then began to chuckle at him. She then turned and walked out of the library.

She had turned without the least sloppiness, left without hesitation.

Chen Changsheng gazed at the girl's petite back, sighing with deep emotion. I said enough and it was enough, said leave and she left. The people of the capital really do act with an imposing manner.

Yet just as he had seated himself back on the floor and prepared to started reading once more...

The girl came back.

She had moved many items from her carriage and then laid them out on the floorboards in front of Chen Changsheng.

.....

.....

The first object was a Night Pearl.

This was a very large Night Pearl. Although not as large as a washing bowl, it was at least the size of a noodle bowl. Moreover, it was very round, its surface exceptionally smooth without the slightest flaw.

Chen Changsheng gazed vacantly at the Night Pearl rolling around on the floor in front of him.

He hadn't even seen a Night Pearl before, much less one of such size.

He had heard before that the Dew Platform of the Imperial Palace was covered in countless huge Night Pearls, but he was convinced that none of those Night Pearls was as large as this one.

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng had never seen a Night Pearl and yet had recognized that this seemingly ceramic object was a Night Pearl. This was not because he had read records and descriptions of Night Pearls in his books, but because for each item Luoluo took out, she would earnestly introduce it in a childish voice, with a childish manner.

Luoluo was very generous, but she was definitely not someone who would cast pearls before swine.

"This is the secret manual of the Mount Li Sword Style...whether you're from the Longevity Sect or Holy Maiden Peak, as long as you're someone that uses the sword, you have to learn this sword style. It's just that those southerners are all petty and aren't willing to circulate it outwards. I...my family, for the sake of obtaining this sword manual, truly expended no small amount of effort."

She passed an ancient book into Chen Changsheng's hands, not forgetting to note, "This is the original. The book in Mount Li's Sword Hall is a copy made afterwards."

Chen Changsheng's mind was in a trance. As he gazed at the scroll in his hands, he was sure that he was dreaming.

He was holding the secrets of the Mount Li Sword Style in his hands?

There had never been any news in the continent of the secrets of the Mount Li Sword Style being stolen.

Perhaps it was stolen by this girl's family?

This girl...just what sort of person was she?

.....

.....

There was a dull thump.

Luoluo placed a heavy box in front of Chen Changsheng as dust was jolted out of the seams in the floorboards.

Opening the box, one could see that it was piled high with golden leaves, but this was not all. She used her small hands to sweep aside those golden leaves like they were actually fallen leaves, revealing the true contents of the box: half a box of extremely rare and precious crystals!

"Right, I'm living in the Hundred Herb Garden, just next door."

Like she was performing a magic trick, Luoluo produced a bamboo basket from behind her and said, "...I also don't know what you require, so I asked them to just randomly pick a bit of each."

Chen Changsheng had already been rendered somewhat numb by the Night Pearl, the sword manual, and the half box of crystals, but upon seeing the bamboo basket full of those rarely-seen medicinal herbs and strange fruits recklessly piled like weeds, he was shocked once more, struck entirely speechless.

Luoluo gazed at him in interest as she thought, could this not be

enough?

She thought it over, then her hand reached out to her left lapel and gently pulled, plucking off another button.

She had already pulled off two yesterday. With the pulling off of this button, her left lapel drooped down, revealing her pure white neck.

This dazzling white awoke Chen Changsheng from his stupor. As he quickly turned his head, he asked in shock, "What do you want to do?"

Luoluo offered the button made of rhinoceros horn and said, "Lah...I'm also giving this to you."

"What is this?"

"It's a Thousand Li Button. Have you heard of it before?"

Chen Changsheng took the button as he thought of the records in the library concerning wondrous magical artifacts. With shock, he raised the button in the air to carefully examine it under the sunlight.

After a while, he woke from his daze and hurriedly placed the button back in the girl's hand.

"No reward without merit."

He said very seriously to the girl, "Last night, it was still that general who came and saved the two of us. I really didn't do anything, and even if I did do a few small things, just as I said before, it's enough for you to come specially to thank me. How could I possibly deserve such precious gifts?"

"You've misunderstood. These things aren't in thanks for your saving my life."

Luoluo pointed at those items on the floor and said, "These are gifts to acknowledge you as my teacher."

Chen Changsheng did not quite understand. "What?"

"Gifts to acknowledge you as my teacher."

Luoluo looked into his eyes, her expression abnormally resolute. "Teacher, I want to acknowledge you as my master and follow you in cultivation."

.....

.....

The library was silent.

A refreshing breeze blew in from the window.

The Night Pearl slowly rolled across the pitch-black floor.

The ancient manual on the Mount Li Sword Style gently opened its pages, revealing several dozen images of people wielding swords.

The herbs in the bamboo basket exuded a faint aroma.

Chen Changsheng needed a very long time to finally understand what had happened.

He gazed at the girl and asked in confusion, "Why?"

Luoluo replied, "Six days ago, on that night, wasn't it Teacher that lit up your Fated Star?"

Chen Changsheng thought it over, then said, "Yes...but, look, I just lit up my Fated Star and haven't even succeeded at Purification. Last night, I saw you fighting with that demon. You're much stronger than me, so how can I possibly be your teacher?"

Luoluo replied, "Last night, wasn't I only able to wound that demon because of Teacher's instructions?"

Chen Changsheng replied, "First of all, can you not call me

Teacher?"

Luoluo sweetly smiled and said, "Very well, Teacher."

Chen Changsheng felt very helpless. He raised up his two hands to explain, "That was just luck."

Luoluo was still sweetly smiling. "But for Teacher to know the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong, to know the Yeshi Step, those can't be luck."

Chen Changsheng thought about this, then replied, "I just...have read more books than other people."

Luoluo opened her eyes wide and seriously replied, "Then the method for circulating true essence? I've already memorized the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong, but I just don't know how to use true essence to control the sword. Not even the professors of the Heavenly Dao Academy and Star Seizer Academy knew the answer to this question, but Teacher...you could reveal it with a single remark."

Chen Changsheng fell silent. He really wanted to explain this as luck as well. It was just that he had developed several hypothetical experiments, almost guesses, on how to use true essence when the meridians were blocked. Last night, when the situation had been at its most desperate, he was forced to yell it out to try, but he had not expected for the girl to really succeed.

But last night's success did not mean that the success would continue.

And he couldn't explain the problems of his body to this girl.

Of course, he was even less capable of accepting this girl as his student.

Although the Night Pearl was very beautiful, the sword manual very attractive, and those medicinal herbs very good.

He stood up and prepared to leave the library, but realized that he...couldn't move his feet.

Because his feet were being held by a person.

Luoluo was sitting on the floor, her body leaning forward as her two hands tightly grasped his thigh.

Her small face was pressed tightly up against his thigh.

She looked like a cute and unwilling girl who had been abandoned by a heartless man.

Yet her heart was brimming with joy.

She silently thought: Yes, it's exactly this scent!

"Teacher, just accept me."

She raised her head and opened wide her bright and intelligent eyes. She looked at Chen Changsheng and said pitifully, "Whatever you want, I can promise it to you."

Chapter 33 – Acknowledging A Teacher (I)

The Orthodox Academy and the Hundred Herb Garden were separated by only a single old wall. The wall was crawling with ivy and its base was overgrown with moss.

Guardian Jin and Guardian Li were on ladders, mounting the wall and eavesdropping on the activity in the distant library. The two possessed lofty cultivations and their little princess was not deliberately concealing anything from them, so they could clearly see what was going on in that place. When they saw what their little princess did, they instantly fell off the wall and crashed to the ground.

The sound of something heavy falling came from the distant academy wall, but it had no effect on the library. In the quiet and tranquil building, on its pitch-black and shining floors, a static picture seemed to be preserved. In this scene, Luoluo was tightly hugging onto Chen Changsheng's thigh while Chen Changsheng was like a sculpture, not daring to budge an inch.

"Release me, release me first."

Chen Changsheng was very nervous, such that even his voice was somewhat trembling. Although this girl didn't seem more than ten years old, she was still a girl. To have her petite hands tightly gripping his thigh was already an extremely awkward matter, so he didn't dare move and could only incessantly call out.

"The moment I release, Teacher will just run away," Luoluo very

seriously replied.

Helpless, Chen Changsheng quickly promised, "Relax, I absolutely won't run away. First release me, and then we can talk after that."

Luoluo appeared very obedient, faithfully believing his words. Her two hands loosened their grip and then pointed at the floor, indicating that he should sit.

Chen Changsheng thought of how agilely this girl had moved and confirmed that he would be unable to escape her petite hands. After sighing in his heart, he sat down.

Seeing that he really wasn't planning another escape, Luoluo became very happy.

The library was very quiet. Chen Changsheng didn't know what to say and felt the situation rather embarrassing. However, it was very obvious that Luoluo did not feel this way.

She sat in front of him, her hand propping up her chin as she attentively stared at him, a smile on her face.

The two were so close that Chen Changsheng could see his own face in her shining black pupils, could sense the happiness in her heart—this extremely pure happiness seemed somewhat infectious for some reason, and he also felt a sort of happiness bubble forth from the depths of his heart.

But just because he felt happiness, or perhaps fondness, did not mean he would agree to her request, because no matter how he looked at it, this was an utterly unreasonable matter. He seriously explained, "I really am an ordinary person. You also said before, I've just fixed my Fated Star. I haven't even succeeded in Purification. You're already stronger than me, so how can you acknowledge me as your teacher?"

Luoluo was still propping up her chin while staring at him, as if she found him rather handsome, as if she wouldn't get enough no matter how long she looked. "Teacher, if you're just a normal person, how could you have done those things? Moreover, you're a good person."

Chen Changsheng didn't understand what those things the two had discussed had to do with being a good person, so he asked, "And then?"

"Last night, before I fell unconscious, I saw Teacher holding his sword in front of me as the sky fell, so Teacher is a good person."

Another meaning suddenly appeared in Luoluo's smile as she said, "But in fact, that wasn't the final scene that I saw. The final scene that I saw was a sky full of stars, real stars, and at that time...Heaven Defending Divine General Xue Xingchuan had not arrived."

Only then did Chen Changsheng realize that she had seen. He somewhat helplessly asked, "And so what?"

"Teacher, your sword can break through the Heavenly Net, so it's naturally no ordinary sword. Then you are naturally no ordinary person."

Luoluo's gaze moved down to that seemingly very ordinary dagger at his waist.

Chen Changsheng gazed out the window to get a feel for the time of day, then suddenly exclaimed in shock, "Ah!"

Luoluo followed his gaze out the window, somewhat uncertain. What's wrong? she thought.

"It's no longer early."

Chen Changsheng pointed out the window and said, "I have to eat first. Why don't we talk more afterwards?"

Luoluo's cheeks slightly swelled like a steamed bun, very cute. It was also like a little tiger, also very cute.

She was preparing to pounce.

Chen Changsheng's voice slightly changed as he shouted, "Don't grab me!"

Although they had only interacted with each other for an

extremely short time, Luoluo already had a rough estimation of his personality and knew that pressing him too hard would not be good. Somewhat reluctantly, she put down her hands. As she watched Chen Changsheng noiselessly walk to the door of the library, she said, "Teacher, just accept me."

On the floor, her dress spread out like a flower and she sat in the middle of it, pathetic and cute to the extreme.

Chen Changsheng did not dare to turn his head, or else his heart would certainly go soft. Waving his hands, he ran like he was escaping.

.....

.....

After eating a bowl of vegetables in rice soup in Hundred Flowers Lane and strolling about the capital for half a day, he guessed that the strange girl should have left. Only then did he return to the Orthodox Academy. Upon walking into the library and glancing around, he saw that there really was no one around and finally relaxed.

As the sky gradually darkened and he thought about how he had shamefully wasted so much time, he completed his preparations as fast as possible and began to meditate, intending to draw in starlight for Purification. Yet before he had time to close his eyes, he saw the swaying of a dress in the starlight as the girl walked in.

Chen Changsheng helplessly said, "I've already said that it's not possible."

Luoluo acted like she hadn't heard him speak. Minding her own business, she said, "Teacher, I moved those items into your bedroom. Only one of those houses had a stove, so that should be the one that Teacher lives in? I put the herbs in the attic to dry, but the rest of them I placed under your bed."

Chen Changsheng had noticed that the Night Pearl, sword manual, and those other items had all vanished. He had originally thought that the girl had taken them away, but he not imagined that she would actually help him store them away in his house and was utterly clueless as to how to respond.

"I want to cultivate."

He felt very helpless, and he truly did not feel like wasting more time and missing out on a night of drawing in starlight for Purification. He could only treat the girl like she didn't exist and tightly closed his eyes.

Suddenly, he smelled an extremely dull fragrance coming from his right side.

He opened his eyes in surprise and saw that the girl had already seated herself by his side, her small face not even a foot from him. Even closer and they would be touching.

He helplessly asked, "Just what do you want to do?"

Luoluo's eyes instantly brightened. "Teacher, I want to acknowledge you as my teacher."

Chen Changsheng had no words, so he could only give up, close his eyes, and begin to meditate.

It was easy to see that he had grown up with only the Daoist scriptures and boredom as his companions. Under the close gaze of a girl, he was actually able to enter meditation.

As the sky brightened, the crowing of a rooster resounded through homes and into the Orthodox Academy.

Chen Changsheng opened his eyes and slowly awoke. He suddenly felt that his right arm was somewhat heavy and rather ached.

He turned his head and was given a fright, and then he sighed.

The girl was hugging his arm, her head resting on his shoulder, soundly asleep. It looked like she had been sleeping the entire night.

Chen Changsheng lightly pushed her awake, saying, "Go home."

"Don't want to," she said rather aggrievedly as she rubbed her

eyes.

Chen Changsheng sighed, asking, "Why do you have to act this way?"

"Last night when Teacher was drawing in starlight for Purification, I hugged Teacher and smelled for a very long time...I confirmed it, that smell is the smell from your body. That smell is really nice. I was very comfortable by Teacher's side, like I had eaten a fruit of longevity."

Luoluo thought of last night and her eyes grew even brighter, just like the Great White Star that not even the morning light could conceal. Then she began to chuckle embarrassedly and continued to speak, "I've never eaten a fruit of longevity, but I've heard Mother talk about it before."

Chen Changsheng was once more speechless, thinking, because I smell good, you want to become my student? Just because you want to smell that scent every day?

"My cultivation has encountered a very troublesome obstacle that no one can solve, not even the professors of the Heavenly Dao Academy and Star Seizer Academy, yet Teacher could resolve it...the method of circulating true essence for the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong. I can only use Teacher's eight words from that night. This is proof."

Luoluo seriously declared, "So, I must acknowledge you as my teacher."

The method for circulating true essence for the Wind and Rain Sword of Mount Zhong concerned the secrets of Chen Changsheng's body. Of course, this was not at all the primary reason behind his rejection of this girl. "I'm not qualified to teach you, nor do I have the time to teach you. I have to study, I have to cultivate, I have many important things that I need to do."

Luoluo had watched him for an entire day, so she naturally knew that he cherished his time, even somewhat excessively. She asked, "Teacher, why are you in such a hurry?"

Yes, to value time so much seemed to reflect some anxiety.

Chen Changsheng saw the vivid concern in the girl's eyes and suddenly felt a little warm. He had always displayed a very calm exterior, but very few people were able to see that anxiety and unease hid behind this calm. For some reason, he suddenly wanted to talk.

"I want to participate in the Grand Examination, and also...I have to take first rank of the first banner," he explained very seriously to her.

The early morning was when the library was most quiet. There was no chirping of cicadas or singing of birds, and even the frogs and insects were asleep.

After a very long time, there were no jeers nor a reply of shock.

Even Tang Thirty-Six's emotions changed somewhat when he heard of Chen Changsheng's goal.

But Luoluo's expression did not change in the slightest. She earnestly gazed at Chen Changsheng, waiting for his next words.

Chen Changsheng asked, "You...you don't feel that this goal is too laughable? At least...a little shocking?"

"Laughable? Shocking? Why?"

Luoluo heard his question and was, on the contrary, rather puzzled. "If Teacher participates in the Grand Examination, of course you should obtain first rank of the first banner."

The library fell silent once more. From the distance came the faint song of a bird, but this only magnified the silence.

Chen Changsheng was at a loss.

Her tone of voice made him feel that if he were to participate in the Grand Examination and not get first rank of the first banner, that would truly be the odd outcome.

He had never eaten a legendary fruit of longevity, but he thought that even if he ate several hundred fruits of longevity, they would not make him as happy as those words.

"But why must Teacher participate in the Grand Examination?"

Luoluo had no idea how much comfort her response had brought to Chen Changsheng as she asked in curiosity, "Do you want to see the Mausoleum of Books? I can take Teacher in to see."

Chen Changsheng did not pay attention to the latter half of her words.

He stood up, walked to the window, and gazed in the direction of the nearby Imperial Palace, in the direction of the Lingyan Pavilion.

Those who attained a place on the three banners of the Grand Examination could enter the Mausoleum of Books to view the monoliths and comprehend the Dao. This was something he wanted.

But only the Grand Examination's first rank of the first banner had the opportunity to enter the Lingyan Pavilion for one night of contemplation.

This was what was truly important to him.

Chapter 34 – Acknowledging A Teacher (II)

From the moment his master had picked him out of the stream, the words Chen Changsheng had heard the most were: your fate is not good. Especially after that night at the age of ten when his body exuded that strange fragrance, those five words were like an annotation that was forever engraved in his heart.

If he wanted to change his fate, there were only two methods. The first was to cultivate to the Realm of Concealed Divinity, after which point he would naturally no longer be contained within the wheel of fate. But the Concealed Divinity Realm existed only in legends; not even that Dufu who was unparalleled throughout the world was able to enter the Concealed Divinity Realm, so this method was very doubtful.

The second method was naturally to defy the heavens and change fate. It was rumored, and also told to him by his master, that ever since the founding of the Great Zhou Dynasty, only three people had succeeded in defying the heavens and changing fate. All three possessed unearthly talent and unequalled strength while he was just an insignificant normal person, so how could he do it?

Whether or not he could do it, it was still something he had to do, so he had to participate in the Grand Examination, he had to obtain first rank of the first banner. Only this way would he have the opportunity to enter the Lingyan Pavilion that forbid entry to everyone, would he be able to see the portraits of those people and see what they had left behind.

The Lingyan Pavilion contained the portraits of twenty-four

outstanding ministers that had served in Taizong's era. Afterwards, when other important statesmen died, their portraits were added to the pavilion. However, the truly important ones were still the original twenty-four. Those twenty-four portraits might possibly contain evidence and clues for the second successful changing of fate in the Great Zhou Dynasty's history.

Chen Changsheng awoke from his contemplation and withdrew his gaze from the Imperial Palace, turning his head to the girl sitting on the floor.

He really liked this child, but he could not accept her as his student. This girl lived in the Hundred Herb Garden and the demons had attempted to assassinate her last night, so her origins were assuredly extraordinary. The greatest possibility was that she was one of the descendants of the Imperial clan that the Divine Empress had banished to the outlying counties but then had been secretly brought back by the Empress. There was no way he could afford to provoke this sort of figure.

Moreover, he did not want to mislead another person's child.

"I need to wash up, and then I'm going to rest for a while. Go home and don't follow me."

As Chen Changsheng spoke, he deliberately made his tone and expression more indifferent. Without waiting for the girl to disagree, he left the library.

He could only hope that she would retreat in the face of these

difficulties. At night, he returned to the library. Seeing that the girl was nowhere in sight, he finally relaxed and continued to draw in starlight for Purification, oblivious in his meditation as he awaited the coming of the dawn, and yet another night passed by.

He still did not know of the fact that the radiance of the stars had all entered his body, only that no change had occurred with his skin and hair, that no progress had been made with his Purification. But he was already used to this fact, though he was somewhat unaccustomed to the empty feeling around his right arm when he opened his eyes.

He was silent for a few moments, then he left the library and returned to his house to take a bath.

The steam exuded by the hot water within the wooden basin slowly crept up the ivy on the walls and then was sliced into countless streams of silky smoke. He soaked in the water and leaned against the edge of the basin with his eyes closed, somewhat exhausted. The academy in the morning was so quiet that he kept feeling like something was missing.

Just like when he had opened his eyes and felt like his right arm was missing something.

There was no beautiful and melodious voice, no one clinging to his arm.

It was just that in these past few days, he had grown used to the existence of that little girl. Upon thinking about this, he felt

somewhat embarrassed, his face a little hot. Only then did he realize that no matter how much he cultivated to calm his heart and pursue his heart's desires, he would never be able to completely escape the influence of vanity and other emotions.

He placed a wet towel over his heated face, not wanting it to be seen by the morning light.

Suddenly, a massive boom came from the academy wall next to the wooden basin. Dust billowed into the air as bricks collapsed into rubble.

Chen Changsheng took off the towel and stared in shock. Amidst the dust, he could faintly see that the academy wall...now had a large hole.

As the dust settled, Luoluo walked through the hole from the other side.

She turned her head and saw Chen Changsheng in the wooden basin. Exceptionally pleased, she said, "I didn't calculate wrong, it's right here!"

These words were not aimed at Chen Changsheng, but at those subordinates behind her holding masonry tools.

For a moment, the area behind the peaceful house, under the old wall, was abuzz with the sounds of construction.

None of the busy people even glanced at the wooden basin, almost as if they could not see the youth in it.

Seeing this frenzy of construction before him, Chen Changsheng felt like the temperature of the water in the basin was rapidly dropping, his body following suit. He was so stunned that he couldn't manage any words. Like a fool, he watched with mouth agape, finding this scene thoroughly preposterous, and his presence within it even more so.

Before long, a brand-new wooden door appeared in the academy wall.

Those people retreated like the tide into the Hundred Herb Garden. With the closing of the wooden door, the Orthodox Academy returned to its previous tranquility.

Except that there was an extra door and an extra person.

"With this, it'll be much more convenient to come every day, so I don't have to use the carriage."

Her hands on her waist, Luoluo gazed at the door with great satisfaction.

There was only silence. No one replied to her.

She turned to look and only saw Chen Changsheng looking like a frozen quail, his two hands holding the sides of the basin. His

appearance was very amusing.

Luoluo seriously replied, "Teacher, please continue, no need to concern yourself about me."

Suddenly, Chen Changsheng turned extremely solemn, a limitless shock and fear appearing in his eyes.

He stared at the azure sky above her and said in a trembling voice, "Dragon?!"

Shocked, Luoluo turned around but only saw a cobalt blue sky, no dragon in sight.

Just then, the sloshing of water came from behind her.

She turned and saw that Chen Changsheng had already put on his outer clothes, jumped out of the water, and run off into the forest at an incredible speed. Dripping water as he ran, he cut the sorriest of figures, like a dog that had fallen into the water, or even more like a dog that had lost its home.

Luoluo couldn't help but laugh at this scene. Waving her hand at his back, she called out, "Teacher, you'll have to come back some time."

Chen Changsheng's figure vanished into the forest.

The smile on Luoluo's face gradually faded, making her seem somewhat sorrowful. She softly sighed, "Teacher, just why aren't you willing to accept me?"

.....

.....

Chen Changsheng was soaked all over, his black hair scattered, and his feet didn't even have shoes. He felt wretched, but did not dare return to the Orthodox Academy to change clothes. In the entire capital, he actually couldn't find a place to go. This was because he was ashamed to show himself in public and also couldn't find anyone to help him.

Although he still had the room in that inn outside the Mausoleum of Books, it was truly too far a distance to walk to the northern part of the city. He had no desire to be arrested by the city guard for his inappropriate dress and charged with the crime of being a hindrance to the view from the Imperial City. Ultimately, he was forced to go to the somewhat closer Heavenly Dao Academy.

He was successful in attracting the gazes and jeers of the Heavenly Dao Academy's students. To these, he could only act like he couldn't see or hear them. Finally, he was able to find Tang Thirty-Six's residence. Without hesitation, he kicked open the door and said respectfully, "Let me borrow a set of clean clothes and I'll owe you a favor."

Upon seeing his appearance, Tang Thirty-Six was firstly dumbstruck, and then he roared with laughter. It was just that the gap between the former and the latter was somewhat large, making him seem somewhat wooden, his reaction a little too slow. But to Chen Changsheng, this laughter was still grating on his ears.

"A rare visitor...truly a rare visitor...just what's going on with you?"

"Although I've never been willing to wear another person's clothes, I don't have any other option at this point, so I ask you to please hurry up a little."

Chen Changsheng's tone was extremely serious.

Tang Thirty-Six could sense that if he really did move slowly, this fellow really might get angry. Forcefully suppressing his laughter, he stood up and found a clean set of clothes for him, throwing him two towels as well while he was at it. "Wipe your hair and feet. Relax, these are new towels."

"Thank you."

Chen Changsheng cleaned himself as quickly as he could, after which he gave a long and relaxed sigh and took measure of his surroundings. He discovered that this fellow really was a genius worthy of being ranked thirty-sixth on the Proclamation of Azure Sky. In a place like the Heavenly Dao Academy, he actually had a little house for himself. It was just that upon seeing the ground covered in balls of paper, leftovers of meals from days ago, and the

tables, chairs, and bed randomly piled with bits of junk, he realized that although this house was big, there was actually no place for him to sit.

"Sit." Tang Thirty-Six was completely unaware of his present suffering.

"Sit where?" Chen Changsheng very seriously asked.

Tang Thirty-Six then recalled this fellow's peculiarity and grudgingly stood up, saying, "Let's go eat."

Following the paths of the Heavenly Dao Academy out of the school, Chen Changsheng once more attracted quite a few gazes. This time, however, it was not because of his sorry appearance, but because he was walking alongside Tang Thirty-Six. The students of the Heavenly Dao Academy were all flabbergasted, thinking, just who is this youth, actually able to talk and laugh with the lofty and cold Tang Thirty-Six?

After they seated themselves at an exceptionally elegant restaurant outside the Heavenly Dao Academy, Tang Thirty-Six suddenly recalled a matter and creased his brow. He asked very seriously, "I went to the inn once and saw the note you left behind...you really entered the Orthodox Academy?"

Chen Changsheng nodded his head, then asked, "What have you been doing these past few days?"

In truth, what he wanted to ask Tang Thirty-Six was why had he not come to find him despite knowing that he had entered the Orthodox Academy. After all, Tang Thirty-Six was his only acquaintance in the capital. Although he had always believed that by enduring loneliness, anything could be done, he still wouldn't mind not being lonely.

It was just that with his personality, it was truly too difficult to directly ask this question.

Upon hearing Chen Changsheng personally admit that he had entered the Orthodox Academy, Tang Thirty-Six's expression grew rather solemn. Seeing that Chen Changsheng had changed the subject, he thought that this guy did not want to talk about his own sorrowful affairs, so he replied, "The Ivy Festival is about to begin. Although I'm not afraid of anybody, I still have to make a few preparations."

Chen Changsheng thought, what's the Ivy Festival?

Tang Thirty-Six added, "Speaking of which, how did you end up looking like that? For the Grand Examination, I only want to get into the top three of the first banner, and I'm working every day until I'm exhausted. As your goal is first rank of the first banner, you're still in the mood to have water fights with other people? Or is it...you encountered some problem?"

"That place, the Orthodox Academy...I really can't stay there anymore."

Chen Changsheng thought of his encounters over the past few days, thought about how he could see that girl, no matter if he was opening or closing his eyes, taking a bath, or reading books. He couldn't help but feel rather dejected, an extremely rare emotion for him to experience.

Tang Thirty-Six thought that while Chen Changsheng had been studying in the Orthodox Academy, he had received endless cold and disdainful humiliations. He couldn't help but sympathize, so he patted Chen Changsheng on the shoulder and said, "If it's really no good, just leave. I...will write a letter and have you go to Wenshui to study."

Chen Changsheng sighed.

Seeing Chen Changsheng's miserable appearance, Tang Thirty-Six grew rather annoyed, thinking, back when you were ruthlessly denied entry to the Heavenly Dao Academy and Star Seizer Academy, you were so unperturbed and easygoing, or else why would I value you so highly? So why are you acting this way now? Could it be that the Orthodox Academy really is a cursed place?

"After some wine and sleep, you'll feel better."

He had the owner bring over two pots of extremely strong fine wine and pushed one pot in front of Chen Changsheng.

Chen Changsheng looked at the wine pot, rather curious, then earnestly said, "I've never drunk before."

Tang Thirty-Six unsealed the pot for him and said, "If you're drunk today, then you've drunk before."

Chen Changsheng had worries on his mind, and truthfully, so did Tang Thirty-Six. Moreover, he had spoken the truth. The two youths were not too familiar and didn't understand each other too well, so since they naturally had nothing to chat about, they might as well take up wine cups and silently drink. This was what was meant by alcohol drunk to drown one's sorrows.

This sort of drinking was most liable to make a person drunk, especially for a guy like Chen Changsheng that was drinking for the first time.

Of course, Tang Thirty-Six's tolerance for alcohol was also not much to crow about.

"A genius like me doesn't have the time to attend some Ivy Festival, but that group of idiot students from the capital actually dare to doubt this young master's strength..."

Tang Thirty-Six looked beyond the balcony at those students wearing the uniform of the Heavenly Dao Academy and sneered, "This time, I'm definitely going to beat up the faces of those guys!"

Chen Changsheng was using both his hands to hold the wine cup, his eyes somewhat squinty. It was obvious that he was already drunk. He slurred out, "The Ivy Festival...just what is it?...Is...is there any...anything good to eat?...Is there wine?"

.....

.....

The capital had the Heavenly Dao Academy, Star Seizer Academy, Temple Seminary...in total, six academies with extremely long histories and extremely respected statuses.

The vicissitudes of history were all reflected on the ivy covering the gates of these six academies, so these six academies were called the Six Ivies. Only the students of the Six Ivies were not required to attend the pre-examination and could directly participate in the Grand Examination. From this, one could imagine the status of these six academies.

The Grand Examination's pre-examination was usually held in the summer. The students of the Six Ivies had no need to attend, but, not wanting their students to miss out on an opportunity to hone themselves, after the grades for the pre-examination were published, the Six Ivies would invite those students that had passed the pre-examination as well as their own students to attend a magnificent feast.

Because this feast was also attended by the students of the Six Ivies, it was much more intense than the pre-examination. History had already proved that the rankings produced during this feast would basically match up to the final ranking produced in the Grand Examination, so the feast gradually began to be regarded as a weathervane for the Grand Examination.

Of course, this ranking certainly did not include those students still in the south and those cultivating geniuses that did not tend to show off their skills.

This feast was called the Ivy Festival.

With Tang Thirty-Six's personality, he had only scorn for attending the Ivy Festival, but he had a relationship with the Vice Principal of the Heavenly Dao Academy. A few days ago, his intentions had been deliberately exposed, causing him to suffer a few baseless rumors, and there were even a few young experts from the other Six Ivies that were also on the Proclamation of Azure Sky that revealed their contempt for his stance. As a result, Tang Thirty-Six decided to participate.

Because of this, he had closed himself up in the Heavenly Dao Academy in bitter cultivation. Even though he knew Chen Changsheng had entered the Orthodox Academy, he had no time to visit.

Chen Changsheng put down his wine cup, covered his lips with a hand, and burped. He somewhat embarrassedly murmured an apology and then said, "I wish you success."

Since the Ivy Festival was a comparison of strength between those so-called geniuses, it naturally had nothing to do with him.

He was thinking this way, but he had forgotten that the Orthodox Academy he was studying in was also one of the Six Ivies.

Of course, it seemed like the entire world had forgotten this fact.

Chapter 35 – Pervert? Piece Of Trash?

Upon returning to the Orthodox Academy, Chen Changsheng stunk of alcohol. With his squinted eyes and unsteady walk, his intoxication was evident. As for some business about the Ivy Festival, it had long since been cast out of his mind and he could no longer remember it.

The library had no lights. Without him there, the Orthodox Academy naturally became as deserted as it had been in the past. As he walked along the lake, his surroundings were quiet and devoid of people. There were only the stars bobbing up and down in the limpid waters of the lake, the indistinct reflections of the trees on the other shore, and the refreshing breeze of the late spring blowing against him.

He stood on a stone on the lake shore, raising his head and gazing at the stars in the night sky for a very long time. Then, he looked down at the stars in the lake and also gazed at them for a very long time. Finally, he closed his eyes and silently stood there for a very long time before suddenly yelling out several words akin to curses at the lake.

He always gave off an aura of silence and composure, a maturity that exceeded his age, and this sort of venting of emotions was extremely rare. Tonight, under the influence of alcohol, he actually realized that he was somewhat tired. He straightforwardly sat on the grass by the lake, fell backwards, and then his mind began to wander off.

The library was pitch-black. He did not go read, did not go draw

in starlight for Purification, he just lay on the grass in a trance, a pure trance with no thoughts whatsoever. In these few years, especially after that night at the age of ten, this was the first time he had indulged himself in this way, the first time he had wasted so much time.

After some time had passed, he opened his eyes and realized that he was still lying on the grass, his two hands touching the slightly chilly dew on the blades of grass. His cheeks were also somewhat moist. Faint rays of sunlight could be seen on the distant horizon; it was probably around five o'clock. Even when he wanted to abandon all restraints under his intoxication, he still woke up so promptly. The strict, even inflexible, discipline of his daily routine and his method of handling things had already sunk deep into the marrow of his bones, becoming a sort of instinct. This made him feel very helpless.

Habit was a very powerful thing, such that even [washing the marrow](#) could not wash it away. Chen Changsheng returned to his house and went to the water barrel to carefully wash his face with a moist towel. On one side, he thought about some trivial concerns while on the other side, he kept the corner of his eyes on that new and tightly shut door in the wall, for some reason feeling somewhat expectant.

(TN: Note that 'marrow-washing' is the literal translation of '洗髓', Purification.)

The heavens would never grant whatever one asked for, but today, they did. With a creak, the wooden door was pushed open and a girl jumped over the threshold like she was hopping stones to cross a stream. Then, she bounced over to him, her two black ponytails bobbing behind her very cutely.

Luoluo looked at him and happily said, "Lah, Teacher, don't you think it's very convenient?"

She was smiling very happily, but in reality, she was very nervous, afraid that Chen Changsheng would run off like he had yesterday.

Chen Changsheng did not run away. Perhaps it was because, today, he wasn't bathing naked in a wooden basin, or perhaps it was because he still hadn't awakened from last night's hangover, or perhaps it was because he had finally abandoned all resistance in the face of this girl's nagging. Or maybe, he also very much wanted to see this girl.

Walking out of the Orthodox Academy, he bought two bowls of wontons and passed the one that didn't have peppers in it to the girl. He then walked into the library, the girl following with quick and small steps while holding the wonton bowl, abnormally pleased.

After breakfast, Chen Changsheng began to read. With extreme proficiency, he found his objective amongst the bookshelves, sat down on the floor, and began to silently and attentively read, comparing the information in these more primary texts with the three thousand Daoist scriptures he had read in Xining Village. He called this method comparative study.

Reading was a very dull task, and watching someone else read was even more boring. When Chen Changsheng quietly read, he

naturally would not speak. At the beginning, Luoluo found it very interesting, moving close to him and reading with him. When she realized that there were many books that she could not understand, she began to feel bored, feeling that waking up early was really not a great thing. Sleepiness began to encroach upon her like the ants under a tree, wave after wave, assaulting without end, making her head feel heavier and heavier...

After some time had passed, Chen Changsheng emerged from his state of forgetting everything but books and felt that his right arm was somewhat heavy, somewhat limp and numb. He instantly thought of that scene when he woke up from that night of meditation and turned his head. As expected, the girl was once more hugging his arm in sleep.

Her hand was truthfully not hugging his right arm, only lightly grabbing his sleeve. She was also not leaning on his shoulder—because of her small stature, she could only lean against his upper arm. This posture was truthfully not very comfortable, but she slept very soundly and sweetly.

Chen Changsheng gazed at her completely relaxed appearance, at the childishness completely revealed by this relaxation, and began to smile.

For her to be able to sleep so soundly, so sweetly, was naturally because she was very relaxed. She was so relaxed because she trusted him. To have someone's complete trust was an extremely fine feeling, especially to a person like him who had silently advanced through the capital all on his own.

Suddenly, a shadow fell over the girl's face.

The normal person did not like the light when sleeping, preferring the dark instead, but this girl was clearly different from the masses. That shadow caused her brow to wrinkle, her nose to also slightly wrinkle. She made two unsatisfied groans. It was possible that she might wake up in the next moment.

Chen Changsheng enjoyed seeing this little girl sleep. Having it disturbed naturally made him very unhappy. He turned to the door of the library, subconsciously arching his brows.

The person that had appeared at the library door was Shuang'er. For some reason, a layer of frost seemed to cover her face and her gaze was almost frigid.

.....

.....

Shuang'er's mood today was extremely poor because the White Crane had returned once more from the distant south, carrying another letter from the young lady.

Her young lady was not one of those idiots whose brains had been muddled by those idiotic books on womanly virtue, and the Great Zhou Dynasty never placed such baffling requirements on their women as the south did. Shuang'er clearly understood this point, so she was all the more puzzled over the concern her young lady

showed for this shameless youth.

Although there was that engagement, there would eventually come a day when that engagement would be torn to shreds, so why was her young lady so concerned about that guy? Well, the young lady had only written in her letter that she wanted to know about any recent developments with regards to that youth, which could hardly be considered concern...but, why did she want to know?

In fact, Shuang'er clearly understood that the young lady did not want that youth, because of the engagement, to become dust in the river of the capital, and so asked her to inquire on these matters.

She very obediently inquired and knew that Chen Changsheng had now become the first student of the Orthodox Academy in many years. Moreover, based on the attitudes of the master and madam, although that youth might not have any future prospects, there would no problems with keeping his life. In accordance with the young lady's instructions, she had made the journey to the Orthodox Academy to ask him if he still required any assistance, like in terms of money. She had not expected that upon walking into the library, she would actually see such a sight!

Who was this girl? Why would she be embracing that guy? Was this studying? Although the Orthodox Academy was run-down, it was still a place of education! This guy was actually embracing this girl in the library! How scandalous!

Upon seeing this sight, Shuang'er flew into wrathful indignation. You have an engagement with the young lady! Although this engagement most certainly does not count, since you still haven't

ended it, your identity is still that of the young lady's fiancé! Or else why would the young lady be concerned over your safety despite being ten thousand li away, even inviting a powerful figure of the palace to come and protect your puny life? Although the young lady might not like you, she still cares deeply for you, and yet you consort with some other girl! Truly an adulterous couple!

Shuang'er had originally wanted to say these final four words out loud, but when she saw the childish beauty of the girl, she lost a little of her resolve. Instead, she glared at Chen Changsheng and hatefully yelled, "Pervert!"

With this word, she no longer had the mind to care about Chen Changsheng's situation. With a brush of her sleeve, she turned and angrily departed.

The Orthodox Academy was secluded and uninhabited. Although the grass by the lake was delightful, Lady Shuang'er was rather gloomy and becoming increasingly unhappy.

After returning to the Divine General of the East's estate, she began to write a letter to her young lady. The matters she had inquired about...especially the scene she saw today, were carefully described. Although she did not embellish, only writing what she had heard and seen, the denouncement in her words could not be completely concealed.

The White Crane left the capital and flew off to the distant Holy Maiden Peak in the south.

At dusk, when the setting sun illuminated the strange flowers and unusual grasses on the cliff, the White Crane descended. The girl extended her hand and took down the letter and after briefly looking it over, fell silent for a long time.

The White Crane once more brought up the brush in its mouth, dipped it with the perfect amount of ink and deposited it perfectly in her hands.

Grasping the brush, the young girl gazed at the snow-white paper for a very long time. Suddenly, she sighed and used the end of the brush to scratch her head, then turned to the White Crane and vexedly said, "I really don't know what to write. Based on how you described him before...that young Daoist shouldn't be this sort of person."

The White Crane could not speak, so it naturally could not help her answer. It lightly touched its neck to her wrist, indicating that she should quickly write.

.....

.....

'Pervert'? Chen Changsheng had heard the word Shuang'er had said before her departure. He knew that she must have definitely misunderstood something, but he did not care, much less leave the library to chase her down and explain. The engagement with the Divine General's estate had not been torn apart yet, but after all the shameless things they had done, he didn't believe they even

had the right to misunderstand him, let alone be angry, but...for some reason, he was actually somewhat angry.

Luoluo woke up and rubbed her eyes. Smelling the scent of makeup, she asked curiously, "Teacher, who came just now?"

Chen Changsheng replied, "A maid from the Divine General of the East's estate."

When she heard 'Divine General of the East's estate', Luoluo's expression flickered. Just as she was prepared to say something, she suddenly stopped and looked out of the library.

Two men had arrived outside the library.

One of them strode into the library, his two hands behind his back. Entering without invitation, he seemed extremely arrogant.

This person was dressed in the apparel exclusively reserved for the education overseer of the Heavenly Dao Academy.

Chen Changsheng noticed that this person's expression was extremely cold, the gaze aimed at him extremely unkind.

"Ridiculous!"

The education overseer from the Heavenly Dao Academy glanced at Chen Changsheng then swiftly turned around as if his eyes

would be dirtied by looking any longer. It was a stance of extreme contempt.

He looked at the man beside him and harshly rebuked, "The Orthodox Academy is already a ruin; what right does it have to be ranked amongst the Six Ivies? As for this person...a piece of trash that hasn't even succeeded at Purification, what right does he have to attend the Ivy Festival!"

Chapter 36 – Thank You

The overseer had spoken very harshly and coldly.

Chen Changsheng stood up and gazed silently at this overseer of the Heavenly Dao Academy. Luoluo was very angry, but seeing that Chen Changsheng did not say anything, she could only maintain her silence—as her teacher had not spoken nor given any direction, she believed that as a disciple, she naturally should not usurp authority by taking a stand.

The visitor had stood at the door of the library and said a few incredibly disrespectful sentences. It seemed to have come out of nowhere, but Chen Changsheng had heard the words 'Ivy Festival' and, connecting it with what Tang Thirty-Six had said last night, understood the reason for this matter.

He had never imagined that the Ivy Festival would have anything to do with him because, just like many others, he had forgotten that the Orthodox Academy was also one of the Six Ivies. However, it was very obvious that not everyone in the world had forgotten this fact, especially after the Orthodox Academy gained a new student in him.

Chen Changsheng shifted his gaze to the middle-aged man dressed in priestly robes standing next to the overseer and realized that he knew him. It was precisely Priest Xin of the Bureau of Ecclesiastic Education. Although they had not met for many days now, the renovation of the Orthodox Academy had been managed by this priest.

Priest Xin sensed his gaze and nodded his head in greeting, but he seemed rather embarrassed.

Priest Xin turned his gaze to the Heavenly Dao Academy overseer and advised, "In the past, the Orthodox Academy had no students, so it naturally didn't need to attend. Since it now has a student, it naturally should take part. Both the Imperial Court and the Orthodoxy have approved. Education Overseer Peng, let's just quickly carry out the confirmation process and leave."

In the past few years, the Heavenly Dao Academy had been the most important of the Orthodoxy's schools, its status incredibly significant. This overseer from the Heavenly Dao Academy naturally had an extremely lofty status, too high for an ordinary priest of the Bureau of Ecclesiastic Education like him to contend against. In normal circumstances, if he saw this lordly overseer acting this way, Priest Xin would assuredly have played along, but...he knew more than anyone else that behind this seemingly ordinary and unremarkable youth was an incredibly strong backing which he didn't dare offend. Thus, he could only do his utmost to offend both sides as little as possible.

"You're really sure you want this piece of trash to attend the Ivy Festival?" that Heavenly Dao Academy overseer surnamed Peng said with a cold and gloomy expression.

Priest Xin helplessly replied, "This is a rule; there's nothing I can do either, no?"

"Rules? We have to talk about rules with everything? Then let me talk about rules!"

The Heavenly Dao Academy overseer sneered, "Based on the rules of the past, the Ivy Festival imitates the style and structure of the Grand Examination, divided into a test of composition and a test of martial arts. The students from each academy and those students that passed the pre-examination each pick one to attend. It seems to me that this run-down school only has one piece of trash as a student, so how can it participate?"

Priest Xin was speechless. He recalled that the Ivy Festival really did have this sort of rule. It was just that before coming, he was only thinking about how to minimize conflict between Education Overseer Peng and Chen Changsheng, and had completely forgotten about this clause. He couldn't help but grow somewhat worried, thinking, since this is the case, why didn't you talk about it earlier?

"In order to attend the Ivy Festival, at least two students are required...at present, there's just this one piece of trash. How do you want this official to confirm?"

The overseer had no expression on his face as he spoke, but his voice was brimming with derision. "Your Reverence, did you really believe that this official could not resist the Bureau of Ecclesiastic Education's pressure and so made this journey? No, I came just because I wanted to see just how long this joke that is the Orthodox Academy could make me laugh!"

He stood at the door of the library and gazed at the noiseless and tranquil grounds of the Orthodox Academy, repaired but still broken down in a few parts, and coldly sighed, "The Orthodox

Academy...back then, it truly had a grand reputation! But now? It's just a dead tomb!

"No matter how much you repair it, it's still just a tomb!"

The overseer's voice grew increasingly cold. "There's been a rumor in the capital recently saying that His Holiness wants to reopen the Orthodox Academy? It's absurd, but even if it is real, you still have to see if we elders agree to it or not!"

He turned to Chen Changsheng, his eyes blazing with a faint fire as he yelled, "I am telling the world, nonsense is nonsense! The useless Orthodox Academy is just a garden of trash! A piece of trash is a piece of trash! Let no one think that they can make an issue of this matter!"

The Orthodox Academy was deathly still. The weeds behind the building that had not been cleaned up yet were pervaded by a cold and desolate feeling.

Chen Changsheng quietly gazed at this overseer from the Heavenly Dao Academy and then suddenly took a step forward.

'Trash'...'joke'...'garden of trash'...'tomb'.

Those words were still drifting about the quiet library.

He did not know why this overseer from the Heavenly Dao Academy held such deep-seated hatred for the Orthodox Academy,

and for him, but he knew of one fact: he was a student of the Orthodox Academy, the only student. Although he had not lived here for long, because he was the only student, this Orthodox Academy was his. Every flower, grass, tree, brick, roof tile, and rock, it was all his. He saw life reappear in this place, he quietly studied in this place; this place was his paradise, not some garden of trash.

He did not like being humiliated by others and liked even less the Orthodox Academy being humiliated.

He thought of those humiliations he received right after entering the capital, thought of the just-departed Shuang'er, and he decided to do something.

"I will attend the Ivy Festival."

He stared at the overseer and said, "I do not know why Sir has such great objections against me and my academy, but if Sir plans to bar me from the Ivy Festival, I can only regretfully tell Sir that Sir will not succeed, because Sir's attitude is far too disrespectful."

The Heavenly Dao Academy overseer replied with an indifferent expression, "Attending the Ivy Festival requires two students, or... two pieces of trash. Even if you have the courage to attend, I can only regretfully tell you that you will not succeed, because in the entire continent, there is no one willing to enter the Orthodox Academy, other than an idiot like you."

Priest Xin said nothing, but he knew that the overseer had

spoken correctly: no person was willing to enter the Orthodox Academy. Perhaps Chen Changsheng had been exiled to this place by some powerful figures, or perhaps he was bearing some sort of responsibility, but there would not be a second of this sort of person.

The library was very quiet.

Chen Changsheng gazed at the shiny black floorboards in front of him, then suddenly asked, "Do you still insist?"

An immature but firm voice declared, "I insist."

"I can't teach you much of anything."

"Teacher has already taught me a lot."

"If you become a student of the Orthodox Academy, many people might view you with contempt."

"Teacher, I'm very skilled at viewing others with contempt."

"You might...have to suffer all sort of humiliation and suppression."

"Teacher, no one dares to humiliate me."

This dialogue concluded.

Chen Changsheng smiled and looked to his side, saying, "I still don't know your name."

Luoluo's eyes were extremely bright, her left hand tightly grasping his sleeve. Worried that he would renege, she said, "Teacher, my name is Luoheng."

Chen Changsheng extended his hand to grasp her left hand and then turned to the Heavenly Dao Academy overseer, declaring, "You see, now we are two people."

Luoluo was somewhat bashful. Leaning against his right arm, she repeated like a parrot learning words, "Yes, two people."

Priest Xin froze.

Wrathful beyond belief, the overseer rebuked, "Ridiculous! When did this shabby place get another student! Just who do you think you are! You think that if you say she's this place's student, she's a student of this place!?"

Chen Changsheng, ignoring him, indicated that Luoluo should bring the register and a brush from the side room.

He wrote Luoluo's name on the register with great dignity and solemnity.

Luoluo raised up the register into the sunlight, swelling her small cheeks and hardily blowing on it, hoping it would dry as quickly as possible.

Under the sunlight, the register was illuminated crystal clear. There were only two names, but two names were enough.

"The register is right here. Whatever name I add is a student of the Orthodox Academy."

Chen Changsheng pointed at the register and said to the Heavenly Dao Academy overseer, "Even if you are His Holiness the Pope himself, you cannot change this fact."

.....

.....

Priest Xin quickly worked to smooth the situation, doing his best to say soft words and give the overseer a way out of this embarrassing situation, at the same time asking him to confirm that Chen Changsheng and Luoluo had the right to attend the Ivy Festival. The Heavenly Dao Academy overseer was quiet for a long time before finally stamping his private seal on the scroll in Priest Xin's hand.

The matter was not over.

The overseer gazed at Chen Changsheng and Luoluo and expressionlessly said, "In this Festival of the Ivies, every single one of the students that passed the pre-examination is qualified to attend, and many people are coming from every place of the continent. Are pieces of trash like the two of you going to shame my Great Zhou?"

Chen Changsheng thought it over and prepared to speak.

At this moment, Luoluo pulled on his sleeve and timidly asked, "Teacher, can I speak?"

Chen Changsheng replied, "You are also a student of the Orthodox Academy now. Of course you can."

Luoluo turned to the overseer and seriously asked, "But, what does it have to do with you?"

An overseer of the Heavenly Dao Academy was no overseer of the Orthodox Academy, so what concern of his were the students of the Orthodox Academy? Luoluo looked like a girl of eleven or twelve, and though she spoke seriously, her words carried a childish tone brimming with a naive happiness, yet her words struck at the very essence of the issue. The Heavenly Dao Academy overseer was momentarily stunned, and then extremely angry, yet he did not know how to respond.

"Good! Good! Good!"

He angrily smiled and coldly said, "I'm really interested in seeing how the Orthodox Academy reverses its fortunes! On the Ivy Festival, when you pieces of trash from this garden of trash are humiliated and become the laughingstock of the entire continent, don't blame this official for not warning you today!"

With this final warning, he left with the sweep of his sleeve.

Priest Xin did not follow. He walked to the library and whispered a few explanations to Chen Changsheng.

Only then did Chen Changsheng understand that the management of the Ivy Festival was passed between the Six Ivies. This year, it just so happened to be the Heavenly Dao Academy's turn, with this overseer from the Heavenly Dao Academy responsible for finalizing who would be taking part. It had been many years since the Orthodox Academy last had any students attend the Ivy Festival, so it had gradually been forgotten. However, this year's situation was different. Of course, this was definitely not the reason for the Heavenly Dao Academy overseer's nasty behavior and his attempts to shame him. The primary reason was a certain law of the Great Zhou Dynasty.

This law stated that if a school failed to recruit a student for many years, its teaching credentials and policy protections would all be canceled. The Orthodox Academy had already failed to recruit students for many years, and if it failed to do so for one more year, it would vanish into the endless river of history. Yet who could have imagined...that on exactly the last year, the Orthodox Academy would gain a new student called Chen Changsheng.

"Just because of this?" Chen Changsheng asked.

After a moment of silence, Priest Xin explained, "That year during that incident involving the Orthodox Academy...three of Education Overseer Peng's senior brothers died here."

Chen Changsheng fell silent, thinking, if it were me, I would also hope that the Orthodox Academy would close its doors and disappear, and if someone like me were to suddenly appear, a student that changed the fate of the Orthodox Academy, my attitude would also be rather awful. I'd want nothing more than for that student to quickly depart.

"But there's no need to worry too much. In any case, as long as you don't enter a match in the Ivy Festival, Education Overseer Peng and those other elders have no means of getting ahold of you."

Priest Xin consoled him with a few words, glanced at Luoluo quietly standing by his side, then patted him on his shoulder and chuckled, "You're pretty good."

.....

.....

What this comment meant, Luoluo did not understand. Nor did Chen Changsheng.

After all, the two were both only fourteen, and Chen Changsheng was still under the impression that Luoluo was a girl of eleven or twelve.

Chen Changsheng gazed at Luoluo's small face and suddenly felt some hesitation, because it was only at this point that he noticed that this girl was actually quite pretty.

Luoluo tightly grasped his sleeve and said, "Teacher, you can't have any regrets."

Chen Changsheng helplessly shook his head. After thinking for a long while, he choked out a sentence, "You...have you eaten yet?"

Luoluo opened her eyes wide, her voice suspicious. "Didn't I eat wontons with Teacher this morning?"

"Yeah...it's already noon."

Chen Changsheng glanced out the window and said, "It's time to eat lunch."

Hearing this, Luoluo clasped her hands together and made a slight bow as she said with extreme warmth, "I'll make Teacher lunch."

"Let's buy," Chen Changsheng said.

Seeking instruction, Luoluo said, "Wontons?"

Chen Changsheng contemplated what to do, then said, "Besides wontons, there's also a place that sells noodles in the lane. The taste isn't bad. That's right, ask them to put in less bean sprouts and more peppers."

Luoluo ran off, laughing and cheering the entire way, her two ponytails bobbing behind her.

On the wall, Guardian Jin and Guardian Li looked each other in the eyes.

"Is this fine?"

"It looks pretty fine to me."

.....

.....

After the noodles had been eaten, it was already afternoon. The wind of late spring seemed to have a natural aroma. Smelling it was intoxicating and immediately made one want to sleep.

Chen Changsheng looked at Luoluo and said, "I only asked you for your name today. I'm sorry."

Luoluo chuckled but said nothing more.

"Take the Night Pearl and those other items back, I really can't accept them."

"Teacher, you're not planning on backing out, are you?"

"Of course...not."

"Then...how can you return the gifts I gave to acknowledge you as my teacher?"

"Didn't you buy me a bowl of noodles just a while ago?"

Luoluo's smile faded as she lightly brought up her dress and slowly prostrated herself on the jet-black floor.

After a moment of silence, Chen Changsheng prostrated towards the direction of Xining Village, and then prostrated to her.

The spring sunlight was gentle, the scenery bright and beautiful, the lake quiet like a mirror. Occasionally a breeze would blow through the building and curl around the bookshelves before resting on their temples.

Chen Changsheng straightened his body and helped Luoluo up.

Luoluo said, "Thank you."

Chen Changsheng didn't know what to say. After thinking for a while, he also said, "Thank you."

Chapter 37 - The First Lesson

Chen Chang Sheng suddenly remembered that he hadn't introduced himself. "Oh yeah, my name is Chen Chang Sheng."

"I know." Luo Luo laughed as she replied.

Of course she knew that her master's name was Chen Chang Sheng. Although she never suspected him, the guards who protected her in the Herb Garden had already obtained all the information regarding Cheng Chang Shen through various ways because Lou Lou wanted to be his apprentice. She knew that he came from a small town named Xi Ning, knew that he knew Tang Thirty Six, and knew how he got into the Tradition Academy. With all the information, she believed that master was definitely not a commoner.

Lou Lou remembered her actions just now and said a bit worriedly, "Master, was what I said to the teacher from the Heavenly Academy somewhat improper?"

Chen Chang Sheng thought about it "Hmm, it was actually somewhat improper. 'What does it have to do this you', can be said as 'just fuck off.'"

After saying this, he laughed. Luo Luo laughed too, very happily. She thought, she is happy easily when staying with master. This was truly a very good thing, then she remembered that the people from Dong Yu General's mansion came to visit right before the teacher from the Heavenly Academy came to visit.

“Why would people from the Dong Yu General’s Mansion come to see master?”

“Something.”

Chen Chang Sheng did not know how to answer. He saw the little girl’s curious look and asked, “You know the Dong Yu General’s Mansion?”

“The legendary phoenix nest, how can I not know.”

The so called phoenix nest, obviously was related to Xu You Rong’s inborn talent and bloodline.

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “You met Xu You Rong personally?”

“I really want to meet her personally.”

Luo Luo said unfortunately, “When I came to the capital, she already went to the South, so I had no chance to meet her.”

Chen Chang Sheng remembered Tang Thirty Six’s evaluation of Xu You Rong and was convinced, “Luo Luo, I know you are very strong, but don’t try to compare yourself to her. We don’t really have to be better than anyone. As long as we are improving, then we are strong.”

Luo Luo knew he misunderstood something and laughed “She is the reincarnation of a phoenix, absolutely unique. Even my family members appreciate her a lot. When I was little, they always used her to motivate me, but I had never thought of comparing me and her. I heard that she’s really nice, besides she’s somewhat cold, yet she’s much better than the Seven Rulings in the South. Actually I just want to meet her and become her friend, master, do you think that’s ok?”

Chen Chang Sheng remained silent for a while “I...don’t really have a good relationship with her.”

After hearing this, Luo Luo was a little surprised, then she thought of something “Master truly likes to lie.”

Chen Chang Sheng felt puzzled and asked, “How did I lie?”

“Master always said he was a commoner.”

“I am a commoner.”

Luo Luo covered her mouth and laughed, said, “How can a commoner.... have a bad relationship with her?”

Chen Chang Sheng was wordless because she had her point. If he’s truly a commoner, then no way he could have any relationship with Xu You Rong who was always on the top of the sky. If they did not have any relationship, then how could their relationship be bad?

After Luo Luo saw Chen Chang Shen's expression, she stopped laughing and said seriously "Master, starting from today, I don't like her anymore and I don't want to be her friend anymore."

Chen Chang Sheng felt dazed and asked, "Why?"

As a matter of course, Luo Luo said, "Because master doesn't have a good relationship with her, then she definitely is not a good person."

Chen Chang Sheng sighed, said, "Do you have any common sense?"

"Master is my teacher, obviously I have to listen to everything you say. Isn't that common sense?"

Chen Chang Sheng did not know how to reply and suggest her to sit down. He then deliver his hand to her.

Luo Luo wanted to be his apprentice no matter what because of her problem with xiu xing.

Every Xiu Xing method had to have a corresponding Qi operating method. If one completely understood it, one could express the true force of his/her xiu xing method. Her problem, was that she had no way to operate the Qi inside her body according to the book.

Yet that night when the demon elite attempts to assassinate her, Chen Chang Sheng used a few words to prove that he could solve this problem. For her there was at least a possibility.

When Chen Chang Sheng put her name on the roster of the Tradition Academy, he had to be responsible for her xiu xing. He knew approximately what her problem was, so the first lesson he is giving her, obviously needed to start from this aspect. In the beginning he had to know the Qi situation in her body.

The spring wind flew in, lightly touched the pages and skirt hem. Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo sat on the black and bright floor facing each other. He closed up his eyes, calmed down his mind, extended his right arm, lifted his right hand, and slowly fell on her wrist.

His action was very casual, yet very accurate. His index finger and middle finger was stuck together, like a sword with forged edge, precisely fell on her pulse, yet when his fingers really fell down, his action was rather very soft, like the falling leaves in the fall, wouldn't scare the ground under the tree at all.

Luo Luo's eyes opened up widely, looking at his fingers placed on her wrist. She was very surprised, since childhood, she had seen so many doctors, so she knew that this seemingly common diagnosis was actually professionally done.

Was master also a great doctor?

When she was surprised about these things, Chen Chang Sheng

was also very surprised because from his diagnosis, he clearly sensed that, the little girl's pulse was so strong. His pulse was as clear as wardrum. The problem was.... the drum beat was so dense, how could the pulses be so fast!

His finger, just like the raindrop bounced back from the drum, withdrew immediately.

He looked up and stared at her eyes, looked at the clean and calm eyes, to make sure that it's because she was too excited and therefore had a super fast heartbeat. After thinking for a while, he put his two fingers on her wrist again, but he did not expect the heartbeat he sensed was still so fast.

Luo Luo's heart beat faster than twice a regular human.

If a regular human was keeping such fast heartbeat frequency, his face would definitely be red, sweat a lot and pass out. The person might even die from the explosion of blood vessel.

But....Luo Luo did not have any such symptom. She looked very normal, even her blood vessel appeared to be very calm and steady, why?

Chen Chang Sheng did not take back his fingers, attentively observing her pulse. He frowned more and more, until after a very long time, he saw that her heartbeat rate did not decrease as time passed, but had rather become faster and faster!

He looked up at Luo Luo's face again, seeing that the little girl had more sweats, breathed more frequently, he knew that this time she's really nervous.

Luo Luo indeed was very nervous, she never thought that master's first action on the first lesson, was actually to help her diagnose. Until Chen Chang Sheng's fingers had fell on her wrist, she remembered that her pulse was very different from common people....what could she do?

Chen Chang Sheng took back his fingers, looked at her and remained silent for a very long time before he asked "Was your pulse.....always like this?"

Luo Luo looked down, lightly replied, like a child who did something wrong, "It was like this since I was born."

Chen Chang Sheng continued to remain silent, as if he were thinking a very complicated problem.

He faintly guessed Luo Luo's identity.

Any human could not live for so long with such fast heartbeat frequency, of course no one could live to Luo Luo's age.

There was only one explanation, Luo Luo was not a human.

The spring wind continued to fly in, lightly touched the pages and little girl's skirt hem and also her wet hair.

The library was completely silent.

Luo Luo looked down, looked very pitiful.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at her, wanted to ask something, yet did not know how to open the conversation.

Luo Luo suddenly looked up, looked at him who wished to speak but stop on a second thought, and said bravely, “Master, if you ask, I will answer everything.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at her, suddenly felt her bravery and thought for a while “Then I won’t ask.”

Luo Luo opened up her eyes, looked at him surprisingly, “Why, master? Aren’t you....curious?”

Curiosity was the itch that every intelligent being could not stop. It was the biggest temptation. For example, she’s very curious now why wouldn’t Chen Chang Sheng ask about her identity. She already said, as long as he asks, she would tell everything completely to him.

“Curiosity, sometimes aren’t good.”

“Ah?”

Chen Chang Sheng sighed and said, “Am I your teacher?”

Luo Luo was puzzled, said, “Of course you are, master.”

Chen Chang Sheng used his hand to lightly touch her head, laughed and said, “Teacher needs to have a teacher’s appearance. If the truth was too surprising, your identity is too scary, then how will we interact in the future? How do I protect a teacher’s respect?”

“Eh....”

Luo Luo had never thought about this reason. She dazed a bit and asked carefully, “Master, aren’t you scared?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “This is not scary at all. It’s just that I had never encountered it before, so I’m not used to it.”

Luo Luo felt very happy after hearing this, used her head to touch his palm, like a cute little animal, said, “Master is the best!”

.....

Probably because she thought Chen Chang Sheng, from inside to outside, every single hair was good, Luo Luo’s firm trust on him, at this moment, enlarged unimaginably, like morning sunlight bursting out. Although he didn’t ask, she still wanted to say something.

“Master, the amount of Qi in my body is not little.” She said.

Chen Chang Sheng thought about the previous pulse and knew that it was true. Her soul was extremely strong. If she had such an identity, then the amount of Qi in her body obviously wouldn't be little. It should be at least much more than people's in her age.

“But I don't know how to use them.”

Luo Luo explained, “Of course my family has xiu xing method, yet the best method in my family are only suitable for males.....even if my bloodline is awakening, I won't be able to reach the top. The most I can get to is Starfusing stage, I can never reach saint stage.”

Chen Chang Sheng felt a little wordless, thinking that if one could get into Starfusing, then he would be one of the limited elites in the continent, yet his little girl student was actually not satisfied. From this point, he could imagine how high her criteria was, or how amazing her identity was.

“If I am not the strongest, then in the future I can't inherit my dad's power. I then will have to marry his successor.”

Luo Luo looked at him said grimly, “ I don't want to marry something.”

“So I want to learn human's xiu xing method, see if there's way

to break through such limit.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought a little, then said, “No problem, we will definitely become the strongest teacher and pupil on the continent.”

Luo Luo opened up her eyes, although she had an almost blind trust on Chen Chang Sheng, yet hearing this sentence, she still dared not to believe in it.

Chen Chang Sheng thought about his own issue, looked at the direction of the Ling Yan Pavilion in the royal palace, had a mixed feeling. The things he had to do, in everyone’s eyes, were simply wishful thinking, yet he must think that way, and fight for it, because fate did not give him a second way.

“Dare to think. Before your dream comes true, never limit yourself beforehand. Never find any excuses for yourself, or reasons to fail, only so will we have the possibility to make the seemingly distant dream reality.”

“This, is my first lesson for you.”

Chapter 38 - To Mentor Means To Point And Direct

Goal, desire, and persistence were important and appropriate materials to talk about in the first lesson. But things that could be cleared up in two or three sentences were obviously not lengthy enough for an entire lesson. Chen Chang Sheng needed to teach some things that were useful.

He picked out an index about the human body structure and veins that was officially recognized by the Department of Education of the Tradition. He skipped through the previous simple introductions and jumped straight to the last page, which contained a colored page of the human body. He checked the red and green lines in the picture and started to compare them to Luo Luo's actual situation.

The lines represented the complicated veins of the human circulatory system. Just from an estimation, there were more than a few dozens of veins but with a more closer look, this amount would double or even triple in number. However, from Luo Luo's perspective, there definitely were not this many veins in her body.

These were two completely different vein structures. One was complicated but fragile and the other one was simple yet enduring. The humans had one vein structure and the Yao race had another. The difference in vein structures lead the two different species into two distinct paths.

This difference in vein structures lead the two different species into two distinctive paths. There was no way of knowing which

path led to greater success. This became a topic of debate between the races which is still ongoing.

Chen Cheng Sheng wasn't moved by the uniqueness of another life, he was just moved by the Creator's miraculous ways. He also knew that if two lives wanted to cross the middleground and learn the other side's xiuxing technique, it would be an extremely difficult task.

If Luo Luo's race could easily learn the humans' way of xiu xing, then she wouldn't be learning the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong right now but rather the Principal Sword Technique of Mountain Li that she gave Chen Chang Sheng the day before yesterday – the Principal Sword Technique of Mountain Li was one of the strongest techniques that humans had. This meant that it was extremely difficult for those of her race to learn and master. Because of this, Lou Lou had to step down a notch and learn the weaker ones.

The humans' way of xiu xing combines physical techniques with the inner qi. Take Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong for example, only knowing the sword techniques wouldn't be enough. People also need to control their qi in a certain way to fully show the true power of this sword technique.

The problem for Luo Luo was that her body never contained the veins of a human, so she could not continue to xiu xing. Although she understood the words in the book and knew that she needed to control her qi to circle around her veins, the problem was that she didn't have the proper veins in her body. Even if her spirit was powerful, how could she circle her qi around veins that she didn't

have?

“That night, when I was following the Master’s instructions and tried to activate my qi, I noticed that I could actually control the Wind and Rain Sword like other humans. Was that a stimulation or..... was that my way of combining inner qi and sword technique?”

Luo Luo asked sincerely. She was very studious right now.

Chen Chang Sheng thought about her question but didn’t reply to it immediately. He turned around and walked out of the library and picked out a broken tree branch in the forest around the lake. He then took out his short sword and peeled away the skin of the branch. Now the branch was a white thin stick, and Chen Chang Sheng didn’t forget to dull the tips of the stick using the stones lying around the lake.

He walked back to the library and said, “If you don’t want to, speak.”

Luo Luo looked at the thin wooden stick in his hand and opened her eyes widely. Would she get beaten right after becoming his apprentice? Does her Master believe in the big stick policy? But it wasn’t easy becoming his apprentice, how could she say that she doesn’t want to speak? Luo Luo nodded her head heavily.

Chen Chang Sheng raised the thin wooden stick in his hand, pointed at a spot on her belly, and said “run your qi up to here.”

This point was the so called Sea of Qi in humans. He was not sure if Luo Luo had it or not. It's inconvenient for him to ask about questions that intruded on privacy, but based on Luo Luo's emotion, there shouldn't be any problems. After a while, he asked, "What do you feel?"

Luo Luo was focused and concentrated on what she felt from the location that the thin wood stick pointed. "I feel a little hot."

"Fire of Yang can show itself when running through certain veins. If you have this feeling, then I believe this vein here should have the same functions as the Rao Vein."

Chen Chang Sheng took notes as he explained to her.

That night, he only said one sentence and helped Luo Luo successfully activate her qi and truly use the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong for the first time. But that was the only move and it was kind of lucky that they even succeeded. The thing he needed to accomplish now was to break the limit of human body and vein system and create an entire new way to xiuxing. Of course, it was incredibly difficult.

This wasn't something that could be done in one day and night.

If he hadn't memorized the entire Scroll of the Way when he was young, if he hadn't excelled in the area of medicine due to his own sickness, if his veins were actually ordinary instead of abnormal, there wouldn't even be a possibility.

After finishing taking notes, he picked up his head and thought for a moment. He poked lightly on a certain spot on Luo Luo's neck through her shirt with the stick.

“Careful and slow.”

“What do you feel?”

“A bit gentle.”

“Okay.”

“What about here?”

The thin wooden stick landed on Luo Luo's body. It pointed and directed; this means to mentor.

Chen Chang Sheng got his response and took notes, then he continued.

Time passed quickly as they talked and as Chen Chang Sheng mentored Luo Luo.

As the dusk arrived, Chen Chang Sheng's arms were a bit sore. He put down the wooden stick and glanced out of the window. He

only saw the yellow roof and red wall, then suddenly laughed.

After using half a day, he found a certain possibility. He found a possible quick path, the quick path in Luo Luo's body.

“Try?”

He took back his glancing eyes from the setting sun of the capital and looked at Luo Luo. He drew out the short sword from his waist and handed it to her.

Luo Luo accepted the weapon and took a deep breath. Her eyes suddenly became extremely bright and then they were closed. She was silent for a long time.

Just as the setting sun was devoured by the city wall, she opened her eyes and yelled lightly.

This yelling was crispy and sharp, it contained no trace of disruption and was clear as the spring rain, or perhaps the spring wind.

Following this scream, she raised her short sword upwards from her waist with her hands. It was as if a flower has blossomed and grew on cloud nine.

There were countless sword shadows, like rain. The sword's might was unstoppable, like wind.

This was wind and rain.

This was the Wind and Rain Sword.

Without the veins of humans it was impossible to learn the way of using qi in the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong. But the sword she previously used was the Wind and Rain Sword. This meant that the way she controlled her qi mimicked the humans' way of controlling qi perfectly.

The wind and rain gradually stopped, the setting sun was gone and night slowly arrived. The old garden was quiet.

Nothing but silence filled the library.

Luo Luo's hand that was holding the short sword was shaking.

She stared at Chen Chang Sheng and her voice was shaking too, "Master, you are truly extraordinary."

She was shocked. She felt that her Master was a god from heaven. Or else how could he teach her so many things in such a short period of time?

She thought he was a god.

Chen Chang Sheng placed the thin wooden stick in front of him and laughed happily while looking at her.

These few days, no, more precisely, these past years he had always thought about how could one xiu xing under the condition of broken veins? Previously, he never xiu xinged and therefore all of his hypotheses couldn't be tested. But now, although he still didn't have a trace of qi, he has a female student. That female student was excellent and could perfectly test all of his ideas. On top of that, they used half a day to test his hypothesis, which came out to be correct.

Luo Luo said, "Master, thank you for mentoring me."

Chen Chang Sheng said, "Thank you too."

The dusk wasn't burning but warm, just like the stove fire of the woton shop.

Chapter 39 - From The Herb Garden To The Tradition Academy

Luo Luo returned to the Herb Garden and her people instantly knew that she was in a good mood because she hopped all the way from the school to the garden. Her quick steps were like stepping on clouds and she was humming a small tune. Her clear voice was like nightingale and her eyebrows were flying.

Officer Jin and Officer Li looked at each other and quickly followed up. They obviously knew the reason for their princess's happy mood, but they couldn't see what happened in the library, therefore they were a bit confused. Why was she so happy about having a master? What was the youngster in the Tradition Academy so good at?

Luo Luo simply cleaned and washed herself up and changed into a clean dress. She took the ice tea from a maid's hands and took a sip then walked to the living room. She looked at her two guards and said, "Ask what you need to ask because I need to sleep early today. I will wake up early tomorrow morning for school and I don't want to be late."

Officer Jin thought to himself, when did our princess became so focused on learning? Of course he didn't say this out loud. "It's fine to be a little late. Does that youngster dare to harm you, princess?"

"He is my master, stop calling him a youngster over and over again. From now on.....you guys will call him Sir Chen."

Luo Luo thought about her master's serious attitude toward xiu xing and learning and his strict passion towards time. She looked at the two officers and said pitifully, "If I am late for the early classes, my teacher will get mad. I don't want to be whipped tomorrow."

Officer Jin was stunned after hearing this. He couldn't believe what his own ears had heard. That youngster dare to whip his princess??!! If this was known by the people of the Red River of Eight Hundred Miles, then the entire capital would be burnt down!

He was ready to complain harshly about Chen Chang Sheng, but he felt Officer Li faintly pulled his sleeves. Then he noticed that his princess wasn't unhappy about her teacher and she acted out her pitiful appearance. She was actually excited and joyful!.

Officer Jin was completely lost. He couldn't understand what happened these few days. He didn't understand how that youngster named Chen Chang Sheng..... okay, that Sir Chen. What quality did he possess besides bravery and sympathy? What kind of skill did he have that the princess respected him for?

"My teacher is no ordinary person."

Luo Luo obviously knew what her people were thinking. She saw the confused look on Officer Jin and the worrying expression on Officer Li before she explained.

Officer Jin didn't speak, but Officer Li couldn't help but whisper,

“He didn’t even reach Purification.....could he be even more ordinary?”

Luo Luo said, “Do you guys think that an ordinary person that couldn’t reach Purification could solve a problem that even my father couldn’t?”

Officer Jin hesitated and said, “Perhaps.... it’s all luck?”

Luo Luo thought back to her experience from the evening and said proudly, “No, what my teacher doesn’t need the most is luck.”

Officer Li asked confusingly, “Then.....if this Sir Chen is no ordinary person, then why did he enter the Tradition Academy? What is he hiding?”

“Silently learning and xiu xing, not showing himself nor advertising his names. He only wanted to be the unknown fish in the pond and wait patiently. Wait for the day when the storm arrives and that fish will jump over the Gate of Dragon and transform into a true Dragon. He will glance over the entire continent and his name will be heard all over the world.....”

Luo Luo’s eyes turned brighter and her voice louder. “Teacher’s idea is excellent!”

Officer Jin couldn’t help but laugh. He thought to himself, ‘This is the real world and these fantasies have no place in it.’ Although the princess seemed all grown up, she was actually still a kid.

Next morning, Luo Luo woke up on time – of course. If she followed her regular schedule, the sleepy girl definitely couldn't get up. Her maids followed her instructions and started ringing the bell from four thirty in the morning. She would wake up even if she didn't want to.

Luo Luo put a shirt on and rubbed her eyes while opening the door. She whispered angrily, "It's too loud!"

The maids forcefully suppressed their fear and insecurity and continued ringing the bell. Their faces were already pale and after hearing their princess getting angry, they kneeled quickly in fear of punishment.

"I was just saying."

Luo Luo yawned and told them to get up, "You guys shouldn't be punished but rather rewarded. Go to Officer Li later and get some money for reward.....Just like we said last night, if you guys can wake me up before five o'clock you will be rewarded. If I didn't wake up, then your salaries this month will be gone!"

The maids looked at each other and knew their princess wasn't actually angry. They stood up and quickly moved all sorts of tools and started clearing the princess up. Then a servant got dozens of dresses and asked which one would the princess like to wear.

Luo Luo picked out the simplest and cleanest dress before she casually ate a bowl of gruel and a piece of meat cake. Afterwards

she opened the lunch box on the table and checked carefully, then nodded her head in approval. She picked it up and started walking to the wall.

Pushing open that new wooden wall, she arrived at the Tradition Academy from the Herb Garden.

There was no wooden barrel or a showering youngster on the other side of the wall. The previous experience left a deep scar in Chen Chang Sheng's memory and the first he did after dinner was to push the wooden barrel into the small building. At the same time he didn't forget to lock the small building up and add curtains to the windows of the bathroom.

The Tradition Academy was silently going through changes because Chen Chang Sheng didn't live here alone anymore.

The Tradition Academy now has two students.

Reading and xiu xing.

This was still the main theme of Tradition Academy.

Besides showering outdoor and singing in the bathroom.....Chen Chang Sheng felt that the biggest change in his life was his diet, which had improved tremendously. Starting from the second day he admitted Luo Luo as his student, he began eating the breakfast,

lunch, and dinner that Lou Lou brought from the Herb Garden.

He was extremely satisfied by the food brought from the Herb Garden. The variety of the dishes, combination of vegetable and meat, and nutrition and taste all far surpassed his imagination – Back in the old temple of Xi Ning Village, his senior was the cook. Although there was no problem with the nutrition, it didn't really taste good.

He wasn't only satisfied by the food, but also more satisfied by the actions of Luo Luo. From its core these food were her heart and her present.

Luo Luo was close to him. She wanted to stay with him every moment and every second. When he didn't pay attention, the young girl would wrap herself around his arm and smell him, just like a cute kitten. If it wasn't for Chen Chang Sheng's strong denial, she wouldn't even return to the Herb Garden to sleep.

But Chen Chang Sheng was just a youngster fourteen years old. He wasn't used to Luo Luo's respect and dependence. Although he still thought she was only around ten years old, he was still a little embarrassed being this close to a girl. However the feelings were nice, so nice that he was willing to endure it.

But there was still no breakthrough in his xiuxing. Many days have passed and he continued to absorb starlight and Purify his body. Yet there wasn't any change in his body. Even as determined as he was, he started to doubt himself. At least he felt his luck was not good.

He didn't know that Luo Luo told her people that he was the type of person that didn't need luck.

Luo Luo's luck was extremely good. If there is such thing as being blessed by Heaven, her blessing was unmatched.

Starting from the night she met Chen Chang Sheng to the day she recognized him as master, dozen of days had passed. Spring hasn't end yet but Chen Chang Sheng has already helped her find three paths of controlling qi. She has already learned seventeen techniques of the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong.

As the summer approached, the semi trial of the Great Trial has ended.

The streets and avenue of the capital were filled with people. Countless students from all over the world were either filled with extreme joy or despair. They either need liquor to celebrate or forget about everything. The taverns were filled to the maximum and before night arrived, the famous brothels had already put up a color lamp.

Due to the recent xiu xing problems, Chen Chang Sheng's mood was a little down. He knew that being stressed wasn't a good thing and he needed to relax. Therefore he walked out of the Tradition Academy and took out half a day to look at some scene. But the interesting thing, or rather something that leaves people speechless, was that he didn't go to Li Palace to look at ivies, he didn't go to the Nai He Bridge to count stones, but.....he brought

Luo Luo to the end of Hundred Blossom Street and sat down to look at the people passing by.

Luo Luo always listened to him with no objection. No matter what decisions he made, Luo Luo would accept them and believe they were correct. Even if his actions were a little strange, there must be hidden meaning behind his actions. Today, she was finally unhappy.

“Teacher.....”

She sat at the stone stairs and looked at the green moss on the opening of the well. She kicked a piece of small leave in front of her and wanted to complain about the boredom, but she didn't say anything. She thought that since they rarely left the school, shouldn't they walk a little further? Shopping with the teacher must be really interesting.

“What happened?”

Chen Chang Sheng held two popsicles and said, “You don't want to eat it? If I eat two of these I will have a bad stomach.”

Luo Luo thought that her teacher still cared deeply about her and started being happy again. She took the popsicles from his hands and sat with him. They looked at the crowd on the street and stared into space.

She licked the popsicle and asked, “Why is there so many people

on the street?”

Chen Chang Sheng bite a small portion of the popsicle off and said unclearly, “When I was buying the popsicles earlier, I overheard people say that the semi trial of the Great Trial has ended.”

Luo Luo widened her eyes, “Ah!”

Chen Chang Sheng turned his head and looked at her, “What happened? Is it too cold?”

Luo Luo looked at him and said unsurely, “I think we might have forgot something.”

Chen Chang Sheng started to think back and his eyebrows started to wrinkle. Then suddenly he relaxed.

“I remember now. I need to represent the Tradition Academy to attend the Ivy Festival.”

Yes, the semi trial of the Great Trial has ended and the summer has arrived.

The Ivy Festival was about to start.

Luo Luo asked, “Should we go?”

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a while and said. “We should go.”

Luo Luo asked, “But no one has announced anything to us.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “If the Department of Education forgot about it, then we don’t need to go.”

Luo Luo licked the popsicle joyfully and said, “Sure! It’s up to you teacher.”

Chapter 40 - The First Night

Because of the visit by the teacher from the Heavenly Academy, Chen Chang Sheng wasn't in a good mood but as time went by, his mood gradually got better. It would be a waste of time to have his mind consumed by anger rather than doing productive activities such as reading and xiu xinging.

He didn't really care about the Ivy Festival. Become famous overnight and give a slap on the face to the people who looked down on him? He was determined to return the favor one day, but Chen Chang Sheng didn't even reach the Purification stage. Even if he could, he wouldn't want to do it yet.

To obtain fame and fortune isn't necessarily a bad thing. The problem is that once he accomplishes this task, his quiet life of xiu xing would be interrupted. It would be impossible for him to put all his time into xiuxing and ignore all the events from the outside like the recent days.

Luo Luo? No matter what Chen Chang Sheng does she would always support him. Although she was a little unhappy about him shopping without her, Chen Chang Sheng would just use a single poscile to make her happy again, talk less of the serious events. And to become famous through the Ivy Festival.....She wouldn't even think about such a thing regarding her own background.

This was the attitude that Chen Chang Sheng and Lou Lou held toward the Ivy League. They really don't care about it. It was fine even if they were forgotten by the people. Following the past experience it would be normal for the Tradition Academy to be

forgotten. But the difference this year was the existence of Officer Xin.

After the reminder from the bishop, Officer Xin tried to silently realized the purpose of the Pope. Although he has yet to realize anything and didn't see any change occurring in the capital due to the appearance of the new student of the Tradition Academy, the reminder was enough for him to not forget about that new student.

One day in the early summer, a carriage rode into the Hundred Blossom Street and arrived at the Traditional Academy. It was around sunset and the rose red sky was above the carriage when it rode out of the Tradition Academy. The carriage rode out of the Hundred Blossom Street, followed the streets of the capital, arrived at the Heavenly Academy, and stopped at the stone door.

Luo Luo raised a corner of the curtain in the carriage and glanced at the sidewalk. She looked at the buildings and taverns. Her eyes opened widely and was filled with curiosity. She had been to the Heavenly Academy many times before but she was with her servants and the guards from the royal palace. She always entered from the backdoor of the Heavenly Academy silently. Besides interacting with the professors and the elite students, she never spoke with anyone else in the school. It was her first time entering the front entrance of the Heavenly Academy.

Chen Chang Sheng has been to the Heavenly Academy two times before. The first time he came for its entrance exam and that experience wasn't great. The second time he came all wet and embarrassed, not exactly a great experience either. He has already

lost his respect for this school, but he admit that the environment here are truly beautiful.

The trees are lined up in groups and the brooks curved whichever way it desired. The summer flower blossomed beautifully. Sitting in the carriage watching these pretty sights helped Chen Cheng Sheng clear his mind off of the Ivy Festival, off of all the interaction with strangers, and off of the whole night waste of xiu xing. Thinking that he would encounter Tang Thirty Six soon, his mood got even better.

Officer Xin didn't know his personality so as he saw him staring silently outside of the window, he thought Chen Chang Sheng felt melancholic and misinterpreted his thoughts. Xin was a little worried and patted on his shoulder and comforted, "You just need to sit there. It's fine if you don't present."

Chen Chang Sheng turned around and nodded to show he understood and thanked him sincerely.

Officer Xin was silent for a moment and said, "Don't worry too much about the words that teacher said in the Tradition Academy..... I do recommend you two to not enter the field and join the competition. This year's Ivy Festival is different from previous year's. You should really be careful."

Chen Chang Sheng knew he was showing his kindness, "Don't worry, I have already prepared myself to sit for one night."

"Yes. One night?!!"

Officer Xin relaxed a little because he knew his kindness wasn't misinterpreted, but suddenly he found the problem in Chen Chang Sheng's sentence and asked confusingly, "You don't know?"

Chen Chang Sheng was confused as well, "Know what?"

Officer Xin looked at Luo Luo who stopped glancing out of the window.

Luo Luo was confused as well, "What should we know?"

"Ivy Festival.....is a private event set by the academies. But it is actually the practice test of the Great Trial and its rules are exactly the same as that of the Great Trial. Since the Great Trial spam over the duration of three days, then the Ivy Festival would also last for three nights. You guys really don't know? Then you probably don't know that these three nights are not consecutive either?"

Officer Xin stared at the two as if he was looking at monsters, "What are you guys preparing to do coming here?"

Chen Chang SHeng didn't pay any attention to this question because all of his mind was focusing on the last part of the information. He felt a little irritated. It was not only one night but three nights?!! Then how much time would he be wasting? How many books would he lose the opportunity to read? Is this suitable?

Luo Luo saw Chen Chang Sheng spacing out and said to officer Xin, “Don’t worry, we are prepared. We didn’t even eat our lunch yet. We would definitely eat a lot today.”

Officer Xin was speechless. He didn’t know what type of weird combination these two were. He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and advised again, “Anyhow, be careful tonight. Although I’m not exactly sure, I’ve heard some rumors. There may be some unexpected guests joining the Ivy Festival as well, but it may not happen either.”

Just this moment, the carriage has arrived at the main court of tonight’s Ivy Festival.

Officer Xin said, “I still have some business to take care of, therefore I could only accompany you guys here.”

Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo thanked him and got off the carriage. The night has arrived and the previously green forest has now turned into a dark shadow. They were stunned and felt a mysterious pressure from the school oppressing them.

“This way please.” A Heavenly Academy student wearing black uniform was giving them direction with good manner.

At the end of the stone path was a large building. There were several hundred red lamps hanging outside of the building and emitted light all over the surroundings. No wonder it was the most famous school in the entire continent. This building may be ordinary in the Heavenly Academy, but it could hold hundreds and

thousands of guests inside.

Looking at the densely designed red lamps, Chen Chang Sheng didn't feel any better, but instead he felt the pressure becoming more and more realistic.

There were several hundred of young students already sitting around the hardwood tables in the building. These were the people who successfully passed the Semi Trial earlier. They came from places all around the world and not every one of them were citizens of the Zhou Dynasty. All of them weren't the students of the Six Ivies. The students of the Six Ivies could compete in the Great Trial automatically and have permission to not enter the Semi Trial. It was as if the students of the Six Ivies were naturally superior to these young students. It is not a wonder they were a little nervous as they were sitting in the Heavenly Academy.

There were other large spaces besides these hundreds of tables. Using wooden separators several individual spaces were created. These were for the announcers, noble guests, and the students of the Six Ivies.

Although on the surface the Ivy Festival was created by the capital's school as a ceremony to welcome the students who passed the semi trial, in fact it was a field created by the Six Ivies to present their power and influence. Every year after the Ivy Festival, there were students who passed the semi trial transferring into the Six Ivies.

Due to this reason, the students of the Six Ivies acted very differently than the students who weren't part of the Six Ivies.

Their expressions weren't nervous or worry, but rather prideful, cold, and expressionless. Their eyes were judging the students that were the same age as them.

The best spot this year belonged to the Heavenly Academy. The expressions of these young people wearing the dark uniform didn't express pride intentionally, but for sure they were prideful. In the area next to the Heavenly Academy sat the students of the Starseeker Academy. Their expression were calm like a lake and their gesture were still like a mountain.

Right beside them were three other schools: Academy of Priest, Academy of Li Palace, and Thirteen Divisions of Green Light.

The Heavenly Academy needs no explanation. Its history goes way back in time and it was known as the best school in the continent. The present Pope and the previous Virgin of the southern sect all graduated from the Heavenly Academy. The Tradition didn't have a center palace or temple, therefore the Pope discuss his business in the Li Palace. For sure the Academy of Li Palace was powerful as well. The Academy of Priest holds all royal ceremonies and educate the priests working in the Tradition. It was no ordinary school.

The Starseeker Academy was the garden of the Zhou Military. It contributed the most in the war between Humans and Demons. Its status was unique.

The Thirteen Divisions of Green Light was also a special place. This school focuses on xiu xing the Thirteen Scrolls of Green Light and mainly accepted female students. It had a close

relationship with the Mountain Virgin in the south and exchanges students constantly. When Xu You Rong first started out xiu xing she was in this school.

These were the world famous Ivy League.

The green ivies growing in front of the Li Palace was the most famous sight in the entire capital. On the stone walls of the previously mentioned schools there were also densely populated green ivies. It was the proof of history. For countless years all of the powerful xiu xingists, besides the ones from the southern sects, had the background of coming from the Ivy League.

The Ivies Academies occupying the best locations in the Ivy League was natural. No matter how one looks at it, this was an obvious thing. People have already used to it and the nervous ordinary students knew this from their seniors and weren't surprised. But.....there was one detail that was changed in tonight's Ivy Festival that was different from the previous years'.

Some people have noticed that change.

Besides the best spot occupied by the Ivies, in an unnoticeable corner, another area was separated by the wooden fence.

That area was tiny and contained only one small table.

But that spot was on the same line as the Ivy Academies.

Spot was a very important thing.

This was a tradition.

More and more people were glancing over to that area.

Some people remembered, before been called the “Ivy League”, the Ivy Academies were always been mentioned by the people as:

“The Six Ivies.”

The Six Ivies obviously contained six schools.

Adding all of the schools such as Heavenly Academy and the Starseeker Academy up, there were only five of them.

What was the name of the last one?

Chapter 41 - Zhuang Huan Yu

Someone remembered that among the Six Ivies, there was one named the Tradition Academy. It seemed like it was not too far away, like it was used to be very famous, like there wasn't any news about this school for so long, like there weren't even seats reserved for this school in the Ivy Festival for the past few years, like it had never existed.

A school that had been abandoned for many years, that was almost forgotten by the world. But surprisingly, it still had the right to be considered one of the Six Ivies and earned a spot in the Ivy Festival this year. Why? Maybe because of the rumor that this year, the Tradition Academy finally got a new student?

Yes, the reason was this simple. This year, the Tradition Academy had students and therefore it had the right to participate in the Ivy Festival. The Zhou Dynasty had always respected tradition, and the Ivy Festival was a tradition. Even though the teacher from the Heavenly Academy, who was responsible for holding the Ivy Festival, wanted to eliminate the entire Tradition Academy and burn it into ashes so that he could remove it from this point in history, he still didn't have the right to reject the Tradition Academy from participating in the Ivy Festival — even if there were only two students in the Tradition Academy.

Fabric was flying in air as the wind blew. Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo walked into the building. They followed the Heavenly Academy students' direction and walked towards the furthest front area.

Inside the building, people were making comments. Several hundred of young students who were disbursed among the seats did not know them and the people in the regions that were separated by wooden fence also didn't know them. Looking at the direction they were walking, people guessed that this couple were students from the Tradition Academy.

Everyone's eyes fell on them. The people were somewhat surprised but more so, they were curious.

Based on the rumor, the freshman in the Tradition academy was a young man, so most people were looking at Chen Chang Sheng. But other people took notice of Luo Luo who was following Chen Chang Sheng. They noticed that this little girl was extremely beautiful, like a colored glaze. Suddenly, their eyes all lit up.

On the seat for the Heavenly Academy, there was a young man. He looked handsome and cold. Although he was sitting in the Ivy Festival, his attention was not on it as if he did not care about the upcoming competition. He did not intentionally reveal his arrogance, he was just naturally arrogant.

Around a dozen of excellent Heavenly Academy students who were ready to participate in the Great Trial next year sat casually around this young man but it was obvious that they viewed him as the centerpiece, like an image of a thousand stars surrounding the sun. The fact that these supposedly self-confident Heavenly Academy students showed such an attitude towards this young man further emphasized his prominence.

The young man was thinking about the thing the Principal told

him yesterday, if the Sect of Longevity actually sent people here, how should he, the representative of the Heavenly Academy, respond? This year, the Ivy Festival was held by the Heavenly Academy. He could not allow the people from the South to rob Zhou's glory.

Suddenly, he saw Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo.

His eyes slightly lit up, and his feeling changed slightly.

The students who were sitting around him remained silent, but they were actually paying attention to him the whole time. They saw his feeling change slightly and they found themselves, helplessly surprised – although many students in the building were attracted to Luo Luo upon seeing her, the Heavenly Academy students could not accept that such thing would happen to their senior.

Yes, this young student from the Heavenly Academy, was Zhuang Huan Yu, ranked tenth in the Honor Roll of Green Cloud.

How could such a person be influenced emotionally by a little girl's beauty?

Who was this girl? People from the Heavenly Academy looked towards Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo and suddenly remembered something. They whispered to each other, "Isn't she the junior apprentice? Why is she here?"

.....

The Heavenly Academy had a really long history. In the school, there were countless ancient legends, there were many excellent youngsters living and learning together and therefore, there were also countless romantic stories inside the school. Among the schools, there was one that just started two years ago.

In the story, in the forest of the Heavenly Academy's backyard, there was an extremely beautiful spirit who would occasionally appear in front of people. The spirit looked like a little cute girl but only the most honest person could see her.

The story was obviously not true but it was based on reality. The pretty little spirit was Luo Luo who would occasionally follow her clansman to study in the Heavenly Academy.

Zhuang Huan Yu had a special status in the Heavenly Academy so he obviously didn't believe in this story until one day when professor was teaching him and his several juniors privately. He saw a little girl sitting by the window. The sun shined on her face and she was as pretty as a colored glaze.

He was very devoted to xiu xing and had never care about any romantic things between boys and girls. He was always on the top in the school and the lovely looks of the female students' didn't distract him in the slightest. But in that moment, he could not glance away.

Later on, he met her several times during the professor's

lectures.

His professor was the Principal of the Heavenly Academy. Zhuang Huan Yu heard the little girl discuss her problems regarding xiu xing with the professor. He was amazed to learn that the girl could follow the professor's thinking. Later on, he found out that this little girl's guardians were all elites which indicated that she had an uncommon identity.

He felt tempted. He thought this girl was worth for him to like.

However, after that day, he never saw her again.

She never appeared again.

He never told this to anyone, but because of her sudden disappearance, he remained silent for a long time. He was thinking, was it true that something that he could never get was the best? Or, does missing something give people such a deep memory? Otherwise, why would he remember her so often?

He hoped she would appear in front of him again.

For that, he would even discard his own arrogance. He would speak the first word.

At this moment, he thought heaven actually heard the voice in his mind.

In the Ivy Festival, she actually appeared!

Moreover, in front of so many people, she was walking towards him!

.....

Zhuang Huan Yu tidied up his clothes, stood up, and looked quietly at Luo Luo who was getting closer and closer to him.

The Heavenly Academy students who sat around him, did not understand why their senior would stand up. Besides the people who saw Luo Luo before and knew what was happening, the others all thought he was representing the Heavenly Academy to welcome this couple. They were surprised, thinking to themselves, since when senior cared about such secular thing?

Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo walked to the front of the seats for the Heavenly Academy. They were ready to follow the previous Heavenly Academy students' direction to the region in the corner, but unexpectedly, among the seats for the Heavenly Academy, approximately a dozen of people suddenly stood up. This made Chen Chang Sheng not know what to do so he instinctively paused his steps.

Zhuang Huan Yu's lip slowly raised up. He was about to smile and say something.

He was going to say long time no see to Luo Luo.

A moment later, his smile disappeared before it even came up. His look became cold as it used to be or even colder.

Because Luo Luo did not see him.

Luo Luo was looking at Chen Chang Sheng.

Since the night she entered the Tradition Academy through the wall, as long as there was Chen Chang Sheng, her eyes were either on the books, or on Chen Chang Sheng's body, every moment and this moment was no exception.

She looked at Chen Chang Sheng with eyes full of admiration.

Admiration and liking were very similar; people could easily perceive them wrongly.

Zhuang Huan Yu was not sure if he perceived it right, but he felt much worse.

I only saw you, yet you only see someone else. This was the thing that could cause the most anger in the world.

After he saw that Luo Luo's hand was actually holding onto Chen Chang Sheng's sleeves, his anger reached the max.

Zhuang Huan Yu did not do anything.

He was the genius who ranked tenth in the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, the senior of the Heavenly Academy. He represented a lot and had to be responsible for a lot.

Therefore he could not be angered easily; he could not lose his temper for such a thing.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and saluted calmly.

The height his arm was raised to, the distance between his wrist and sleeve, were both so perfect.

Yet his look was too calm, too cold.

Chen Chang Sheng was a little surprised. He calmly returned a salute.

The height his arm raised to, the distance between his wrist and sleeve, were both so perfect.

His look appeared to be somewhat confused, somewhat puzzled.

The surrounding became very quiet.

Zhuang Huan Yu loosened his hands.

Chen Chang Sheng walked forward.

From somewhere, a sound came up. It sounded like someone was holding a breathe for a long time and eventually had to release it.

Both performed the most formal courtesy, but in people's eyes, Zhuang Huan Yu was perfect, and Chen Chang Sheng was dull. The difference was seen immediately.

Actually, that's only because he was Zhuang Huan Yu and Chen Chang Sheng was someone unknown.

Zhuang Huan Yu looked towards Luo Luo and said, "Junior, long time no see."

He said it very casually, but he was actually very serious, even more serious than he was in the first time he saw his biological father.

Luo Luo opened up her eyes wide, looked at him for a while, suddenly recalled something, laughed and said, "Ah, it's you, long time no see."

Little girl's laugh was very cute.

But Zhuang Huan Yu sensed hate in the speech.

He rather she didn't remember who he was. Unlike now, when she needed to think for a while to remember who he was.

Who I am? I am Zhuang Huan Yu.

Anyone who had seen me cannot forget who I am.

How could you forget me?

Why did you have to pretend like you have forgotten about me?

Were you joking, or fooling with me?

Inside Zhuang Huan Yu's heart, there was huge waves of emotions, but he looked extremely calm.

When he was about to say something, such as if it's not because of something, he almost couldn't remember the junior's appearance...., Luo Luo dragged Chen Chang Sheng's sleeve, left the area reserved for the Heavenly Academy and walked towards the corner. On the way, she was happily discussing something with Chen Chang Sheng.

She only left a view of her back to Zhuang Huan Yu.

Zhuang Huan Yu looked at Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo's backs and remained silent.

He did not notice the previous discussion in the field. He couldn't understand why the junior would leave the Heavenly Academy.

When he looked towards the empty region where Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo were walking to, he realized surprisingly that they were representing the Tradition Academy.

He asked, "Is that young man Chen Chang Sheng?"

The Heavenly Academy student who was responsible for leading them replied yes.

"Sure enough he is interesting."

Zhuang Huan Yu stopped saying a word and returned to his seat.

He still looked indifferent, but his true feeling was not so.

Chapter 42 - Laughter

The Traditional Academy was lined up next to the rest of the five other Six Ivies but it was located in the corner and was extremely distant from other tables. Although the location of their table were unfavorable, Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo weren't people who care about such small and sat down causally.

"You know that student of Heavenly Academy from before?" Chen Chang Sheng asked.

Luo Luo thought about it and replied, "I saw him a few times when I came to the Heavenly Academy."

Chen Chang Sheng thought back to the crowd that surrounded him earlier "He seems to be famous."

Luo Luo didn't use much time to think this time, "Zhuang Huan Yu, many people call him Sir Huan Yu."

Chen Chang Sheng remembered that he saw this name on the stone walls of the Academy of Priests. He remembered that it appeared on one of the top rankings seen on the Green Cloud of Honor Roll. But he didn't think Luo Luo could recall his name without much thought and said curiously, "I never expected that you would know his name."

Luo Luo replied, "Master, you said earlier as well, he is very famous."

Chen Chang Sheng said, “For your personality, you wouldn’t know the most famous people.”

Luo Luo stuck out her tongue embarrassingly and said, “It’s hard to not notice his name because we were close to each other.”

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t understand her words entirely. He thought she was talking about the time when she was studying in the Heavenly Academy. He glanced at the tables of the Heavenly Academy and He glanced toward the sittings of the Heavenly Academy and made sure he didn’t miss anyone, then said confusingly, “That guys actually didn’t attend.”

Luo Luo knew who he was talking about and asked curiously, “Master, you really know Tang Thirty Six?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Although I don’t even know how I befriended him.....but, yes I do.”

When they were talking, the preparation of the Ivy Festival was completed and the tables were filled. All of the students and teachers of the Six Ivies were present and the last two people who walked in were characters representing the government and the Tradition.

The bishop of the Tradition, Mei Li Sha, and.....Dong Yu General, Xu Shi Ji.

As the two great character walked into the festival, all of the professors and students stood up to bow like a wave.

Bishop Mei Li Sha held power in the department of Education for many years and has great influence in the academies of the capital, but most importantly he was a trusted subordinates of the Pope. Although East Guard General Xu Shi Ji wasn't as high in power as the bishop, his military contribution couldn't be ignored. In addition, he was well trusted by the Divine Queen and the entire continent knew he has a great daughter.

The Ivy Festival was a festival for all the young geniuses of the Zhou Dynasty. Everyone sitting here was no doubt, talented. But looking up toward the young girl of age fourteen sitting upon the Mountain Virgin. Raising their heads to glance at the seemingly indestructible title curved onto the Green Cloud Honor Roll, who dare call themselves geniuses?

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Xu Shi Ji who sat on top. His expression was calm and seemed to had never heard of this name before. Only Luo Luo noticed that his breath was a little more rapid than usual. Although it was still smooth, it was still a little faster than normal. After living with him for many days, she knew that this meant that his mood was disturbed.

This was the first time Chen Chang Sheng saw Chen Shi Ji.

As a matter of fact, one of the reason he was willing to attend the Ivy Festival was that Officer Xin told him that Xu Shi Ji would attend it as well. He wanted to see what his almost father-in-law and the man who almost ended his future looked like.

Xu Shi Ji seemed like a regular middle aged man, but of course he was not ordinary. When Chen Chang Sheng looked at him from a distant, he felt a cold and harsh presence and he could see a faint bloody smile. Cheng Chang Sheng's straight eyebrows were raised slightly and he touched his nose tip – it wasn't a pleasant smell.

He then recalled Madam Xu, who he saw back in the General's Mansion. He thought back to the insults and obstacles he face after he arrived to the capital. His eyebrows were raised higher and he continued to touch his nose tip. At the same time, he started to breath heavier and heavier.

The daughter of this couple was the reincarnation of the True Phoenix? No wonder people say the world is not fair.

Luo Luo was paying attention to his reaction since the beginning. She knew that his mood was getting worse, but after all she still couldn't hold her curiosity and asked carefully, "Master, it seems like the relationship between you and Xu You Rong truly isn't good.....why?"

Chen Chang Sheng was dazed a little "I thought you can hold it and won't ask."

Luo Luo grabbed to his sleeve and shook it as if she were a spoiled girl "I'm really curious."

Chen Chang Sheng said helplessly, "I already promised someone that won't tell it to anyone."

They obviously wouldn't think of how close they look as they were whispering to each other and of course they wouldn't think that everything they did was seen by Zhuang Huan Yu.

Zhuang Huan Yu's emotion was still as calm as usual.

There was someone else who also saw Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo chatting closely, but his emotion wasn't so calm.

The teacher from the Heavenly Academy looked away from the corner. His face looked extremely cold, but strangely, he did not scold Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo. He also didn't point it out to the public to release all of his resentment he had toward the Tradition Academy. Instead, he continued to calmly advanced the festival onto the next stage.

The Ivy Festival used the same format of the Great Trial. There were three rounds. One round tested on knowledge, one tested on battle skill, and one tested on their fighting capability. The order of the tests is randomly chosen, but there were obviously many more rules. Now the rules were told one by one by the teacher from the Heavenly Academy.

The students sitting at the end of the banquet under the fabric, paid attention to it closely. They were not like the students from the Six Ivies, who had teachers and seniors explain process and rules of the Great Trial to them detailedly. The Ivy Festival today was like a pretest that the government gave them, obviously they had to be attentive.

Chen Chang Sheng also listened attentively to not miss a single word. Although the Tradition academy was one of the Six Ivies, he doesn't have teachers. He had to do everything by himself. He came to participate in the Ivy Festival today, besides he wanted to see Xu You Rong's dad, acquiring the information about the Great Trial was the most important reason.

The Ivy Festival was called a festival, but it's actually the preliminary test to the Great Trial, or a wind vane. Besides the geniuses from the Southern sects, the final rank in the Ivy Festival was basically equivalent to the rank in the Great Trial. Even if there were changes, the changes wouldn't be too large. Xiu Xing to a large extent, was based on time. From the Ivy Festival to the Great Trial, there was only half of a year. How could one have enormous change in such period of time?

On the Ivy Festival this year, Chen Chang Sheng had not purify successfully yet. He's still a commoner who doesn't xiu xing, but he's thinking of getting the first place in the Great Trial in the beginning of the next year. It is not a wonder that Tang Thirty Six would think he was an idiot or that Cheng Chang Sheng himself is an idiot. Besides Luo Luo, who would believe in him?

In the Ivy Festival, although students who participated in the pretest, occasionally would give huge surprise to the human world, but most of the time, it's still the students from the big schools played the main role. On the Ivy Festival in the recent ten years, in the end, it always turned out to be competition between the Six Ivies.

The Ivy Festival would be held for three days. Tonight was the first night, and it happened to be the actual fight. It can be anticipated that, the festival definitely would be very boisterous. The spectators including Xu Shi Ji and other officials were also guessing if the Heavenly Academy, as the host this year, would keep their reserved manner or not, and let Zhuang Huan Yu come on stage.

Zhuang Huan Yu was ranked tenth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, which seemed very outstanding but considering that the Heavenly Academy was claimed to be the strongest school in the continent and that he is the representative of the Heavenly Academy, his strength wasn't as good as people expected. Even though it's impossible for him to surpass Xu You Rong who had the rarest bloodline, his rank was still too low.

Only the high officials like Zu Shi Ji knew that the only reason why Zhuang Huan Yu was ranked tenth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud was because he had never challenged anyone who ranked above him after he fought one of the Seven Rulings two years ago and got placed in tenth place.

This doesn't mean that he's conservative and coward, but because two years ago he was already fifteen. At that time Qiu Shan Jun already left the Honor Roll of Green Cloud and began to march on to the first place of the Honor Roll of Golden Miracle. He thought that at such situation, the Honor Roll of Green Cloud was already meaningless to him.

So tonight, will Zhuang Huan Yu come on stage?

.....

The students who were sitting on the end of the banquet are allowed to participate voluntarily in the fight tonight. Although they know they can hardly defeat the students from the Six Ivies who had teachings from famous professors, thinking that there were rarely any bloody incidents happened in the Ivy Festival before and it was an extremely rare opportunity to improve, they were actively signing up. Later on, the other schools of the Six Ivies also sent their roster for students who were participating in the fight. Besides the professor from the Heavenly Academy and the other two high status people, no one knew who actually signed up.

Finally, only the Tradition Academy was left.

Chen Chang Sheng got the confirmation from the Officer Xin, and he listened clearly when the professor from the Heavenly Academy was speaking, knew that he and Luo Luo fulfilled the requirement to participate in the Ivy Festival, so they could come in here, but that doesn't mean they have to go down to join the fight.

After all, the Ivy Festival wasn't the Great Trial. With Chen Chang Sheng's current xiu xing, if he went down.....he definitely wouldn't have a good ending, therefore of course he wouldn't go down.

This was plan to not go but there were people trying to force him to go down, forcing him to be humiliated.

The professor from the Heavenly Academy looked at the corner and said expressionlessly, “Where’s the roster from the Tradition Academy?”

According to the tradition of the Ivy Festival, if one doesn’t sign up, that means one knows he can’t beat others and surrender. It’s just another way of saving one’s reputation. No one had actually point this thing out because it implicates one school’s honor. If they really embarrassed the other, who knows what kind of result can happen?”

Tonight, the professor from the Heavenly Academy did so. He didn’t care about the reputation of the Tradition Academy and of course he wouldn’t care about the result. There were only two little children in the Tradition Academy. After being humiliated, were they actually going to suddenly have a huge power up and do something? That’s a joke.

The words of the professor of the Heavenly Academy were echoing in the building.

A complete silence.

After a while, maybe because they saw the poor seats for the Tradition Academy and the

lonely couple, maybe because they remembered the Tradition Academy’s declining reality and tragic history, also the Divine Queen and the Pope’s attitude to this school...

A bunch of laughs could be heard in the building.

There were helpless laughs, but also contemptuous laughs.

Some laughs were unintentional and some were intentional.

But they were all harsh.

Chapter 43 - The Little Monster Of The Academy Of Priest

All of the officials and professors attending the Ivy Festival knew why this professor of Heavenly Academy contained such hatred toward the Traditional Academy, which was already in ruin. Even if the Tradition Academy only has two or three ants left, he wouldn't let go of them and wanted to squash them into dusts.

They were all long time citizen of the capital and they were familiar with the government's rules. If it weren't for that pair of students, the Tradition Academy would be forgotten and destroyed next year. But not everyone thought this change was so simple. Officer Xin, who told Chen Chang Sheng he had some business to take care of, was now standing behind the Bishop of Department of Education, Mei Li Sha.

He lowered his voice and said, "It seems that someone wants to force Chen Chang Sheng to join the competition."

The face of bishop always contained a trace of sleepiness. It seemed it he could never get enough rest. After hearing this, he struggled and opened his eyes and said casually, "Is that child this idiotic?"

Officer Xin was troubled, "He is not an idiot, but rather a young man. I'm just afraid that he would be aggravated by the crowd."

The bishop glanced at the Tradition Academy's position through the curtain and was surprised to see the angry young girl sitting

next to Chen Chang Sheng.

The girl may appear small through the crack of a door, but she couldn't appear tiny through the crack of eyelids, because the bishop knew that young girl.

He signed, "Then....let us pray for that professor."

The professor of the Heavenly Academy stared expressionlessly at Chen Chang Sheng who was sitting at the corner. He didn't purposely try to give off an oppressive and cold aura. Rather he just looked at him as if he was a small insect waiting to be frozen to death.

Chen Chang Sheng never thought of the next step. If he participate in the written competition and Luo Luo attend the fighting arena, then they will still have a chance. But he knew clearly that if someone was trying to put down the Tradition Academy on purpose, then nothing would go with his plan.

His goal was the Ling Yan Pavilion. He needs to participate in the Great Trial and obtain the first place. Before this happen, he hoped that nothing would disturb his plan to succeed. If he actually enter the competition tonight, no matter victory or defeat, it wouldn't be a good choice for his plan.

Since he wouldn't enter the competition, then why should he

stay in the building and endure these mocking laughs? Why should he try to act calm under the cold stares from the professor of the Heavenly Academy?

Therefore he made a decision that no one expected.

“Let’s leave.” He told Luo Luo who was sitting next to him and stood up to leave.

The mocking laughs in the building suddenly stopped. Everyone saw his action, but they didn’t understand. Facing the mocking, scoffing, and laughter, Chen Cheng Sheng ignored these negative attitude. It may be viewed as cowardice, but couldn’t it also be treated as unimaginable bravery?

Luo Luo never spoke against his decisions. She stood up without hesitation and was ready to walk out with him.

Looking at those people who mocked them before but were now surprised, Luo Luo shutted her lips and thought to herself. My master is definitely no ordinary person. His endurance is excellent and was able to withstand all of the unbearables. She should learn from him and not think about ripping all of these people into piece just because they mocked him.

The world is beautiful so why should she be so irritated?

As they were walking out, someone spoke from outside of the building, “What do you guys think the Ivy Festival is? You can

enter whenever you want and leave whenever you want?”

The speaker of this sentence was young, but his voice contained pride and coldness. It even sounded crazy and hid violence inside. It seemed that the speaker would kill anyone for the the tiniest reason.

Chen Cheng Sheng didn't like this sort of character.

He stopped and looked toward the entrance.

Several hundred people in the Ivy Festival all turned around the looked at the entrance.

A youngster was standing there. His face was pale, his eyes were merciless, and his lips were crimson. His age seemed to be around twelve or thirteen years old, but he appeared to drown in liquor and sex for many years. Especially his complexion, it gave off a ruthless feeling and sent shivers down people's spines.

Many people have yet to know this youngster.

But many people from the Heavenly Academy and the Starseeker Academy were familiar with him.

They knew who this youngster was and therefore no one said he was late. There was only silence and Zhuang Huan Yu wrinkled his eyebrows slightly. He wasn't particularly happy with it.

The expression of the professor of the Heavenly Academy was calm. It was obvious that he knew this youngster would appear from the beginning.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo. They thought if they decided to endure the embarrassment and not enter the competition, they could save the last breath of the Tradition Academy?

Due to his background and some complex reasons, he couldn't personally fight against the pair of students of the Tradition Academy. Also he couldn't let the students of the Heavenly Academy help him. But he had already chose the best person from the schools of the capital.

No matter background or strength, this little monster from the Academies of Priests was the best choice to send Tradition Academy to its way of demise

And there wouldn't be any problem afterwards.

The professor of the Heavenly Academy took a peek at the spot of the Bishop.

Many people in the capital knew that there was a little monster in the Academy of Priests.

That little monster was strong. Due to his young age, he didn't enter the Honor Roll of Green Cloud yet, but everyone knew that he has the strength to enter the top fifty in the Honor Roll. It was rumored that this little monster was the apprentice of the Pope, but he never admit to this rumor. Also in another rumor, this little monster killed many xiuxingists in the Meditation Stage and including another young genius on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud when he was only ten years old. Of course, he didn't admit to this rumor either.

The little monster didn't attend school at the Heavenly Academy like the Pope did when he was young. He also didn't follow the Pope and study at the Academy of Li Palace. Instead, he went to the school with the strictest rules and harshest xiu xing techniques. The reason for this is that he didn't want to follow the same road as the Pope.

But the strict rules of the Academy of Priests didn't stop the murders of the little monster. But the harsh xiu xing did make him stronger and stronger. Not many people dare to challenge him in the capital. Even the powerful xiu xingists would take a step back when facing him, Perhaps it was due to the rumor – the student of the Pope is always unique, but most importantly it wasn't due to this rumor, but rather a fact that was known by everyone – The name of this little monster of the Academy of Priests was Tian Hai Ya Er, he is one of the Family of Tian Hai.

The Divine Queen's last name is Tian Hai.

The little monster of the Academy of Priests was her nephew.

Under the view of countless eyes, Tian Hai Ya Er walked into the building and he was arrogant. His pale and unhealthy face was full of indifference and mockery. It was the indifference toward life and the mockery.....toward everyone.

He was reached twelve years of age this age. He was really not a youngster but rather a boy. But he has already killed many people and saw many things. His powerful background and strength twisted his view of the world, he was truly a monster.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the boy who was a head shorter than him walking toward him. He sensed that the bloody smell got stronger and stronger, and he disliked Tian Hai Ya Er more and more.

But Tian Hai Ya Er didn't even look at him for a moment. He glanced over the young students on the scattered tables, but in fact nothing entered his eyes. He mocked coldly, "A bunch of idiots thinking they would benefit from attending this festival? Still characters who would be mocked in the end."

The young students sitting on the scattered tables all endured many difficulties and passed the semi trial of the Great Trial, and at last obtained the permission to attend the Ivy Festival. Although they knew they were just background of the students of the Six Ivies, they still had hope in their heart. But this moment they heard the ruthless words from this young boy, they started to get

angry.

Tian Hai Ya Er rolled his eyeballs and his voice spilled out from his teeth like a sharp blade, “You guys want to die?”

The information of the background and strength of this boy was passed around in the scattered table. Although the young students were angry, no one dared to stand up. Talk less if they could actually win against this young boy, but even if they could, do they dare touch him?

“Enough.” The principal of the Academy of Priests wrinkled his eyebrows slightly and spoke.

Tian Hai Ya Er scoffed coldly. Although he didn’t speak further, but the unhappy expression on his face showed that he didn’t really respect his own teacher.

But the weird thing is, logically speaking the professor of the Heavenly Academy didn’t want to restrain this little monster for some reason, but there were many truly powerful figures in the field. For example, the Bishop of the Department of Education, or Dong Yu General Xu Shi Ji. They have enough strength and influence to keep Tian Hai Ya Er in check.

But they all kept silent. Perhaps they were just trying to figure out the actual reason for the appearance of this little monster? If this monster enters the competition then blood would definitely be spilled on this field. Surely the Academy of Priests didn’t want him to attend the Ivy Festival. Was this the command from the Li

Palace or the Royal Palace?

Or the reason for this little monster to attend the Ivy Festival was actually for the Tradition Academy? Apparently not, the already ruined Tradition Academy couldn't attract the eyes of this little monster.

He glanced at the direction of the Heavenly Academy and didn't see the person he wanted to see, therefore he was disappointed and irritated. He screamed loudly, "Where is Tang Thirty Six? Didn't that rural idiot wanted to handicap me? Where is he? Is he scared now!"

Besides those powerful figures, there were still some people who could care less of Tian Hai Ya Er's background and strength.

Zhuang Huan Yu looked at him expressionlessly and said, "If you continue to interrupt, then I wouldn't mind to be the first one to challenge you."

As the student representation of the Heavenly Academy and the young genius placed on the tenth place of the Honor Roll of Green Cloud. His quiet words was more powerful than the angry of the students from the scattered tables.

Tian Hai Ya Er laughed weirdly and stuck his red tongue to lick his lips, "You can't bully a child."

This sentence may seem inappropriate but it showed that this

arrogant boy was actually very calm and was afraid of Zhuang Huan Yu.

Yet at this moment, a laugh came up from a direction, obviously he was laughing at how this little monster only dared to bully people who were weaker than him and afraid of challenging stronger elites, such a coward.

Tian Hai Ya Er suddenly stopped laughing, looked at where the laugh came from.

Many people follow him look toward where the laugh was from.

When both the bishop and Xu Shi Ji were remaining silent, and the Heavenly Academy professor was intentionally indulging him. Besides famous young elites like Zhuang Huan Yu dared, who else dared to laugh at this little monster? Was that person really not afraid of death?

The laugh came from the seats for the Starseeker Academy.

That's a very stalwart young man.

Chen Chang Sheng knew that young man. He knew him when he was taking the entrance exam to the Starseeker Academy.

He was worrying about this young man.

Because Tian Hai Ya Er's eyes suddenly became very cold, no longer brutal, looking at that stalwart young man, as if he's looking at a dead person.

At this moment, the official who was leading the Starseeker Academy, asked expressionlessly, "Why couldn't he laugh?"

Even the little monster like Tian Hai Ya Er knew that the Starseeker Academy could not be easily disturbed, especially when he did not have the proper reason. He looked at that big and tall youngster, laughed, revealing his white teeth, like a joey who was extremely calm before he went crazy.

.....

The curtain behind the building was slowly opened, under the thousands of stars, there was a very big stone-made platform. At its surrounding there were around ten copper furnaces, burning and releasing fragrances that can calm people's mind. Under the copper furnaces, deep into the underground, there buried defensive magical weapons, which were maintained by teachers from the Heavenly Academy, making sure that the Qi during fight wouldn't influence people outside the platform.

The Ivy Festival officially began. Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo did not leave, because Luo Luo slightly grabbed his sleeve, also because he was somewhat worried about the young man from the Starseeker Academy, also because the little monster from the Priest Academy mentioned his friend Tang Thirty Six.

According to the convention in the Ivy Festivals in previous years, in the beginning, there would be educational fights between students from various regions and students from the Six Ivies. The gap between the two sides was too big, which actually made it easy to control, so normally there wouldn't be any accident.

However, there were so many surprising incidents happened in the Ivy Festival this year. The Tradition Academy actually appeared again in the public, the Priest Academy actually let the little bloodthirsty monster out, faintly, there was a dangerous wave flowing underground, obviously there would be more accidents occurring later.

Before the professor from the Heavenly Academy even announced the fighting roster, a person already appeared on the stage.

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at the direction of the Starseeker Academy and laughed, "Before, someone asked, why couldn't he laugh? Of course he could, the boring Ivy Festival, was a funny thing originally, everyone can laugh, you see, I am laughing too."

He's only a little boy, laughed naively, but his face was very pale, his lip was bloodily red, which made him look very violent.

"Yet...now I am preparing to kill you."

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at that stalwart youngster as if he was looking at a dead man, asked seriously, "Now, can you still laugh as happily as before?"

The entire building was completely silent, in the seats for the Starseeker Academy, there wasn't any sound too.

Zhuang Huan Yu slightly stirred his eyebrow, "You know the rule for the Ivy Festival, if you don't follow the rule, then I have to represent the Heavenly Academy and beat you."

"I can't beat you, so I don't dare to offend you, but if someone dares to offend me, then what should I do?"

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at him, then turned his eyes to the professor from the Heavenly Academy, asked, "I won't kill him, is that enough?"

The Professor said expressionlessly, "The Ivy Festival is mainly about communication, don't go overboard."

Tian Hai Ya Er looked back to where the Starseeker Academy was.

The stalwart youngster remained silent for a while, shook his head and refused his teacher's indication, slowly walked up the stage.

He's the most outstanding freshman of the Starseeker Academy this year, yet he was never arrogant, but was rather simple and honest. So all the teachers favored him, gave him high expectation, hope him can participate in the Great Trial next year, therefore

they specifically brought him to participate in the Ivy Festival.

Because he's simple and honest, therefore he's straightforward. Before when Tian Hai Ya Er was arrogant and disrespected everyone in the building, he thought the teachers would say something, yet they were so quiet, so for the first time he felt disappointed toward Starseeker Academy, so, he laughed out loud.

Yes, he laughed intentionally.

This big and tall young man, wanted to use this laugh to tell everyone, Starseeker Academy was still like it used to be, did not know what's fear.

From that laugh, he began to prepare for the fight later on.

He knew that he could not beat the little monster from the Priest Academy, but he didn't fight him yet, so he couldn't surrender.

He walked up the stone platform, facing Tian Hai Ya Er, standing under the starlights, he seemed to become even more stalwart.

"My name is Xuan Yuan Po, freshman from Starseeker Academy."

Tian Hai Ya Er smiled and said, "Tried to say you are just a freshman first, want me to go easy on you? Look at your big and awkward looking, you are probably twenty something, I am only twelve this year, so relax, I definitely won't go easy on you."

The big and tall young man called Xuan Yuan Po, said honestly, “I just grow a bit faster. I am actually only thirteen, also I am actually just a freshman. Of course, indeed, I am older than you, so you don’t have to go easy on me.”

“Very good.” Tian Hai Ya Er stopped laughing.

Xuan Yuan Po straightened his waist, became concentrated, tightened up his fist like a rock, said, “Please enlighten me.”(part of the courtesy)

Tian Hai Ya Er was expressionless, casually gave him a punch!

An extremely terrifying hurricane, formed on the stage, spiraling at a high speed.

His fist, was the center of this hurricane!

At the surrounding of the platform, suddenly appeared an intangible barrier.

The barrier actually became slightly deformed, the starlights that penetrated through it, became extraordinarily dismal.

A complete silence.

Everyone looked at Tian Hai Ya Er’s fist and felt shocked and

wordless.

Everyone knew, this little monster was very strong, had bloodline from the Tian Hai family, and had been taught by the Pope, how could he not be strong?

But no one imagined that, he was strong to such an extent!

Just a simple fist, would cause hurricane to form would cause the barrier that was maintained by many Heavenly Academy teachers together to deform!

People looked at the boy who was laughing brutally on stage, thinking that he's only twelve, felt even more shocked.

If he was on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, what's going to be his rank?

On the Great Trial next year, which tier would he get into?

.....

No one thought Xuan Yuan Po could defend this fist, even the teachers and students from the Starseeker Academy.

Yet out of everyone's expect, Tian Hai Ya Er's fist was blocked!

As the two fists collided, a thunderous sound came up, the barrier was deformed again!

Blood flowed out from Xuan Yuan Po's lip, his eyes became a little bleak, his feet stepped deeply into the hard stone floor, his clothes were already broken due to the wind blowed up by Tian Hai Ya Er's fist, he's about to lose, yet at least he did not fall, did not move back for even one step!

Because at the moment the two fists collided, something strange occurred!

The youngster was originally big and tall, so his fist was extremely big, now it became even larger!

More surprisingly, a very thick layer of black hair appeared on his fist, even his right arm was filled fully with long black hair!

His right arm suddenly enlarged, in a second, it was bigger than a normal person's leg!

Those strong muscles, like iron pillars, seemed to have infinite power inside!

Only so, he could defend the horrifying fist from Tian Hai Ya Er!

.....

“Metamorphosis!”

“He’s actually Yao!”

Many shouted out surprisingly, especially those students sitting on the end of the banquet. To many, it’s the first time in their life seeing such image, so they kept yelling shockingly.

The teachers and students from the Six Ivies, were also extremely surprised.

Only the Starseeker Academy’s teachers who knew this fact beforehand remained wordless, but even they didn’t expect this Yao freshman, under Tian Hai Ya Er’s horrifying pressure, could actually use metamorphosis to exert strength that was much stronger than his normal xiu xing stage.

Tian Hai Ya Er also didn’t anticipate that this opponent, who he looked down on, could actually defend his fist.

This made him feel a little humiliated.

This made his feel very angry.

He crazily screamed out, like a child whose toy got stolen.

The teachers from the Priest Academy heard the scream, their face suddenly changed.

The hurricane was formed again!

Several lightnings faintly were shown inside!

Tian Hai Ya Er's fist continued punch forward, destroying Xuan Yuan Po's strong defense.

“Don't you dare to defend it again!”

On the stone platform, the body scream crazily.

On Xuan Yuan Po's metamorphosized arm, there were green smokes rising up, instantly blown away by hurricane.

A horrifying power, along his wrist transmitted to his shoulder.

He could no longer support himself, spit out blood and moved back.

Tian Hai Ya Er followed up like a ghost, and gave him another hit!

Xuan Yuan Po gritted his teeth, shouted angrily, then raised his heavily wounded right fist, defended reluctantly.

“Enough!”

Under the stage, Zhuang Huan Yu shouted coldly.

Almost at the same moment, teachers from both Priest Academy and Starseeker Academy stood up, shouted urgently, “Stop!”

Only people with enough stage, could see that Xuan Yuan Po already lost, but the reason why Tian Hai Ya Er gave out this fist, was to destroy his arm!

Yao people innately had strong body, especially after metamorphosized, yet if they were heavily wounded when they were in metamorphosis, then they could hardly recover!

Tian Hai Ya Er, was actually trying to destroy this young man’s future!

Ka! La!

Xuan Yuan Po kept spitting out blood, flew back due to Tian Hai Ya Er’s power, heavily fell on the stage, causing dusts on the entire ground to fly up.

He stubbornly attempted to stand up again, yet he already had no power to stand up.

His right arm that he formerly felt proud of, his formerly extremely strong right arm, was falling down powerlessly, it’s

useless now.

The entire building was deadly silent.

On the Ivy Festival, there rarely was any bloody incident, yet this image was so sad and brutal.

The professor from the Heavenly Academy walked up, shook his head and said, “You went too harsh.”

Tian Hai Ya Er slightly frowned, said, “I promised you I won’t kill him but I never said I won’t destroy him.”

“I heard that you Yao people were very powerful?”

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at him, laughed contemptuously, “Just so so.”

Xuan Yuan Po looked his destroyed right arm, suddenly cried out.

He’s a stalwart and brave Yao youngster, yet after all he’s only thirteen.

The entire stage was silent, although people from the Starseeker Academy were very

angry, they could only remain silent.

The corner for the Tradition Academy, was also very silent.

Luo Luo looked at the stage.

She looked at the boy's bloody right hand.

Her right hand in the sleeve slightly moved.

She looked at Chen ChangSheng.

Chen Chang Sheng was also looking at the stage.

Chapter 44 - My Name Is Luo Luo

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the stage.

On the stage was Tian Hai Ya Er, who felt the stare from Chen Chang Sheng, looked back at Chen Chang Sheng. His bloody but thin lips slightly curved up forming an arc. His immature but pale face revealed a contemptuous laugh, no need to ask the meaning of his laugh was obvious.

The heavily wounded Xuan Yuan Po was carried down the stone platform, the teacher from the Heavenly Academy quickly did some emergency care, then let students from the Starseeker Academy send him out of the place. Tian Hai Ya Er retrieved his sight, look at the spectators under the platform, laughed and said, “I know, you idiots all dislike me, but so what? I don’t need you to like me, I only need you to afraid of me. No matter how much you hate me, What can you do? Do you really dare to do anything to me?”

“The Ivy Festival was truly funny, a bunch of idiots dream of fish leaping over the

dragon gate, but you never think that, only the real dragons can leap over the gate in the sea of cloud! You poor people from those poor places, you really think you have that chance?”

Tian Hai Ya Er sneered at the crowd, “I came to join the Ivy Festival, not because I want to kindly wake you idiots up. I am came to do two things. After I finish those I will leave, so you guys

don't have to stare at me for so long and pop your eyes out."

Like what the high status people had thought, the Priest Academy sent this crazy little monster to participate in the Ivy Festival, obviously wasn't for getting the first place. There must be hidden reasons. Probably, the incident that little monster participates in the Ivy Festival, has nothing to do with the Priest Academy at all!

Now hearing Tian Hai Ya Er's words, the stage became quiet. People really wanted to know, what are the two things he wanted to do.

The fight he had with the Yao boy from the Starseeker Academy, was obviously an accident. It's probably not one of the two things he had to complete today.

"I come to participate in the Ivy Festival, because Tang Thirty Six said he wanted to destroy me. So I came to destroy him,"

Tian Hai Ya Er looked towards the seats for the Heavenly Academy. "Although he is your student, but I think, since he could say that sentence, you can't really stop me, but interestingly, the idiot come from suburb actually doesn't dare to show up."

He looked towards Chen Chang Sheng in the corner and said contemptuously, "The second thing I have to do, is related to this useless garbage."

“Several days ago, besides I heard Tang Thirty Six wanted to destroy me, I also heard a very crazy thing. The Tradition Academy...basically the broken graveyard on the Hundred Blossom street.....actually got a freshman. Ahhh....I totally can't believe in my ear.”

Tian Hai Ya Er, like he heard the most funny thing in the world, rubbed his stomach and laughed, his voice was extremely horrible.

Suddenly, he stopped laughing, a shout echoed like thunder in the Heavenly Academy.

“How dare you!”

Tian Hai Ya Er looked coldly at Chen Chang Sheng and then looked at the bishop and many people's faces. His voice was extremely deep and cold, completely unlike the sound that a twelve year old boy could make. “I don't care who did this. I just want to ask him, does he want to die?”

The professor from the Heavenly Academy looked at the direction of rostrum, seeing that the bishop's face was still calm.

Rationally, even Tian Hai Ya Er, could not criticize and even threaten these high status people,

But surprisingly, he did it and surprisingly, the stage was still completely silent.

Because he was probably representing the Pope, or possibly the Divine Queen, who wanted to ask some conservative forces in the Tradition, wanted to ask those people who wished to use the Tradition Academy to cause some trouble, what do you want to do?

No one could answer this question.

“You useless trash. You can’t even purify successfully, and you still want to revitalize the Tradition Academy? What a joke!”

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, “I know that you know Tang Thirty Six. Since he doesn’t dare to show up, then you should come on stage and let me destroy you so I can finish both things at the same time. It will save me time.”

A complete silence.

The people who had laughed before laughed towards the decline of the Tradition Academy and the silence of the couple.

But now, no one laughed because of the violence Tian Hai Ya Er showed before. Because people knew, if this freshman from the Tradition Academy actually went up stage the fate waiting for him must be worse than that Yao youngster. It probably would be death.

“Or....”

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at him, smiled and said, “You can publicly announce that you quit the Tradition Academy, then kneel down to beg for my pardon. Maybe I will let you go.”

.....

Chen Chang Shang wouldn't withdraw from the Tradition Academy, because this was the General's Mansion...more accurately, the only choice the high status person who hid behind the Xu Mansion gave him. If he doesn't have the identity as a student of the Tradition Academy, then he couldn't participate in the Great Trial next year.

After hearing Tian Hai Ya Er's words, he was obviously very mad but at the same time he was very confused – He didn't understand, why would the young elite from the Priest Academy be hostile to him, a suburb youngster from the Xi Ning town. Yes, even hostility needs qualification, needed reason.

This is because he didn't know that, when he was calmly xiu xing and reading in the Tradition Academy and didn't care about the wind and rain outside, didn't look at landscapes in the surrounding, in the capital there were already many things happening underground. Many people began to notice him. One such figure was the Heavenly Academy's professor, such as some people from Li Palace, such as people from the royal palace.

The engagement between Xu You Rong and him was an unknown secret. Those people obviously didn't know it's an accident that he went to study in the Tradition Academy. Those people thought, when the Tradition Academy was about to become a forgotten dust

in history, suddenly there was a freshman, representing some old forces in the Tradition — Those who were still loyal to the Chen royal family, were doing some type of feeler, or those old forces were attempting to make some type of announcement. More importantly, those people did not see Chen Chang Sheng's recommendation letter, did not see the Pope's signature, so the attitude that department of traditional education later put up, made them even more confirmed their judgement.

Such feeler or announcement, was not acceptable to those people. They unhesitatingly chose to suppress it. The time they chose to do so, was the Ivy Festival. The person who was particularly responsibly to this was obviously the Heavenly Academy professor who was hosting the Ivy Festival and finally who would?

There were still many officials and priest who were loyal to the Chen royal family in Zhou, so those people didn't want to make it too obvious. Therefore the little monster of the Priest Academy was the best choice, because he's Divine Queen's nephew, also he had background from the Tradition.

Both the Divine Queen and the Pope probably didn't know that there was a freshman in the Tradition Academy at all, but this didn't change Tian Hai Ya Er's last name and succession of teaching. And the best thing was, Tian Hai Ya Er was only a twelve year old boy.....not to say humiliate or suppress, even if he killed that person on stage, so what?

Little kid doesn't know much, this is always the best excuse, isn't it?

Tonight the two most important spectators on the Ivy Festival, the bishop from the department of traditional education and the Dong Yu General Xu Shi Ji, clearly knew this inside story. Xu Shi Ji knew Chen Chang Sheng's origin and identity, yet because of the engagement, of course he would remain silent, no matter Chen Chang Sheng was destroyed or killed, both were images he wanted to see. As for the Bishop's silence, it represented deeper meanings, because he knew more things.

Such as the identity of the little girl sitting next to Chen Chang Sheng.

.....

Kneel, or not kneel, leave, or get killed. This was the multiple choice question Tian Hai Ya Er gave to Chen Chang Sheng. There were many choices, only to show that the Tradition Academy was already a history. After all he was a little kid. His method was brutal and straightforward, basically was the word humiliation.

No one wanted to stand such humiliation, Chen Chang Sheng also didn't want to. Yet what made him feel even more sad was, Luo Luo was taking such humiliation with him. This made him feel really sorry to this little girl who obviously was living well ever since she was born and never suffered any humiliation before.

Luo Luo was indeed very mad. She had never suffered such humiliation in her life before, but Chen Chang Sheng remained silent for the whole time, so she could not say anything. In order to

not let others see the anger gradually formed between her eyebrows, she looked down deeply.

At this moment, she heard Chen Chang Sheng's apologizing voice.

"I said, become a student of the Tradition Academy, you will probably have to stand lots of humiliations and suppressions."

Luo Luo felt that she seemed to have heard such sentence, then she remembered, that's the conversation she had with master on that day in the Tradition Academy. She thought, 'was master testing her? Yes, otherwise with master's ability, how would he let the little monster kept humiliating the Tradition Academy?'

She remembered the words she replied Chen Chang Sheng.

"Master, no one dares to humiliate me."

Yes, since she was born, no one dared to humiliate her. Then, they also couldn't humiliate her respectful master, couldn't humiliate the Tradition Academy that she gradually cared and loved more and more. Anyone who dared to do so, had to pay a deep price.

Luo Luo stood up, made a salute to Chen Chang Sheng. Then she walked toward the stone platform.

The building was entirely silent, countless eyes followed her

steps.

Until she stood in front of Tian Hai Ya Er, people then realized what they just saw.

The Tradition Academy actually accepted the little monster's challenge?

Who is this little girl?

.....

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at the little girl standing in front of him and asked, "Who are you?"

Luo Luo didn't say a word, looked at Chen Chang Sheng sitting under the stage.

"So you are from that ghost place too?"

Tian Hai Ya Er laughed weirdly for a while, then stopped, said with a serious and terrifying tone, "Don't worry, you are so pretty. How am I willing to kill you? After I get you, then I will kill that kid. Then I will be back and keep getting you, is that ok?"

This sentence was very obscene, especially when it's spoken from a twelve old boy's mouth, it's more obscene.

Luo Luo was very angry, but she looked more and more calm.

People who were participating the Ivy Festival, all looked at the stage, many professors and officials' eyes fell on the little girl. They confirmed that she already successfully purify, unlike the completely useless trash Chen Chang Sheng, but they couldn't tell her stage, obviously she couldn't beat Tian Hai Ya Er.

Comparing such a pretty girl to the little monster from the Priest Academy, was originally a very unreasonable thing.

People thought that at the next moment they would see an image of little girl falling in a puddle of blood. Many people felt unwilling and pitiful.

Zhuang Huan Yu suddenly stood up and shouted, "Stop!"

He knew that Luo Luo had an uncommon origin, but no matter how uncommon, how could it be stronger than that little monster's background? Also this little monster's method was too horrifying. The fact that the previous Yao youngster was destroyed was the best evidence. How could he watch her get bullied by this little monster?

The bishop from the Priest Academy slightly frowned, which indicated Tian Hai Ya Er to stop, but the professor from the Heavenly Academy appeared on the side of the stone platform, faintly blocking Tian Hai Ya Er's vision, and then gave Zhuang Huan Yu a cold look.

The bishop of the department of traditional education was about to say something, suddenly Xu Shi Ji said something, and seemingly unintentionally blocked his view.

Tian Hai Ya Er looked at Luo Luo, laughed brutally. Between his red lips, his teeth were as white as bones from the dead.

He wanted to tell her, you see, how many people wanted you to die, but I wouldn't kill you. I would only destroy you, then go destroy that useless trash.

He knew, if he's slower, then he might be prevented by someone, so he stopped hesitating.

He flew to Luo Luo's side, strike down his fist.

His fist was very small, yet it carried terrifying hurricane and lightning.

His mind was very violent. His method was very nasty, but he was truly strong, not to mention he was ruthless!

Wind and thunder, were supernatural phenomenon formed when xiu xingists solidified Qi a to certain point. They at least needed to be in the high Meditation stage before they could xiu xing their Qi to such terrifying extent to make such effect.

As Tian Hai Ya Er began fighting, he used his entire force.

Before, the stalwart and strong Yao boy was destroyed by this fist, much less now in front of him was only a weak little girl?

Below the stage there were countless shocked shouts, implicated with surprising screams, many students covered their face and did not dare to look!

.....

Among the shocking shouts and surprising screams, suddenly there was an extremely angry, extremely terrifying, also somewhat dazing shout!

People looked at the stage, saw that this shout was actually from Tian Hai Ya Er!

In front of Tian Hai Ya Er's fist, a fist appeared!

That's Luo Luo's fist.

Her fist also carried hurricane and lightning, but the hurricane was stronger and the lighting was brighter!

Ka! La!

Instantly, on the surface of Tian Hai Ya Er's finger appeared an infinitive amount of breaches. Blood bursted out and the wound

was so deep that even his bone was visible!

Those breaches instantly reached his wrist. His bones immediately broke!

Pain! Unbearable pain!

Tian Hai Ya Er's pupil shrunk into a black dot. A panic but weird shout, came out between his bloodily red lips!

What followed along, was blood.

What's going on?

Why did this seemingly weak little fist, actually hide such terrifying power?

Tian Hai Ya Er did not have time to think. His mind was taken over entirely by fear. While he was making weird shouts, he tried his best to move backward.

He knew he must go away from this fist, otherwise he definitely would die!

He moved quickly, but Luo Luo chased with an even faster speed.

Her fist, was as berserk as hurricane, as fast as lightning, landed

on Tian Hai Ya Er's fist.

From the beginning to the end of the stage, approximately a hundred meters of distance, her fist was always hitting on his fist.

Terrifying amount of Qi, from her fist, constantly landed into Tian Hai Ya Er's body!

Hong!

Tian Hai Ya Er fell on the edge of the stage, his right hand was entirely fragmented. Between the fingers blood was everywhere.

His face was as pale as snow. Inside his pupil was full of fear and surprise.

He didn't even know what happened, before he lost, completely lost.

.....

On the trees at night, suddenly there were chirping of cicadas.

This was night in the summer, it's impossible to be quiet.

Yet the surrounding of the stone platform was like a snowless winter night, had all been silent.

Then as if snow melted.

Di Da, Di Da.

Blood dropped down from that little fist, dropped on the ground.

The little girl stood in the wind, looked around and said spoke up.

She was answering the previous question from Tian Hai Ya Er, also she was telling a fact

to people here.

“My name is Luo Luo. I am a student of the Tradition Academy.”

The cicadas' chirpings became even more irritable. The building became quieter. People looked shockingly at the stage, looked at the little girls whose skirt was floating in the wind and felt what they saw was not real. Everyone thought they would see this little girl lying in a bloody puddle, so they covered their faces and turned around and did not want to look. Who would have thought that the one who actually lied down in a bloody puddle, was the little monster from the Priest Academy.

No one thought they would see such an ending.

The forgotten Tradition Academy, the unknown little girl, gave this world, such a big shock.

.....

This fight began suddenly, even a bit shameless, but it ended even faster, making people delighted.

Luo Luo knew she would win, because she was originally very strong. That night, the assassin from the demon elite was very dangerous, but it didn't represent she was weak among people of her age. No, among people of her age, she was the absolute elite, especially when comparing the amount of Qi. Rarely anyone would have more Qi than her.

Of course if Tian Hai Ya Er was calmer and chose to compete her in fighting methods, then she probably could not win in such domineering manner, but Tian Hai Ya Er was used to destroy others arbitrarily. How would he know, her bloodline itself was the most noble and arbitrary bloodline in the world!?

Everything was over.

Luo Luo looked at Tian Hai Ya Er and raised her fist again.

She clearly remembered the words this little monster had said when he heavily wounded the Yao youngster before. She clearly remembered the humiliation this little monster gave her master and her. Then, now is the time to return all the humiliations.

“Stop!”

Seeing that she was about to continue fighting, many high status people who were silently spectating suddenly changed their faces.

Before, that Yao youngster could be destroyed, could be killed, people from the Tradition Academy could be destroyed, could be killed, but....Tian Hai Ya Er couldn't be destroyed, and of course couldn't be killed!

Because his last name was Tian Hai.

Sounds of breaking air came up, several high status people including the professor of the Heavenly Academy came on stage.

Chapter 45 - Vigorous Like Tigers

The Professor of the Heavenly Academy and the elite from the Priest Academy stood around the stone platform surrounding Luo Luo. Anyone could easily control her, but the problem was she stood right in front of Tian Hai Ya Er. With only a few inches away from Tian Hai Ya Er, her little fist was tightly held carrying the wind and the thunder.

If she punched down, Tian Hai Ya Er would be dead or paralyzed for the rest of his life.

The Heavenly Academy professor and the elites from the Priest Academy all remained focused, not taking a single step forward or a step backwards. They maintained the current status quo hoping to find an opportunity to suppress her. They thought that after some time as passed and her head had cooled down, she would be calmer and exit her fighting mode.

A complete silence. No one wanted to break the silence and to stimulate this little girl. No one wanted to see more blood be spilled.

But Tian Hai Ya Er himself was not aware of that. He looked at Luo Luo, coughed blood, and with a shaky voice, cried and said, "Please don't kill me....I beg you....Don't kill me, I am really scared, scared....Ha Ha Ha Ha!"

The pitiful begging with a cry suddenly became a rampant laugh!

The boy with a bloody face, looked extremely brutal. He resentfully stared at Luo Luo and shouted, “You think I am afraid of you!?? I am just playing with you! Because you are over! The Tradition Academy is also over! Look at these shameless elders. They are evil inside out. It didn’t matter if it was I who destroyed you or like what’s happening now, your future is all over! Because no one can treat me like that!”

The Heavenly Academy professor’s face became somewhat mad.

Luo Luo slightly frowned, raised her fist higher. Bright lights were surrounding her fingers, very pretty, but also very terrifying.

Tian Hai Ya Er’s emotion suddenly changed. He screamed and kicked his two feet randomly in air like a child whose milk was stolen!

“What do you want to do!? Do you really dare to hit me again! Divine Queen is my aunt! On this continent, who dares to hit me!?”

The building was deadly silent. Everyone knew what the little monster said was true. Not to mention that in the rumors he is the Pope’s apprentice. Just the fact that he had such an aunt, no one dared to offend him. Thinking about the harsh circumstances she would face aftermath, the look people had toward Luo Luo became pitiful and sympathetic.

Surrounding by senior elites and threatened by this hatred boy, what would Luo Luo do next?

She looked to a corner and looked to the youngster.

This action was her subconscious action or habit, you can call it. It's not that she needs Chen Chang Sheng's advice, but she thought she should listen to Chen Chang Sheng's advice before she acted..

Everyone followed her sight to the corner, to Chen Chang Sheng.

.....

Now Chen Chang Sheng has a mixed feeling.

He was not surprised. In these days, he taught Luo Luo xiu xing in the Tradition Academy. He clearly knew that although the little monster from the Priest Academy was very strong, but there's no way he can defeat Luo Luo. Otherwise he would definitely prevent Luo Luo from walking up the stage, but he didn't know that the little monster was so silly that he dared to compete Luo Luo in the strength of Qi. Because of this, he lost in a such deplorable fashion. Because of this kid's actions, Luo Luo had to make a very important choice now.

He knew what Luo Luo wanted to choose because a few days ago when a sand went into Luo Luo's eyes, the little girl spent half a day studying for half a day with the sand in her eyes until she finished studying. Eventually she succeeded and when she succeeded, she happily ran around the lake with a red eye.

She knew why Luo Luo was hesitating and why she was looking

at him. Because she worried about bringing trouble to him and to the Tradition Academy and because she was used to asking for his advice before doing anything, she would follow Chen Chang Sheng's decisions.

Luo Luo was the one who defeated the little monster from the Priest Academy and Luo Luo was asking for his advice. After Chen Chang Sheng confirmed these two things, he knew what decision he should make – he decided to straightforwardly give his advice and choose what Luo Luo originally wanted to choose.

This is very good. Chen Chang Sheng thought. He should take the responsibility. He stood up, looked at the professor from the Heavenly Academy and the people, who were holding their breaths. He remained silent for a bit and then said, “Before he said he wants to destroy Tang Thirty Six.”

His voice was somewhat dry and his tone, not so fluent, appeared very clumsy. It was not because of fear, but because he is not used to speaking in front of many people. Today in the Ivy Festival, seeing so many people, to him this was absolutely the first time in his life.

Moreover, although he did things with a harsh tone, he was not good at saying harsh words.

He thought a bit and though that the reason should be enough “Tang Thirty Six is my friend, so....”

.....

Luo Luo understood what he meant but suddenly she realized that she had made a mistake – previously she shouldn't have had look at master. The action was a habit and was respect, but this also meant giving the right to make a decision and the responsibilities all to master. This was a very big error that she had committed.

She looked back, looked at Tian Hai Ya Er lying in front of him.

When Chen Chang Sheng was saying that sentence: Tang Thirty Six is my friend.

Tian Hai Ya Er saw her eyes and read her meaning. His face suddenly became extremely pale and the expressions in his eyes became extremely dazed. He did not understand why but then he screamed fearfully, "Help me! Quick!"

His scream was very loud, hiding Chen Chang Sheng's sentence after so.

But it couldn't not hide the terrifying wind and lightning.

Luo Luo's noble but arbitrary bloodline made her hate cowards the most.

Hearing Tian Hai Ya Er's urgent call for help, her eyebrows raised up. Her eyes became extraordinarily bright.

A shadow, jumped up like a tiger!

Her fist fell on Tian Hai Ya Er's chest!

Pa, Tian Hai Ya Er's scream instantly stopped!

After a while, the silence suddenly broke by countless surprising shouts in the building.

Tian Hai Ya Er passed out in a bloody puddle. His ribs were fragmented, vessels completely broken, and his veins were destroyed.

Luo Luo took back her fist and wind was blowing around her little body.

Hoo! Hoo!

Black hair flew by her pretty little face, like fine willow branches in wind.

It's not fine willow branches but it's trace of grasses.

She looked at the surrounding people, with a calm face.

Like she was standing in storms in the North, between the wild grasses constantly waiting for a one shot kill moment.

An unspeakable force, naturally formed.

.....

The surrounding was completely quiet and people looked shockingly at the stage.

That little girl...actually destroyed Tian Hai Ya Er! Did she know who Tian Hai Ya Er was? Did she know what she was doing?

Chen Chang Sheng really wanted to tell the entire world, ‘I was the one who told her to take the action’, but at this moment the eyes of the entire world were looking at Luo Luo. No one was looking at him. Such as Zhuang Huan Yu, in his eyes was only Luo Luo. He generated infinitive amount of admiration and love.

Professor of the Heavenly Academy and several elites of the Priest Academy, quickly flew to Tian Hai Ya Er and checked his pulse. They confirmed that he’s still alive, but...all of his vessels were broken. He was already destroyed to the worst possible way. He could no long xiu xing in his entire life. The people from the Priest Academy used the fastest speed to carry Tian Hai Ya Er down stage. Then sent him to the royal palace, hoping guests or royal doctors in the palace, could keep the last hope. If not, they they might have to inform the Divine Queen.

The bishop and teachers of the Priest Academy left with them. Before they left, they glimpsed at the professor of the Heavenly Academy. What they had meant was clear: ‘you caused this event,

from hiding the Priest Academy that you were the one using Tian Hai Ya Er, then you had to give an explanation for this.'

The professor of the Heavenly Academy looked at Luo Luo. His face was as cold as ice. His voice was as harsh as an edge of knife, "You hit too hard. You little girl, is too cold."

Luo Luo thought that when Tian Hai Ya Er destroyed Xuan Yuan Po before, what did this professor of the Heavenly Academy say? She recalled. At that point, the professor of the Heavenly Academy said Tian Hai Ya Er went too hard. Tian Hai Ya Er said he only promised not to kill Xuan Yuan Po, never said he would not destroy Xuan Yuan Po.

"I never promised you I won't kill him, also I only destroyed him."

Luo Luo thought she was very reasonable, turned around and walked down.

The professor of the Heavenly Academy was surprised. He remembered his previous conversation with Tian Hai Ya Er, thinking that Luo Luo was intentionally sneering at him. He felt his anger boiling and swelling up. His face looked extremely ugly and harshly shouted, "How dare you walk away like that!"

Luo Luo paused her steps.

The professor of the Heavenly Academy looked at her back and

said expressionlessly, “I don’t care about your identity or your true succession of teaching. But you have to remember, here is the capital of Zhou. Here is the Heavenly Academy. You just heavily wounded someone in public, do you think you can run away?”

On the surface he only made these statement, but everyone knew the real meaning. No matter how mysterious Luo Luo was, the one she heavily wounded was the apprentice of the Pope and the Divine Queen’s nephew. In the entire human world, no one could protect her.

The professor of the Heavenly Academy looked like he’s laughing “Little girl, you are truly.....daring.”

Luo Luo was somewhat unhappy and asked, “What kind of thing are you? How dare you talk to me like that?”

The entire building was silent. No one could expect that, at this moment, this little girl was not scared at all, but rather so aggressive.

Only extremely few people faintly felt something was weird because the influence this little girl revealed, was truly strong.

Facing the professor of the Heavenly Academy, she was like a lord facing her vassal.

What kind of family or sect, could teach such female student?

The professor of the Heavenly Academy felt dazed. Then he felt so angry that he laughed, laughed extremely coldly.

Now he was very certain, this little girl's identity must be uncommon, but just like what he said before, she destroyed Tian Hai Ya Er....this meant, in the entire human world, not many could change her fate.

After a harsh shout, his right hand casually waved.

There was no wind nor rain, only a straight line of Qi. The Qi that even true iron could not block off!

This was Starfusing elite's method!

No wonder he's the professor at the Heavenly Academy!

It didn't matter how strong Luo Luo was, after all she was only a little girl.

People seemed to have heard sounds of death, as if there was someone saying the little girl was dead.

Who could change this situation?

Someone looked to the seat for the Tradition Academy in the corner, wanted to see that little girl's friend.

There was only a seat, wine and dishes.

There was no one there.

Chapter 46 - Mao Qiu Yu

When the professor of the Heavenly Academy moved, no one besides Xu Shi Ji and the Bishop of the department of traditional education could stop him. Xu Shi Ji, as the general whom the Divine Queen highly trusted, obviously could stop the professor and the Bishop, who had the most reasons to prevent him, looked like he fell asleep.

Although Zhuang Huan Yu was ranked tenth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, there was still a huge gap between senior elites and him. He did not have the authority to stop the elites. As he watched death approach the young girl, his face became extremely pale but he couldn't do anything.

Luo Luo looked at the Qi aiming at her, sensed the shadow of death. Her thin eyebrows slightly rose up but her expression was still calm because she knew that no one could kill her in the capital except the extreme situations like the one that night in the Tradition Academy.

She was certain that she would not be killed but others didn't know that so they were shouting from the surroundings.

Suddenly, someone stood in front of her.

The person was not tall but he was taller than her, so he blocked her body.

When Luo Luo saw the person's back, she recalled the night

when Chen Chang Sheng protected her.

Once again, she recalled her dad's quote: When the sky falls, there will be someone tall supporting it for you.

For a moment, the coldness she felt from the professor from the Heavenly Academy wasn't so cold from the warmth she felt from Chen Chang Sheng.

The moment Luo Luo's fist landed on Tian Hai Ya Er's chest, Chen Chang Sheng left the seats because he wasn't sure if Luo Luo's clansman would appear promptly even though she had a strong and mysterious background. Because he was Luo Luo's teacher, he had to take responsibility and protect her.

He came very promptly.

As the professor's Qi traveled through the air, Chen Chang Sheng had positioned himself between the professor and Luo Luo in time.

He held the short sword horizontally and felt a little nervous.

He was not sure if his short sword could block the professor's Qi and he didn't consider what would happen if he couldn't block it because that was not something he needed to consider.

Fine, he did think about what would happen.

Behind his body, his right hand grabbed Luo Luo's hand.

The big hand held onto the little hand and at the center of the palm was a button.

The Qi that the professor had solidified into a straight line in front of his finger traveled swiftly and fiercely.

Chen Chang Sheng thought that the next moment he would disappear from the stage, unexpectedly, he was still at the same place.

He looked back at Luo Luo, thinking what's happening?

— If you don't activate the Button of Thousand Miles, then we would die for real.

.....

Of course Chen Chang Sheng didn't die and neither did Luo Luo. She didn't use the Button of Thousand Miles because she was certain that no one could kill her in the capital, especially in the Heavenly Academy. This is because in the capital there is someone who knew her identity and he was the strongest in the Heavenly Academy.

A soft wind blew by and the Qi that was solidifying into a straight line, which seemed invincible, was easily waved away like the smoke coming out of countryside hearth.

The soft wind originated from two sleeves.

An old man full of white hair appeared on stage. His sleeves were slightly flowing in the night wind.

The entire field was silent. Everyone stood up, including Xu Shi Ji and the Bishop of the department of traditional education.

The students from the Heavenly Academy including Zhuang Huan Yu, all bowed down. They were all extraordinarily respectful and very surprised..

“Hi Principal!”

“Teacher!”

Yes, this elder was the Principal of the Heavenly Academy. Two Sleeves of Soft Wind MaoQiu Yu.

Immediately, the Vice Principal Zhuang also appeared after him.

Zhuang Huan Yu looked at the Vice Principal Zhuang and his expression was changed.

Everyone in the field was dumbfounded.

No one had thought that the two strongest Principals of Heavenly Academy would appear at the same time, especially the Principal Mao Qiu Yu who was one of the countable elites on the continent. His status was extremely high. Normally, the first night of the Ivy Festival wouldn't require high status people to appear.

The professor's expression changed. He walked to Mao Qiu Yu and greeted politely. Then he explained what happened tonight and describe the situation to make it more advantageous for him.

From Mao Qiu Yu's protection, the professor realized that what occurred tonight will not go according to his plan but he didn't want the fire to burn on his own body and instead tried to put down the fire before too late.

Destroyed someone for no reason? Ruthless? Bullying the weak one?

Hearing the professor's report, people's faces suddenly looked very interesting.

Was he talking about Tian Hai Ya Er or the little girl from the Tradition Academy?

Mao Qiu Yu suddenly laughed.

The Bishop from the department of traditional education also laughed.

The Professor of Heavenly Academy suddenly felt a bit worried.

The bishop laughed as he stood up, walked outside of the building, and said torpidly, "Friend Cao, have some pride."

The professor's last name was Cao. He was dazed on stage and felt his torpid sentence was like a whip landed on his own face.

The Vice President Zhuang expressionlessly suggested that the Ivy Festival tonight has ended.

The crowd gradually spread out. When they were leaving, they all subconsciously looked back at the stone platform.

Mao Qiu Yu looked at Luo Luo, as if he was going to say something but after all he did not say a word, and simply smiled.

Chen Chang Sheng made a salute with Luo Luo next to him and then walked down the stage. They returned to the seat at the corner and packed up their stuff.

Luo Luo simply followed behind him and appeared to be very well-behaved.

She thought that previously on stage, did she act too wild, or too arbitrary? Would master dislike that type of her?

She grabbed his sleeve, turned up her little face, and giggled.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the little girl's cute tiger teeth, smiled, and rubbed her head.

.....

As the banquet ended, the building became completely silent. Mao Qiu Yu and Professor Cao faced each other on stage and started a conversation.

“In order to suppress the Tradition Academy, you allowed the little monster from the Priest Academy to behave crazily in the Ivy Festival. What you did was crazy.”

“True, I just dislike the Tradition Academy. Many people are just like me, am I wrong?”

“Resentment? No, that was an event that happened almost twenty years ago...everyone knows clearly what you actually want.”

“What do I want?”

“The Pope made you a Professor at the Heavenly Academy. You have been a Professor for more than a decade. Anyone would be tired of it. That's understandable.”

“Principal, I am always respectful to you.”

“You are the professor at the Heavenly Academy. Just one step up and you will be the bishop of the department of traditional education. Who won’t be tempted?”

Mao Qiu Yu looked at him and spoke calmly, “But You did something wrong. First you shouldn’t drag the Tradition Academy in. Second you shouldn’t use people who you don’t have the right to use. Lastly you should find out the identity of your opponent.”

The professor’s face turned extremely sour because the Principal spoke the truth.

His position was arranged by the Pope. Professor was a position used by the Li Palace to control potential elites from the great schools, but he was a professor for so many years and indeed, he felt tired of it. He wanted to become the bishop of the department of traditional education. Just one step away and he can see a completely different sky. Who can resist such temptation?

But obviously he couldn’t admit to it and insisted, “There are people in the Tradition trying to use the Tradition Academy to test out the situation. I want to solve problems for the Pope and the Divine Queen. How am I wrong?”

Mao Qiu Yu said expressionlessly, “Does the Pope and the Divine Queen know this?”

The professor remained silent for a while and said, “Tian Hai Ya Er had become a useless person. The Tradition Academy...how can

it still exist aftermath? If there is any problem in the Tradition Academy, then Mei Li Sha obviously has to take his responsibility. It's not a bad thing from any perspective.”

“No one is stupid. Even Tian Hai Ya Er himself knew you were using him.”

Mao Qiu Yu said, “Unfortunately, you are stupid.”

The professor of the Heavenly Academy said unwillingly, “Who is that girl from the Tradition Academy?”

Mao Qiu Yu turned around and walked out of the building “That's not important. The key is...the Bishop had been taking charge of the department of traditional education for several decades. Even earlier than when the Pope was enthroned. Do you think you can take down such person simply using some conspiracies?”

The professor looked at the elder's back and said angrily, “I only know that the Divine Queen's nephew was destroyed...Someone has to respond to this event. Even if the Pope doesn't get mad, there must be someone taking the anger from the Queen.”

Mao Qiu Yu didn't turn but continued walking replied “You still don't know who should take the responsibility tonight?”

The professor was shocked as if he got hit by lightning. He knew that tonight was probably the last night in his life.

.....

Luo Luo didn't want to get surrounded by people so after discussing with Chen Chang Sheng, she hid into the trees in the darkness. Familiarly, she led him and found a road, pushed the two heavy doors, bypassed a small building, and went into a street from an unknown back door of the Heavenly Academy.

Chen Chang Sheng heard she said she had been to the lectures at the Heavenly Academy before and asked curiously, "Always go through the back door?"

Luo Luo said, "If I don't go through back door, then how can I come to lecture at the Heavenly Academy?"

Chen Chang Sheng had some guesses and asked, "The one who was giving you lecture..was the Principal of the Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu?"

Luo Luo replied yes.

Chen Chang Sheng said with a mixed feeling , "That's truly call back door."

Luo Luo said, "Principal Mao's level of teaching is much worse than master's."

He was actually compared by Luo Luo to the legendary principal of the Heavenly Academy. This thing was way too bizarre.

“Don’t speak such nonsense. If anyone hears, he will laugh.”

Chen Chang Sheng said with a straight face, but he felt extremely happy.

But when he saw the carriage in the street, all of his happiness suddenly disappeared.

There was a lantern hanging on the carriage and on the lantern, there was a word, “Xu.”

That’s the carriage from the Dong Yu General’s mansion.

Chapter 47 - The Shadow On The Window And The Green Orange

The invitation from the General's Mansion was both with manner and indifference. Chen Chang Sheng told Luo Luo to stay where she was. He walked towards the carriage parking place on the street. Only when he walked there did he notice that nothing but silence surrounded the carriage. Not a single person was around and the previous guard who invited him was nowhere to be seen.

The battle horse in front of the carriage was tall and muscular. Its mane showed hints of crimson in the darkness of night. Surely it was no regular species and was a certain unique beast's descendent. Although the horse was intimidating, Chen Chang Sheng didn't glance at it for even a moment because the person he needed to see was the guest sitting inside the carriage.

The guest was still sitting in the carriage. There were bright lamps hanging around the carriage and the light shone through the windows and projected the guest's shadow onto the curtain. His image was so clear that it seemed to be carved by knives and swords.

Chen Chang Sheng bowed towards the shadow on the curtain of the carriage. Its shadow was clear and so was the person inside. The terrifying and serious aura of him was also clear. It wasn't until now did Chen Chang Sheng realize where the two pressures he felt previously in the Ivy Festival came from – one of the reasons he attended the Ivy Festival was to see the guest with his own eyes. Although during the entire festival the guest never

seemed to lay his eyes on Chen Chang Sheng, he actually was observing Chen Chang Sheng.

“It has been a long time since you left Xi Ning and arrived at the capital. Up until now, I haven’t heard any rumors that I don’t want to hear. This proves that you are a smart person and your choices are steady. I like it.”

Xu Shi Ji’s calm and cold voice was heard behind the curtains, “After you joined the Tradition Academy, you learned how to use your background. Now I noticed that you are smarter than I imagined. It’s hard to say, but I’m starting to like you more and more.”

Chen Chang Sheng knew he was speaking the truth instead of scoffing or been sarcastic. He was not enough for the Yu Dong General to scoff at, or even be lied to. But he didn’t grow happy from his liking because he noticed that he still didn’t like Xu Shi Dong’s taste.

The taste was not bitter, spicy, sour, or sweet. It was an indescribable feeling. The tone that Xu Shi Ji used when talking to him was also a taste.

Calm, yet indifferent. It wasn’t intentional but Xu Shi Dong looked down on Chen Chang Sheng as an elder.

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t like this. If it weren’t for the troubles that grew out of the marriage vow and the abuse he endured from the General’s Mansion, if Xu Shi Ji actually was treating him with

an attitude of an elder, then he wouldn't mind. But the problem was that the previous statements were true.

Xu Shi Jie was silent for a while. Perhaps he was surprised with Chen Chang Sheng's silence, or maybe he needed some time to think about some stuff. The night breeze blew around the lamps. He asked, "Who is she?"

Yes, this was the thing he actually cared about. Of course, this concern didn't originate from the marriage vow that Chen Chang Sheng made. He didn't care about any female contact with Chen Chang Sheng because he never treated Chen Chang Sheng as his future son-in-law.

Started from the moment that Luo Luo stepped up to the battle stone of the Ivy Festival, his subordinates in the general's mansion started to research her background. Yet when the Ivy Festival ended and Xu Shi Ji rode the carriage and left the Heavenly Academy, there was still no information found about her background whatsoever.

Xu Shi Ji knew the great ability of his subordinates. He was surprised.

The young girl was with Chen Chang Sheng and therefore, he was also alerted.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't answer his question because he felt that he didn't need to answer Xu Shi Ji's questions.

The shadow on the curtain grew clearer and its outline became sharper. This was perhaps because Xu Shi Ji got closer to the window.

The aura also grew more terrifying and the pressure seemed to become a real existence.

Chen Chang Sheng felt an uneasiness in his chest, as if a mountain was landing on him.

“Speaking the truth, I regret a little.” Xu Shi Ji’s emotionless voice was heard from the carriage.

“When you just came to capital, and no one knew you, I should’ve just killed you. There is a rule among generals and that is to be merciless. I obviously know, but after all you are connected with Xu mansion, someone wants you to stay alive, so I let you stay alive.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked down but didn’t say a word.

“The capital in the summer, was a place where people can easily die....The flood period is very hard to be certain, but what can be certain is, the rivers in the capital will definitely rise in level. When the river level rises, it will wash away both floating corpses and ashes.”

Xu Shi Ji spoke through the carriage window coldly.

“For example, Professor Cao from Heavenly Academy. After tonight, perhaps he will become a floating corpse thousands miles away from the capital, or perhaps he will become food for the koi in the River Luo. All in all, no one will see him again.”

After hearing this, Chen Chang Sheng shockingly raised his head and looked towards the window. He didn't understand why the professor from the Heavenly Academy was going to die.

“After all, that little monster is one of the Family of Tian Hai..... no matter how the situation turns out, the professor still acted out on his own accord, and the queen will be unhappy. If the queen gets angry, then Sir Zhou Tong will be very mad. If Sir Zhou Tong is furious....then he will face something worse than death.”

“Therefore, the professor will commit suicide tonight.”

“Sure, I regretted not killing you from the beginning and now it's difficult for me to react. I must remind you though, that there are many ways of surviving that are more terrifying than death in this world. The professor understood this, and I hope you will too.”

The lamps waved back and forth lightly and the light dimmed a little. Dozens of guards appeared from the darkness and circled around the carriage as it traveled slowly past the street and towards the Dong Yu General's Mansion. The tall battle horse peeked indifferently at Chen Chang Sheng right before it left.

Xu Shi Ji was silent in the carriage and gloomy fire was burning in the depths of his pupils. It was not violent but rather cold. He

noticed that some stuff was getting out of his control. Because of the letter sent from Mountain Virgin, he never really got to control the situation, but now it got even more strange.

He knew clearly why Chen Chang Sheng entered the Tradition Academy. He first thought that there was nothing much about this event, but now even if this was true, some people are trying to use this fact to start trouble. The people who were still loyal to the Royal Chen Family in the Tradition seemed to finally obtain a chance to overturn after all these years. How would this situation affect the Dong Yu General's Mansion?

This thing was way too big, even if he was the most trusted General of the Divine Queen, he dared not step his foot into this pool. The only thing he knew was that if Chen Chang Sheng actually got pulled into that pool of dirty water, then no one could know about this marriage vow. At least it should be hidden for a few more days.

After these few more days, the southern powers would send a representative group to the capital. The few dozens of students entering the Great Trial from the south are also in this group. Because of this, the next two nights of this year's Ivy Festival would be delayed.

There was still a while for the Great Trial to come. The southerners broke the usual tradition and arrived at the capital few months early. This action started some suspicion and debate, but Xu Shi Ji knew clearly that the Divine Queen welcomed the arrival of this representative group.

Only a few people in the entire continent knew that the reason for the early arrival of the southern representative group was that they were preparing to propose on the Valentine's Day.

Xu Shi Ji knew this because the southern representative was about to propose to his daughter.

He wouldn't allow anyone or anything to interrupt this marriage.

Not Chen Chang Sheng, not that mysterious young girl, not anyone.

He didn't care about the Tradition Academy, Heavenly Academy, or the old royal family and the darkness in the capital. He didn't care about twists and plots. If anyone tried to interrupt this marriage, then he was not afraid to kill, even if they were people who shouldn't be killed.

Since he had a good daughter, then nothing he did would harm him as long as he didn't betray the Divine Queen.

Of course, if there were better ways to solve those unpredictable variables, such as Chen Chang Sheng and that young girl, then it would be nice. But first, he had to determine some things and ask some people to prepare.

"To the Orange Garden." He said.

The carriage of the Dong Yu General's Mansion moved slowly on

the street and disregarded the strict curfew of the capital and rode towards the royal palace.

The Orange Garden is a garden not too far away from the royal palace. Although its acres of land wasn't huge, many orange trees were planted there.

To be able to have a garden around the royal palace and plant the expensive orange trees, the owner couldn't be an ordinary person.

That is the home of Lady Mo Yu.

After returning to the Tradition Academy and standing beneath a tree around the lake, thinking back to the shadow on that carriage window, Chen Chang Sheng wasn't in a good mood. He wanted to scream at the river but he was afraid to disturb the people living in the Herb Garden on the other side of the wall. He wanted to curse but noticed that his master or senior never taught him how to.

He turned around sadly and walked towards the library. On his way through the forest, he saw a orange tree and there were many new-born small fruits hanging on the branches. Instinctively, he plunked one down and ate it. His eyes and eyebrows then proceed to wrinkle due to the sourness of the fruit.

“Even you are going to bully me?” He kicked the orange tree and his breath got heavier.

Small oranges fell down like rain drops and a moaning was heard from the back of the tree.

Luo Luo rubbed her head and walked out. In her right hand was a lunch box and her left hand covered her mouth. Her face was filled with surprise as if she saw something strange.

Chen Chang Sheng was a little surprised as well. He asked, “didn’t you go back to sleep?”

Luo Luo answered, “Auntie Li prepared some late night snack and I was going to share with master.”

Chen Chang Sheng saw her expression and was confused, “Then why are you surprised?”

Luo Luo opened her wide eyes and answered sincerely, “I never knew that a character like master would have such a childish side as well.”

Chen Chang Sheng was a little embarrassed and walked towards the library.

A quiet voice was heard from the forest and it was affected by the sourness of the green orange.

“I only turn fifteen in a few months, so what if I have a childish

side.....”

Chapter 48 - On Top Of The Tree

While the stars were twinkling in the night sky, Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo were sitting on the floor enjoying their late night snack. It contained a few types of delightful desserts and two bowls of herb gruel with a side of salted meat. It delicious so the master and apprentice enjoyed themselves and didn't speak a word during the meal.

After finishing the gruel and dessert, Luo Luo finally took a break and spoke. Thinking back to the carriage she saw near the side door of the Heavenly Academy, she couldn't resist but ask while chewing her salted meat. "Master, what kind of relationship do you have with the Dong Yu General's Mansion?"

Chen Chang Sheng knew curiosity couldn't be oppressed for a long time and was mentally prepared for her question. He casually answered a few sentences and wanted to switch the topic – his preparation was to fool her and use his status as the master to skip the questioning. It seemed like an easy task.

But tonight's view was too beautiful and Luo Luo couldn't resist her curiosity. She knew he didn't want to answer and her black pupils started to move from one side to the other. She tried a few different possibilities, such as the trivial plots of a son of a friend or family feuds.

Chen Chang Sheng never knew her imagination was so rich and didn't know how to answer. Therefore he kept his silence.

Luo Luo stared at the night sky full of stars above the Tradition Academy and thought. She picked up a small green orange that she previously got from the woods and chewed it. Suddenly, she let out a voice.

Chen Chang Sheng thought she was surprised by the sourness of the fruit and shook his head, “I told you it was too sour and inedible. Plus it is not good for the stomach.”

Luo Luo swallowed the green orange and she didn't seem to be bothered by the sourness. She looked at Chen Chang Sheng surprisingly and said, “Master, are you vowed to marry to Xu You Rong when you were an infant?”

Chen Chang Sheng opened his mouth slightly and didn't know what to say. On the side of respecting her imagination, he couldn't help but to admit to the fact.

“Ah.....”

Before he made an response, Luo Luo waved her hands and embarrassment filled her face. “Silly me, how could I even think of such nonsense. How could it be possible? It's that Xu You Rong we talking about.”

Chen Chang Sheng grew even more silent because he didn't know what he should say. His mouth was closed bitterly and thought to himself ‘this marriage vow was way too ridiculous.’ Even Luo Luo, who had nothing but utmost respect for him, would think like this too? Why is it impossible between him and Xu You Rong?

“Go back to sleep,” He thought for a second and told Luo Luo, “I have some business to take care of tomorrow, don’t come here too early.”

Luo Luo was nervous and said insecurely, “Master, are you angry?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Did you do anything today that would make me angry?”

Luo Luo thought hard and found she didn’t do anything that would anger her master. Previously on the Ivy Festival her actions are arrogant and not nice as usual, but since her master said he wouldn’t blame her, then of course he wouldn’t blame her.

Never did she realize that a causal word of her had hurt Chen Chang Sheng’s self-pride.

Since she said it causally, therefore he was hurt deeply.

After Luo Luo left, Chen Chang Sheng cleaned out the lunch box on the floor and organized the books back onto the bookshelves and dimmed the light. He walked back to the library and glanced around, then left in the night as if he was saying goodbye.

After returning to the small building, he started packing his luggage and collected everything necessary into a box and drew out his short sword from his waist and started to meditate on his bed. He wasn't absorbing the starlight and trying to Purify himself. He was waiting for people to show up.

Tonight's Ivy Festival Luo Luo handicapped Tian Hai Ya Er. For sure she started a big trouble. That trouble would target her, target him, and mostly importantly target the Tradition Academy. He doesn't know who would come for vengeance, but he knew that those people would be powerful.

He knew that Luo Luo's background is mysterious and extraordinary. Or else the principle of Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu, wouldn't protect her on the Ivy Festival. But the little monster she handicapped is the nephew of the Divine Queen, he was one of the Family of Tian Hai – the most terrifying Family in the entire continent.

From the beginning Chen Chang Sheng thought Luo Luo's background would stop the people to not make trouble on the surface. But after Xu Shi Ji said that the Heavenly Academy professor would commit suicide tonight, he didn't have much hope in Luo Luo's background anymore.

Nowadays even the Royal Chen Family is under the influence of Family of Tian Hai. Even the professor of Heavenly Academy would die due to the handicap of Tian Hai Ya Er. Then what should be expected for him and Luo Luo who directly caused the handicap of him? plus they around want to ruin the Tradition Academy.

He waited for the enemy's arrival and was ready to leave. Although he would miss the Tradition Academy and next year's Great Trail, but is done cannot be undone. Then at least he should leave a complete ending for this event.

In his plan, the entire Tradition Academy would turn into an ocean of flame later.

He had a plan to escape.

Tradition Academy would pay for the handicap of Tian Hai Ya Er and Luo Luo isn't an ordinary character. For sure the enemy would be satisfied by this ending.

This entire night.

Chen Chang Sheng sat alone in the room.

Only a old worn-out luggage sat near his feet.

He waited silently for another turning point in his life.

He waited with a patience unseen of peers his age.

No one knew that he waited in the Tradition Academy for an

entire night. Even until countless years afterward no one knew. Only himself knew how long this night was and how hard did he struggle to stay and how much effort he put in.

Even until the sunlight shined on the school, nothing had happened.

This night, many people also paid attention to the Tradition Academy in silent.

Those people were just like him, they thought that the ruthless officials of the Department of Investigation would rush into the Tradition Academy at night and bring Chen Chang Sheng into the terrifying Jail of Zhou, or the xiuxingists of Li Palace would arrive at night and start slaughtering and fire in this place to burn the academy that Divine Queen hated into the ground.

But the above didn't happen.

The sunlight was just like usual and the gong in the royal palace was stroke.

Chen Chang Sheng opened his eyes and walked to the window and glanced at the quiet sight of morning of the capital. He didn't understand, then he realized.

Due to his request from last night, Luo Luo didn't enter the Tradition Academy until noon. Of course, she didn't forget to bring the heavy lunch box.

Chen Chang Sheng asked her to search for some information.

Before they finished their lunch, a message arrive from the other side of the wall. Luo Luo lowered her head and listened quietly for a while.

“No one saw the professor from the Heavenly Academy.”

She raised her head and looked at Chen Chang Sheng, “The vice principal receive a report, it should be the letter of resignation.”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent. Looking at his expression, Luo Luo realized something as well.

Disappearing after resignation. No one knew if he returned to his home village or he hid in the wild to xiuxing. It was impossible to find out in such a short time either.

It wasn't a resignation from his job, it was a leaving from this world.

Perhaps in the mansion of the professor an extra white rope was found. In the River Luo perhaps the ashes already sank to the very bottom and mixed with the mud.

A big character like him died silently like this.

Chen Chang Sheng felt a breeze around his neck and he peaked at Luo Luo with complicated look.

It was a plot, a plot to ruin the Tradition Academy.

The professor of Heavenly Academy asked the little monster to help him. No matter how the Tradition Academy respond, there will be problems.....because he is the nephew of the Divine Queen. If he won, then the Tradition Academy would be destroyed. If he lost, the Tradition Academy would face the wrath from the palace.

But no one expected that the ending of this plot was the professor facing the wrath of the palace and died. The young boy and girl in the Tradition Academy didn't need to be responsible for anything, Why? because Luo Luo is powerful, because Luo Luo's background is way more powerful.....in conclusion, Luo Luo is way too powerful.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at her and sighed, "It seems, that you are more amazing than I expected."

Luo Luo felt a little embarrassed, "Master, you are the person who's truly amazing."

Chen Chang Sheng scratched his head and said, "Is it really fine for us to compliment each other like this?"

Chen Chang Sheng always thought that if a person lives for a few hundred years, time passes quick and should be valued. If there are only few decades, then he should treat time with even more respect. If there is nothing to do, then one should continue to read and xiuxing. Only until dusk did he and Luo Luo put down their books and began to eat their dinner. Afterwards they started to walk around the lake in the Tradition Academy.

Walking may seem to waste time, but he didn't mind, because he knew it would benefit his body.

The two walked to the other side of the lake and arrived at the bottom of a big tree. Chen Chang Sheng got childish for once and proposed to climb to the top of it and view some scenes. Luo Luo always listened to him, talk less of a fun thing like this. Of course she accepted the proposal.

Moments later, these two climbed to the middle part of the big tree and stood on a thick branch. It was around ten or more yards away from the ground. They could see into the distant streets, and barely they could see the shape of the Li Palace.

Under the setting sun, the view of the capital was nice.

They could see the entire Hundred Blossom Street out of the Tradition Academy. It was quiet as usual but he and Luo Luo knew that the Hundred Blossom Street was different from before. In the shadow and under the roofs in the streets, countless eyes were staring into the inside of the school.

“Master, I’m sorry.”

Luo Luo said lightly, she believed that it was because of her that Chen Chang Sheng was pulled into this mess. She also knew that he valued time and the quiet life of xiuxing. Her apology was true and sincere.

“The one that should apologize should be me.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “If I didn’t write your name on the list that day, then you wouldn’t be a student of the Tradition Academy, then how would you encounter this trouble? although you are not afraid of these troubles, but troubles are still troubles.”

Time doesn’t bend to the will of a human, or else the time around Chen Chang Sheng would be unmovable as a giant boulder.

A few days later, the second night of the Ivy Festival arrived as expected.

Looking at the invitation letter on the floor, he was surprised. No matter the words of Xu Shi Ji that night or the warning from Officer Xin previously, speaking logically this year’s Ivy Festival are different from the previous year’s. Besides, after the first night’s bloody battle he thought the second night would be delayed.

Luo Luo asked, “Master, are we really not participating?”

Chen Chang Sheng shook his head and said, “We are not going.”

Ivy Festival is an event created by the academies of the capital, it wouldn't affect them to participate in the Great Trial next year. The reason Chen Chang Sheng joined the first night was to understand the rules of the Great Trial and as well as knowing what kind of person was Xu Shi Ji. Now he has reached both of his goals, why else should he go?

Plus in the second night of the Ivy Festival, countless people would pay attention to the Tradition Academy and stare at him and Luo Luo. He's not used to such attention.

Luo Luo never thought that he wouldn't go just like he said. She was confused and sad, “If we went, perhaps we could actually obtain a high ranking.”

The rest of Ivy Festival consisted of intellectual exam and arena. They are similar to the Great Trial in that they would announce the result in ranking. In addition, they wouldn't end so hastily like the first night. If Luo Luo participated in the arena and Chen Chang Sheng in the intellectual exam, perhaps the Tradition Academy could actually regain a small portion of its former glory.

Chen Chang Sheng said, “It's meaningless.”

Luo Luo looked at him and said praisingly, “Master is treating

fame and glory as dirt. I respect you so much.”

Chen Chang Sheng said honestly, “I’m mainly avoiding troubles.”

Heavenly Academy was probably very lively in the second night of the Ivy Festival. The Tradition Academy was quiet as usual and the Hundred Blossom Street finally obtained true peace. The people who watched over the Tradition Academy for days finally left due to the Ivy Festival.

After every night’s dinner, they would take a walk around the lake. Although the view of the lake and the shadow of the forest are beautiful, but after seeing them many time they grew out of it. After climbing the big tree many times it became meaningless as well. Seeing the amount of disturbing people in the Hundred Blossom Street grew short, Luo Luo wanted to capture this precious chance. She used every technique known to little girls and finally dragged Chen Chang Sheng out of the library. The two walked out of the school door and walked into the Hundred Blossom Street and started shopping.

Not far away from the Hundred Blossom Street was the famous night market. Under the ruling of the Divine Queen the capital prospered greatly. The wealth of the world flown to the capital and the night markets were grand as well. People are walking side by side and the food on the streets attracted the bypassers.

Chen Chang Sheng bought Luo Luo a cotton candy. Luo Luo was surprised and happily accepted it – paying respect to her master and treating him three meals a day are things that she's supposed to do. The master buying her a snack is a nature thing for him to do as well.

She held the cotton candy and licked it carefully. She worried that that if she wasn't careful there would be only a wooden stick left and her master would be scared.

Her action was cute.

Standing in front of a shop selling baked shellfish, she curiously looked at the shellfishes that were still moving and asked Chen Chang Sheng if they are edible. Suddenly, she saw a large figure washing dishes in the corner of the shop. Her eyebrows wrinkled.

Her action was serious.

Of course, still cute.

Chapter 49 - Stick Of Discipline

That person was well-built and his hands were huge. The bowl appeared relatively small in his hands and the image seemed a little silly. His right hand's movement was awkward and he appeared to be handicapped. When he held the side of the bowl, his hand shook slightly which made people sympathize for him.

Luo Luo walked around the shellfish shop towards the back of the person. Confusingly, her face was filled anger. Chen Chang Sheng walked with her and saw the side of the person's face. He was young. Chen Chang Sheng finally realized who that person was.

The dishwasher who was squatting in the corner washing dishes was the Yao youngster who got severely injured earlier in the Ivy Festival by Tian Hai Ya Er. His name is Xuan Yuan Po.

Xuan Yuan Po saw a shadow on the wall and turned his head to look. He saw the two and raised his eyebrows confusingly. He noticed that he didn't know the pair and so, he lowered his head and continued to wash the dishes — even a easy task like dishwashing was now difficult for him. He didn't have the time to care about other people.

“Leaving the Red River and arriving at the Human World despite the harsh journey and struggles. But at the end, you are washing dishes in the streets of the capital. Is this your goal in life?”

Xuan Yuan Po's hand that held the bowl froze. He raised his head

to glance at the cute young girl once more. A tsunami was rising in his heart. He thought, who is this girl? How does she know that I originated from the Red River and not from the human world?

Looking at his stumped face, Luo Luo got angrier for some reason. Her voice was cold, “If your clan saw you right now, would they regret saving money for your journey?”

Xuan Yuan Po may seem tall and well-built, but he was only thirteen years old. His eyes and traits were still young.

Hearing Luo Luo rebuking him harshly, his face got all red and he said angrily, “Who are you? You don’t need to care about me.”

Luo Luo was silent for a while and said, “I am Luo Luo, I am a student of the Tradition Academy.”

Xuan Yuan Po was stumped again. This time, the surprise overwhelmed him. His right hand could no longer hold the oily and slippery bowl.

Hearing a crash, the bowl in his hand dropped into the dirty water in the sink. Although it didn’t break, water spilled all over. The owner of the shellfish shop yelled, “You useless thing! As tall as you are and you can’t even wash dishes?”

The night market was extremely busy and masses of people walked around the place. The shop’s business was well and the owner was concentrated on his cooking. He skillfully flipped the

food on the iron plate and didn't have the time to care about anything else. Even when he was yelling, he didn't bother to turn around and look at Xuan Yuan Po for even a second.

Xuan Yuan Po didn't respond. It seemed that he was used to the owner's yelling from his days working at the shellfish shop. He was just staring at Luo Luo who stood in front of him. Surprisingly, his clear eyes became welcoming and full of respect.

After he got severely injured by Tian Hai Ya Er in the Ivy Festival, he was taken back to the Starseeker Academy by his schoolmates to heal. He didn't see what happened later on in the festival but he heard his schoolmates' retelling the events. He learned that Tian Hai Ya Er was handicapped by another person.....and that person was a little girl.

He heard that the girl was named Luo Luo and was a student of the Tradition Academy.

Xuan Yuan Po always wanted to see the little girl, not only because she avenged for him and he wanted to thank her, but also because the Yao Race respects the powerful and he wanted to see what the girl looked like and pay his respect.

“You are the one....”

Xuan Yuan Po rubbed his big hands on his old clothes. He was a little nervous, “Then whatever you call me is fine, it is fine.”

Luo Luo wanted to reignite the fighting spirit of this boy but she never thought he would react like this. She was a little helpless.

Chen Chang Sheng was thinking about another problem and was confused. He asked, “You....left the Starseeker Academy?”

He thought that even if this Yao youngster was handicapped by Tian Hai Ya Er and couldn't even xiuxing anymore, much less regain his strength, at least he entered the Ivy Festival as a student of the Starseeker Academy. Would the school expel him just because he was handicapped? This was illogical.

Xuan Yuan Po didn't know who this human youngster was and knew he misinterpreted from his expression. Xuan Yuan Po was a little nervous and quickly waved his two hands while explaining, “The school didn't expel me, but.....I got injured like his and can't xiuxing anymore. I don't want to waste the school's resources while not being able to do anything. Therefore I left.”

Seeing that Chen Chang Shang and Luo Luo did not believe him, he became a little worried. “It's true, the principle and my instructor all advised me to not leave but I'm a little stubborn. I didn't listen to them and left without notice. You can't blame them.”

He sure was an innocent kid – Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo both thought. Whatever the reason for him to leave Starseeker Academy was or worrying about others misinterpreting the school's action, these all proved that this Yao youngster had a pure soul.

Luo Luo relaxed a bit and asked, “Is that so? Then what are you doing to do in the future?”

Xuan Yuan Po smiled and said, “I’m trying to save up some money for the trip so I can return home. Since I can’t xiuxing anymore, I rather go home and help my family do some chores.....By the way, don’t blame the shop owner. Although he likes to yell a lot, he’s a nice person. I broke so many bowls and dishes recently but he didn’t let me repay him.”

The owner in front of the iron plate kept on flipping the food and didn’t even turn around, but he laughed and yelled something.

Looking at the Yao Youngster’s smile and not see a trace of sadness on his face, Luo Luo didn’t know why but she was melancholic. She looked at him and said, “So are you satisfied to return like this?”

Xuan Yuan Po was silent for a while and said, “Just like what you said before, I came to the capital to xiuxing. It’s not easy for my clan to save up the money and of course I don’t want to return like this.....but the instructors in the school also said that the body structure of a Yao is different from a human. It’s hard to heal up a broken right arm. Then what can I do staying here?”

He continued, “my instructor was kind enough to offer me to stay in the Starseeker Academy and do some chore work. But I may feel worse just looking at my schoolmates progressing day by day while I’m unable to do anything.”

Luo Luo said, "If you stay in the capital, you may find a way. Why would you leave the Starseeker in such a hurry?"

Xuan Yuan Po answered, "The elders in my clan taught us when we were young to never accept any sympathy from anyone, especially from humans."

Luo Luo quietly looked at his eyes and felt she that liked him even more, "Follow me."

They were two simple words. It wasn't a command but it felt irresistible. It couldn't be denied.

Xuan Yuan Po felt a little odd, he stumped a little and didn't know how to refuse. After telling the owner of the shop, he followed her onto the streets.

When they were about to exit the street and saw the well on the Hundred Blossom Street, Luo Luo remembered something and looked at Chen Chang Sheng embarrassingly.

Chen Chang Sheng smiled and didn't say anything.

Whenever he did something, Luo Luo never opposed him. Then of course, when Luo Luo wanted to do something, he wouldn't object either. He was never worried if Xuan Yuan Po would do anything because he knew Luo Luo's people were always guarding her from afar and protecting her.

The Tradition Academy was quiet as usual under the night sky. Due to the second night of the Ivy Festival, there were much less people watching over in the Hundred Blossom Street. It helped to relax Chen Chang Sheng's mood. He never expected that Xuan Yuan Po would be more relaxed than him when it was his first time entering the Tradition Academy.

The Yao youngster's hands were on his waist looking around the school. Sometimes, he touches the old broken sculptures and curiosity fills his eyes. Not a trace of nervousness was seen in him.

Taking out his keys and unlocking the door of the library, Chen Chang Sheng paused and didn't enter. He looked at Luo Luo who wanted to say something but held her tongue, "What's on your mind?"

Luo Luo pulled on his sleeves, a little embarrassed, "Master, can you help him, you know..... he is one of my race,"

Chen Chang Sheng answered, "It's fine if I help him. I'm just curious, why are you so confident that I can heal a wound that even the instructors of the Starseeker Academy think would be impossible to heal?"

"Master is not an ordinary person like those people."

Luo Luo widened her eyes and looked at him, “From the first day accepting you as my master, you just test my wrist and you know my problem. Then right away, you knew how to solve my problem. Compare to this, healing up his wound would be nothing.”

The young girl said so confidently as if there is nothing he couldn't do in this world. Looking at her absolute-trusting eyes, Chen Chang Sheng felt an enormous pressure and scratched his head, “I'll see first, but I can't promise anything.”

Luo Luo happily agreed and strode towards the lake. She never believed anything less than promising from Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at her back and couldn't help but shake his head.

Luo Luo ran to the lake and spoke with Xuan Yuan Po who was testing his strength on the big tree. Xuan Yuan Po was surprised and shook his head. It seemed that he couldn't believe what he heard. Then Luo Luo said something else and Xuan Yuan Po was even more surprised. If Luo Luo didn't hold him, he might even have knelt before her.

Xuan Yuan Po was still a little stunned after following her and walked to the library. It was clear that Luo Luo's words brought much surprise to him and Chen Chang Sheng thought Luo Luo probably revealed her identity to his Yao Youngster. He gestured the two to follow him into the library. He lit the oil lamp and sat on the floor.

Xuan Yuan Po never looked at him and kept on staring at Luo Luo. He was both nervous and excited.

Luo Luo never looked at him and said to Chen Chang Sheng, “Thank you Master.”

Right now in Xuan Yuan Po’s mind, Luo Luo was more important than his family. She was more respectable than his clan elders. But she respected a human so much and this human recieved her respect so casually. He felt it was crazy and was angry because of this. Xuan Yuan Po wanted to rip this human into pieces.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Xuan Yuan Po’s eyes, which seemed to be ignited in flames. Chen Chang Sheng was confused. He gestured to Xuan Yuan Po to extend his right arm.

Xuan Yuan Po was confused and spoke unkindly, “What do you want?”

Chen Chang Sheng explained, “Let me see your wound.”

“You? A human? How old are you?”

Xuan Yuan Po’s suspicion towards Chen Chang Sheng grew. He thought that Chen Chang Sheng was a scammer, or how else could he earn so much respect from his princess. He yelled angrily, “Don’t think everyone from my tribe is easy to fool, I saw dozens of scammers!”

Since they needed to bound together and fight against a common enemy, the Demon race, the Human and Yao are natural allies. In several thousand years, the strength of the alliance was tested countless times and the two sides communicated with each other very often. At least, when a Yao appears in the capital, the residents won't be surprised.

But there were still some boundaries between Humans and Yao mainly due to their traits and life style. Humans always think Yaos are violent, simple, and beastlike. Yaos always think humans are cunning, fickle, and are no materials for friends.

From the point of view of Xuan Yuan Po, Chen Chang Sheng was an ordinary youngster and didn't even reach the Purification Stage of Humans. If he dared to say he could heal the wound that his instructors couldn't, if he's not a scammer, then who is?

A loud slap was heard.

Luo Luo held the stick of discipline and yelled, "What is that attitude?"

The Tradition Academy has its own stick of discipline.

It was a straight tree branch that Chen Chang Sheng made.

The most important use of this stick was for Chen Chang Sheng to mentor Luo Luo's xiuxing.

Now it seems that this Stick of Discipline was being used in the right way.

The Stick of Discipline is used to teach, to hit.

The stick was hard, so it hurts when it is used to hit a person's forehead.

Xuan Yuan Po covered his forehead and his eyes were teary because it actually hurts. Of course, more importantly he felt grievance. He thought, her princess would hit him for a human?

“Extend your arm,” Chen Chang Sheng held in his laugh and said.

Xuan Yuan Po held his head high stubbornly and wouldn't listen to him.

Luo Luo raised the stick of discipline in her hand and looked at him, “Extend your arm.”

Xuan Yuan Po lowered his head sadly and extended his arm.

Chen Chang Sheng stopped smiling and his fingers landed on his wrist. Then he closed his eyes.

Even if Luo Luo didn't ask, he would try to heal the wound of his

Yao youngster himself. On the first night of Ivy Festival when Tian Hai Ya Er was arrogantly insulting the Tradition Academy, everyone was silent except this Yao youngster. This youngster laughed out loud.

That laugh was a pursuit, a pursuit for fairness. This Yao youngster wanted to pursuit fairness of the Tradition Academy, then the Tradition Academy would pay him back.

Of course, all of this was built on his confidence to heal the wound of this Yao youngster.

Chen Chang Sheng's master, Taoist Ji, may be unheard of in the xiuxingist world. But her skill in medication is one of the best in the continent. Chen Chang Sheng's marriage vow with Xu You Rong started when Taoist Ji remedied a sickness of the Prime Minister that even the Pope couldn't heal.

Chen Chang Sheng studied the Scrolls of the Way and learned medication when he was young with his master. But most importantly, he was also sick.

Although he couldn't treat his own sickness, it doesn't mean that he couldn't treat other's illness.

He really wanted to help Xuan Yuan Po to get well again.

Time slowly passed and the stars in the night sky twinkled above the cloud.

Nothing but silence filled the library.

Chen Chang Sheng opened his eyes once more after a long time.

Chapter 50 - The Bronze Needle

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Xuan Yuan Po who was in front of him and thought for a moment, “Try to transform your right arm.”

Xuan Yuan Po never had any hope for him to heal his wound and he was already irritated after sitting on the floor for such a long time. Now hearing Chen Chang Sheng wants him to transform his already handicapped right arm, his face turned nasty and he looked at Chen Chang Sheng as if he was about to eat him whole.

“Did you not hear what the master said?” Luo Luo said.

Xuan Yuan Po’s anger was put down and he began to try to transform.

Although his right arm was already handicap, but he could already transform himself without much thought. After a few moments, his arm was changed dramatically and kept on growing. It bursted out of his shirt and black furs began to grow out of the skin of his arm.

Chen Chang Sheng held his wrist and felt that strong heart beat. He could already feel the crooked veins and the messed up qi inside him. He searched sincerely and tired to understand while comparing the wound to the records on the Scrolls of the Way.

Time slowly passed and Xuan Yuan Po suddenly looked at him with some hope and nervousness.

A long time has passed and Chen Chang Sheng opened his palm.

Luo Luo asked, “How is it, Master”

Chen Chang Sheng didn't answer her question. He first asked her to get a needle box from his luggage in the small building, then he picked out a single bronze needle and casually placed it into Xuan Yuan Po's arm.

This needle was the thickest in the needle box, its main purpose was to enhance blood flow, but now he was using it for another purpose.

The surface of the bronze needle reflected a cold light and the tip was extremely sharp. But after Xuan Yuan Po's arm was transformed, his skin would be very touch and even normal weapons couldn't penetrate it. Logically speaking the needle shouldn't be able to pierce through his skin but yet it easily went through the thick fars and stabbed into his flesh.

“What do you feeling? He looked into Xuan Yuan Po's eyes and asked.

Xuan Yuan Po was confused. He focuses a little and said, “A little.....numb?”

Chen Chang Sheng lightly twisted the end of the needle and asked again, “What about now?”

“A little sore.” Xuan Yuan Po’s expression turned excited.

No matter sore or numb, any feeling would be a positive thing, even pain would be nice. His right arm was like a stone recently! but now at least he felt something.

Xuan yuan Po looked at Chen Chang Sheng and his lips were shaking slightly. He was utmost surprised.

Although it was just a small change, but Chen Chang Sheng really accomplished something that even the instructors and the royal doctors couldn’t!

Looking at his expression Luo Luo smirked, it seemed like she was extremely proud and satisfied.

She never once doubted Chen Chang Sheng’s ability, she believe that he only contained it within himself due to some secret.

Everything happened from the days at Herb Garden to the Tradition Academy all proved her belief to be correct.

Now even her people like Officer Jin and Officer Li were about to be convinced by her.

“It wouldn’t be an easy thing to forfeit all the qi and reattach the veins in his body.”

Chen Chang Sheng reorganized the needle box and looked at Luo Luo, “It may take a long time, I suggest for him to stay in the capital instead of returning to his clan.”

Luo Luo answered, “We will follow your suggestion.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Xuan Yuan Po and said, “Just stay in the Tradition Academy, there are still a lot of empty space.”

The Tradition Academy was large and currently only hold two students, Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo. It was kind of too empty and one extra person wouldn’t be any trouble.

At this moment Xuan Yuan Po was still overwhelmed by the previous excitement and joy, then he thought back to his rude attitude towards Chen Chang Sheng and felt insecure. But suddenly he heard his response and was embarrassed. He closed his lips tightly and wouldn’t speak because he felt he didn’t deserve such sympathy.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Luo Luo and said, “You finish this.”

Luo Luo raised the stick of discipline and looked at Xuan Yuan Po, “Speak for yourself.”

Xuan Yuan Po wasn’t going to speak. He wasn’t going to speak

even if she kills him under the stick.

Luo Luo has no other way but to ask Chen Chang Sheng, “Master, what should we do?”

Chen Chang Sheng told Xuan Yuan Po, “Sometimes unwilling to accept any sympathy or help isn’t pride, but stupidity.”

Xuan Yuan Po was bothered, he scratched his head and said, “I know, but I just can’t do it.”

Chen Chang Sheng sighed and didn’t speak any further.

Luo Luo was irritated and asked, “What could make you stay?”

Xuan Yuan Po replied with a troublesome expression on his face, “I’m not a student of Traditional Academy.”

Luo Luo’s eyes brightened up and said, “This is easy to solve.”

“What?”

“We can just turn you into a student of the Tradition Academy.”

“What?”

“No need for testing.”

“What?”

“We just need to register.”

Luo Luo got permission from Chen Chang Sheng and took out the namelist of the Tradition Academy from the closet and prepared a brush and ink. Then she handed them to Xuan Yuan Po’s hand.

Xuan Yuan Po opened his mouth slightly and held the ink brush. He looked at the two names already on the namelist and felt this process wasn’t serious enough.

Even if the Tradition Academy is in ruins, but it is still one of the Six Ivies. How could he become a student just by writing his name?

He thought for a while and still landed the brush.

He wrote down his name one stroke at a time. His writing was a little sloppy, it was clear that Xuan Yuan Po wasn’t used to writing.

Luo Luo said, “Congratulation, you have become the third student of the Tradition Academy.”

Xuan Yuan Po asked, “What is the rules of this school?”

“There is no rule.”

Luo Luo said, “The words spoken by Master is the rule. You have to follow whatever the Master tells you to do.”

Xuan Yuan Po asked confusingly, “Is there no principal or teachers?”

“My master is the principal.”

“My master is the teacher,”

“Of course, my master is also the student.”

“It is the trinity combination, therefore the master is the Tradition Academy.”

Luo Luo never felt that her words were like religious brainwash of the priests of the Tradition, because she really felt that way.

Xuan Yuan Po was a little stumped, “Then I will study under him?”

Luo Luo didn’t want Chen Chang Sheng’s time and energy to be wasted on other people, even if she really liked this youngster of her race. She shook her head and said, “I’ll teach you.”

Xuan Yuan Po was overcome with joy after hearing that Luo Luo will be his teacher. He thought to himself that if this news was

passed to his clan, then the entire village would be proud.

Luo Luo continued, “Since master is my teacher, then he is your Grandfather of Teaching.”

Xuan Yuan Po was stumped again, suddenly he has a grandfather of teaching?

Chen Chang Sheng was stumped as well, suddenly a grandson of teaching?

Luo Luo said, “Greet the master.”

Xuan Yuan Po was impressed by Chen Chang Sheng and since Luo Luo requested it, he kneeled on the floor without any hesitation and give three kowtow to Chen Chang Sheng. The dusts on the floor was flying everywhere and they twirl around in the lamp light.

Chen Chang Sheng was speechless, he kneeled toward the rising sun outside of the window in the eastern direction.

He never thought he would be a grandfather of teaching when he was only fourteen years old.

Master, do you know?

Senior, it seems like our sect would grow in the Tradition

Academy.

When he was just feeling nostalgic, he heard a sound coming outside of the window.

Tang Thirty Six's face popped into the window.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng who was kneeling on the floor and was surprised, "What did you do wrong? why are you kneeling to me?"

Chen Chang Sheng looked at his pale face and asked surprisingly, "You are wounded?"

Chapter 51 - A Bit Messy

The door of the library was opened but Tang Thirty Six preferred to enter through the window. It was hard to say if he was just lazy or had some other reason in mind. If he was in normal condition, jumping through the window would be an extremely easy task, but today it was kind of difficult. He sat on the floor, breathed heavily and coughed for two times.

“You really are wounded.” Chen Chang Sheng walked towards him and squatted down and wanted to check his wrist for him.

Tang Thirty Six blocked his hand and said, “I’m fine, I’m just a little tired.”

Chen Chang Sheng obviously knew he wasn’t speaking the truth, but it seemed that this guy was actually tired. He just laid against the wall, closed his eyes and slept.

The morning light was shining outside the window and landed on Tang Thirty Six’s face. It made his face paler than before.

Chen Chang Sheng shook his head, took out a thin blanket from the room and lightly covered him with it.

The light grew stronger as time moved on. Luo Luo brought Xuan Yuan Po to the Herb Garden. As the people of the same race, they needed to talk about some stuff.

Tang Thirty Six woke up, glanced at Chen Chang Sheng who was sitting on the floor concentrating on reading books and asked, “Why didn’t you go last night?”

Chen Chang Sheng put down the scrolls and asked, “Go where?”

“Heavenly Academy. Last night was the second night of the Ivy Festival.”

Tang Thirty Six put aside the thin blanket that was on him and stood up yawning. His mood seemed to be a lot better, “During the first night, the Tradition Academy really made a name for itself. Everyone was waiting for you last night.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “We didn’t want to go, so we didn’t go.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and said, “You truly are a weird person.”

Not going to an event like the Ivy Festival just because he didn’t want to go; it did seem weird in the eyes of regular people.

“I think you are even weirder.” Chen Chang Shang responded.

Chen Chang Sheng remembered the time when he last entered the Heavenly Academy, Tang Thirty Six was xiuxinging hard. “You prepared for the Ivy Festival for such a long time but never appeared during the first night. What happened?”

Hearing this question, Tang Thirty Six was silent for a while and said, “I dislike that little monster of the Academy of Priests.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “And?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “And I once said that if I had the opportunity, I would handicap him.”

Chen Chang Sheng’s mood got worse as Tang Thirty Six continued, “If he actually appeared at the Ivy Festival, I was ready to injure him severely, but.....some people didn’t dare let me harm him and so they didn’t allow me to join the festival that night and grounded me in the dorm.”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent; a person like Tang Thirty Six wouldn’t be so easily convinced by the rules of Heavenly Academy or the authority of his teachers. Therefore not allowing him to join the festival would only mean that the teachers of the Heavenly Academy interfered directly and locked him up in his room.

He could understand the carefulness of the Heavenly Academy because the Tian Hai Ya Er was too powerful. Besides finding a more powerful background, such as Luo Luo, there were not many ways to counter him. If Tang Thirty Six actually injured Tian Hai Ya Er in the Ivy Festival, no one would know the outcome.

But he could relate more to the anger of Tang Thirty Six.

“What was the situation last night? He looked at Tang Thirty Six’s pale cheeks and asked.

Tang Thirty Six answered, “Last night was an arena. The person who obtained the first place was a young officer from the Academy of Li Palace.”

Chen Chang Sheng switched the topic because he didn’t want Tang Thirty Six to continued drowning in the negative atmosphere. Chen Chang Sheng didn’t really care about the outcome of the Ivy Festival.

Tang Thirty Six raised his eyebrows and asked, “You are not going to ask?”

“Ask what?”

“Why the young officer of the Academy of Li Palace could obtain the first place?”

“The Academy of Li Palace.....he was a student under the sect of Pope, what’s so out of place about him getting the first place?”

Tang Thirty Six pointed at himself and said, “It’s not outstanding if someone won against me?”

Chen Chang Sheng was speechless that he was still this prideful of himself. Chen Chang Sheng asked reluctantly, “Okay, then....why?”

Tang Thirty Six was satisfied, “Because I didn’t participate.”

This time Chen Chang Sheng was actually a little surprised. He asked confusingly, “Why?”

“The people who entered the Honor Roll of Green Cloud like Zhuang Huan Yu didn’t participate probably because they didn’t want to lower their status and prepare for the third night. But I didn’t participate because the school didn’t allow me to. They told me to stay in the dorm.”

Tang Thirty Six’s expression got darker.

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t understand. If the Heavenly Academy’s disallowing of Tang Thirty Six to fight with Tian Hai Ya Er was a little overboard but out of good concern, then the second night was too much. Was the school not afraid that Tang Thirty Six would grow hatred towards it?

“Why?”

“Because I wanted to challenge Zhuang Huan Yu.”

Nothing but silence filled the library.

Chen Chang Sheng made sure his ear was working and felt that Tang Thirty Six grew weirder and weirder or rather, more

interesting.

He wanted to challenge a senior of the same school, the very person that represented the school.

If Chen Chang Sheng was a teacher of the Heavenly Academy, he wouldn't accept this himself.

Plus there was no such rule in the Ivy Festival.

“Why?”

“Because I don't like him.”

“This reason.....”

“What about this reason?”

“It's a good one.”

Chen Chang Sheng was speechless, he knew there was probably a deeper reason for Tang Thirty Six to challenge Zhuang Huan Yu, but since this guy wasn't willing to tell him, he had no way of forcing him.

“I used half of the night to break through the seal of the school but by the time I arrived at the festival, the event had already

ended.”

Tang Thirty Six thought about what happened last night and was silent for a while, “I was kind of disgusted by the smell of the school and didn’t want to stay there for a while. But I’m not familiar with the capital and had no where else to go, so I came to find you.”

Chen Chang Sheng realized that he was wounded from forcefully breaking the seal that the teachers of Heavenly Academy had set up.

The Heavenly Academy was prestigious and serious, but it wasn’t suited for Tang Thirty Six.

Although the capital was vast, he couldn’t even find a single place to go and stay.

He walked around aimlessly in the streets before the sunrise and noticed that he only knew only one person, Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng walked to him and folded up the sheet of thin blanket. Then he sat down next to him under the window. He didn’t speak.

They didn’t look at each other or converse, but Tang Thirty Six knew what he was thinking.

“Do not sympathize or pity me.....I’m a genius on the Honor Roll

of Green Cloud.”

“Being a genius doesn’t mean you don’t need sympathy.”

“But you are in the same situation as me. In the entire capital, you only know me.”

Tang Thirty Six mocked. Upon remembering this fact, he felt a little better about the situation.

Just this moment, Luo Luo and Xuan Yuan Po walked in from the front door of the library.

Xuan Yuan Po held a much bigger lunch box than normal.

Luo Luo walked toward Chen Chang Sheng and said, “Master, it’s time for lunch.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Tang Thirty Six and opened his palm to show that this wasn’t intentional.

Tang Thirty Six always thought Chen Chang Sheng’s personality problem was worse than his. He didn’t make any friend in the Heavenly Academy but this guy has already made two and one of them was a pretty, young girl. It landed a large impact in his heart.

Then he remembered what the vice principal told him after the first night of the Ivy Festival.

“You are the one who handicapped Tian Hai Ya Er?” Tang Thirty Six looked at Luo Luo and asked.

It was even hard for him to compete with the little monster of the Academy of Priests in the amount of qi in their body, speak less of handicapping him just from collision of their qi. This young girl of the Tradition Academy surely was no ordinary character. In addition, after the incident, the Tradition Academy was untouched which proved that this girl’s background was extremely powerful.

Now a lot of people in the capital was guessing the background of the Tradition Academy and how it was untouched after the incident. Some people were suspicious of Chen Chang Sheng’s background, but Tang Thirty Six knew that he was just a rural youngster who came from Xi Ning Village. Then it only could be this young girl.

Therefore his expression was serious and sincere when asking this question.

Luo Luo didn’t pay attention to him. Instead, she walked toward Chen Chang Sheng and opened the lunch box and wiped the chopsticks clean. Then she handed them to Chen Chang Sheng.

Observing this scene, Tang Thirty Six couldn’t help but raise his eyebrows.

Chen Chang Sheng was a little shy. He handed the chopsticks to Tang Thirty Six and introduced him, “His name is Tang Thirty

Six.”

“I know, Master.” Luo Luo replied.

Of course she knew Chen Chang Sheng was familiar with Tang Thirty Six. Or to be exact, before her, he only knew Tang Thirty Six.

Chen Chang Sheng thought that since Tang Thirty Six was a young genius on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud and Luo Luo wasn't an ordinary person, then it wouldn't be strange for her to know him.

Luo Luo understood what he was thinking and said, “I know who he is, but I'm not familiar with him.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “I thought since you were familiar with Zhuang Huan Yu, you would be familiar with him as well.”

Luo Luo peaked at Tang Thirty Six for a second and said, “Zhuang Huan Yu was right next to me, it was hard for me to not be familiar with him. Tang Thirty Six.....was a little far.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought he heard this before but he still didn't understand. Tang Thirty Six didn't understand either but he could hear the mocking of the young girl. He was a little irritated and therefore, he picked the most expensive dishes in the lunch box and started eating.

Luo Luo wasn't very happy.

Xuan Yuan Po sat there and ate quietly.

After finishing lunch, Tang Thirty Six took the black tea that Luo Luo prepared for Chen Chang Sheng and drank it in one go.

Luo Luo looked at him and smiled coldly.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't know what to do, he asked Tang Thirty Six, "Then what are you going to do next?"

"I will definitely participate in the third night. The school won't stop me from going."

"How are you so sure?"

"This time, the four of the Seven Rules of Heaven will come. Is Zhuang Huan Yu able to counter all of them by himself?"

Chen Chang Sheng was confused, "What?"

Tang Thirty Six set the black tea on the floor and looked at him, "You don't know? The southern ambassadors will arrive at the capital early this year."

Chen Chang Sheng remembered the variable that Officer Xin

talked about that day and realized this is what it was. Then he asked curiously, “Didn’t they always come after the winter solstice? There would still be some time before the Great Trial, why did they come so early?”

Tang Thirty Six answered, “At first no one knew, but now, everyone on the continent knows.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “What is the reason?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “The southern ambassadors wanted to propose officially on the day of Qi Xi. (Chinese Valentines Day)”

“Propose?” Chen Chang Sheng asked.

Tang Thirty Six answered, “Yes, Xu You Rong..... is finally going to marry someone.”

Chen Chang Sheng was stumped. He was silent for a long while.

Suddenly, he stood up and walked out of the library.

“Where are you going master?” Luo Luo asked.

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t turn his head, “The dishes were a little salty. I want to go rest by myself.”

Today's dishes were a little salty.

His voice was a little weak.

This sentence was a little messy.

Because his heart was a mess.

Chapter 52 - Attending The Festival

If the dishes were actually salty, then he would need to drink some water, not rest. The illogicality of this simple sentence from Chen Chang Sheng meant that the dishes weren't actually salty but rather, he just really needed to calm his mind and not continue in such a messy state.

He walked towards the lake and stood under a big tree. He stepped over the tree roots above the earth with his hands on his waist. Chen Chang Sheng glanced over the wall and looked into the distance. He only wanted to glance as far as he could, but he didn't know whether he should look towards the direction of Xi Ning Village or the south.

A moment later, he took out a tiny item that was made out of bamboo and stored it in his pocket. He had told himself not to take it out anymore when he was first living in the tavern. He had taken this tiny thing and placed it into the deepest part of his luggage. It wasn't until now that he took it out once more.

The southern ambassadors were going to propose in the capital. Xu You Rong was going to be arranged with Qiu Shan Jun. Although she won't be married to him in such a short time, she was ultimately going to get married.

Chen Chang Sheng always thought romance had no effect on him and that he would never think about Xu You Rong. The reason he came to capital was to dismiss the marriage vow and this still held true. Therefore, he didn't understand why he became irritated, or even felt despair after hearing this news.

He wasn't used to such feelings and he didn't like it. He was unhappy.

Perhaps it wasn't due to marriage and was for another reason.

Chen Chang Sheng tried to convince himself so, and then he found a justifiable cause – in the least degree, he and Xu You Rong had a marriage vow. No matter the laws, he was her fiancé, and she was his fiancée. Under the current condition that he haven't officially forfeit the vow, of course he wouldn't be happy because his own fiancée was going to marry some other man.

Of course he shouldn't be happy.

Yes, this was the reason.

Yu Dong General's Mansion and Xu You Rong weren't being respectful with their decision and he was mad.

He told himself in his heart silently.

Tang Thirty Six walked toward the lake and stood beside Chen Chang Sheng, "You still haven't solve the problem between you and Yu Dong General's Mansion? Then this is a problem. The Divine Queen always trusted Xu Shi Ji, and if Xu You Rong is married to Qiu Shan Jun, then no one in the Zhou Dynasty will be able to stop him."

Luo Luo looked at his face with a worried expression, but she didn't say anything.

The previous reaction of Chen Chang Sheng was strange and it didn't escape the eyes of Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six. Plus, they knew that there was trouble between Chen Chang Sheng and Dong Yu General's Mansion. But no matter what they thought, they couldn't figure out that he was the fiance of Xu You Rong, and therefore they couldn't figure out a way to help him.

Just like what Shuang Er first said in the General's Mansion; the entire world believed that Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun were a destined couple, even Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six. No one could have known that Chen Chang Sheng existed between those two.

"It's nothing, I am just a little nervous," Chen Chang Sheng turned around and faced the two, "I heard that there were many geniuses in the southern sects. I don't know what kind of situation it would be during next year's Great Trial."

Tang Thirty Six knew Chen Chang Sheng's goal in the Great Trial, and he thought Chen Chang Sheng should be nervous, "Mountain Virgin, Mountain Li..... all of those southern sects are powerful. If young geniuses like the Seven Rules of Heaven participated in the Great Trial, it will be difficult to defeat them."

Chen Chang Sheng asked, "I heard that the reason Zhuang Huan Yu became rank ten on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud was because he won over one of the Seven Rules of Heaven?"

“He won over Qi Jian. He’s the youngest, and the weakest of the Seven Rules of Heaven.”

Mentioning the Seven Rules of Heaven, even a person as prideful as Tang Thirty Six became serious. “This time, four of the Seven Rules of Heaven will participated in the Ivy Festival, and they will probably participate in the Great Trial as well. Their leader should be Gou Han Shi. Would Zhuang Huan Yu dare to challenge him?”

“What about.....Qiu Shan Jun?” Chen Chang Sheng asked.

“Proposing is a job of the elders and friends, how could Qiu Shan Jun travel to the capital himself? And whether he will attend next year’s Great Trial or not, I’m not sure. But don’t look down on Gou Han Shi. He is an honorable man.”

Tang Thirty Six was a prideful person. It didn’t matter if he was ranked thirty sixth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud or not, it was a personality problem. The only desire he had after entering the Heavenly Academy was to defeat Zhuang Huan Yu, who was ranked tenth. Although there may be some other reason, Tang Thirty Six didn’t respect Zhuang Huan Yu much.

There weren’t many people that he respected. Xu You Rong, Qiu Shan Jun, that young wolfling in the demon territory, and that mysterious young girl ranked above Zhuang Huan Yu, and perhaps an unique character like Chen Chang Sheng earned some respect from him. For a person like Gou Han Shi to be called honorable by Tang Thirty Six meant that this person must be extraordinary.

“The second of the Seven Rules of Heaven, he is ranked only under Qiu Shan Jun.”

Luo Luo knew Chen Chang Sheng didn't know much about the xiuxing world, “It's rumored that this person is wise and understands all of the Scrolls of the Way. His reputation is extremely high in the hearts of the young students of Mountain Li and even other sects. He is a brainy character.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “Then why is he extraordinary?”

Tang Thirty Six was speechless, “Understanding the entire Scrolls of the Way isn't extraordinary?”

Hearing ‘understanding the Scrolls of the Way,’ Chen Chang Sheng naturally remembered his senior and himself. He didn't know what was so special about this, but if he said so, Luo Luo wouldn't care but Tang Thirty Six would mock him. Therefore he switched the topic.

“Who else will come from the Seven Rules of Heaven?”

“Guan Fei Bai, ranked fourth in both the Seven Rules of Heaven and on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud. I heard that he is a prideful person.”

Mentioning this person's name, there was expression of respect on Tang Thirty Six's face. Instead, his eyes were burning with interest, “Zhuang Huan Yu's target would be him in the third

night of Ivy Festival. I need to think of a way to get him.”

Chen Chang Sheng counted using his fingers, “He’s ranked fourth and you are ranked thirty sixth. There are thirty two people between you guys.”

Tang Thirty Six’s face got gloomier, “What do you mean?”

Chen Chang Sheng answered, “I meant that don’t always rush to your goal. You should do things gradually and then you can reach it with a foundation without distribution. You can’t pull out the roots to make the trees grow taller, there is a saying.....”

“Continue,” Tang Thirty Six smiled coldly, “You got a good vocabulary pool.”

Chen Chang Sheng saw that Tang Thirty Six’s expression wasn’t exactly friendly so he gave a smile and stopped talking.

Tang Thirty Six said, “If everything was set on the rankings, then what is the purpose of the Ivy Festival and Great Trial? I can’t defeat Xu You Rong or Qiu Shan Jun because they are geniuses with special bloodline. Although Guan Fei Bai ranks above that wolfling and that mysterious young girl, if you ask Guan Fei Bai himself if he dares to say that he is stronger than those two, he will say no.”

Chen Chang Sheng realized this was true, but who was the wolfling and the young girl who was mentioned by Tang Thirty

Six?

Tang Thirty Six remembered the well built Yao youngster he saw in the library and asked, “That guy also entered the Tradition Academy?”

“Yeah, he doesn’t want to stay in the Starseeker Academy anymore.”

“I heard the behavior of Starseeker Academy in the first night of Ivy Festival was disgusting. No one else stood up besides that guy.....but that guy was so heavily injured by Tian Hai Ya Er. He is probably handicapped for life. You sure you want to bring him in?”

“I didn’t even enter Purification myself, am I not a bigger garbage than he is?”

Tang Thirty Six laughed coldly, “What garbage dares to say that he wants to obtain the championship of the Great Trial?”

“Of course my Master will obtain first place,” Luo Luo spoke without hesitation. Her eyes looked at Chen Chang Sheng with nothing but respect.

Tang Thirty Six was stunned for a moment and asked, “What’s the situation here?”

He knew Luo Luo wasn’t an ordinary person. Previously, he was confused after seeing her obedient gestures toward Chen Chang

Sheng. Right now Tang Thirty Six was even more confused because she called Chen Chang Sheng her master. She was so close to him and she respected him so much. He didn't understand the relationship between these two.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't know how to explain.

On the other hand, Luo Luo explained generously, "I am the student of Master."

"What?"

Tang Thirty Six was surprised, he looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, "Aren't you only fourteen years old?"

Chen Chang Sheng said, "She wanted to become my student, I couldn't refuse her."

Tang Thirty Six thought for a moment and said, "Well, you behave maturely and it seems like you are older than your actual age. It should be fine."

Luo Luo said unhappily, "My Master is responsible and independent, you think everyone should be like you?"

Tang Thirty Six didn't want to bother with the young girl and dusted his shirt and was ready to leave. At last, he asked, "Are you going to attend the last night?"

Luo Luo thought about her Master's personality and thought that he will probably not participate just like last night.

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a moment and said, "We will go and watch."

Due to the arrival of the southern ambassadors, the last night of Ivy Festival was pushed back of a several days. And the event location was moved from the Heavenly Academy to Wei Yang Palace. Wei Yang Palace is one of the buildings of the royal palace. This move clearly showed the government's close attention on this event.

If the southern ambassadors proposed successfully, then the relationship between the south and north will be closer and Xu You Rong may become the first Virgin of the southern sect from the capital in the history of mankind. Zhou Dynasty's influence on the south will become much greater and the Divine Queen will be happy to see the results of this.

Speaking from a logical perspective, no one or no faction could stop this event from happening.

Even the demon race who didn't want to this to happen couldn't stop it.

Only a handful of people in the entire world knew about the only variable in this event.

That variable lived in the ruined Tradition Academy.

It was a youngster named Chen Chang Sheng.

It was the beginning of autumn. The night was chilly but water wasn't cold.

Tonight, the capital was filled with the light of candles and lamps. It was Qi Xi. (Previously mentioned, Chinese Valentines Day)

Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo walked out of the Tradition Academy. They left the depths of Hundred Blossom Street and arrived at the busy and lively world.

These two walked toward Wei Yang Palace which wasn't too far away.

Until this moment, he didn't know what he should do. He didn't know what he should do when the southerners propose at the General's Mansion.

He haven't decided yet. He just wanted to see.

He never knew what could happen tonight.

Chapter 53 - Inside Wei Yang Palace

The capital was beautiful on the night of Qi Xi. Candles and lamp lights combined with the starlights and the fireworks to brightening up the dark sky. It was hard to distinguish the difference between the light from earth and the brightness of the stars. Everywhere was the sea of light and no darkness could exist in it.

The rivers and streams in the capital were also lit up as well. The merchant ships and tourists ships were filled with lamps and there were countless tiny lamp boats floating down stream. The most famous of the rivers, River Luo, was almost entirely filled by lamp boats and young couples stood on the shores watching the lamp boats they released themselves. They either prayed quietly or clapped happily for the joy of this holiday and tradition. Their young faces and fancy attires were brightened up by the lamp lights.

This was Qi Xi – Chen Chang Sheng stood on the stone bridge and observed the loving young couples. He observed the love and youth that flowed between the river and lamp boats silently. Luo Luo was at first very happy, but became quiet after feeling his silence.

Ivy Festival was delayed for many days until tonight due to the participation of the southern ambassadors. In the previous days, Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo were reading and xiuxing in the Tradition Academy without a care of outside news. What made Chen Chang Sheng a little out of wood was that he still couldn't successfully enter Purification. On the other hand, Luo Luo's progress was godspeed under his teaching and mentoring.

It would be hard to build an extra floor on a skyscraper, speak less of flying directly above the clouds. If the people who knew about Luo Luo's true identity and discovered her progressing speed, they would treat Chen Chang Sheng as a god.

Luo Luo believed that her Master was a god because of not only her growth in strength but also because Xuan Yuan Po's wound was healing rapidly. Chen Chang Sheng accomplished many things other that were considered impossible. She therefore didn't lose her respect for him after getting closer to him and knowing him for so long. Instead, she praised him more as time went on.

The lamp boats in the river were floating away like fireflies. The dimming lights shined on Chen Chang Sheng's face and his expression was undetectable. She looked at the side of his face and suddenly asked, "Master, what kind of Mistress are you trying to find in the future?"

Tonight was the night of Qi Xi. The capital of the entire human world was absorbed in the greatness of love and romance. Countless young men and women entered the strange realm embarrassingly or bravely. Looking at those heated scenes, it was only normal for Luo Luo to think about these questions.

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a moment and answered, "I never thought about these things."

Luo Luo thought to herself, if he really never thought of these things, then why did he hesitate to answer?

Wei Yang Gong was a main building in the royal palace. It was usually used for royal feasts or traditional festivals. The building was treated specially due to its high quality. Tonight the capital was filled with light, and this building was being used as the location of the Ivy Festival. It was decorated to such an extent that people could mistake it for a palace in heaven.

Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo arrived at the entrance of the Wei Yang Gong. They took out their invitation letters and had their identification checked. They followed the lead of a servant and headed for the depths of the palace. Even from a far distance, Chen Chang Sheng could see the soft light emitting from a royal palace to the night sky. He recognized it was the light from a Nightly Pearl.

How many Nightly Pearls would be needed to light up the entire palace? Chen Chang Sheng thought silently and was shocked. But there was no expression on his face, just like how the nervousness in his heart didn't show on his complexion either.

There was no doubt that the Zhou Royal Palace was the center of the entire human world. Even the Li Palace or the southern Mountain Virgin or the Sword Sect of Mountain Li couldn't compare to this royal palace. If one must find a comparable location, it could only be the Demon Palace in the Xue Lao City.

Walking in the Zhou Palace and feeling every sincere essence

flowing out of the rocks and windows, Chen Chang Sheng felt a little nervous. It was different from his daily point of view from the Tradition Academy, and he was just a youngster who wasn't even fifteen years of age.

On the other hand, Luo Luo wasn't nervous at all. She was just as generous as usual and her steps were light and causal. She didn't need the servant's lead and she would pull on Chen Chang Sheng's sleeve to tell him where to go and what he should pay attention to.

Chen Chang Sheng noticed this and asked quietly, "You been here often?"

Luo Luo answered, "When I first arrived the capital, I was living here."

Chen Chang Sheng knew her background was powerful, but he was still surprised after hearing this.

The two climbed up the long stone stairs in front of the Wei Yang Palace.

After they entered the door, the first thing that entered their vision were a massive amount of Nightly Pearls. Although none of them could compare to the one that Luo Luo gifted Chen Chang Sheng, all these Nightly Pearls put together made a staggering view.

Nightly Pearls aren't oil lamps or candles. Even if the night

breezes were strong, the light is still emitted without being disturbed. The light in the palace was soft and bright. Every masterful details of the carvings on the walls and ceilings could be seen perfectly.

Plus, there was not even a trace of wind.

There must be some type of seal in the Wei Yang Palace so that wind couldn't enter.

There were many seats put up in the palace. Starseeker Academy, Academy of Priests, Heavenly Academy, Academy of Li Palace, and Thirteen Division of Green Light still occupied the best positions. The students who passed the semi-trial were sitting in the scattered seats.

Many people had already arrived, and many more were still coming. There were officers from the Department of Education and officials of the government taking attendance in the front door. Besides their voices, the entire palace was quiet. Once in a while a person would stand up and greet their friends, but most of the people were silent.

“The Tradition Academy is here.”

Following the attendance of the officer, the entire palace fell into a complete silence. But it was shattered a moment later. Countless whispers began to appear and discussion were being made. All eyes glanced towards the entrance of the palace and landed on the young boy and the young girl.

Tradition Academy was the least well known, or you can say almost forgotten, of the entire Six Ivies. In the previous years, the Tradition Academy didn't even have a seat in the Ivy Festival. But after the first night of this year's Ivy Festival, this school was remembered by many people and wouldn't be forgotten this time.

Everyone was looking at Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo who were standing at the palace entrance. Their eyes weren't filled with curiosity or sympathy, but rather caution and suspicion. Many of them were looking at Luo Luo. Those eyes were especially heavy and filled with fear.

After that night, many people were checking the background of the Tradition Academy. They knew about the approximate background of Chen Chang Sheng from the Department of Education, but still no one could find out the identity of Luo Luo. They only know that this young girl appeared in the Heavenly Academy and the Starseeker Academy. The principal of Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu, knew the background of this young girl. Some people also found out that the guests of Royal Court also appeared with this young girl. The Yu Tian General, Xue Xing Chuan, advised his people in his mansion to be careful around the young girl.

But they couldn't ask or force these powerful characters to leak any information.

The background of Luo Luo remained mysterious and unknown. But through these big characters people, they could at least know that her background wasn't ordinary, or else the Tradition

Academy and herself wouldn't be safe after she handicapped that little monster of the Family of Tian Hai while the professor of Heavenly Academy had disappeared.

Of course, the reason that Luo Luo became an interesting character in the capital wasn't only due her mysterious background and relationship with the royal palace, but because of her strength that was shown on the first night of Ivy Festival. At such a young age, the young girl was already this powerful. Perhaps only Xu You Rong could defeat her, but Xu You Rong was born talented with the bloodline of Sky Phoenix. Who was this genius that popped out of nowhere?

Compared to Luo Luo, Chen Chang Sheng received very little attention. Everyone could see that this youngster still didn't reach Purification and was just an ordinary person. Although people didn't understand why Luo Luo respected him so much, they wouldn't look at him otherwise just because of her respect towards him.

An officer of the Department of Education walked from the side to the front of the palace and announced to the students of Six Ivies and the students who passed the semi trials that the Southern ambassadors will arrive at the capital tonight. They will be staying at the Academy of Li Palace and will accept the blessing from the Pope. After that, they will enter the palace and the event when start a little late.

Hearing this news, the people in the palace weren't particularly happy. But the weird thing is that the mood in the palace was lifted. It was clear that the young geniuses led by Gou Han Shi in

the southern ambassador put a lot of pressure on the prideful youths of the Zhou Dynasty.

But since they needed to wait, they couldn't just sit around. The attendance continued and the students and staff all stood up and greeted people who they were familiar with. They talked about the interesting things that happened recently and discussed how Gou Han Shi would perform later. All was lively.

The Tradition Academy's position was still in the corner and undisturbed by anyone. Except in the past the Tradition Academy was actually forgotten by the entire world, but now the entire world was ignoring the Tradition Academy's existence on purpose. The difference between the two may be small, but it was important.

Of course, this purposeful ignorance was mainly due to the arrival of the southern ambassadors. Many people didn't want to attract the troubles onto themselves – it seemed like the two powers of the Zhou Dynasty were trying to compete with each other through the Tradition Academy. If it was any other time, there would be tons of people challenging Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo – but not now. There will be a more important thing happening in the Wei Yang Palace tonight, it would be more important than the new students of the Tradition Academy and the possible collision of the two powers of the Zhou Dynasty.

The marriage proposal tonight was the single most important thing happening in the human world.

Xu You Rong has the bloodline of Sky Phoenix, which would only

appear once in a thousand years. Qiu Shan Jun has the bloodline of Heavenly Dragon, which was unheard of in the world. Plus, Mountain Virgin and Mountain Li were the most powerful sects in the southern hemisphere. If it was actually mentioned, they would be students of the same sect. No matter how you look at it, they were a destined pair blessed by heaven.

The Zhou Dynasty also liked to see the success of this marriage – not because people like to see perfection out of perfection, but rather because Xu You Rong will become the Virgin of Southern Sects. She would be the first girl from the capital in the history to take this position. Qiu Shan Jun would become the Guardian of the Southern Sect. There are two Traditions in the north and south, people's mind were also divided between the north and south. But the entire human world would be bound closer together due to this marriage, and the war against the demon race would have a better result.

The entire human world would like to see Xu Yong Rong married to Qiu Shan Jun.

Anyone wish against it would be rebelling against the entire world.

Chapter 54 - A Spring Wind Came At Night

The seats of the Tradition Academy were located at a corner that no one cared about and was deserted just like the first night of the Ivy Festival. Chen Chang Sheng kept thinking about the proposal that will come from the Southern ambassadors. He didn't care about the mood of the festival and Luo Luo wasn't even concerned about these insignificant events. She was paying attention to Chen Chang Sheng's feeling and was guessing about what he had in his mind. Occasionally, she would pick a fruit and feed him, but she would not give a glance to the tea on the desk. The tea from the royal palace was obviously elite in commoners' eyes, but in her eyes it was extremely poor quality. How could she let her master drink it?

A mid aged court maid appeared behind the seats of the Tradition Academy. Her face was expressionless and extraordinarily cold and arrogant and she seemed to have the status of imperial concubine. But when she got close to Luo Luo, the coldness on the maid's face entirely turned into respect and enthusiasm. Her voice was also well controlled such that only Luo Luo and Cheng Chang Sheng could hear it.

An invite from the Ping Huo Princess? Chen Chang Sheng felt a little surprised and gave a look to Luo Luo to ask her what's happening.

Luo Luo looked deep into the palace and saw Official Jin and Official Li in the shadow. She roughly figured out what happened, felt a bit sorry, and spoke to Chen Chang Sheng. "Master, I haven't visited the palace for a long time, maybe I have to go there for a while."

Chen Chang Sheng already gradually got used to the surprise Luo Luo brought him. He even felt somewhat numb and said, “Since you know him, then you should go.”

Luo Luo looked at the people who frequently glanced at the seats of the Tradition Academy “Don’t worry master, I will come back soon.”

Chen Chang Sheng knew what she was worrying about but did not feel embarrassed and laughed “You must come back.”

After a while, another servant from the palace came, but this time Chen Chang Sheng himself was invited. He looked at the body that was as tall and big as mountain outside the side door of hall in the darkness and remained silent for a while. He made sure that people inside the hall did not notice him before he stood up and walked towards the man.

Even though the side door of the hall was slowly closed, the soft light of the Nightly Pearl still penetrated through the window falling on Xu Shi Ji’s body. It’s shape was sketched out more clearly. When Chen Chang Sheng saw his back, he felt a little heartquake but he didn’t have much of a reaction.

“You did not participate the second night of the Ivy Festival. I thought you wouldn’t show up tonight either.”

Xu Shi Ji turned around and looked at him coldly, “Why do you come?”

Chen Chang Sheng did not even understand himself. Why did he want to come to at the last night of the Ivy Festival? Later on when the Southern ambassadors representing Qiu Shan Jun officially propose to Xu You Rong, what should he do? He knew why Xu Shi Ji wanted to see him privately before the proposal outside the hall.

That reason made him a bit angry. He looked at Xu Shi Ji's eyes and said "Uncle, I am a student of the Tradition Academy and I have the right to come to the Ivy Festival."

This answer obviously couldn't make Xu Shi Ji happy. What made him even more unhappy was, Chen Chang Sheng called him uncle. Such title was for treating a close elder, but it was obviously intentional. Within it hid a deeper meaning when the youngster said it.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, "It seems like you are not prepared to continue keeping your promise."

Chen Chang Sheng replied, "I never expect everyone to keep his/her promise, but I will definitely keep it myself."

Since he arrived at the capital, Dong Yu General's mansion caused many troubles for him. They caused trouble for him until some high status people stood out and helped him, but for what reason they did it he did not know. They allowed him to study in the Tradition Academy in exchange for a type of promise, but he never promised them anything. (aka he understood what they wanted but he never promised them anything)

If they really have to talk about promise, then the engagement that was signed many years ago was the real promise.

Dong Yu General's Mansion did not want to keep the promise, then how could they criticize him for not keeping their promise?

Xu Shi Ji looked at him calmly "What do you think you, a little kid, can change?"

Chen Chang Sheng did not reply, turned around, and prepared to walk back into the hall.

Xu Shi Ji laughed and said, "What an immature child."

Chen Chang Sheng paused because he suddenly felt his body becoming somewhat rigid.

Just a simple sentence from Xu Shi Ji, made his heart suddenly tightened up. The speed his blood moved inside the vessels became extremely terrifying.

A violent but bloody qi controlled his body and heart.

Chen Chang Sheng's face turned into a red unhealthy color and he felt very uneasy. Until now, he was certain that elites at Xu Shi Ji's level could kill a commoner like him easily if they really wanted to.

He stood by the side door of the hall and looked at the light inside the hall.

Although night arrived, the hall inside was still as bright as daytime.

No one dared to kill people in front the public in the royal palace, especially at such an important night. Even Xu Shi Ji did not dared. But because tonight was too important, Xu Shi Ji definitely would not watch him sit in the hall. Chen Chang Sheng can stand up at any time and destroy the marriage that the entire human world was anticipating.

Xu Shi Ji could heavily wound him, or even make him faint. Although this would bring him many trouble, it would cleanse all the variables beforehand.

Chen Chang Sheng clearly understood what Xu Shi Ji's plan. If he was Xu Shi Ji, he would probably choose to take the risk too, but he did not regret meeting Xu Shi Ji outside. Because just like in the Xu's Mansion and outside the Priest's Academy, he was not ashamed so he was not afraid.

His right hand held the button that Luo Luo sewed inside his sleeve.

Let all of this be reveal in the light brought by the Nightly Pearl.

At this moment, in the darkness of the palace a voice suddenly came up.

The voice was very soft, giving people a friendly and clean feeling.

Like a spring wind blowing into one's face.

“General Xu, what are you doing here?”

A handsome young man walked out of the darkness, wearing yellow shirt, smiling kindly.

Anyone could see that there was conflict between Xu Shi Ji and Chen Chang Sheng, but this young man still asked calmly and asked in such a natural way as if he really just wanted to say hi to Xu Shi Ji and begin a friendly conversation.

A spring wind at night.

The bloody and violent qi suddenly disappeared.

Chen Chang Sheng escaped from the danger and his face gradually recovered.

Xu Shi Ji looked at the young man and saluted, “Good to see you, Prince Chen Liu. I am just chatting with an old friend.”

Chen Chang Sheng felt a little surprised, thinking that this was the legendary Prince Chen Liu.

Prince Chen Liu looked at him, appeared very shocked, and said, “So you are the one?”

Xu Shi Ji frowned “Does prince know him?”

Prince Chen Liu smiled “The first student of the Tradition Academy in the recent years. It’s hard for me to not know him.”

Since the Divine Queen came to power, the Chen’s royal family was forced out of the capital and moved to various distant cities. Only Prince Chen Liu was still in the capital and grew up in the palace.

Prince Chen Liu was the only bloodline of the old royal family in the capital. He represented many meanings.

In the few days ago, the Tradition Academy reappeared in people’s eyes, in many’s eyes, that also represented many meanings.

Coincidentally, the meanings that two represented were all the same.

Chapter 55 - The Quality Of One's Heart

Looking at this young man with a handsome complexion and generous aura, Chen Chang Sheng greeted him calmly, but his mind wasn't as calm as his expression was.

Prince Chen Liu was of the royal bloodline and his talent was extraordinary. Since he grew up in the royal palace and had a high status, he never participated in the Great Trials and didn't have any chances to show his strength. The principal of the Heavenly Academy and the guests of the Royal Palace all said that it would be easy for him to enter the Honor Roll of Green Cloud based off his strength when he was young. Now that he's more than twenty years old, if he was willing, there would be a spot on the Honor Roll of Midas for him as well.

But the reason that he was respected by an important General like Xu Shi Ji wasn't because of his royal bloodline or his strength, but rather because the Divine Queen treated him differently and allowed him to stay in the capital. This decision led to countless theories – perhaps the Divine Queen was thinking about letting him become the next emperor of the Zhou Dynasty?

Many people believed this theory but these recent years, the Family of Tian Hai has been acting arrogant and prideful. Although Prince Chen Liu belonged to the royal family of Chen, the Divine Queen never expressed her true attitude and no one knew what kind of character he would be in the future of Zhou Dynasty. Therefore, everyone in the capital treated him with a complex attitude; they respected him but isolated him.

Xu Shi Ji was one of the Generals of the Zhou Dynasty and was deeply trusted by the Divine Queen. Because of the old event where he massacred the royal family rebellion, he made a lot of enemies in the government court. For this reason, he exercised even more caution when dealing with Prince Chen Liu. He needed to do something and not trouble the mentioned prince.

He knew Prince Chen Liu was representing the Divine Queen and hosting tonight's Ivy Festival while greeting the southern ambassadors who traveled far to get here. However, he never knew that he would encounter the prince outside of the palace. In addition, the prince was showing hints of reminders of a certain thing and in the meanwhile, sort of protecting Chen Chang Sheng.

Xu Shi Ji was sure that the marriage vow between Chen Chang Sheng and his daughter was unknown to the world so the purpose of Prince Chen Liu's sudden appearance and protection of Chen Chang Sheng would be helping the Tradition Academy. This reminded him of certain rumors going around the capital lately which made him feel insecure.

Prince Chen Liu looked at Chen Chang Sheng and smiled, "Can I help you with anything?"

His voice was neither fast nor slow. His expression was friendly and gave off a feeling of the wind of spring. It was warm and relaxing.

At the beginning, Chen Chang Sheng didn't understand the reason for this prince's protection but after hearing this sentence, he became relaxed. Now hearing the warm words of the prince, he

was thankful and said, “Thank you for worrying about us.”

“No need to thank me. In fact, you were just dragged into unnecessary trouble. We are the ones who should apologize because we are just sitting in the walls of the capital and doing nothing.” Prince Chen Liu smiled while looking at him. His words were causal but his tone was sincere.

When the city gates go down, it will trouble the people inside as well.

If it wasn't for the two powers of Zhou Dynasty causing trouble from the recruitment of Tradition Academy, Chen Chang Sheng would just be a normal youngster unknown to the world. He wouldn't be watched by the entire capital and attract so much attention.

Prince Chen Liu didn't know about the stories between Chen Chang Sheng and Dong Yu General's Mansion and so, he thought Xu Shi Ji was bothering him on purpose. It was also one of the troubles he talked about earlier. It made logical sense for him to apologize to Chen Chang Sheng because he was a member of the royal family.

Of course, to be able to apologize to an ordinary person as a prince showed that he was truly a friendly person. Plus he didn't mind covering up the struggles between the old royal family and Divine Queen in front of Xu Shi Ji in the royal palace which showed that he was a carefree person.

“You are too generous.”

Chen Chang Sheng really liked this prince and said, “If I do need to trouble you with any help, I will ask you.”

“Very good, I like your personality. I’m not afraid of troubles.”

Prince Chen Liu smiled and patted his shoulder and then he continued to proceed into the palace with his guards. before leaving, he peeked at Xu Shi Ji for a short moment. His eyes were calm and soft, but it showed warning.

The soft light emitted by the Nightly Pearls pierced through the papers in the window and became unstable.

Xu Shi Ji’s face was brightened by the light, but his expression was changing by the moment.

Prince Chen Liu had left, but his words stayed in the hallway before the entrance to the palace. No matter how hard the night gales blew, they didn’t fly away.

Xu Shi Ji couldn’t bother Chen Chang Sheng any further, but he said coldly, “Your luck is very good.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a moment and said, “Perhaps, it’s because of my good heart.”

After saying this, he laughed.

In many people's eyes, Chen Chang Sheng was way more mature than his actual age because he always acted calm and never had extreme emotions. He never really talked much with strangers and always followed rules and had good manners. He doesn't smile much either.

But right now he was laughing very happily, because he was in front of Xu Shi Ji.

Xu Shi Ji was laughing too, perhaps he thought the response from a child was funny and naive, but his laughter wasn't a pretty sight.

Wei Yang Palace wasn't a main building and it wasn't a palace where Divine Queen lived in either. There were gardens in ruins a little farther from the palace. Right now, the night was getting darker and from the unmaintained gardens, a black goat slowly walked out. Its eyes were reflecting the starlight and appeared to be gloomy.

Xu Shi Ji looked at this sight in the darkness and raised his eyebrows a little. He didn't speak any further and entered the palace.

Chen Chang Sheng also saw the black goat.

That black goat quietly looked at him and walked towards

another direction away from the palace. During its walk, it stopped and turned its head toward Chen Chang Sheng. It seemed like it wanted him to follow.

Chen Chang Sheng understood the black goat's intention — it want him to leave the palace.

Although they couldn't communicate, he could faintly feel and determine that this black goat was friendly towards him. Perhaps this meant that tonight's troubles haven't ended yet or possibly that the true tasks and danger has only started.

But he didn't follow it because he wanted to participate in tonight's Ivy Festival.

He was yet to decide on what to do when the southern ambassador proposes, but he wanted to see the action with his own eyes.

Perhaps when he saw it, he would know what to do.

The black goat disappeared into the darkness of night.

Chen Chang Sheng stood in the light outside of the palace and thought back to the terrifying aura that Xu Shi Ji gave off earlier. He knew it was very dangerous.

Xu Shi Ji said his luck was good because of Prince Chen Liu's sudden appearance.

He answered that perhaps it was because he had a good heart.

A good heart means that karma is not harming him in anyway, but rather helping.

A person with good karma will be helped by all sources.

This was a fact that he understood after reading the Three Thousand Scrolls of the Way.

After leaving Xi Ning Village and arrived at the capital, he endured taunts, insults, and suspicion. At the same time, many people helped him such as the bishop of the Department of Education, Officer Xin, Prince Chen Liu, and also the black goat that disappeared into the night.

Why did these people help him? He knew that it wasn't because of his personality or morals. Some insults and pressure he faced after coming to the capital shouldn't be endured by him, and this assistance shouldn't appear either. Many things happened out of misunderstanding.

The marriage vow between him and Xu You Rong was only known by Yu Dong General's Mansion and the big character in the royal palace; no one else knew. His entering of Tradition Academy

and the insults and mocking from Yu Dong General's Mansion in the previous month led to this misunderstanding.

Tradition Academy was a lake that no one visited. Wild lotuses were growing inside it.

He was just a random bypasser who entered this ruined lake by accident. He wanted to roll his boat across the lake but his action disturbed a group of swain.

Just when he was thinking about this, a loud bird scream was heard far into the distant, and there were water splashing sounds.

It's hard to know if the bird was hunting or being hunted.

Chen Chang Sheng turned around and glanced toward that darkness of night. Suddenly, an alarm went off in his heart.

Just this moment, a voice was heard.

This voice came from the depths of night but wasn't spread throughout the night.

This voice came from the depths of royal palace but didn't fade away into the palace.

This voice was heard directly in his ears and landed on his heart.

This voice was clean and very moving. It was like a popsicle in the winter, but it was colder than winter.

“You, are Chen Chang Sheng?”

The surrounding was silent, the music from the Wei Yang Palace decreased in volume drastically after passing through the window. It was very light. From far away, the leaves were flying with the wind and swirling across the spacious field. They were very light. That voice that appeared in his heart was also very light, but it was as shocking as a lightning.

If an ordinary person heard a voice directly from his heart, they would be terrified. But Chen Chang Sheng wasn't very responsive. He stared at the palaces resting in the night and tried to locate the position of the speaker.

He read all of the Scrolls of the Way. He knew that some xiuxingists in Starfusion stage can easily pass their voice into the ears of ordinary people.

“You are calmer than I thought, or perhaps you are an idiot?”

The voice appeared again.

“I just hope that you are smarter than I imagine.”

There was a lady in the royal palace. Although she was young, she has already reached the Starfusion stage and didn't care about

the words said by Prince Chen Liu previously. From this, it was clear that her status in the palace was unimaginable and her identity was clear as the daylight. She was the big character that Chen Chang Sheng previously thought about.

He looked into the palaces hidden in the night and greeted calmly, "Greetings, Madam Mo."

The voice disappeared for a moment. It seemed like she didn't expect Chen Chang Sheng to immediately know who she was, or perhaps she wasn't used to been called this way.

The voice belonged to the legendary Lady Mo Yu.

The second most powerful woman in the Zhou Dynasty, or perhaps the second most powerful person. (In terms of political influence, not xiuxingists power)

"You can call me Lady Mo Yu."

"Yes, Madam Mo."

For some reason, Chen Chang Sheng was extra stubborn tonight.

Perhaps it was because he knew the reason for the sudden appearance of Mo Yu.

"You surely are a smart youngster."

“Thank you.”

“Recent days, a storm was approaching the capital and you stayed inside the Tradition Academy and didn’t set a foot outside. That’s why I said you are smart.”

“Thank you.”

“But this smart.....seems a little shameless.”

“I await your words.”

“You have guessed the identity of Luo Luo and therefore you are hiding behind her. Isn’t that shameless?”

“You are the one who commanded me to enter the Tradition Academy. You know I only wanted to learn and xiuxing, I never think much about this.”

“But you are still using her.”

“This is her wish.”

“But any person manly enough wouldn’t deceive such an innocent and pure little girl.”

“When did I ever deceive her?”

“If you didn’t cheat, then how would a person of her status become your apprentice?”

Hearing this question, Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a while and then he glanced at the depths of the night and answered, “Perhaps it’s because I have a good heart.”

Chapter 56 - An Equity Problem

Chen Chang Sheng truly felt this way about the situation so he said so blatantly. Others might view this sentence as sarcastic and somewhat shameless. Pretty obviously, Mo Yu thought so, so she said with a deep voice, “Let’s talk about the engagement.”

“That’s an issue between the Dong Yu General’s Mansion and me.”

“You clearly understand that this is not reality. After all, this issue needs to be solved.”

Both of them spoke calmly, and indubitably.

Mo Yu’s voice was as cold as snow, “If there isn’t anyone that insists that you must live, then the the contract in your pocket is simply a piece of trash.”

To such a high status character like her, although there was the Pope’s signature on the engagement which was very special, she could easily make this engagement useless by killing Chen Chang Sheng. If the person is dead, the engagement obviously becomes a piece of trash.

Chen Chang Sheng looked to the depth of darkness and said, “Many people saw me entered the palace.”

Mo Yu said, “Who will care about a person like you?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Now that I am a student of the Tradition Academy, many people will care. These days, just because people never show up doesn’t mean they don’t exist. They are looking at the Tradition Academy, looking at me, and also looking at you.”

While speaking this sentence, Chen Chang Sheng naturally thought of the Bishop of the Department of Traditional Education.

Until now, the Bishop still have not said a word to him, but the Bishop knew where the source of change of the Tradition Academy came from.

“Killing me is a very simple thing, but at the same time it is a very troubling thing.”

He said, “You can think of ways to take Luo Luo away from me, but you have no way to take away the attention on the Tradition Academy.”

Mo Yu’s voice became a bit cold, “The fact that I want to kill you is not related to the Tradition Academy. In my eyes, those elders don’t exist.”

“Yes, the fact that you want to kill me is not related to the Tradition Academy, but unfortunately, no one knows and no one will believe.”

Chen Chang Sheng said finally, “Unless you announce the engagement between Xu You Rong and me publicly, then I think, the entire world will support the killing of me, but the problem is that doing so will generate new problems. So I really want to know, what can you do?”

After he came to the capital, especially after he entered the Tradition Academy, it seems like he did not have to be concerned about anything. Only hearing sound of wind, rain and reading books, Chen Chang Sheng lived a calm life while actually being caught up in serious matters.

Recently, Chen Chang Sheng has been studying hard in the Tradition Academy. He didn't even walk out of the door a single step and just as Mo Yu said previously, he's using Luo Luo's identity to frighten the people who intended to harm him. Although Luo Luo proposed this herself, he agreed to it. Simultaneously, he's using the Tradition Academy's history and influence of revitalization to limit the other side of the marriage vow, Xu You Rong's Mansion. Only this way he can ensure his own safety.

The common youngster came from the distant Xi Ning. Facing nobles in the capital and even higher status people from the royal palace, he already made all the responses he could. He could thank his status as a freshman of the Tradition Academy, the so called personality, that let him survive tonight.

“What a villain.”

Mo Yu did not hide her sarcasm and demeanor in her voice,

“Unfortunately, insignificant people never saw the ocean. How can they understand what’s called magnificence? If they never took down a star, how can they understand what’s called vast? After all, you are only a summer bug that doesn’t understand what snow is.”

Suddenly, Chen Chang Sheng felt extremely uneasy. His right hand held a button in his pocket and his left hand held the handle of his short sword.

But it was too late.

He felt his mind was in a blur and his vision was impaired too.

Although it was already night and it was hard to see anything, it was clear that there was something wrong with the scenes in front of him.

An unspeakable aura entered his mind and he suddenly felt tired.

The next moment, he pull himself together and woke up.

But the view was different already. He noticed that he arrived at a random ruined garden. In front of him was a cold lake reflecting the starlight. A few trees were growing around the lake but since it was still autumn, the trees has yet to blossom.

He was shocked. How did he come to this place when just a moment ago, he was in the hallway outside of Wei Yang Palace?

What kind of technique did she use to achieve this strange effect?

No one else was in the ruined garden and the only thing that he could hear were leaves sizzling on the trees.

He turned around and saw the palace hundreds of yards away. It was still filled with light and although he couldn't see the people, it was probably very lively.

Perhaps the southern ambassadors have arrived.

Standing in the ruined garden and staring into a lively garden amplified his loneliness.

Mo Yu's voice was heard again, but this time it wasn't in his heart but rather on the other side of the ruined garden and a certain position in the night, "Just observe. Tonight you just need to be an observer and then everything will be solved easily."

Chen Chang Sheng stared into the dark night and said, "This isn't fair."

Mo Yu said, "Such childish words shouldn't be said by such a cunning person like you."

For some reason, her voice was tired.

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Such childish words shouldn’t be said by the legendary Madam Mo.”

Mo Yu believed his thought on the fairness of this event was childish.

He believed that Mo Yu’s thought was truly naive.

It wasn’t a twist of words, but rather a difference of view on this world.

Mo Yu said coldly, “Fair, or justice was never the most important thing in this world.”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a moment, “When the Wisdom Scholar froze to death in jail for something he never did, he probably wasn’t thinking like that.”

Wisdom Scholar, Mo Wen Shan, a great educationist and literature of Zhou Dynasty was put in jail without trial because he mocked a powerful figure of the royal court. He later was pulled out of the jail in a freezing day during the winter and died from freezing. Every male member of the Mo Family was killed and only his granddaughter survived.

Mo Yu was that grand daughter.

Mo Yu’s cold but furious voice filled the night, “You bold bastard!”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “A person of the world speaks of the events in the world, how is this bold?”

Hearing this, Mo Yu was silent for a long time.

“Yes, it’s not fair, but you are too weak....compared to this palace. To fight against the demon race, humans need to unite and need new strength. For this, both the Zhou Dynasty and the southern sects will put in their all. That’s why Ivy Festival exists, that’s why Great Trial exists, that’s why.....the marriage between Qiu Shan Jun and her exist.

Mo Yu’s voice slowly became calm, “Of course, these things are not important, what is important is that the Queen favors Xu You Rong and relies on Xu You Rong. She believes that only Qiu Shan Jun could pair with her in this world and so, she could only marry to him.

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t agree to her idea and was going to leave this ruined garden and walk to Wei Yang Palace.

He knew that it would be impossible to leave in front of the legendary Mo Yu. But this ruined garden seemed to be empty and without boundaries; it would definitely be hard to exit. Therefore, he threw the button that he held in his palm into the ground without hesitation.

This button was made out of rhinoceros horn and was a precious magic item – the Button of Thousand Miles.

After Luo Luo gifted him the Button of Thousand Miles, she also taught him how to use it.

A trace of smoke popped up and Chen Chang Sheng disappeared.

But a moment later, he return to his original position.

The cold lake was still there and the trees weren't moved.

His face got a little pale and a trace of blood was flowing out of the corner of his lips.

There was a powerful boundary around the ruined garden. It was even more powerful than the one released by that demon xiuxingist in Tradition Academy that night.

Zhou Royal Palace wasn't an ordinary place.

The place that Mo Yu wanted him to stay put in isn't ordinary either.

Even if it just looked like a ruined garden, he still couldn't make a move.

“I calculated everything you got, therefore, give up.” Mo Yu’s voice was so calm that it made Chen Chang Sheng’s heart froze.

Chen Chang Sheng picked up his head and rose his right arm to wipe the blood off of the corner of his mouth. He glanced at the palaces during the night and the capital, which he lived in for a several months but still wasn’t familiar with. He saw everyone that he couldn’t see who lived here.

“To be honest, I was really here to forfeit the marriage vow.”

His voice was tired, but still calm as usual, “She was liked by everyone. She was even liked and adored by the Divine Queen. But I never thought about marrying her, I.....really was here to forfeit the marriage. But, why does no one believe me?”

The night was dead silent, and the ruined garden was still isolated, just like the expression on his face.

He was here in the capital to forfeit the marriage. He said this twice in Yu Dong General’s Mansion. Today, he said another two more times in the royal palace’s ruined garden.

Yes, but why did no one believed him?

Just because she is the untouchable True Phoenix’s reincarnation? And he himself is just an ordinary boy who couldn’t xiuxing?

“I understand clearer than most of the people in this world what the importance of living is. It’s more important than marriage, it’s more important than the insults and mockery I received after I arrived at the capital. Therefore, I could care less.”

He switched his gaze from the distance to the opposite side of the lake, “But you guys have done too many meaningless actions. You kept on reminding me that I have a fiancée and that she will be married to another man. Even just a moment ago, you guys were still reminding me of this fact.....”

“All right, I must admit that I started to care now.”

“Just like what I said to Madam Xu in the General’s Mansion.”

“This time, I have really changed my mind.”

“I won’t marry Xu You Rong because I dislike you guys and her.”

“But I won’t forfeit the marriage vow either, because I dislike you guys and her.”

“This is fair.”

“This way, if I don’t agree, she can’t marry Qiu Shan Jun, or anyone for that matter.”

“I know this isn’t fair for her.”

“But it’s fair to me.”

The ruined garden was dead silent.

The freezing lake’s coldness can sneak up on people’s spine and pierce their bones.

Mo Yu was silent for a long time. Suddenly, she felt perhaps she did something wrong.

Back in Yu Dong General’s Mansion, Madam Xu had this feeling as well.

But the next moment she started laughing. She was mocking herself as well as the words of this youngster.

“In order to do that, you must let the entire continent acknowledge the marriage vow between you and her.

“Tonight would be the best opportunity.”

“But you need to leave here first.”

Chapter 57 - The Prisoner Of Tong Palace

Behind Han Guang Palace, a bamboo carriage slowly arrived. The curtains of the carriage were lifted slightly and Mo Yu appeared on the stone stairs. The starlight shone on her beautiful complexion and her thin eyebrows, bright pupils and the light makeup on her face.

She looked at the two tamed deers, with purely white coats, pulling the carriage and raised her eyebrows. She was a little surprised and asked, "Where is Black Jade?"

The previous black goat had disappeared into the darkness of the night and was nowhere to be found.

Nanny Ning held her hand and helped her walk down the stone stairs and answered lightly, "I don't know where that precious went."

Mo Yu knew that the black goat's personality was a little unique and that she never listened to anyone in the palace. She shook her head and said, "she is just a little kid."

Nanny Ning glanced towards the back of Han Guang palace and thought to herself, the youngster who was standing around the lake and had nowhere to go was also a kid.

Mo Yu knew what she was thinking and mocked lightly, "He's just a kid but when he's talking, he could spit out some logical words and act mature. He doesn't know his actions are just jokes in

other people's eyes and would only make him look silly.”

Nanny Ning said, “Well, I actually think silly people are sometimes cute as well.”

A few months ago when Chen Chang Sheng entered the Tradition Academy, Nanny Ning helped along with the applications and the process. After she was done with the business, Mo Yu knew she liked Chen Chang Sheng. Right now hearing her speak well of Chen Chang Sheng, Mo Yu didn't care much either. She did what needed to be done.

Chen Chang Sheng couldn't leave that ruined garden and couldn't appear in front of the crowd in the Wei Yang Palace. This meant that he couldn't sabotage the marriage between Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun. After the proposal, no matter how much he argued, he will only be seen as a joke. All of his anger would burn and bring pain to himself and only himself.

The bamboo carriage slowly rode towards the direction of Wei Yang Palace.

Although the professor of Heavenly Academy committed suicide under the threats of evil enforcers working for Zhou Tong, the Ivy Festival still needed a host — especially when there were important guests in the southern ambassadors who were participating in the event tonight. The Bishop of Department of Education and Xu Shi Ji was responsible for watching over them while Prince Chen Liu represented the Divine Queen in greeting the southerners. In addition, Mo Yu would attend the festival herself to show respect.

Nanny Ning placed her hand on the window of the carriage and glanced at the direction of the ruined garden multiple times. A trace of regret was showing on her face.

“Don’t worry too much nanny; that kid won’t be harmed.”

Mo Yu’s voice was heard from the bamboo carriage, “The seal of the Lake of Black Dragon is unbreakable. Unless someone from the outside opens the garden’s gate, no one can ever leave. The most he will endure will be the cold wind blowing on his face while he’s staying in the garden. This is nothing compared to the mess he will bring.”

Nanny Ning thought about a rumor and asked worriedly, “What if he touched the taboo?”

Mo Yu said, “Since it is a taboo, how would it be so easy for him to touch?”

Although she spoke casually and coldly, Nanny Ning could hear the tiredness from Mo Yu’s words. Thinking about the previous scene on the stone stairs and the tiredness showing between her eyes, Nanny Ning was a confused of why her lady would harm her qi to activate a secret technique to bind Chen Chang Sheng in place.

“Lady, you promised Lady You Rong that you would not use force on him.”

“Did I use force tonight? I only used words.”

Mo Yu thought back to the letter that she received few months ago from the south and became irritated, “That idiot girl didn’t want to marry him but didn’t want others to use force on him either. Don’t harm or interfere with him. What kind of rules is that, or else I wouldn’t need to use so much energy on this and it wouldn’t be such a trouble.”

Using her power, high status, and influence in the Zhou Dynasty, she could have more than thousands of ways to make youngsters like Chen Chang Sheng praying for death and despise living. But this thing turned out to be very troublesome due to that letter.

After thinking about it, Mo Yu got even more irritated, “Her own family arranged a bad marriage and needed me to help her out of it while she hid in the south and pretended to be a good person. Now I’m the bad guy. You didn’t even hear how that youngster insulted me earlier. If it wasn’t for her, I would have already killed him!”

Nanny Ning smiled, “My lady is basically a sister of Lady You Rong. It’s fine to use a bit of energy to help your own sister out.”

Mo Yu smirked coldly and said, “We all say Black Jade is the precious, but that young phoenix is the actual precious treasure in this world. The entire continent think she’s pure, innocent, and pretty, but they don’t know she’s a cheapskate and no one could blame her. If she’s not happy, then she can do and will do anything. I’m not helping her because she’s like a sister to me. I’m

just worried that if she's not happy and doesn't marry Qiu Shi Jun, then what will happen?"

Nanny Ning soothed her, "Thank god that after tonight, we don't have to worry about this thing anymore."

The window curtain was lifted slightly and Mo Yu glanced towards the ruined garden behind Han Guang Palace and that cold lake which was covered out by an old wall. She thought about Chen Chang Sheng's words and thought to herself, will tonight pass successfully? Why must he be sealed here specifically? What is the Saint thinking?

After the few sentences of mockery, Mo Yu's voice wasn't heard again. Chen Chang Sheng stood quietly in the ruined garden by himself. The cold lake was in front and the berry trees were to his side. His body wasn't as lonely as before. It was as if strength was filled inside his flesh.

After making sure that Mo Yu had left, he started walking forward and passed the berry trees. He arrived at the lake. A wave of coldness hit his face.

The ruined garden was clearly colder than any other place in this royal palace. The reason was probably due to the cold lake in front of him. He observed the surface of the cold lake closely while letting the freezing air stack against his face until a frost seemed to appear on his eyebrows.

He wasn't looking for pain, he just wanted to use the environment to calm himself down. He wasn't willing to waste time on anger or any other negative mood – the previous words he said that Mo Yu seemed to be childish and useless. Perhaps the words were the complete opposite of calmness, but he still said them.

There are three thousand methods to understand the Way. His method was to soothe his own mind. To act on his mind and to live by his mind. If the world wouldn't let him do things his own way, he will think of methods to soothe his own mind. Only after the mind is soothed can a person be undisturbed. And being undisturbed is the highest level of calmness.

Of course, he didn't want his words to be jokes either. Therefore he had to leave the ruined garden and make it back to Wei Yang Palace. Before he left the Tradition Academy, he had made some preparations. However, if the powerful figures can deceive Luo Luo out of Wei Yang Palace, then he can't place all his hopes on her.

What can he do to leave this ruined garden? He had no idea at the moment but he still told Mo Yu previously that he would, just as he told Tang Thirty Six and Luo Luo that he would participate in the Great Trial and obtain the first place.

Although it was without reason and impossible, he said it with such a calmness and confidence. This unlogical confidence seemed impressive to those who trusted him, but was a joke to strangers from the outside.

Only he himself knew that this confidence originated from a need. If in the beginning of next year, he had to participate in the Great Trial and obtain the first place, then he will accomplish it, or he will die. Tonight, if he had to leave the ruined garden and appear in Wei Yang Palace, then he will accomplish this as well.

He must do it, so he will do it. Before all this, he must believe that he will do it, only this way will his mind be soothed.

Once again, there are three thousand methods to understand the Way, and his only method was to soothe his mind.

Everything he did after leaving Xi Ning Village and coming to the capital was closely related to this method.

Because only when he soothes his mind will he change his fate.

He looked around the ruined garden. There were old walls, autumn trees, dried lotuses on the lake, and old petals beneath the berry trees that weren't blown away by the wind.

Although he never saw this sight before, he felt that he had seen it a long time ago.

He never traveled ten thousand miles, so he didn't see too many

sights.

But he read ten thousand scrolls and traveled ten thousand miles in the books. He saw many sights there.

After memorizing the view around the lake in his heart, he sat down around the lake and closed his eyes and concentrated his mind. Then he started thinking back to the books he read before.

There were the Scrolls of the Way, there were scattered articles, there were fables, and there were traveling diaries.

Those were the books he read in the old temple of Xi Ning Village and in the library of the Tradition Academy.

He sat next to the lake and his eyes were closed, but countless books were flipping in front of his eyes.

The cold wind seemed to know these words and kept on flipping the books and stopping at the pages he wanted to see.

Those pages contained pictures and context.

[“The Travel of Nan Ke”](#)

I believe the author was referencing to a chinese idiom, Nan Ke Yi Meng(南柯一梦) Which directly translates to “The Dream of Nan Ke”. The basic story of this idiom is that a person was drunk and fell asleep under a big tree. Then he dreamt that he was appointed

as the governor of the Nan Ke City and climbed his way up the social ladder. After twenty years of hard working, he was trusted by his king and respected by his people, but suddenly, a neighboring kingdom attacked and he was defeated. This caused him to lose all of his power and he woke in the real world in his house. This dream made him realize that the fortune and glory in this world is gained and lost too quickly. At last, he turned to Taoism and became a hermit.

“Zhu Dian Yuan Hou Luan”

“Zhen Lei Ben Chao”

Chen Chang Sheng opened his eyes and stood up. Once again, he glanced around the ruined garden.

The ruined garden was still the ruined garden, the cold lake was still the cold lake. But currently in his eyes, they were completely different.

The few petals scattered around the lake seemed to be irrelevant and without meaning, but this view was the same throughout four seasons and never changed. The only thing that changed was that only the trees were still living.

The edge of the lake contained many rocks and there were no break between them. But on the other side of the lake, which was

close to the old walls, the rocks weren't there. It seemed to be an exit in the darkness, but he knew it wasn't an exit but rather an unfinished stroke.

A dozen berry trees seemed to line up here.

This was the character "Tong."

There was a story in "The Travel of Nan Ke." There was a picture in "Zhen Lei Ben Chao". There was a mentioning of a burned down palace in Zhu Dian Yuan Hou Lun".

That palace was named Tong Palace.

The Tong Palace that killed an emperor in his sleep.

It was also a formation created by a Pope who used all of his energy.

Even after Chen Chang Sheng recognized this ruined garden and this cold lake, what could he do?

Unless he reached the legendary Saint stage, he cannot forcefully break out of this Tong Palace.

Of course, there is a door to any place. Every formation has its living exit.

But in the history of mankind, no one dared to leave from the living exit of Tong Palace.

Many years ago, the Tong Palace which was burned to ashes had grim reapers guarding outside of its living exit. People can still barely live in the palace, but they will surely die after they leave.

Because charm and harm always come together. The so called “living exit” may actually be one’s final destination.

Chen Chang Sheng knew where the living exit of Tong Palace was.

As the wind blows, the water will rise.

When the wind finished blowing but was yet to stop, where the water was low but was yet to rise.

He stared at the cold lake that was in front of him and stayed silent.

The sophisticated music from Wei Yang Palace entered the ruined garden from a distance.

The southern ambassadors sat down and everyone was ready.

He didn’t think much further and walked towards the depths of the cold lake.

Chapter 58 - Break Through The Dragon Pond

Knowing the living exit of the Tong Palace doesn't mean you can get out of it. Finding the living exit doesn't mean he could be safe. As a matter of fact, since the ancient times, many infinite elites had been trapped in Tong Palace but none dared to step into the living exit of the Tong Palace.

Anyone who needed to be imprisoned in Tong Palace was not ordinary. They knew the principle that living is death, understood that the Pope who built Tong Gong would absolutely not leave anything out. Once they stepped into the living exit, it means they stepped into death.

It's not necessary that hope can be seen in the hopeless abyss. Who actually dared to find life out of death? Therefore, seemingly simple and straightforward paths can actually be the most dangerous. Prisoners would rather find other methods. Even staying and waiting in the same place was a better choice.

Chen Chang Sheng should be the weakest one among the prisoners of Tong Palace, but also the most special one. He was different from the people that Tong Palace had imprisoned before. He had been attempting to find hope in the hopeless abyss since the very beginning. Every day and night, he was finding life out of death.

He is the person who cared most about time in the world. He didn't want to spend time on meaningless things such as hesitating. After he confirmed his conjectures using the

conversation he had with Mo Yu, he quickly made his decision, and stepped into the cold deep pond unhesitantly.

At that time, he didn't know that the deep pond he was about to enter was called Pond of Black Dragon but it didn't matter if he knew because he wanted to — he wanted to leave this place and run to Wei Yang Palace to do that thing. No matter how dangerous the pond was, he would try.

The reason why the ruined garden was extremely cold was because of this deep pond. Obviously water inside the pond would be even colder. The moment his feet touched the surface of the pond, he realized that the water had already solidified into ice. Ka Ka (sounds), the ice was broken into icy chips.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't feel his shoes get wet because his feet did not even step into water. Ka Ka, the sound of breaking ice continued. As the thin layer of icy surface fragmented, the water under the ice also fragmented. A stone staircase extending towards the depth of pond appeared!

The staircase gradually lowered down from the shore to the base of pond. Its surface was extremely dry as it did not have a trace of neither water nor moss.

The pond water was divided by a shapeless force. The image looked very mysterious. The darkness in the depth of stairs seemed to hide infinite danger. However, Chen Chang Sheng looked like he did not see this mysterious image at all as if he knew this path had always been there. He looked calm and steady.

After a little more than ten steps, the stairs all disappeared into the bottom of the pond. The entire path dropped to the bottom of the pond.

The ground on the path was still dry, yet the corner of the wall was stacked with ice. The temperature here was even colder. Stars and music coming from the distant Wei Yang Palace gradually disappeared. The front of the path became darker and darker until nothing was visible. The farther he walked forward, the more he felt as if he was leaving the real world, and falling into an abyss or another world at any time.

Chen Chang Sheng did not pause or slow down. Instead, he walk faster, and ultimately he even started to run.

He ran towards the dark abyss.

After a long time, he ran to the end of the path, and saw that it wasn't fully dark.

The stars already became invisible and the festival lanterns in the capital could not shine into the place but there were still some weak lights in the back of the path. The weak lights slipped through the clear water, and faintly lit up where he stood, in front of a stone door.

This door was about ten zhang(3 zhangs = 10 meter) high and looked very heavy. On the surface, there weren't any decorations. It was simply two huge stones placed together that looked like the

building blocks that god played with as a child. It also looked like a god's coffin. It was extremely gloomy.

What caused Chen Chang Sheng to be even more uneasy was the pressure that faintly penetrated through the door from behind.

In the side door of the Heavenly Academy and the side palace of the Wei Yang Palace, he had felt the aura that Xu Shi Ji emitted intentionally, but compared to the aura behind the door, the aura of a strong General like Xu Shi Ji was like a cricket; completely not on the same level.

Yes, the aura behind the door was something Chen Chang Sheng had never even felt before. Chen Chang Sheng never even heard of words that could accurately describe the aura. It completely surpassed ordinary people's imagination. Getting close to the source would definitely lead to Chen Chang Sheng's absolute demise, and unsurprisingly, his death.

But it applies to more than just a fourteen year old common youngster like him. Even an elite at Starfusion stage like Mo Yu would find it impossible to defend against the pressure behind the door. Even a saint would probably choose to avoid the fight.

The aura was not intentionally emitted by a terrifying being behind the door. Rather, some of the remaining qi escaped through the gaps but even so, it already made Chen Chang Sheng feel cold inside out. His face was pale like snow and his two feet felt like they had froze.

Nanny Ning worried that he would accidentally enter the living exit, and met the legendary being behind the door. Mo Yu did not think so because she was certain that no one, after feeling the aura behind the door, would still dare to push the door and entered in. For an ordinary young man like Chen Chang Sheng who probably could not even stand still, how could he enter?

No one would think that the actual situation would be different from what Mo Yu imagined.

Chen Chang Sheng felt extremely uneasy but he did not fall down. His mind remained calm and clear.

He did not understand why, although he never encountered the aura before, his body and his spirit naturally generated some extremely tiny responses to allow him to stand in front of the aura.

He did not know that when he was just born and eyes weren't even opened yet, he had already met a being similar to the one behind the door.

The sober aura was still there.

Chen Chang Sheng's body was rigid. He did not fall, but also couldn't leave.

Subconsciously, he grabbed the little sword tighter because he felt that if he held the sword tighter, he would be able to stand the pressure more easily and more comfortable, as if there was some

kind of power flowing from the handle into his body to protect him.

He did not know what that power was but he guessed that it was courage.

The little sword was gifted from his senior Yu Ren, when he was preparing to go out.

He read all of the three thousand Scrolls of Way but had never found anyone braver than his senior Yu Ren.

So he thought senior's sword was the source of bravery.

He held the little sword, lifted his leg and stepped forward. His hand fell on the door and he pushed forward.

Silently, the heavy door slowly opened.

In the bottom of the underground in Zhou capital, a door that was never opened after being constructed opened up tonight.

Some dust floated up. That was the dust of history.

This segment of history was already thousands of years old.

.....

Behind the door was darkness, absolute darkness.

Chen Chang Sheng placed the sword horizontally in front of his chest using one hand, and used the other to took out a Nightly Pearl and put it in air.

This Nightly Pearl which was shiny, dazzling and as round as a melon, was the one that Luo Luo gave him to convince him to become her master.

Soft light was emitted out of the Nightly Pearl in his hand and it spreaded out in different directions. But even after so long, it still did not light up any walls.

This was an extremely vast space which was so empty and big that it could hold a real palace.

Chen Chang Sheng could not imagine that, in the ground under the royal palace, there was actually such a big space. Considering the time he ran for before, the place he was standing on now was probably no long in the range of the Zhou royal palace, but somewhere unknown in the capital.

The light of the Nightly Pearl gradually emitted farther and the endless space gradually became more real.

Faintly, there was a silver light far away. It was very dense, like infinite layers of silver chips. It looked as like all of the stars in the

sky fell to the world.

Chen Chang Sheng lifted the Nightly Pearl and walked towards the light. He was shocked to discover that the silver light was made up of silver coins!

Countless silver coins formed a silver sea.

In the middle of the silver sea, there was a golden mountain made of gold.

On top of the golden mountain, there grew a extremely red coral tree.

Among the dense branches of the coral tree, there were infinite fruits made of diamonds and crystals.

Golden mountain, silver sea, red coral tree, and ten thousands of gem fruits.

This image was truly worldly, because it's too affluent, unspeakably affluent.

Chen Chang Sheng was so shocked and wordless that he almost forgot about that aura.

He had never seen this much money.

Accurately speaking, no one on this continent had seen this much treasure.

The surface of the silver sea was made of silver coins. There was a thin layer of frost.

Many silver coins' on the surface already began to fall out, like wood shavings randomly stacked, the silver chips he saw previously were these.

The underground space was very cold, even the silver coins could not stand.

Suddenly, a cold wind blew by.

Waves formed on the surface of the silver sea. An infinite number of silver chips were flowing, the frost got deeper and the depth of the silver sea actually began to stack snow.

This cold wind blew for a really long time.

A layer of frost formed on Chen Chang Sheng's skin. His eyebrows and eyelashes were already colored white.

But his heart was even colder.

Because the cold wind that blew for so long was only a breath.

An extremely long but terrifying breath.

In the darkness, two dim fireballs suddenly appeared.

The two fireballs were pure but cold. They had no color.

As if it was the cold fire coming from hell.

The two fireballs slowly got close to Chen Chang Sheng.

The terrifying aura shrouded the entire underground space.

Chen Chang Sheng could no longer stand and blood began to spill out of his lips.

Suddenly, among the two fireballs, there was something new — emotion.

In the beginning, it was surprise, then shock, then excitement followed by curiosity. Ultimately, it all became coldness and violence.

This was obviously not real deathfire. It was a pair of cold eyes larger than Chen Chang Sheng's entire body.

How big would the being who owns this pair of eyes be?

The Nightly Pearl left Chen Chang Sheng's hand. It floated up and eventually fell on the roof of the space.

Suddenly, the entire roof lit up because of the thousands of Nightly Pearls decorating it. Previously when Chen Chang Sheng looked at the silver sea, he thought that the stars of the sky all came to this world but now he realized that the stars were actually Nightly Pearls.

The underground space gradually lit up.

A black rock appeared in the air.

Immediately, more and more black rocks appeared.

The black rocks were absorbing the light emitted from the roof. They did not spill out any.

Chen Chang Sheng saw it clearly now. It was not a rock, but a scale.

In this world, only one type of scale can be this huge – dragon scale.

A terrifying black dragon slowly appeared in the air.

It was looking down at Chen Chang Sheng. Its two eyes were like deathfire, cold and violent.

Chapter 59 - A Monologue Of A Youngster In Front Of A Black Dragon

This was the highest life form out of all three thousand worlds. This was the coldest existence in this world. Its aura or pressure was unspeakable – aside from great xiuxingists who were out of this world, how could fragile humans stand before this giant black dragon?

Even though Chen Chang Sheng had a strong mind, he still couldn't stand this pressure. He tightly closed up his mouth to prevent the sound of his teeth bumping to come out, yet he could not stop his body from trembling as if every single bone was crying.

Pa! He did not kneel in front of the black dragon, but he could not stand up either. He fell on the cold and hard ground. He felt absent-minded. He did not think about pain, but kept repeating few sentences in his heart.

“The legend is real!”

“There's a dragon inside the royal palace!”

“A noblest Frost Dragon!”

Before he opened up that heavy door, he had thought of many possibilities.

He had thought that the being behind the door was the old guest who was at saint stage and had xiuxing for over a hundred years in the royal palace mentioned by Luo Luo. It could also be the central battle array of the royal palace, or even be the corpse of a dragon. He could never imagine that...

There's an alive dragon behind the door!

After the ancient past, people could barely find any traces of dragons on the continent. These noble but strong creatures were gradually becoming holy beings that only existed in books. No one had seen it. Chen Chang Sheng had tried to picture a dragon many times. He wanted to see it.

Tonight he finally saw it, but now he wished he never did.

The dragon was floating in air, looking down at him.

The lights emitted from the thousands of Nightly Pearls at the roof were absorbed by his black scales. The black dragon was as scary as a living abyss, but what really caused fear was its pair of eyes. The eyes were filled with coldness and brutality.

Chen Chang Sheng understood the meaning of its look. It was that of a human child looking at ants under the tree.

They were extraordinarily pure, cold and violent for no known reason or explanation.

Kids could stare at ants for half an hour and then stepped on all of them to death.

This was the attitude of high level creatures to subordinates.

Chen Chang Sheng eventually understood the sentences Mo Yu said before she left.

Yes, no one could leave from the Tong Palace because the living exit of Tong Gong was under the cold pond.

The cold pond was the real dragon pond. A black dragon lived here and any human who met it would meet death.

Yet Mo Yu never thought that he actually had the bravery or stupidity to walk in front of the black dragon.

The frost on Chen Chang Sheng's eyelashes fell down like the snow on the a Chimonanthus (some plant) blown off by wind.

A tiny wind was blown up in the underground dimension.

The black dragon was preparing to breathe.

Chen Chang Sheng knew that he would die at the next moment.

The moment he pushed the door, he prepared many plans. Even

if he really met the old guest who was at saint stage, he did not think he would definitely die because he believed that as long as he could communicate, then he could change his fate.

But behind the door was a black dragon.

In legends, the dragon was noble, strong but never kind.

Dragon wouldn't communicate with humans. They disdained to communicate with humans or at least they felt that it was shameful to communicate with a common human like him.

To this, he didn't have any preparation.

He had prepared for death for many years but when death truly came, he realized that he wasn't prepared well enough for it.

He realized that death was something that one couldn't prepare for.

The underground dimension was deadly silent. The lights of the Nightly Pearls, like snow, fell on his body.

He felt a bit cold and suddenly, he felt very tired. He knew whatever he was going to do was simply a waste of time, so he stopped trying to stand up, and even stopped thinking what would happen next. He raised his head, looked at the terrifying mountain-like dragon's head with a calm and relieved composure.

“It seems that my master is right, I am truly unfortunate.”

He did not know if this black dragon could understand the human language or not but he thought, such a noble creature, even if it could understand, it would feel shameful to listen. Because of this, Chen Chang Sheng spoke the words that he never told anyone before to the black dragon.

“I have an incurable disease.”

“I can’t live past twenty.”

“Master is the best doctor in the continent and my medical skill is not bad but, we both can’t cure it.”

“This disease is more fatal than any fatal disease. It’s not a disease, but fate.”

“I am unfortunate.”

“After arriving at the capital, I spent a lot of effort. I finally got into the Tradition Academy, acquired the right to participate in the Great Trial and although I am still very far away from Ling Yan Pavilion, after taking the first step towards it and encountering Luo Luo, I thought my fortune was gradually getting better.”

“Surprisingly, I encounter you tonight.”

“My fortune is actually still so bad.”

Chen Chang Sheng's face was a little pale not because of fear but because of the frost and snow.

Now that he was fearless, he could face a legendary brutal black dragon.

He no longer cared if this black dragon could understand him or not, or if it wanted to hear his words or not.

He knew that he would die soon, so if he didn't speak these words now, he won't have any chance to say them.

“Everyone says that life is fated and that no matter how terrible it is, it's unchangeable. However, I don't want to give up.”

A power came from nowhere and supported him to stand up. He raised his head and looked at the beautiful Nightly Pearls on the roof. He narrowed his eyes a bit, like a pitiful joey looking at the first sunshine in the morning, he was happy and hopeful.

“I want to stay alive. I want to live past twenty, then one hundred, even five hundred, eight hundred. I want to live longer and longer. The best would be if I could live forever and never die....but first, I must live past twenty, so I live very carefully.”

“Everyday I sleep early and wake up early. Everyday I exercise. I was never picky and never overate. It’s not my personality, so I only can have a healthy diet. According to the medical books, I use a little balance to measure meats and veggies to eat and even so, I never felt tired of it. Until after twelve, I turned all of these into instincts.”

“I care about time. I use all my time to study xiuxing, I want to interact with all of these fantastic knowledges before twenty and even more, I want to change my fate through xiuxing. This way, I can have the opportunity to see more beautiful landscapes after twenty.”

He looked at black dragon said, “Yes, all I did, all of the rules I set for myself are for staying alive. The most important thing in life is to stay alive. For this, I am willing to pay any price. I am trying my best to stay alive.”

The black dragon’s look at the youngster was still cold and brutal — probably because it didn’t understand the human language or more likely because it didn’t care. It was like an ant sadly waving its foreleg towards a tree branch and the child observing it only finding it interesting or funny.

Chen Chang Sheng already didn’t care about the black dragon’s reaction. He only wanted to get it off his chest in the last moments of his life.

“Changing fate is really too hard. The years I lived were truly too tiring, but no matter how tired I was, I still want to live because the pork dipped with oil and salt in Xi Ning was truly tasty,

because there are really so many interesting knowledge shared in books and because life is really beautiful.”

“I don’t want to die, but I can’t promise I will live to twenty, more accurately, I don’t have any confidence at all. I don’t want the little girl delivered by my bamboo dragonfly to become a widow so I came to the capital to cancel the engagement, but then?”

“Everyone who knows me thinks I am too precocious. Unlike a fourteen year old youngster, all say I am mature but they never think....I am only five years away from death, I am still young, but I am already half buried in soil. How can’t I be mature!?”

These past years, Chen Chang Sheng was highly concerned on controlling his emotion, because being emotional isn’t good for his health, but now everything was not necessary so he was no longer calm. He looked at the black dragon or this world and shouted angrily.

“I don’t want to die.”

“But I am about to die now.”

“I feel so sad.”

Chen Chang Sheng felt very sad and his eye sockets were a little red. He thought he would cry, but he discovered that ever since he controlled emotion and was unwilling to die, he forgot how to cry.

With this, he felt even more sad. Then he unimaginably calmed down.

“I appreciate that you didn’t eat me right away. Although this may not be your true intent, you let me finish these words, so I want to thank you. I really want to live, so even though it’s very funny, but please allow me to fight you at last.”

After speaking the last sentence, he raised the little sword in his hand and faced the black dragon.

He thought silently in his mind: death, come!

Let’s fight.

Like the past years.

The black dragon slowly came to him and a cold hurricane echoed in the vast underground dimension. Its body was way too huge, so a slight move would cause the world to change.

Unimaginable coldness came to Chen Chang Sheng’s body.

His eyelashes were frosted again, and he felt like the blood in his body was about to be frozen.

Death was before his eyes.

Yet he felt a calmness that he never had before, even relief.

After ten, the shadow of death and terrifying pressure that always followed him disappeared.

He felt light and comfortable. Being without pressure was such a nice feeling.

He finally understood how to defeat the fear carried by death. The solution was only death itself.

He laughed as the frost on his eyelashes spreaded out like a white flower.

Master, do you see that?

I am about to change my fate.

You said I will die at twenty.

Now, even though I am not fifteen yet, I am about to die.

Fate is actually not undefeatable.

Chapter 60 - Entering The Palace

Xiao Ming Palace was a thousand four hundred and ninety-four yards away from the south entrance of the royal palace in the western direction. It was seven hundred or so yards from the Wei Yang Palace. How long would it take her to get to Wei Yang Palace without alarming the guards in the palaces? And what chapter was the music in the Wei Yang Palace up to?

The southern ambassadors have definitely arrived and been seated already. The Ivy Festival was about to start and she should be able to catch its beginning later but first she needed to know the reason. Luo Luo thought about all these things and was silent. Coldness climbed up on her face and seemed to freeze up the entire palace.

The good thing was that besides the one female servant, there were only two other people in the palace — Luo Luo and the owner of this building. Therefore, no one would rebuke her for her impolite expression.

Xiao Ming Palace was the quietest and most luxurious palace in the royal palaces because the beloved and only daughter of the Divine Queen lived there. Princess Ping Guo, the young girl who sat in the host's spot, was pretty. She wasn't exactly matured yet but her expression showed hints of amorousness.

Facing the beloved Princess Ping Guo of the Zhou Dynasty, normal people wouldn't even dare to breathe heavily, but Luo Luo's attitude didn't change. Her words were rather sharp, "Ping Guo, you deceived me and led me here to not participate in the Ivy

Festival. Don't you want to tell me your reason?"

The female servant represented Princess Ping Guo earlier and invited her to Xiao Ming Palace. Little did she know that after arriving Xiao Ming Palace, the female servant would keep on delaying her. When she realized what was happening, Princess Ping Guo finally showed up. But a long time had already passed.

She knew that Princess Ping Guo did this because someone asked her to, and the reason would be related to the Ivy Festival. She only focused on the followers of the Divine Queen who was trying to bring the Tradition Academy down, but she never knew that their intention was always on Chen Chang Sheng.

Hearing Luo Luo's rebuke, Princess Ping Guo didn't get angry. She smiled and said, "It's been a few months since we last saw each other. I heard you were pretending to be a nice student in the Tradition Academy and was a little curious. By the way, what kind of person is your master?"

Luo Luo didn't bother with her question and stared into her eyes while continuing her questioning, "Why?"

"Mo Yu knew I was close to you so she wanted me to keep you busy for a while. But why.....she didn't really tell me."

Princess Ping Guo answered and her expression was rather calm. It seemed like it wasn't a big deal.

But Luo Luo saw the pretentiousness in her eyes – many people knew that Princess Ping Guo and Lady Mo Yu wasn't exactly in a friendly relationship, but because of the Divine Queen, they kept a lively surface in the public's eyes. Luo Luo obviously didn't trust her explanation entirely.

Princess Ping Guo said, “Just don't think about it too much. Mo Yu was asked by my mother to host the last night of the Ivy Festival. What she cared about the most was the marriage proposal between that phoenix and that child of Family of Qiu Shan. She told me to keep you here because she was afraid of you jumping out at the last second and interrupting their business.

Since the princess's face was young, it was kind of strange of her to call Qiu Shan Jun a child.

Luo Luo wasn't used to her expression and wrinkled her eyebrows slightly and said with disgust, “Talk normally.....I'm not you, why would I interrupt anything.”

Princess Ping Guo's eyes lit up and said shyly, “Why would I interrupt anything? You sure do like to joke Luo Luo.”

Luo Luo said, “Everyone who lived in the royal palace knew that.....you don't like Xu You Rong.”

Princess Ping Guo's smile vanished from her face and said coldly, “Why do I have to like her just because my Mother does? Besides, that child of Qiu Shan Jun is perfect and outstanding. It would only be right for him to become the prince of Zhou Dynasty. Why

should he marry a dirty monkey like her!”

Luo Luo mocked lightly, “Even if you bring up that fight you lost against her when you guys were young, it wouldn’t alter her status in the hearts of the Divine Queen or anyone. Talk less of Qiu Shan Jun, even I would rather marry her and not you.”

Princess Ping Guo was furious, “Which side are you on?”

Luo Luo said, “It’s not like you never knew. I always liked her – of course but if you let me leave, I can stand on your side.”

Princess Ping Guo stood up and looked at her quietly and then suddenly smiled, “This is the first time that Mo Yu sought help from me. Do you think I will fail her?”

Luo Luo stood up and said, “You never did anything that wouldn’t be beneficial to you.”

Princess Ping Guo sighed, “I’m a princess. I need to do something for Zhou Dynasty.”

Luo Luo thought for a moment and realized what she was talking about. It should be related with tonight’s proposal from the southern ambassadors, but she didn’t understand why her appearance in the Ivy Festival would have an effect on it. Although Luo Luo respected Qiu Shan Jun, she never had any thoughts about him.

She raised her hands towards her belt. She could take out the Whip of Falling Rain easily.

The person who was standing in front of her was Princess Ping Guo of the Zhou Dynasty. She was beloved by the Divine Queen. Even Luo Luo couldn't do much against her but right now, Luo Luo grew a desire to kill her. She just realized that although the princess only dared to deceive and get her in Xiao Ming Palace, Mo Yu could target her master!

Princess Ping Guo was familiar with her personality, but she wasn't afraid. She smiled and said, "I heard that you handicapped my distant nephew on another night of the Ivy Festival. Good for you Luo Luo, I can't defeat you. But.....if I'm harmed, can your family handle this?"

Luo Luo looked at her and said, "The Family of Tian Hai is crazy, we can't handle you guys.....but you know as well that my family has a lot of crazy people too. If I got into any accident in the capital, can you and Mo Yu handle it?"

Princess Ping Guo said innocently, "This is the royal palace of Zhou Dynasty, what could harm you?"

There were countless royal guests and xiuxingists hidden around Xiao Ming Palace in the night.

Those people obviously wouldn't dare to harm Luo Luo, but they could circle and bind her in the palace.

For same reason, Mo Yu couldn't harm Chen Chang Sheng so she went out of her way to seal him in.

Right now the master and the student were in a similar situation.

“Don't pretend to be naive, innocent, or pure in front of me. I'm also familiar with that.”

Luo Luo held the Whip of Falling Rain and slowly drew it out and looked at the princess seriously, “If I want to harm myself, who can stop me?”

Ping Guo's expression turned serious because she felt Luo Luo's determination. If Luo Luo was actually hurt in Zhou Palace, then she and Mo Yu wouldn't be able to handle the consequences afterward. The most important thing was that the Queen didn't know about tonight's event. What could she do against the rage of the Crimson River of Eight Hundred Miles?

“What's so good about that youngster named Chen Chang Sheng? Why do you care about him so much?” She looked at Luo Luo confusingly.

“This is not something you should care about, nor is it something you actually care about.”

Luo Luo lifted her right hand slightly and the whip was dragged across the floor. She looked at Princess Ping Guo and said, “I don't care about your intentions. I just need you to command the people

outside to make path for me. I need to go join the Ivy Festival now.”

Princess Ping Guo was silent. Although she seemed to struggle inside, she was actually calculating the time silently. After making sure there was enough time for Mo Yu to trap that youngster in Tong Palace, she then picked up her head and smiled.

“Sure, go ahead,” she looked at Luo Luo, “I hope you still can make it.”

Although the night was getting darker, the palace was still as bright as daylight. Luo Luo arrived at the outside of Wei Yang Palace. Her hairs were lifted slightly and there was sweat on her forehead. She glanced at the shadow in the back of the palace and saw Officer Jin and Li. She listened quietly for a moment and her eyebrows were lifted with rage.

Chen Chang Sheng wasn't in the palace. In the earlier moment, he was speaking with Yu Dong General, Xu Shi Ji, then Prince Chen Liu spoke with him for a short while. Due to this reason, Officer Jin and Li couldn't approach him, but little did they know that in the next moment, he disappeared in the night and was nowhere to be found.

Luo Luo glanced at the Zhou Royal Palace. There were countless buildings and gardens. She was silent. She knew how difficult a task like this would be. She had to find a person in such a vast area.

What should she do next?

Some people in the royal family didn't want her master or her to appear at the Ivy Festival because the southern ambassador was going to propose but why is this? She squeezed the tiny bag in her sleeve and thought back to her master's words before they left the Tradition Academy. Her eyebrows lifted even higher. It seemed like they were about to take off and fly.

Even though they didn't want her to do it, she will do it.

Luo Luo didn't bother to think any further and pushed open the closed door of Wei Yang Palace. She headed for the light inside.

Inside the palace, the southern ambassadors have already arrived and was greeting the students of the Six Ivies and people of the government and the Tradition. Some people who never met each other were introducing themselves. Everything seemed to be peaceful and lively.

Just this moment, the palace door was pushed open.

Although the cool night wind couldn't get in, the light inside the palace changed and the mood changed as well because the person who pushed open the door was impolite.

After getting a good look on who the young girl standing near the palace door was, the entire building got quiet.

Earlier some people noticed that there was no one sitting on the Tradition Academy's seats and were surprised. Now they finally saw the aforementioned girl.

Luo Luo's eyes glared across the palace.

That middle aged man should be the head of the Family of Qiu Shan, Qiu Shan Yuan Xin.

That elder who had all gray hair should be the senior elder of Mountain Li, Xiao Song Gong.

That noble woman who wore a white gown and custom robe of the Tradition should be related to the current Virgin because she was sitting close to the female professors of the Thirteen Divisions of Green Light.

Those three expressionless young men who placed their swords on their knees should be the rumored Seven Rules of Heaven.

She saw the young students of the other six Ivies and the ones who passed the semi-trial.

There were a lot of people in the palace, but Chen Chang Sheng wasn't there.

Luo Luo's eyes finally stopped at the seat in front.

That seat was very close to the main seats where Prince Chen Liu was sitting at. It was also very close to Qiu Shan Yuan Xin and Xiao Song Gong's spot.

A young man was sitting in that spot.

That young man's expression was soft and kind. His aura was normal, but he was definitely a xiuxingist.

There was a spark in his eyes.

Luo Luo saw that person and knew he was Gou Han Shi of the Seven Rules of Heaven.

The well-praised Gou Han Shi.

Chapter 61 - Let Me Speak One Word To You

The southern ambassadors arrived at the capital as guests. From a logical standpoint, they shouldn't ask actively but that woman wearing the white gown was close to the teachers and was a student of the Thirteen Division of Green Light. She knew Xu Shi Ji as well. After seeing the weird atmosphere in the palace, she couldn't help but ask.

Most of the people in the palace at the moment had participated in the first night of Ivy Festival and so, they all recognized the little girl who handicapped Tian Hai Ya Er. Hearing the guest's question, someone answered, "She's a student of Tradition Academy. For some reason, she arrived late."

Hearing this answer, the woman from Mountain Virgin was a little surprised. The three young men who placed their swords on their knees all raised their head and glanced at Luo Luo. Their eyes were like sharp exquisite swords drawn from their sheathes.

Even in the far south, people already knew Tradition Academy was in ruins. Earlier during their trip, they heard the incident that happened on the first night of Ivy Festival and then knew there were two new students added to the Tradition Academy. Is this young girl the genius that popped out of nowhere?

Those three men from Mountain Li were in the well-praised Seven Rules of Heaven. In their eyes, defeating Tian Hai Ya Er wasn't an extraordinary feat, but since this girl is so young, she should be treated with respect.

Gou Han Shi also raised his head and looked at Luo Luo, but he only smiled warmly without showing much care.

Luo Luo didn't bother with the three youngsters from Mountain Li that glanced at her. Although the Seven Rules of Heaven were respectable, all her mind right now was on Gou Han Shi. She sensed clearly that this person wasn't an easy figure. She herself wasn't his opponent, but what about her master? Can he defeat him?

The entire palace was quiet for a moment. She was standing near the entrance and was actually out of place.

Xu Shi Ji said coldly, "It's already impolite for you to arrive late. Go sit down so you don't become a joke to our guests."

Hearing this seemingly blunt comment, Prince Chen Liu was stumped but then, he smiled and thought to himself, Xu Shi Ji still haven't guessed this young girl's identity correctly. It seemed that the trust of the Divine Queen to him would be limited and far from Xue Xing Chuan.

Prince Chen Liu glanced at the principal of Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu. Right now, they were the only two who knew the true identity of Luo Luo in this palace. Seeing Mao Qiu Yu's serious expression as if he didn't know anything, the prince thought of something and turned to glance at the bishop, Mei Li Sha. However, the bishop's eyes were half closed and seemed to have almost fallen asleep.

“The elders sure can endure the pressure.....”

Prince Chen Liu sighed. He knew that the bishop was hiding his wisdom. It was safe to say that he already guessed the identity of Luo Luo.

Luo Luo looked at Xu Shi Ji for a second. If it was any other time and someone yelled at her like this, she wouldn't endure such mockery or insult. She may be kind and nice in front of Chen Chang Sheng, but when she was acting out of rage, even Princess Ping Guo was scared of her.

But tonight's situation was different. Her hand was squeezing the tiny bag in her sleeve tightly and she thought about Chen Chang Sheng's previous words. She took a deep breath and pushed all of her rage down. She didn't talk with Xu Shi Ji and walked straight to Tradition Academy's spot in the corner.

Just this moment, music started playing and the curtain was lifted. Under the lead of dozens of servants, a woman luxuriously dressed slowly entered the palace.

She was Lady Mo Yu.

Although her influence on the court was powerful, she didn't have a proper status on the surface. Speak logically, she should be more low key in these kinds of events but they are currently in the royal palace and everyone knew that she represented the Divine Queen. Therefore, they couldn't just sit quietly. Most of the people stood up and welcomed her.

Several hundred people in the palace all stood up and the guests from the south didn't make an exception either. The crowd was like waves under the light of the Nightly Pearls.

Only two people didn't stand up.

One of them was the bishop of the Department of Education. The elder's eyes were closed and a faint smile was on his lips. It seemed like he was actually sleeping.

The other one was Luo Luo in the corner. She stared straight into Mo Yu's face in a moderately impolite fashion.

Everyone in the field stood up except two people. Of course she was a bright spot and everyone looked at her.

Xu Shi Ji's face turned gloomier. Although he knew this young girl named Luo Luo had a powerful background, tonight was the night that the southern ambassadors will propose which meant that he need everything under his control. This was the reason why he yelled at her previously. He needed to see if there would be any changing variables in this event.

The changing variable seemed to be coming.

The bishop's status was higher than him and so, Xu Shi Ji couldn't express his anger towards him. He could only direct it to the last person remaining.

He looked coldly at Tradition Academy's spot in the corner.

Just like him, no one dared to look straight at the bishop who sitting in the front. Everyone's eyes landed on Luo Luo. [Their eyes turned low on Luo Luo since she was sitting.](#)

In the original text, the author was using a word pun, "Their eyes landed on Luo Luo, or in chinese '落在了落落身上'. In this case, landed and Luo were the same characters in Chinese. However, I can't directly translate and fully express this pun, therefore I changed the context to "Their eyes turned low on Luo Luo since she was sitting" in hopes that it will at least represent some effort of giving similarity of sound between "low" and "Luo"

Luo Luo didn't even care or notice the eyes of others. She continued to stare at Mo Yu. Her eyes were calm and her expression was serious. She was trying to warn her.

Everyone's heart began to race. They didn't know what would happen next.

Just when Xu Shi Ji was ready to yell at her, a crispy voice was heard.

"It's fine."

Mo Yu smiled and said. She extended her arms while her sleeves were lowered. She gestured everyone to sit.

Her sentence seemed to direct everyone including Xu Shi Ji to show her forgiveness to Luo Luo.

But Luo Luo knew her sentence was directed to her.

She promised Luo Luo that Chen Chang Sheng wouldn't be harmed.

Luo Luo knew Mo Yu wouldn't lie, especially at a critical moment like this. She knew that Mo Yu did something and warned her.

Although her heart relaxed a bit, her body didn't.

She sat in the corner and quietly looked at Mo Yu. Her eyes didn't turn an inch away.

She was like a tiger hiding in the forest and looking at its prey silently. It could leap out at anytime and rip its prey into pieces.

Mo Yu felt that pressure from the eyes in the far corner. She raised her eyebrows slightly because she was surprised. Her thought was the same as Princess Ping Guo's. They thought that Luo Luo was only going to school at the Tradition Academy because she was bored of staying in the Herb Garden and was trying to play a game with an ordinary person.

Even if Luo Luo was in any kind of relationship with Chen Chang Sheng, she shouldn't value him this much.

Since Mo Yu could feel the pressure from her eyes, other xiuxingists in the palace also noticed it as well — especially people around the position of Tradition Academy. They suddenly felt a cold shiver go down their spine.

Chen Chang Sheng thought he died, but he didn't.

The Black Mighty Dragon stopped in midair in front of him and didn't continue any further.

The two were dozens of yards apart, but because the black dragon was gigantic, this distance was close. He could actually see the frost and snow on the dragon's teeth. The black dragon was breathing deeply and freezing wind was blowing. Countless snow and ice pieces were swirling around in the air.

Chen Chang Sheng felt he was standing outside of Xue Lao City in the far north.

What made the black dragon stop wasn't his bravery nor the words he said before, it was the short sword in his hand.

The seemingly ordinary short sword.

Looking at the short sword in his hand, countless stars seemed to

light up in the depths of the black dragon's eyes. Then, the stars were demolished.

Every star was a different mood and feeling.

Confusion.

Misunderstanding.

Surprise.

Insecurity.

Hatred.

Separation.

Encounter.

Kindness.

Caution.

Rage.

Generosity.

Indifference.

Compassion.

Oblivion.

Unforgettable.

Disappointment.

Helplessness.

Hope.

And there was hope.

Countless emotions and expressions were shown in the cold eyes of the black dragon.

It was hard to understand as a human why a single expression from the eyes could contain so much emotion.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't understand. Snow was covering up his

body but he still held the sword tightly. He looked at the black, mighty dragon silently.

The black dragon looked at him quietly as well, for a long time.

Suddenly, the black dragon.....let out a deep roar!

The freezing wind started blowing violently. The ice and snow on the walls of the underworld started to collapse. They flew around in the air.

That roar was a word because it contained a specific meaning.

That deep roar seemed to be a simple sound, a single syllable.

A short sound, yet complex one.

It was like a storm — although it seemed to be violent and simple, countless streams and directions of wind were contained inside.

This was the language of the Dragons.

This was the dragon language that disappeared in the human world for thousands, or even tens of thousands of years.

Until this day, perhaps no one heard the dragon language and people who spoke the dragon language.....would be hard if not

impossible to find.

Dragons are the highest life form in the world. They have the most perfect body and soul. Only with the combination of their strong and complex living structure and their powerful spirit could they communicate like this.

The most simple things are also the most complex.

“Is this the legendary language of dragons?”

Chen Chen Sheng was shocked.

Even if he wasn't affected by the wind and snow, it is easy to imagine that he would still be frozen at this moment.

He was actually shocked.

His shock was different from anyone else's shock after hearing the words of a dragon. Or one could say his surprise was greater than anyone else's.

He has heard this voice before.

Back in the old temple of Xi Ning Village, he and his senior read all of the Three Thousand Scrolls of the Way. The last scroll of them contained a thousand six hundred and one words and each word hinted the secret of this world. They didn't understand the

words on the scroll and so, they went to ask their master. Their master said he didn't understand as well but....he knew how to read them.

That's why Chen Chang Sheng and his senior began to learn how to read those words.

Although they didn't understand the meaning behind it, they knew how to pronounce them.

He never knew what the strange words meant.

Only until now, in the underground of Zhou Palace, in front of a Mighty Frost Dragon did he realized what the words were.

Those words were the language of dragons.

The last scroll of the Three Thousand Scrolls of the Way was actually written in the language of dragons.

Silence.

A long period of silence.

The black dragon looked quietly at Chen Chang Sheng as if she was waiting for something.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't know what she was waiting for and so, he stayed silent.

The black dragon's eyes again lit up countless stars only to have them be put out moments later.

The dragon stayed silent for a moment, then roared deeply.

This roar was really deep. Freezing wind wasn't blowing but a hint of death was contained inside.

Chen Chang Sheng's eyelashes were blown off.

His Taoist hairstyle was blown off, his black hair was flowing behind him. It landed on the ground moments later.

His shirt was blown out of his body and landed on the ground as well.

The dragon's roar was deep. The end of fury was disappointing, and then hopeless.

Chen Chang Sheng knew he was about to die again — “again” wasn't funny, it was sad.

The black dragon seemed to have some sort of hope in him which is why he let him live a while longer.

But now those hopes were gone.

Chen Chang Sheng suddenly felt sad but not because he was hopeless and not because of his approaching death.

For some reason, hearing the deep roar of the black dragon made him extremely sad.

It felt as if he saw countless years of endless loneliness.

In the dark underground, deceived, cheated and guarded with hopelessness.

He experienced those before as well.

The shadow of death was like the darkness of night. It tortured him for years and never stopped for a second.

He could tell no one and hide no where. He could only wait for the final judgement in loneliness.

He suddenly wanted to comfort this black dragon.

He didn't know what to say, he just felt he should say something in a situation like this.

Therefore, he said one word to the black dragon.

He didn't know the meaning of this word.

It was the first word that he had learnt in the last scroll of the Three Thousand Scrolls of Way when he was younger.

It was a word with a single syllable, and its pronunciation was strange.

That single word seemed to contain countless information.

Hearing this word, the eyes of the black dragon started to shoot out millions of violent light rays!

But the entire world fell into silence.

Chapter 62 - Zhi Zhi

Silence, absolute silence, extremely long silence, no sound of wind, no sound of water dropping, no sound of breathing. Both the black dragon and Chen Chang Sheng held their breath and remained wordless. These actions were probably due to nervousness which seemed to rise from the finally arriving hope.

The black dragon's hope was unknown, but Chen Chang Sheng's hope was obviously from escaping from death. When he saw the black dragon's whisker slowly float up, silently come to him and lightly touch the center of his eyebrows, he was not sure what would happen next.

The place where this dragon's whiskers connected to its jaw was extremely thick and gradually got thinner further up. Its tip was about the same size as a human's little finger and it looked a bit sharp. Its surface was as dark as night and as transparent as jade. There was black light faintly rolling inside, like dark clouds.

The tip of the dragon's whiskers barely touched the center of his eyebrows. The distance was so close that human eyes could not even tell if it touched or not. Chen Chang Sheng felt more and more nervous. He was just back from the edge of death so it was easy for him to feel fear. Lots of sweat came out of the hand he used to grab the handle. The sweat rapidly froze due to the low temperature.

Quietly, the black whisker gently pointed at the center of his eyebrows.

The feeling was very strange, not so terrifying, but rather slightly cool, which actually made his mind clear. It let him faintly understand what the black dragon meant.

It wanted him keep going.

Chen Chang Sheng did not hesitate. He spoke the second word, still the word on the last scroll of the three thousand Scrolls of Way.

The pronunciation of the this word was still very strange and it was extremely difficult for him to pronounce it. Even though his hand was covered with a layer of snow, it can be still seen that his face became red due to swelling and his mouth got pale from perhaps speaking out this word. It seemed to exhaust his spirit.

The black dragon's whisker lightly moved. Its dark tip contracted and flipped in front of the center of his eyebrows. It then pointed at the center of his eyebrows again.

Chen Chang Sheng knew, so he spoke the third word, then the fourth, then fifth....

As the type of strange syllables came out of his mouth, his spirit swiftly became exhausted. It grew weaker and weaker. Simultaneously, he could feel the coldness in the surrounding gradually decrease. After speaking about ten words, warmth came back to his inner organs again.

The black dragon's look was still cold, but its whisker was contracting and flipping faster and faster, shining out countless black lines under the light emitting from the Nightly Pearl and eventually looking like an infinite amount of flowers blooming. The flowers symbolized its heart which was very delighted now.

Chen Chang Sheng felt its happiness, but some of his fear still remained. The approximately ten syllables of dragon language he said, was not following the order in the last scroll of the three thousand scrolls of way, but randomly chosen from the one thousand six hundred and one words. They shouldn't form a sentence, but this dragon actually understood it.

He did so because he was a cautious person. He was not sure if he was right or wrong, but at least for now, there wasn't a problem.

The black whisker gradually stopped moving, slowly got away from the center of his eyebrows and lightly touched his hand which was holding the sword. It did not show any animosity.

Chen Chang Sheng received its signal and finally fully relaxed.

The moment shrouded by the shadow of death finally passed. The terrifying pressure that stacked over a long time suddenly disappeared. His thinking changed as the the environment changed, the frost on his body fell off and dust which came from nowhere slipped through the gaps of the clothes and into the air.

From the moment he pushed the door open, he was always extremely nervous. He only knew he saw a black dragon but it

wasn't until now did he get a chance to truly see the black dragon's appearance. It wasn't until now did he dare to look closely at the black dragon.

This is a Mighty Frost Dragon.

Even among the dragon race, this was still the most noble being — one of the legendary holy creatures, at the same level with the Mighty Golden Dragon and the True Dragon above Cloud Nine.

Different from the Mighty Frost Dragon described in myths and legends who loved violence, cleanliness and being as beautiful as the dark sky, Chen Chang Sheng saw a lot of dust on this black dragon and even a lot of broken dragon scales!

Those dragon scales were half falling out. They looked very ugly, like the scales of dead fish.

Chen Chang Sheng was very surprised. If the scrolls of way's descriptions of the Mighty Frost Dragon was correct, then how could it look like this? As a youngster who had mysophobia, he clearly knew that it was impossible for a creature who cared about cleanliness so much to stand such a situation.

What made him surprised was, as the coldness gradually decreased, he actually saw two very thick iron chains behind the black dragon. The two chains tightly locked the dragon's two claws in the back and deeply squeezed into the scales. It looked extremely terrifying!

This black dragon actually..wasn't the protector of the Great Zhou royal palace, but a prisoner!

The two chains, covered with thick layers of frost, was made of unknown materials. They showed no signs of breaking which was logical. If they could lock a Frost Mighty Dragon underground, it's definitely no ordinary chains.

The other end of the two chains was at the wall.

It was a stone wall around a hundred zhang high(3 zhang = 10 meters). It decorated a huge image. The paint on the image already eroded over time, but what was left was still comprehensible. There wasn't any landscape, just two people.

Two scary looking people.

The wall was very tall and the picture was very big. The two people obviously also looked very tall and big, like gods. They were equipped with armor and weapons. One person held a mace and the other held a long whip. They were the door-gods.

One of them was called Qin Zhong, the other was called Yu Gong.

These two Generals followed the first Emperor for their life, from the establishment of the Great Zhou dynasty until when the humans defeated demons at last. Although they were not as accomplished as Wang Zhi Ce, they were even more brave. Both were very strong as they got into saint stage when they were very

young. They were the real elites who were rarely seen in the world.

While they all were generals, they were much stronger than the generals of today.

The chains that imprisoned the black dragon were held by the two Generals in the picture.

Such plot obviously had its own purpose.

Seeing this image, Chen Chang Sheng faintly understood that this black dragon was probably caught in the period of the first Emperor.

He was thinking about the fantastic era, thinking about those elites who were almost becoming myths or had already become myths and thinking about those images in the Ling Yan Pavilion. He really felt pity for this dragon.

Maybe because of the humiliations and pressure from the demons, humans were incredibly strong at that era. Countless elites rose so that even creatures like the Mighty Frost Dragon could be caught and held as pathetic prisoners.

From the period of the first Emperor to now, how many years had passed?

In the cold, lonely, and dark underground, how did this black dragon insist to suffer for so long?

“You want to talk to me, right?” Chen Chang Sheng asked.

The black dragon’s whisker floated up again and lightly touched his lip, like a dragonfly dip water.

“I just want to say, I don’t understand the meaning of those words.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at him and said, “But, you can teach me.”

The black dragon’s eyes suddenly became extraordinarily bright, even more bright than the sum of the thousands of Nightly Pearl.

Chen Chang Sheng thought, unsurprisingly you could understand human language, then if you want to translate, I can learn the language of dragon race. He looked at the black dragon and continued, “I know that the language of dragon race was very hard, but I am very good at learning. As long as you have the patience, I can definitely learn it.”

Suddenly, the black dragon made a deep shout.

Chen Chang Sheng was dumbfounded.

The black dragon’s whisker rose without making any wind current and it pointed four times at the center of his eyebrows as

fast as lightning and as light as dust.

Chen Chang Sheng frowned, thinking about the meaning.

The black dragon lightly pointed at the same place again for four times and simultaneously the dragon made a deep shout.

Chen Chang Sheng understood now.

In the previous sentence, he said four “I’s”

This is what the black dragon attempted to tell him.

“I?” Chen Chang Sheng pointed at himself and asked.

The dragon language was very complicated. Countless segments of one syllable could be rearranged into an infinite number of permutations. Different combinations were expressions of different meanings. If he wanted to fully learn it, it would be a very long process. He knew that the dragon’s roar had the meaning “I,” but definitely not just “I,” but...at least it had “I.”

Looking at Chen Chang Sheng’s action, the black dragon was first dazed and then suddenly, it began to roll!

Its huge body was constantly rolling in the underground dimension, forming a terrifying hurricane!

At the same time, a strange sound kept coming up from the black dragon's mouth.

From approximately a thousand years ago to now, it had never been so happy before. It did not know what kind of roar it should use to celebrate.

Yet because of some reasons, it must suppressed its roar and its laugh. (In Chinese, both roar and laugh were pronounced Xiao, so author is making a pun here.)

“Zhi Zhi....ZhiZhi....ZhiZhi...”

It sounded like a mouse shouting. The noise was very funny.

Yet there was extreme happiness inside.

Chen Chang Sheng did not know what the black dragon did before to be imprisoned by the Great Zhou dynasty. Now he saw it feel happy simply because there was a human doing the simplest communication with it. Chen Chang Sheng felt touched, and pitied it greatly.

Not sure how much time had passed, but the black dragon finally stopped rolling, and calmed down.

It looked at Chen Chang Sheng and felt his honest sympathy. Its look gradually got kind.

Its whisker floated up again and paused in the air between his eyebrows.

It waited for Chen Chang Sheng to open his mouth again.

Chen Chang Sheng thought a bit and spoke something that the black dragon didn't want to hear.

"I know you really want to speak to someone....but now I can't do it. I have a very important thing that I need to leave right away."

The black dragon's look became cold again.

Chen Chang Sheng said seriously, "I promise you, as soon as I finish this thing, I will come back to find you, learn language with you, and talk to you."

The black dragon's look was still cold, and even somewhat doubtful.

As a noble Mighty Frost Dragon imprisoned by human for so many years, it would never forget what its father said before.

"If humans are trustworthy, then we should be the rulers of this world."

Chapter 63 - Coincidence

The black dragon thought, humans are all shameless liars. Otherwise, I wouldn't have to suffer for so long in this place. Just because I'm black, doesn't mean I like darkness. In the very beginning, the nights were truly dark, mom.....

Wait no, what am I thinking?

Ok, the youngster looks very honest and smells very nice. He doesn't look like a liar. He's just like the man whose last name was Wang back then. However, I am not even sure if the man's words were real or not. Why should I trust this youngster?

After I let you leave, you definitely won't come back anymore. What do you mean by finishing your thing and then coming back to chat with me? You think I really didn't see that, you were also fooled by someone to come here? Why would you come back after escaping? Also, on top of this place is the royal court. You think you can come back as long as you want? You are just trying to comfort me, no, you are lying to me. Yes, all humans are liars, you are all liars!

I suffered in this underground dimension by myself for so long. Never saw a living creature beside that terrifying woman – that terrifying woman couldn't be counted as human. I would rather not see her. Finally, I met someone who could speak to, how could I let you leave?

If you leave, then my day will be gloomy again!

“I understand your feelings and your uneasiness, but you should believe in me.” Chen Chang Sheng looked at it and said.

The black dragon’s look was cold but also moderately doubtful as if it wanted to say, you are only a bit older than ten year olds. How would you know the suffering I faced all this time.

“I really know. Although I definitely didn’t suffer as long as you did, it’s just like I said in the beginning, I am unfortunate too. Fine, I know you can hardly believe in me, but it’s just like a gamble. You let me go, I probably will keep my promise and try to find a way to come back later. If you kill me now, I think there will be small chance of you seeing anyone in front of you again. No matter what, you should take the gamble.”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at it said frankly and seriously, “This is your best choice.”

The black dragon remained silent. Suddenly, it looked up at the top with its eyes falling between the thousands of Nightly Pearls

.....

In the Wei Yang Palace, the Ivy Festival was continuing or rather, it already ended. The test on literature that should have been held last night was moved to a later date. Even so, no one cared about its result. How could the competition between the Six Ivies be more interesting than the great thing that was going to happen later?

Everyone was reserved and kind because what was going to happen next was a good thing, marriage. Even Guan Fei Bai from the Li Mountain, the most arrogant and cold fourth ruling of the Seven Rulings, was also laughing now because he knew this was a very important thing to his oldest senior. It was also a very important thing to his sect and the entire South. Most importantly, even the thought that his oldest senior could marry junior Xu, was a thing that he should feel proud of and celebrate.

The elder of Li Mountain Xiao Song Gong already stood up and was speaking something. The Southern ambassadors were officially proposing the marriage to the Great Zhou dynasty. Now that the process was started already, it just needed a few more steps and this marriage that was wanted by the entire world would turn real.

The Bishop closed his eyes like he was about to fall asleep. Prince Chen Liu was smiling mildly and was speaking with Xiao Song Gong. Mo Yu was calm as she looked into the darkness outside of the palace. Luo Luo looked at these people with her right hand tightly holding onto the pack. She decided to open it.

.....

Another long time of silence. The underground dimension was like a graveyard.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the black dragon and waited nervously for its decision.

The black dragon glimpsed at him and suddenly slowly flew backward.

The light of thousands of Nightly Pearls went out at the same time. Only some light remained. They shone on the front half of the black dragon.

The dragon gradually disappeared in the darkness.

Chen Chang Sheng understood its glimpse. It wanted him to remember his promise and to visit here frequently.

Going to the royal palace was very difficult already. He had to pass through Tong Palace and then walk deep into the underground. After doing so, he would be able to finally see it again. He didn't hesitate. He nodded to the dragon.

He felt very thankful to this black dragon. He wanted to something at last. Although it understood the human language, Chen Chang Sheng didn't know how to call it.

Master? He already had one. Elder? This didn't sound close. You? Too disrespectful. Yo? Does he want to die?These all seemed inappropriate.

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a while and shouted to the black dragon that was gradually disappearing in darkness, "Big Uncle....Dragon."

The black dragon was a bit dumbfounded from the title it was given.

“Big Uncle Dragon.” Chen Chang Sheng did not know what he should say. Saying thank you without doing any actions wouldn’t help. He suddenly remember a thing. He pointed at the roof said, “I have to take the Nightly Pearl with me.”

The black dragon roared and looked very angry. It did not think that after all that, this little kid would want more than he already got.

Chen Chang Sheng insisted and said, “Big uncle, that belongs to a little girl. I have to return to her later on.”

.....

There was an extremely tiny pond in a remote palace in the royal court.

As the night got darker, the lights inside the palace turned already off. A middle-aged woman was standing next to the pond. Her appearance was pretty common and her dress was also very simple. Obviously, she wasn’t one of those imperial concubines who only spent time in dresses and make up. Neither of the maids were at their youth.

She stood by the pond. It was unsure if she was preparing to

wash her hands, or was washing clothes.

At this moment, Hua Hua (sounds), water flushed up like an upside down water fall. A young man was flushed out.

He was Chen Chang Sheng.

In the underground dimension, his clothes was covered fully by a layer of frost. Now it was all flushed away by water. He was all wet and he looked extremely poor.

How would this middle-aged woman expect a man to suddenly appeared in the dark night? She was startled by it. She took a step back.

The lady wore wooden shoes. The step she took backwards was on the rock next to the pond. Pa!

There was a squirrel eating in the forest. It was scared by this sound. It threw away the fruit that it carried with its two forelegs, jumped from the tree to the handrail on the second floor of the palace and ran swiftly towards the direction to the exit of the yard. Its tail moved randomly and it coincidentally touched a pot of flower that was placed at the handrail.

The flower leaned slightly and was about to fall down.

Coincidentally, the mid aged lady stood under it.

If the pot fell down, it would definitely hit her. At the very least, she might get hurt.

Chen Chang Sheng left the underground dimension, came back to land and then fell back into the pond. His face was wet. After he wiped off the water, and could see things, the first image he saw was this extremely coincidental, extremely unfortunately scene.

He did not even think and he immediately threw himself against the middle-aged woman.

He knew that here was deep in the royal court. There were countless elites, if those people heard anything, then it would probably be very hard for him to return to the Wei Yang Palace.

Yet he still went for it. Not because he was afraid the pot would fall on the ground and let others know but because the middle-aged lady was in danger.

If he thought closely, he might have made a better choice. The better choice of how to leave, and then arrive at the Wei Yang Palace promptly but he didn't think.

He embraced the middle-aged lady in his arms and rolled a half circle.

If the flower pot fell down, it would only fall on his back.

But the pot didn't drop.

So, this image became a little embarrassing and hard to explain.

There was sound as he expected but there was no pain coming from his back. Chen Chang Sheng looked up at the handrail to see that the pot was still there.

He obviously didn't see but the middle-aged lady took back one finger.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the middle-aged woman and felt a bit nervous.....if she shouts out now, then he would be even more troubled. At such late night, embraced by a youngster came out of pond, anyone would probably yell.

At this time, he should knock out the lady right away just like what goes on in novels.

But there was another problem. He didn't know how to knock people out.

So, he faced a very complicated issue.

The palace in dark night, the wave in the pond and the flower pot on the handrail were staring at each other.

He and the middle-aged lady were staring at each other.

Hard to comment.

Silent and wordless.

He was a young man.

She was a mid aged woman.

There wasn't any embarrassment related to gender.

There's only embarrassment.

The middle-aged lady frowned. She open her mouth to say something but decided against it and closed her mouth again.

Chen Chang Sheng felt surprised. He thought, What? It can't be!

He let go his hand, gave a salute to apologize, and then used his hands to expertly make gestures.

The middle-aged woman looked at him and made a gesture too. Chen Chang Sheng thought, That's why. He then made a gesture to apologize again and saw that she did not have any intention to account him for fault. He didn't understand why, but since he didn't have much time, without thinking too much, he left urgently.

.....

“Dragon language, sign language, he knows a lot.”

Looking at Chen Chang Sheng’s back that was disappearing in darkness, the middle-aged lady smiled and said.

Chen Chang Sheng had thought that she was mute. She said to the darkness, “Wei Yang Palace is too far, go help him out.”

“He’s truly a good kid.”

The middle-aged woman gradually stopped smiling and said indifferently, “If his last name is Chen, that will be even better.”

After saying this, she turned and walked towards the palace.

The previously dark and seemingly deserted palace suddenly lit up.

Several dozens of eunuchs and maids, with many royal guests, kneeled down at the sides. No one dared to look up. All held their breaths.

Chapter 64 - Questioning The World

There were tons of people kneeling on the floor in the side palace. They were like the surface of a calm ocean. As the middle-aged woman walked by, the ocean was split and it induced a wave. A servant leader coughed two times and the other servants on the floor kneeling all stood up hastily and left the palace without a sound.

That servant leader had wrinkles all over his face which represented his old age. He carefully lifted that middle-aged woman's hand and said quietly and respectfully, "Even if that youngster's background has some problems, why is the Queen so bothered?"

That middle-aged woman was the Divine Queen. Hearing the question of the servant, she said without expression, "If he's just an ordinary person, then obviously I don't need to bother with him."

The servant leader knew that "ordinary" meant if the youngster could xiuxing or not. He thought deeply for a moment and said, "I checked that recommendation letter. There is no problem with it. The Pope gifted it to Lady Mo Yu and Princess Ping Guo back in the day.....from messages of Palace Li, the Pope has nothing to do with this. The youngster was dragged into this trouble by accident. Although his marriage vow with Palace Xu (General's Mansion) was surprising, I can't really see anything special about him."

The Divine Queen stopped walking and glanced at the darkness behind the side palace. She was silent for a moment and asked,

“Have you ever seen a person not afraid of death?”

The servant leader knew this question of the Divine Queen contained a deeper meaning so he started thinking seriously.

People all say the heroes of this world treated life and death lightly, but only the people who experienced countless times of struggle between life and death understand that their fearlessness was a result of their unbreakable will which overcame the fear. Their fear of death always existed in their hearts.

This servant leader lived in the Zhou Palace for several hundred years and had a great influence in the politics. Twenty years ago, after the last emperor passed away, all of the royal family disagreed with the Divine Queen ascending the throne and tried to rebel. The Queen easily put down the rebellion. It wasn't only due to the strong and clear support from the Pope, but also because this servant leader played a major role.

He was a character who experience countless departure between life and death. He's more than sure that no one was not afraid of death. Even a great man like the First Emperor was still not calm in his death bed. He stared at the stars in the night sky and the only expression in his eyes were fear and sadness.

He was beside the emperor that time. He saw that view clearly.

“No one is not afraid of death,” he answered.

“Then in the precise moment earlier, that youngster was actually not afraid of death. He’s not a normal person.” The Divine Queen thought back to the words the youngster said in front of the Black Mighty Dragon, “I always thought only the child from Family of Qiu Shan could pair with that girl, but now.....I’m not quite sure.”

The leader servant was a little shocked, he thought to himself, will the Queen change her attitude about this entire event?

The side palace fell into a silence again.

The night wind blew through the flower pot outside of the hallway lightly. The stems in the pot shook slightly and the squirrels ran faster on the tree branches far away in the woods.

“Tonight’s the night of Qi Xi. It will be lively outside the palace. I’m thinking about going out to see the view.”

“Queen.....I thought you were going to wait in the palace for the result of the Ivy Festival?”

“Waiting for what? Which student of what academy is the best? I’m not interested.”

The leader servant was confused, “Don’t you want to know if this proposal will be successful or not?”

The Divine Queen said, “Whether the General’s Mansion will

marry with the Family of Qiu Shan or complete its promise of taking Chen Chang Sheng for its son-in-law is not something they can decide.”

The servant leader bowed and said, “Everything in the world follows the will of the Queen.”

The Divine Queen said calmly, “You are wrong again. This event is not something I can decide either.”

The leader servant was a little shocked, he thought, who else besides you could decide the result of this marriage?

“The person who is going to marry is You Rong. Then whoever she will marry to should depend on her attitude.”

The Divine Queen said, “That girl has her own thoughts. No matter what other people do is meaningless. It’s will all be a joke.”

There is a street outside of the south of royal palace. It’s a little from other places which were filled with lamps and lights of Qi Xi. This place was isolated and quiet. Perhaps it’s close to the royal palace. Perhaps a lot of ice was transported out of this place, and the streets were filled with leftover cold water. No one was willing to set up their shops here.

This place is named Bridge Bei Xin but there are no bridges here.

Or more precisely, that bridge made out of green stone is fake. River Luo circled around the royal palace but went around this place. Not a single water drop was beneath this bridge.

Not too far from the Bridge Bei Xin was a well. The temperature inside the well was freezing, as if the inside wasn't water but rather unmeltable ice. It's already deep into the night and the light of the royal palace couldn't get to here. The willow branches were like brushes filled with ink as they dipped lightly around the well.

The Divine Queen stood inside the well and in her hand held a Nightly Pearl she picked up in the Platform of Dew. She opened her hand above the well and the Nightly Pearl lit up the walls of well and fell rapidly. Gradually, it was devoured by the darkness of the well.

A while passed and a sound was heard from the bottom of the well. Perhaps due to the well's height, the sound wasn't loud, but rather it was like the echo of water hitting the walls of the well. She knew that it was not the sound of hitting water but an angry roar of the black dragon.

The black dragon was furious because it felt that humans have deceived it again. She promised to give a Nightly Pearl, but that youngster took one. Therefore she should give it two Nightly Pearls instead of one. Even if it couldn't challenge her, she shouldn't bully it like this!

The Divine Queen was a little unhappy. "You brute, that Nightly Pearl was his. Did your elder dragon not teach you math when you were young?"

Chen Chang Sheng's skill of mathematics was good. Or more precisely, he was good with anything related with knowledge. But his sense of direction wasn't the best. After leaving his previous location and entering the royal palace. He quickly realized that he was lost.

The stars were above him and lamps were in front of him. He knew where the north was and therefore knew where the south was. He could even faintly see the lamp lights emitted from the Wei Yang Palace. However, there are tons of trees in the royal palace and the roads were twisting and turning everywhere. He was afraid to encounter any guards and so, he didn't walk on the main roads. Now he was confused of where to go to get to his destination.

Next moment, a light noise was heard from a garden.

A black goat walked out of the darkness of night silently as if it was a part of the darkness.

Back in the Tradition Academy, Chen Chang Sheng saw it. Earlier outside of Wei Yang Palace, Chen Chang Sheng encountered it as well. For some mysterious reason, he was sure that this black goat was friendly to him. He thought for a moment and said, "You.....want to help me?"

That black goat looked quietly at him for one peek and turned

around and walked into the night.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't dare delay. He quickly followed and looked at the southern Wei Yang Palace before he left. That place was still filled with light but the music stopped. Where in the process of proposal were the southern ambassadors up to? Will he get there in time?

The Ivy Festival was already half way done. The southern ambassadors started to propose officially.

There were many big characters in the Wei Yang Palace such as the elder of Mountain Li, Xiao Song Gong, that woman from Mountain Virgin, the principal of Heavenly Academy Mao Qiu Yu, Xu Shi Ji, Prince Chen Liu and Mo Yu. In the process of proposal, they represented different roles.

There were witnesses, there were custom observers, and there were acknowledgers.

The beautiful dances on the platform have just stopped. Although the food was getting cold, no one continued eating. People smiled and looked up at the platform.

The leader of Family of Qiu Shan stood up and greeted. Mo Yu represented the Divine Queen and thanked him. She represented the Zhou Dynasty and was happy to see the success of this

marriage and wished that humans would be bound closer together because of this marriage. She thought this would lead to the success of fighting against the demon race.

That woman from Mountain Virgin was the Aunt of Teaching of Xu You Rong. She represented the Virgin of Southern Sect and agreed to this marriage. Xu Shi Ji was next, he greeted and welcomed the southern guest and showed his approval.

What is a official and successfully proposal?

The proposal is the beginning, approval is the custom, the vow is the proof. This made up a successful proposal.

The heaven, the earth, the ruler, the parent, then the master.

Right now, the Divine Queen has approved this marriage, Xu Shi Ji approved this marriage, and the Virgin of South Sect has approved this marriage.

The heaven and earth were silent. Currently the ruler, parent, and master all agreed to this marriage. Everyone thought this proposal was successful but no one thought about the attitude of Xu You Rong toward her own marriage. Of course, no one also thought Xu You Rong would object to this herself.

As the most famous and glorious pair of young man and young woman, the marriage between Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun was treated as a destined action by everyone. The stories between them

were told all over the world and everyone thought it would be a story with a happy ending.

Coming up next would be the last questioning of the Three Questions in the proposal process.

The customs of the Zhou Dynasty weren't complicated. It mainly originated from the literature of the Tradition. As the Tradition grew, Zhou Customs spreaded to the south. Today, the southern ambassador's proposal followed Zhou Custom entirely. It wasn't entirely respecting the female say of the family, but their customs were the same.

The aforementioned Three Questions were Questioning the Heaven and Earth, Questioning the Family, and Questioning the Ruler and Master. They are asking for the approval from these people. The last question was Questioning the World.

The reason for the Three Questions in Zhou Custom, especially for the last one, it seemed, was to give a chance for the people to point out a problem between the bride and groom. However, a disagreement rarely occurs. It was more of a chance for the bride or groom to back out in the marriage.

Under normal circumstances, no one would question or disagree in the proposal process. Doing so would trouble both the male and female side of the family. It was clear that both side of the family were sure about this marriage and so, the last Questioning the World was just to follow the customs.

Prince Chen Liu stood in front of the platform and looked at the several hundred people in the palace. He smiled and asked, “Qiu Shan Jun desires to become the husband of Xu You Rong, does anyone object?”

The palace was silent, but the mood wasn't oppression. Everyone's faces were filled with smiles. In a beautiful moment like this, people only wanted a blessing. They just want to congratulate both sides of the marriage after the questioning of Prince Chen Liu.

In the corner at the seats of Tradition Academy, there was no smile on Luo Luo's face. It was pale due to extreme shock. She has already opened the tiny bag in her sleeve and saw the marriage vow. Only until she saw the two names on the marriage vow did she know that her joke that day was actually true. Now she knew what the trouble between her master and Dong Yu General's Mansion was. Now she knew why Mo Yu and other people went out of their way to take her master out of the field.

Questioning the World is asked three times.

Prince Chen Liu smiled warmly and asked again, “Anyone object?”

The palace was still quiet and people's faces were filled with blessing smiles. The world was beautiful.

Prince Chen Liu looked at Xu Shi Ji and smiled to congratulate.

Xu Shi Ji rubbed his beard lightly and nodded.

Prince Chen Liu glanced at leader of Family of Qiu Shan and smiled while nodding.

Head of Family of Qiu Shan smiled without speaking, it was clear that he was in joy.

Prince Chen Liu glanced at the people and asked one last time, “Anyone object?”

The entire world agreed to this marriage, no one objected.

Therefore, the entire world was happy. Everyone was waiting.

In the corner, Luo Luo suddenly stood up.

But no one noticed her.

Because at this moment, a voice was heard outside of the palace.

“I object.”

A youngster enter the palace from the door.

He was wet, his black hair was untied and his shirt was in pieces.

He looked at the people in the palace. His eyes were bright and his expression was still.

The palace fell into a silence.

Chapter 65 - She Is My Fiancee

Without intentionally raising the volume and without intentionally bringing emotion, the voice was very calm. It was as if he was saying an insignificant sentence that was heard very clear. The two words were so clear, that people inside the palace couldn't even convince themselves they heard wrong.

Therefore, the two words caused the entire Wei Yang Palace to calm down.

The previous hopeful calmness was replaced with silence. The atmosphere was extremely strange.

In the next second, the calm silence broke as the place became noisy.

Innumerate voices were about to break the roof of the palace!

Someone's against it?

There's actually someone against this marriage!?

Deep in the palace, Xu Shi Ji suddenly stood up and looked at Chen Chang Sheng who stood by the door. His face looked extremely pale. Prince Chen Liu felt slightly dazed but did not know what happened. Mo Yu also slowly stood up expressionless, but coldness gradually crept on to her face.

The reaction from the southern ambassadors was obviously much more bewildered. The master of the Qiu Shang family stared at the young man standing by the door. He didn't recognize him, and forced himself to take a few deep breaths to suppress his anger. But among the ambassadors, some were youngsters who were to participate in the Great Trial next year. They could not hold their anger like their master — especially the three rulings of the Li Mountain. The youngsters became extremely cold and looked at Chen Chang Sheng as if they were looking at a dead man.

Qiu Shan Jun was their most respected senior. They knew how much their oldest senior cared about this marriage and knew how much their oldest senior cared about Xu You Rong, but just when they were about to see the couple finally come together and when their oldest senior's dream was about to reach, there was actually someone who dared to disrupt them!

Was he trying to commit suicide?

If they were not at the Palace, the three young elites would probably have already waved their swords and killed Chen Chang Sheng, but after all, this place was the Great Zhou Royal Palace. As southerners, they had to hold it in for now and wait for the Zhou people to take action first.

The action came very fast, Xu Shi Ji's face filled with emotions. He stared at Chen Chang Sheng and shouted coldly, "Trash! How dare you make any noise in the palace! Soldiers, come kick this person out!"

After being deployed back to the capital, Xu Shi Ji and Xue Xing

Chuan were in charge of the defense of the royal palace together due to the trust of the Divine Queen. Because of this, the soldiers inside the royal palace were all his own subordinates. Upon hearing his shout, all ten soldiers surrounded Chen Chang Sheng.

Xu Shi Ji stared at Chen Chang Sheng. His look was very unkind, filled with caution, and held killing intent. He wouldn't give Chen Chang Sheng any chance to speak. If he had to, he would command the soldiers to kill Chen Chang Sheng without letting him speak.

Many people noticed his intention, but they didn't know the reason behind his actions. Because he was Xu You Rong's father, they thought that if anyone wanted to disrupt their daughter's marriage banquet, they would also want to kill the disrupter.

The soldiers did not catch Chen Chang Sheng, because someone stood in front of him. Luo Luo left the seats for the Tradition Academy. She held the Falling Rain Whip and didn't even look at the soldiers. Her vision directly fell on Mo Yu who was deep in the palace.

Next, another person stood in front of Chen Chang Sheng.

Tang Thirty Six.

Previously after Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo left the palace, Tang Thirty Six arrived at the Wei Yang Palace so he didn't see the two. He paid all of his attention to Guan Fei Bai, the fourth ruling of the Seven Rulings. Later Luo Luo came back to the Wei Yang Palace, but he still didn't see Chen Chang Sheng. He then began to

feel a little strange.

He didn't know why Chen Chang Sheng was against the engagement between Xu Mansion and Qiu Shan family but he knew there was hostility between Chen Chang Sheng and the Xu mansion. He was also too lazy to think about those problems and since there were people that wanted to kill Chen Chang Sheng, he obviously had to stand up.

Xu Shi Ji's face was completely covered with emotions now. He looked at Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six who stood in front of Chen Chang Sheng. "I don't care who you are or what your background is, tonight I, as the General has the responsibility to catch this criminal. If anyone dares to hinder, don't blame me for being ruthless. I wouldn't go easy."

"Criminal?" An old voice suddenly suddenly came up next to Xu Shi Ji sounding blank.

The person who was speaking is the Bishop of the Department of Traditional Education.

The elder who just opened up his eyes was certainly very blank like he just woke up.

He looked around and then asked Xu Shi Ji, "Where's the criminal?"

He knew the answer but still asked which made Xu Shi Ji's face

become covered with anger.

The Bishop followed everyone's vision and looked towards the door and saw Chen Chang Sheng. As if he just realized, he said, "This little kid is a student of the Tradition Academy, I signed the paper myself. It shouldn't be wrong. Even though he's late, he shouldn't be counted as a criminal, right?"

The soldiers looked towards Xu Shi Ji.

Xu Shi Ji got even more angry but he eventually confirmed the Bishop's position.

Prince Chen Liu, feeling a bit helpless, explained to the Bishop, "Previously he spoke against the engagement."

Bishop looked at the people, smiled and said, "Since there's a part called Questioning the World, then obviously it should allow for people to disagree. If it doesn't, then why would Prince ask before? If there's no respect for the rule, then you can make the engagement as you want to. Why would you come to the Great Zhou to propose?"

Logically, his words couldn't be argued against.

So the Southern ambassadors got even more furious. Many looked angrily at the Bishop, but the elder closed up his eyes again as if he wanted to continue sleeping. He completely did not care about these looks that were as sharp as swords and as cold as snow.

The Bishop kept closing eyes. What he said set the trend of this thing. At least viewing from the surface, it represented the Tradition's attitude.

There weren't many people who could question his words. Mo Yu obviously was one of them, but she didn't do anything. She slowly sat back at her seat. She looked a bit surprised, because she noticed before that when Chen Chang Sheng walked into the palace, a black goat disappeared in the darkness simultaneously.

She obviously knew what this black goat represented.

The black goat carried Chen Chang Sheng to the Wei Yang Palace. What did this represent?

Prince Chen Liu didn't expect her to remain silent and felt a little surprised.

At this moment, the elder of Li Mountain, Xiao Song Gong stood up and said, "Prince, what's happening?"

The marriage between Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun, was not as simple as a connection through marriage between Dong Yu General's Mansion and the Qiu Shan family. Before tonight, the court and the various forces in the South definitely had discussed many times until they eventually settled that the Southern ambassadors would come to propose.

The so-called proposal was simply a showing of respect to the courtesy and rules. It was just a definite procedure. No one expected such accidents to happen. Xiao Song Gong's questioning, obviously had its own reasons. Since this was at the royal palace, since both sides already settled the negotiation beforehand, then the Zhou people obviously had to explain.

Prince Chen Liu smiled bitterly and didn't say a word thinking that Divine Queen was

simply making me come to host the event tonight. He didn't say anything, you guys asked me to explain, who should I go ask? The Bishop closed his eyes, Mao Qiu Yu put his head down and was drinking wine. These elders.....so mean for giving him the responsibility to explain the situation.

After thinking for so long, he thought he only could ask Chen Chang Sheng himself, "What....is happening?"

Prince Chen Liu looked at Chen Chang Sheng and spread out his hands. He appeared very innocent.

From this detail, it could be seen that he certainly kept some kindness for Chen Chang Sheng. He otherwise wouldn't let him explain first.

"Previously outside the palace, I heard Prince ask if there was anyone against to the marriage between Qiu Shan Jun and Xu You Rong."

Spoken to this point, Chen Chang Sheng paused a bit and then continued, “So I said, I object.”

This answer was not an answer, but a repetition.

He did not emphasize his tone, but the two words came up again. It caused the aura in the palace to be even more depressed.

His attitude was very clear: I object Xu You Rong’s marriage to Qiu Shan Jun.

.....

“Why do you object?”

“Why can you object!”

Two voices came up at the same time in palace. One of them came from Prince Chen Liu. He frowned, felt a little confused, and felt a little worried. The other one came from elder Xiao Song Gong. He raised his eyebrows and looked extremely angry. His attitude was tough.

These two problems were also the problems that everyone wanted to ask.

Xu You Rong had the phoenix bloodline. Qiu Shan Jun had the dragon bloodline. Both possessed ability and potential that were

rare to be seen even in a thousand years. They were seen by the human world as candidates of leaders to fight the demons. They both xiuxing and study in the South, belong to the same sect, live together, and could be counted as childhood sweethearts. Moreover, this marriage was extremely important to the union of the southern and northern sects. Anyway, there were many reasons that they should stay together, yet they couldn't find any reason why they shouldn't stay together.

What is the godly companion? In people's eyes, these two were godly companions to each other.

This entirely wet, poor looking youngster actually dared to object this marriage.

Why did he? Why could he?

Chen Chang Sheng just used one sentence to answer the two questions at the same time.

"I have an engagement with Xu You Rong."

He said, "She is my fiancée so obviously, she can't marry others."

The palace was deadly silent again.

Engagement?

He said Xu You Rong was his fiancée?

Nonsense!

People were all shocked. They looked at Chen Chang Sheng and could not say a word. They did not dare to believe at all and thought that this must be fake!

Xu Shi Ji looked at Chen Chang Sheng. His face was pale and his two hands slightly trembled.

He said it. This kid actually...finally...said it!

He felt very regretful. In the very beginning, he should've killed him, destroyed him into dust and have thrown it into the Luo River!

After tonight, the Dong Yu General's mansion would become a joke!

The southern ambassadors were just as angry as Xu Shi Ji, but they didn't believe in what Chen Chang Sheng just said. They simply thought that this youngster was ordered by a party to disrupt the marriage on purpose. This action humiliated the Li Mountain Sword Sect and even the entire Southern sects.

The master of the Qiu Shan family got extremely mad, the female disciples of the Mountain Virgin all frowned and didn't say a word. The youngsters of the Li Mountain Sword sect were all angry.

Guan Fei Bai's expression even appeared pale due to extreme anger. His right hand already held to the handle!

“How dare you! Where did this shameless villain come from. How dare he humiliate the Mountain Li!”

Xiao Song Gong suddenly turned, looked at Mo Yu and said, “Why don't you kick him out right now! What are you Zhou people doing here!”

How can that youngster be Xu You Rong's fiance!

Many people then realized, all stood up angrily, and started scolding Chen Chang Sheng.

Chapter 66 - The White Crane As Proof

“Why are you so sure that my words are false?”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the people in the palace and asked. His expression was serious because he was really angry.

“I never heard from my niece You Rong that she has a fiance like you.”

The woman wearing the white gown stood up slowly and looked at him. She saw the angry expression of the youngster and was a little nervous. She thought back to her senior's actions these months. Perhaps what this youngster said were true?

“What's your proof?”

Chen Chang Sheng answered, “I have the marriage vow.”

Xiao Song Gong's face was cold and he yelled sharply, “No one will believe you even if you take out the Book as proof.”

“I believe him.”

A crispy voice was heard in the palace. The voice was like two pearls hitting each other. It was beautiful but firm.

Luo Luo scoffed, “My Master is more than qualified to marry

anyone.”

The palace was filled with silence. People were shocked and had no words to say. They thought to themselves, does this little girl from Tradition Academy know what she’s saying? That youngster is her Master? Isn’t he just a garbage that couldn’t even reach the Purification stage? How come in her words, Xu You Rong should be proud of marrying him? Is he more outstanding than Qiu Shan Jun?

Luo Luo didn’t care what other people thought. She looked at Chen Chang Sheng admiringly and said, “Master, you are the best!”

“I also believe him.” Tang Thirty Six glanced around the people of the palace and said, “This guy is the real deal. No matter what he did I wouldn’t be surprised, speak less of him being the fiance of Xu Young Rong. Even if he said he was the son of Demon Emperor, I would believe him as well.”

Zhuang Huan Yu saw the expressions of the southern ambassador faces and wrinkled his eyebrows slightly and yelled, “Stop talking!”

Tang Thirty Six’s face turned cold and didn’t bother with him. He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, “No wonder you are prouder of yourself than me. You have a fiancée like this. You should be proud of.....this thing. I admire you.”

Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six spoke from their heart. They

actually admired Chen Chang Sheng. But in the eyes of the southern ambassadors, they were belittling them when they supported Chen Chang Sheng.

The elder, Xiao Song Gong yelled furiously, “Mountain Li is the leader of the south and praised by the people of this world. When the First Emperor established this kingdom, he decorated a title for us. Tai Zong Emperor even praised Mountain Li as the master of all people. Right now the Divine Queen who is in power respects Mountain Li! I never thought I would see the day. A young child wants to destroy the seven thousand years of fame of my sect tonight! If Zhou Government doesn’t take care of these young fellows here, I will take care of them myself!”

Although he was not the only elder of Mountain Li’s Sword Sect, but he was of an old generation and his xiuxing stage was extremely high as well — just one more step to enter the Saint stage. In tonight’s Wei Yang Palace, he and principal of Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu, were the strongest two.

Right now in his rage, his aura was released. Green light emitted faintly from his thin face and a powerful pressure burst out of his thin body. It skipped more than ten yards of distance and arrived at the palace door while circling around Chen Chang Sheng.

A step to Saint stage, what a terrifying level that is! Chen Chang Sheng, who didn’t even enter Purification and even Zhuang Huan Yu, who’s ranked tenth of the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, couldn’t even stand up firmly in front of Xiao Song Gong’s pressure. The difference of stage didn’t matter. What mattered was the natural

strength of a powerful xiuxingist.

Everyone thought Chen Chang Sheng would kneel on the floor the next moment. No one believed that no reaction would come out of him besides the fact that his expression got heavier.

Chen Chang Sheng just endured the terrifying pressure from that Black Mighty Dragon earlier in the underground. Even the might of a dragon couldn't make him kneel, so how will Xiao Song Gong's pressure do so? Even if the elder of Mountain Li's Sword Sect is powerful, how would he compare to the black dragon?

Tang Thirty Six didn't know about this situation and felt that terrifying pressure. He was a little worried and pushed aside the guards circling around and stared at Xiao Xong Gong while yelling, "Is the elder going to bully a child?"

Luo Luo stood in front of Chen Chang Sheng because of this she personally felt the powerful pressure and knew she wasn't an opponent against Xiao Song Gong. Although she always thought Chen Chang Sheng was hiding her strength and should be able to counter this level of attack, she still got angry.

This guy dare to put pressure on her Master!

She yelled furiously, "You stupid short log. You want to bully people just because you are old!"

The palace fell into silence once again. Everyone was shocked.

They were shocked that they heard something so unbelievable.

Xiao Song Gong was surprised as well. Someone dared to yell at him?

The young men of Mountain Li stood at and glanced coldly at the direction of the door.

Guan Fei Bai's was expressionless and prepared to fight.

If the emperor was shamed, then his officials should fight until death. If one's master was shamed, how should his apprentice react?

Just at a close moment like this, the bishop opened his eyes once again.

With sleepiness, he looked at the warring two sides and sighed, "You guys are not children anymore. The side who's louder isn't the side with reason. The thing we should do right now isn't to look at the marriage vow that this young fellow spoke of?"

This sentence was just like the last sentence of his, it was undisputable.

From the moment Chen Chang Sheng stepped into the palace until now, no one asked to look at the marriage vow that he mentioned. Everyone in the palace wanted to express their attitude and had no trust in Chen Chang Sheng's words. However, they all

knew that checking the marriage vow is the first thing that should be done.

The bishop wanted to check the marriage vow which showed that he was ready to believe Chen Chang Sheng.

Thinking about his previous protection of Chen Chang Sheng and the resurrection of Tradition Academy earlier this year and the recent turmoils in the capital, people finally realized that he had a background in the Tradition Academy!

“They shamed the elder of my sect. Would I just let it go?” Guan Fei Bai spoke coldly.

The bishop smiled tiredly and said, “First we should finish this marriage business. Then you and that young girl can fight however you want. I promise, no one will stop you.”

Prince Chen Liu knew Luo Luo’s identity. Obviously he wouldn’t just let the southern ambassadors fight with her. He spoke up and calmed the ambassadors down while asking Chen Chang Sheng, “You said you have the marriage vow as proof. Is the marriage vow currently on you?”

“Of course not,” Chen Chang Sheng said, “Although I’m not afraid of the marriage vow getting destroyed because there are copies in Palace Li, I don’t want that trouble.”

Luo Luo took out the marriage vow from her sleeve and handed it

to him.

Chen Chang Sheng handed that marriage vow to the guard and walked towards the inside of the palace.

Everyone's eyes were on that marriage vow.

“Some people did a lot of things so this marriage vow wouldn't appear in front of people of this world. Sadly, they didn't succeed.”

He looked at Xu Shi Ji and Lady Mo Yu who were on the platform and said, “In fact, I told those people, I was actually here to forfeit the marriage. But if these things didn't happen, this marriage vow should be in the Xu Mansion right now and hid somewhere that couldn't be found by anyone.”

“But the sad thing is, there is no ‘if’ and ‘but’.”

This marriage vow seemed to be no different from any other marriage vow of Zhou Dynasty. It has clear conditions and meanings. But in fact, this marriage was special because it stated clearly that only the male side could forfeit and the witness was the Pope!

Even if there are copies of this marriage vow in Palace Li, no one could destroy this marriage vow either because on this piece of paper, the Pope enchanted his powerful seal. The moment anyone

destroys this marriage vow, the seal would also be destroyed. This would be a heavy insult to the Pope.

Chen Chang Sheng earlier said that after Xu Shi Ji obtained the marriage vow, he would hide it in somewhere that couldn't be found. He didn't say he will rip it into pieces or burn it into ashes. In the several months of time after he came to the capital, Dong Yu General's Mansion never tried to steal the marriage vow and destroy it because of this reason.

This kind of special marriage vow was easy to identify as real or false.

The palace was dead silent. For a long time, no one spoke out. The head of Family Qiu Shan's face was gloomy and all of the southern ambassadors were angry because they got scammed. Even the students and staffs who joined the Ivy Festival weren't happy.

The evolution of this event disregarded everyone's expectations. A beautiful tale that was viewed by the world became a joke. An extra person interrupted the beginning of a destined couple. No one was happy. They looked at Chen Chang Sheng with complex eyes.

Just like this youngster said, there were no 'ifs' and 'buts.'

But if time could go back, people would definitely not want to hear what Chen Chang Sheng had to say.

What should they do now?

People were confused and they didn't know what to do.

The Family of Qiu Shan came to propose, but Chen Chang Sheng took out a marriage vow!

The people of south ambassadors instinctively glanced at a certain spot.

Gou Han Shi was sitting there.

The people of the south all looked at him because everyone knew he was wise. Although the elder of Mountain Li was there, the aunt of teaching from Mountain Virgin was there, and even the head of Family of Qiu Shan was there, people instinctively placed the hope of solving this problem on him.

Even after so much happened, his expression was still calm. He looked at Chen Chang Sheng with interest and value, not caution and anger.

He never spoke.

Guan Fei Bai looked at him and said, "Senior""

Gou Han Shi stood up and looked at Chen Chang Sheng. His smile was warm and friendly.

“We all say that a marriage is of the wish from the parents and the words of the matchmaker. You have the marriage in your hand and therefore you have the words. But the wish of the parents is on our side, but.....”

Just when everyone thought this genius of Mountain Li who was known for his wisdom was about to debate with Chen Chang Sheng, he suddenly switched his tone and said seriously, “But these are not important because the ones who are entering marriage is not the parent nor the matchmaker, but the bride and groom. The world knew that my senior and sister Xu knew each other when they were young and the relationship between them is unbreakable. Even if the marriage vow in your hand is real, should my sister of teaching just marry to you like this?”

After finishing his sentence, everyone in the palace all nodded.

Xu You Rong is the most beautiful pearl in Zhou Dynasty. Should she marry to a person just because that guy has a marriage vow in his hand?

Wouldn't it just be dropping a pearl into the dirt?

Would the Pope agree to something like this to happen?

Even if the marriage vow is real, if she wanted to marry Qiu Shan Jun, could anyone stop her?

Although this view may be illogical, it seemed quite logical after Gou Han Shi said it. The people in the palace needed this kind of logic.

Gou Han Shi looked at Chen Chang Sheng warmly and said, “If you truly cared about sister Xu, shouldn’t you respect her opinion? As a man, you should have this kind of attitude.”

Although his word seemed warm and generous, it was sharp and dangerous.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at this person and was silent.

Everyone in the palace waited for his answer.

Just at this moment, a loud cry was heard from the night sky outside of the palace.

A white crane landed stylishly.

Chapter 67 - The White Crane As Proof (2)

Nothing less was expected from the head of the younger generation of Mountain Li's Sword Sect. As the Second Rule who even Qiu Shan Jun sought advice from, Gou Han Shi's words were difficult to respond to. Why? Because his words were in the gray territory of logical and illogical, it was understood and felt by everyone.

Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a moment, but he was prepared to answer. Just when he was about to open his mouth and was ready to continue even if it meant enduring the mockery from the entire world, he heard a crane's cry from outside of the palace.

A crane's cry.

This crane's cry was strong and firm.

A white crane slashed through the night. Its body consisted entirely of white feathers and it landed on the floor of the palace as if it was a piece of snowflake. Its thin neck was turned slightly and its expression was cold and prideful.

A lot of people in the field, for example, Xu Shi Ji knew this crane. His face turned even gloomier. The aunt and the disciplines of Mountain Virgin became a little nervous. Gou Han Shi and other disciplines of Mountain Li had seen this white crane outside of their senior's house couple of times.

Chen Chang Sheng also knew this white crane, but it had been a

few years since he last saw it. Looking at this white crane, his mood was a little complex.

This white crane came from the south and brought a letter from Xu You Rong.

Mo Yu read that letter and glanced at the people in the palace. The entire place was silent and she sighed, "Tonight is over."

Discussion started in the palace and it was kind of annoying. People were shocked because they didn't know what was in the letter and why Lady Mo Yu announced the end of Ivy Festival. Xiao Song Gong asked gloomily, "Can we know the context of this letter?"

Mo Yu raised her eyebrow slightly. She obviously supported the proposal from the southern ambassadors, but hearing the words from the elder from Mountain Li made her a little angry. She thought, she wanted to help save some face for them by asking to end the Ivy Festival early. But since they don't know what's good for them, it's all up to them.

She handed the letter to Prince Chen Liu and didn't bother afterwards.

Prince Chen Liu read the letter to himself and his expression turned a little funny.

Then he started reading the letter in front of the public because it was asked in the letter.

The context of this letter was simple. It only consisted of a few lines, but its meaning was clear.

Different from anyone's expectations in the palace, although this letter came from the south, it didn't come from Mountain Virgin. Xu You Rong wasn't at Mountain Virgin. Instead, she went to xiuxing in the southern sea. If one actually calculated, it would be known that she actually began right before the southern ambassadors started their trip.

The tone of Xu You Rong's letter was calm. She respected everyone present today and thanked the proposal started by her sect because it represented the care and love of her elders. However, she had a different opinion about this event.

Before the end of the first half of this letter, she didn't make clear of anything but many people in the palace understood what she was trying to get at. She didn't know that the southern ambassadors were going to propose in the capital. In other words, the southern sect didn't ask for her opinion before deciding on this event.

Many people's faces turned ugly and some were relieved. All in all, there was a wonderful change.

True, marriage was based on the wishes of the parents and the

words of the matchmaker. The heaven, earth, ruler, parents, and master were above them all and the actual couple had nothing much to do with it. Proposals of ordinary families didn't need the consent of the bride but Xu You Rong was no ordinary person — especially when someone had said some certain things not too long ago.

People looked at Gou Han Shi with complicated expressions.

Tang Thirty Six mocked, “Wow, so this is the so called ‘respect’ you guys asked for.”

Gou Han Shi previously stated that Chen Chang Sheng should respect Xu You Rong's opinion and that he should have the attitude suitable for a man.

But the southern sect sent people to the capital to propose while never asking for Xu You Rong's opinion. Was this respectful?

Gou Han Shi was silent. He didn't know that sister Xu never knew about the proposal. He didn't understand what the elders on Mountain Virgin were thinking. The thing that he didn't understand the most was why sister Xu sent the white crane to deliver such a letter. Did she....really not want to marry his senior?

No, this shouldn't be it.

He wanted to know what the second half of the letter consisted of.

Many people in the palace had the same thought. They all stared at the thin piece of paper in Prince Chen Liu's hand.

In the second half of this letter, Xu You Rong didn't express a trace of anger or hatred. Just like what she previously said, her elders and parents were setting her up in a marriage. No matter how it was observed, it should be understood as love and care.

She's the reincarnation of the True Phoenix. She's the only candidate for the next Virgin of the Southern Sect. She had the talent that was admired and respected by countless people. She could have more freedom and hold more respect. So in response to Gou Han Shi's words, she didn't even know about the proposal. Even before she actually grew and developed completely, she was the daughter of Dong Yu General's Mansion and a discipline of Mountain Virgin.

She could speak her opinions against her family and sect but in front of the world, her attitude must remain calm and respectful. The entire world saw her as this flawless girl. Of course, everyone thought she liked Qiu Shan Jun as well and thought this was the reason for her calmness.

In the second half of the letter, she directly told everyone that they thought wrong.

In the letter, Xu You Rong clearly stated that the only relationship between her and Qiu Shan Jun was that they disciplines of the same sect and close siblings.

She respected her senior, but never wanted to be together with him.

She also wrote in the letter that she didn't know if this letter would arrive on time. However, no matter late or on time, she stood by her decision that.....

she would not marry to him.

In just a few dozens of lines, she expressed her thought clearly but it lacked explanations.

The people in the palace all looked at the letter in Prince Chen Liu's hand. They were so shocked that they couldn't speak.

Why? Why is this happening? Why is she so calm? So sure?

This marriage was the bond between the southern sect and Zhou Dynasty. It was the will of the Divine Queen, the Pope, the Virgin, and Mountain Li's Sword Sect. In front of this enormous will, what reason did she have to object?

Xu You Rong used the last sentence of the letter to give an explanation to the entire continent.

This explanation was simple, yet undisputable.

It was similar to Chen Chang Sheng's explanation of objecting Qiu Shan Jun's proposal.

“Because I'm already in a vow to be marry. My fiancé is Chen Chang Sheng.”

Silence filled the palace. Not a sound was heard.

Previously, no one trusted Chen Chang Sheng's words. Even if his marriage vow was real, no one accepted this fact until the white crane brought this letter and revealed Xu You Rong's true feelings. This letter was like a slap to the face for everyone.

Mo Yu previously read this letter and thought to herself, what does this idiot girl want to do?

Luo Luo's eyes were sparkling and she praised, “Xu You Rong is so.....cool!”

Chen Chang Sheng lowered his head slightly and saw his reflection on the golden bricks in the palace. Previously when Prince Chen Liu was reading the letter, his expression got calmer and calmer as the sentences went on. The pressure was lifted from his heart. But why in the end did confusion fill his heart?

Why did you write a letter like this even if you don't want to marry me? Chen Chang Sheng thought.

Just this moment, the white crane walked up to Chen Chang Sheng and extended its neck to greet him warmly.

Chen Chang Sheng raised his head and smiled at the white crane. He raised his arm, wrapped around its neck and patted its head.

Looking at this scene, the people in the palace fell into a deeper silence.

Everyone knew that this white crane always followed Xu You Rong around when it was not delivering messages. Its personality was cold and prideful but right now, it was so close with Chen Chang Sheng. This meant that Chen Chang Sheng knew the white crane from way back.

He was already so close with the crane, what more could be said about the girl?

So everything said in the letter was true and not an excuse. Xu You Rong wasn't forced [to follow her grandfather's will](#) but accepted this marriage as her wish."

Just in case readers forgot, it was mentioned very early in the story that Xu You Rong's grandfather was ill and Chen Chang Sheng's master cured him. To thank his work, Xu You Rong's grandfather made a vow to marry Xu You Rong to the master's

apprentice.

Perhaps she and this youngster named Chen Chang Sheng were actually childhood friends.

“Childhood friends? Unbreakable as gold?”

Tang Thirty Six looked at Gou Han Shi and the southern ambassadors.

Those were words that Gou Han Shi previously used to describe the relationship between Qiu Shan Jun and Xu You Rong.

Tang Thirty Six’s smile may seem indifferent, but mockery and insult was hiding within.

“From what I see, isn’t this just wishful thinking?”

Chapter 68 - The White Emperor As Last Name (1)

They had been killing birds daily, but today, a bird pecked their eyes or better yet, slapped their faces. This sentence did not exactly correspond to what happened tonight, but after seeing Xu You Rong's letter and hearing Tang Thirty Six's words, many people had this feeling. They felt that their faces were burning with embarrassment.

Xu Shi Ji's face looked very mad, of course. Since the beginning of the Ivy Festival today, his face had always been looking mad. Far away, he stared at Chen Chang Sheng with fire burning in his eyes. In order to retain the reputation of Xu Mansion, in order to retain the Divine Queen's trust, he had to do something immediately. Even though this was the royal palace, he still wanted to kill Chen Chang Sheng.

The engagement, white crane and elders' will would mean nothing if the youngster was dead.

Among the soldiers surrounding Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo, there was his most loyal subordinate, the so-called man of sacrifice. The man held a knife tightly. His face was just as blank as his comrades but secretly, he stared at the back of Chen Chang Sheng's neck. To avoid being noticed by others, his look wasn't cold but it was very attentive.

Once Xu Shi Ji narrowed his eyes to give the signal, Chen Chang Sheng's neck will be chopped off by the swift knife.

But this bloody scene didn't happen because when Xu Shi Ji was thinking of giving out the signal, two cold looks fell on his body. One came from the Bishop of the Department of Traditional Education who always closed his eyes. He seemed to be a sleepy elder but he had wise words to say at key moments and simply opening up his eyes which was an extremely simple action, faster than raising a hand and taking out knife, was enough to dissuade further action. Another look, came from an unexpected person – Mo Yu. Xu Shi Ji's emotion was changing, after all, he did not do anything. If it was only a warning from the Bishop, he probably would still make an attempt, but Mo Yu's look made it very difficult to decide.

The temperament in the palace was extremely tense now and also extremely embarrassing. The palace was extremely quiet. After Tang Thirty Six spoke those words, he angered the Southerners but they didn't know how to reply. At this moment, a voice came up from somewhere in the seats at the end of the banquet.

“Of course we should respect the elders' will, but....the connection through marriage between the South and North is such a significant move. In order to fight against the demons, it's definitely fine for individuals to make a sacrifice.”

Looking at where the person who spoke this sat, one could see that he was just an ordinary student who passed the preliminary exam to the Great Trial. No one knew why he said this but he probably said it because he was just a pedantic young man who cared about the future of humankind.

After speaking this, the entire palace was silent — even more quiet than before. Everyone remained wordless. They were not using silence to show their objection. They obviously knew these words actually were unreasonable at all, but it was their last hope for this engagement to succeed so they all remained silent to keep themselves out of affair. They let the youngster who said these words to stand in the front.

Chen Chang Sheng looked towards the youngster. Seeing the youngster's serious attitude and knowing that he really thought this way made Chen Chang Sheng sad rather than angry. He was ashamed how the first Emperor led the union of the Yao and human army to force the demons back to Xue Lao City but humans still couldn't get rid of their fears of demons.

“Humans are truly shameless.”

Another voice came up in this quiet palace. This sentence seemed normal but it was actually spoken by a person of a very high position or by a very bitter other side. Commenting on the entire human world caused the people to be even more furious than before because they could not even object to it.

This marriage, since the very beginning, was a great event in the human world. When the Southerners came to propose and did not tell Xu You Rong, the South and the Great Zhou court could push the blame onto her parents if any problems occurred later on. When Chen Chang Sheng suddenly appeared with an engagement, people then decided to respect Xu You Rong's own opinion but when the white crane flew brought a letter to reveal Xu You Rong's true feelings, someone stood up to argue that individuals should

sacrifice for the benefit of the entire human race.

When you talk about promises, they talk about feelings. When you talk about feelings, they switch the topic and talk about morals. When you talk about morals, they then talk about reasons. In short, when they can't argue against you and when they don't have anything to back them up, they will change the topic. They will keep changing the topic until the situation is favorable for them and until they emerge as the victors.

This was truly shameless.

It was Luo Luo who took down the masks and uncovered everyone's shameless faces under the light of the Nightly Pearls.

She did not hide her contempt and anger. She looked at the people in the palace and said, "Do you even care about honor at all?"

The Southerners sitting in the front seats could no longer hold their anger. Guan Fei Bai who had held it in for so long suddenly stood up and said, "Don't you dare!"

Luo Luo glimpsed at him and wanted to curse back but after thinking about Chen Chang Sheng, she held herself back. Instead, she murmured to herself.

Chen Chang Sheng rubbed her head, laughed and said, "There's no point in arguing with these people."

Tang Thirty Six shook his head said, “Since we want to fight, we can’t lose in the verbal combat.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought a bit and said, “True, but I am not good at this.”

“If you want to learn, let me teach you.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him said. He then turned around and looked at where the Southern ambassadors were sitting. His vision fell on Guan Fei Bai and he scolded, “I am talking to you guys! Even a little girl knows that you are shameless, how can you not feel that yourself? Don’t you dare? Don’t your mom dare?!”

Guan Fei Bai was furious to the max degree and his look matched his anger.

At this moment, the white crane lightly used its beak to touch Chen Chang Sheng’s hand.

Chen Chang Sheng felt a bit surprised. He looked at the crane and although he hadn’t seen it for many years already, he faintly understood its meaning. He thought a little and since he had already achieved the goal tonight, he figured that he should leave early to avoid further embarrassing the other people.

“Let’s leave.” He told Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six.

“Leave?”

The elder of the Mountain Li Xiao Song Gong looked at them and said coldly, “You three little kids, you think you can just leave like this?”

Hearing this, Luo Luo slightly raised her thin eyebrows. Chen Chang Sheng’s desire to take her and Tang Thirty Six away was simply giving the Southern ambassadors a step down, but in others’ view, they were giving in first which made she feel uneasy. Now that the opponents seemed unwilling step down, how would she still give in?

“You old son of a bitch, do you actually dare to stop us from leaving?”

Elder Xiao Song Gong suddenly became mad. Every one of his wrinkles began to emit dangerous aura. He was only one step away from saint and the first moment he noticed Luo Luo, he faintly knew that she wasn’t a human. Because of one thing happened in past, he disliked people of the Yao race. More accurately speaking, he detested Yao.

He was the elder of the Li Mountain. How would he care about such a weak Yao. What’s going to happen even if he killed her?

Xiao Song Gong said coldly, “You were so disrespectful to me before, so I’m going to help your parents to teach you a lesson.”

Hearing the words parents, Luo Luo raised her eyebrows and said with slight anger, “Who do you think you are? How dare you say this!”

At the first night of the Ivy Festival, she almost said the exactly same words to the Professor of the Heavenly Academy.

On the third night, she spoke this again but Xiao Song Gong was the elder of Li Palace. He was far more respectable than the professor of Heavenly Academy, but in her eyes, what's the difference between them?

Xiao Song Gong originally thought that after all, he was in the royal palace. He had to save some reputation for the Zhou people. It would especially be a problem if he bothered the Divine Queen, but tonight he got humiliated continuously, especially by this little girl who didn't respect him at all. He just couldn't control his temper anymore!

The light emitting from the Nightly Pearls was flashing. Elder Xiao Song Gong still stayed at the same place, his sword was still in its sheath, but an extremely sharp sword spirit already came out of the sheath and dived towards Luo Luo!

Although on the first night, Luo Luo already demonstrated her strength, she was only a young little girl. It was even impossible for Qiu Shan Jun to defeat Xiao Song Gong who was only one step away from saint, facing such strong sword spirit, how could she defend against it?

Obviously Xiao Song Gong still had his worries, so the sword spirit was mild. It should not kill Luo Luo, but it would definitely hurt her.

Only by doing so, he could release his anger and teach the youngsters a deep lesson.

He thought he was tolerant enough, but he didn't think that there were some people whom he couldn't even hurt.

“No!” Prince Chen Liu's face turned pale as he shouted urgently.

Mo Yu's willow eyebrows lifted up and yelled, “Stop!”

Xiao Song Gong's stage was truly high. They couldn't even stop him and only hoped that he would listen their voices, and make a pause on the brink of his attack.

In the palace, the only one who was as strong as Xiao Song Gong was the principal of the Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu. Only he could block Xiao Song Gong's attack.

Mao Qiu Yu stared at the sword spirit that was breaking air and his eyes were like god's eyes, there were smoke and rain inside.

Prince Chen Liu, Mo Yu, and Mao Qiu Yu were the ones who reacted fastest but they were not the first one to react.

The one who reacted first was Chen Chang Sheng.

No one noticed when he stood in front of Luo Luo.

Just like that night and also like the other night.

Since Luo Luo became his apprentice, he really saw Luo Luo as his own student, and wanted to protect her.

This is his duty. It became an instinct.

Chen Chang Sheng appeared in front of the sharp sword spirit.

Xiao Song Gong looked at him expressionless. Since he could not kill anyone in the Great Zhou royal palace, heavily wounding Chen Chang Sheng would be even better.

If he destroyed this youngster, would Xu You Rong still marry him later?

Of course, if this youngster was unlucky and died, that might be the best thing.

Mao Qiu Yu already prepared to do something.

He lifted his two sleeves as if he was about to dance in wind.

Yet the next moment, his sleeves suddenly stopped moving.

Not because he wanted to watch Chen Chang Sheng die, but because someone already did something.

A shadow suddenly flew onto the field from the corner of the palace!

The shadow was unimaginably fast, as fierce as fire. It caused a harsh sound in the air!

Chapter 69 - The White Emperor As Last Name (2)

The sword spirit is an invisible sword.

This sword began from the depths of the palace and thrust its way all the way towards the palace door. Elder of Mountain Li used his past experience and whether or not the sword was visible or invisible, it would be chopped into half by this sword. No matter if Luo Luo or Chen Chang Sheng placed the sword horizontally in front of his chest, no one could defend against this sword.

Something or someone broke the air. Like lightning, a shadow came before the sword.

Pa, the seemingly unstoppable sword spirit from Xiao Song Gong was actually blocked!

More shockingly, what blocked this sword spirit was simply a pair of hands!

The hands were shrouded by the sword's light which emitted a golden color like it was made of actual gold!

A complete silence.

Elder Xiao Song Gong's sword spirit and the hands interacted, Pa Pa.

Next moment, in the darkness outside the Wei Yang Palace, the Pa Pa sounds came up again!

The sword and hands were motionless in people's eyes but the surrounding air was about to break.

The darkness outside seemed to have broken already.

Hong!

The barrier outside the Wei Yang Palace suddenly broke up!

Cold wind blew in from all the doors and windows. It blew up teachers and students' robes and even the light emitted from the Night Pearls seemed to be shaking!

Some who were close to the door were even falling backwards. Their faces were pale as they couldn't breathe and obviously, couldn't make any sounds.

Such a strong Qi crash paved way for terrifying consequences.

It was still dead silent in the palace. There was only sound of wind blowing.

The sword spirit gradually diminished.

The hands were slowly taken back.

The owner of the hands was only an ordinary looking middle age man. The man looked a bit fat and he wore clothes with copper coins all over it. He looked like a common rich man in the countryside but he didn't look like an elite at all. He therefore, appeared extraordinarily unfitting in the palace.

The middle aged man took his hands back and looked at Xiao Song Gong in the depth of the palace. He revealed a meaningful smile and then retreated to Luo Luo's back.

When he stood in front of Luo Luo, he looked like a normal rich man. After he stood behind Luo Luo, he also looked like a normal rich man. He did not reveal any manner as an elite and he neither tried to hide his aura nor pretended to be a butler.

Because he, currently, was just an ordinary rich man. He only loved money, especially gold.

However, people wouldn't believe so. They looked at the man shocked and confused.

A man who could tie with the elder of Mountain Li Xiao Song Gong, at the very least should be at the same level with the principal of the Heavenly Academy. How could he be a regular rich man?

The Southern ambassadors felt even more shocked; especially the young disciples of Mountain Li. They couldn't understand that even though their granduncle casually attacked and controlled his power because he was in the Great Zhou royal palace, how could this man block the sword simply by using a pair of hands!

Xiao Song Gong looked at the middle aged man standing by the door and had mixed feelings. He remembered something, but dared not to believe it.

A extremely soft breaking sound came up.

This sound was so light that only the disciples who stood closest to Xiao Song Gong could hear it.

Furthermore, only they could see clearly that on the sheath tied to Elder Xiao Song Gong's waist, a fragment appeared!

As disciples of Li Mountain, how could they not understand what it represented?

It was not a draw. The seemingly ordinary middle aged man actually defeated Elder Xiao Song Gong!

.....

The palace was very quiet. Everyone's look fell on the ordinary man who was standing behind Luo Luo.

Xu Shi Ji was so mad that his face turned green. He also felt so shocked. He knew that the female student of the Tradition Academy, Luo Luo, had an uncommon background but he never expected that she actually had subordinates with such terrifying strength! Who was that middle aged man? Who is this little girl named Luo Luo?

The rope on Xiao Song Gong's bony body slowly moved because wind was blowing it up. His hands were also trembling slightly in his sleeves.

The previous fight ended very quickly. It seemed like there was no win or lose, but he knew he lost. He was injured, his vessels were harmed, and his Qi was spilling out....but what really shocked him, wasn't the man's strength, but something that he faintly recalled, someone.

Something in the past, someone in the past.

Xiao Song Gong looked at the middle aged man, squinted. He was still uncertain but he asked, "You are..."

The middle aged man who stood behind Luo Luo coughed. It can be seen that he was also injured from the previous fight.

The cough was very soft, but it was like a thunder strike in Xiao Song Gong's ears.

The middle aged man said, “Yes, it’s me.”

Xiao Song Gong’s emotion suddenly changed. His old cheek became as pale as snow and infinite anger appeared in his eyes. He could not hide his fear in the depth.

“Jin Yu Lu!”

“How are you here!”

.....

Xiao Song Gong’s angry and resentful shout echoed in the Wei Yang Palace.

Besides it, there weren’t any sounds.

Everyone was dumbfounded. They looked on the middle aged man and no longer contained confusion but instead only contained shock, respect and fear.

Gou Han Shi, Guan Fei Bai, and other direct disciples all had heard of their granduncle’s biggest resentment. Now they all looked at the middle aged man with a complex feeling.

Even a person as arrogant and cold as Tang Thirty Six was surprised after hearing the name Jin Yu Lu. His eyes opened up widely as if he wanted to make sure if he was seeing the real

person.

Chen Chang Sheng knew this middle aged man. He only knew that this man was more of Luo Luo's butler. The daily foods delivered from the Herb Garden were also arranged by this man. Chen Chang Sheng had a few talks with this man before but did not see anything special. He only felt that this middle aged man was very annoying, like a climacteric middled aged woman.

The middle aged man was the Official Jin in the Herb Garden.

How could Chen Chang Sheng have thought that this butler who was like a middle aged woman would be such a strong man.

However, he had never heard of the name Jin Yu Lu so he couldn't understand the silence and the weird looks on people's faces.

Jin Yu Lu was one of the legends in this continent.

During that era, when Humans and Yao united to fight against the Demons, he was the Hay Officer three times.

Being the Hay Officer was extremely important because if he messed up, then unimaginable consequence might occur.

When he said he would deliver the army provisions and weapons to where and when, then he would definitely make it. There were never any accidents.

Because he stood by his words.

Anyone who doubted his decision would die in the North.

Jin Yu Lu, the head of the four Generals of Yao.

The first Emperor of the Great Zhou once praised: His words are the equivalent to gold! (In Chinese, it was supposed to be Jin Ke Yu Lu. The author put his name in this idiom.)

.....

The principal of Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu sighed, stood up.

Prince Chen Liu felt helpless and stood up.

Mo Yu felt a headache and rubbed the center of her eyebrows. She also stood up.

Based on Jin Yu Lu’s accomplishment and personality, they obviously had to stand up to pay respect. They had to stand up first because Jin Yu Lu revealed his identity. Their action set a precedent for the others in the palace to follow.

The Ivy Festival tonight would definitely be recorded in history.

After a while, the rest of people also reacted.

Their eyes moved from Jin Yu Lu to the little girl in front of him. The eyes moved very slowly because they were so heavy.

The Southern Ambassadors' faces turned pale. Guan Fei Bai felt so unwilling and reluctant that even his breath got heavy.

Gou Han Shi's expression became serious thinking that she was actually in the capital.

At the seats of Heavenly Academy, Zhuang Huan Yu slowly stood up. His eyes were filled with pain. He couldn't even stand up straight as if he had lost part of his soul.

Since the first night of the Ivy Festival, many people had been guessing the identity of the little girl.

People only knew she had an uncommon background, but no one could guess correctly.

Accurately speaking, no one dared to guess in that direction.

Tonight, Jin Yu Lu stood quietly behind the little girl. It was easy now for the people to know her true identity.

Tang Thirty Six looked at Luo Luo with a complex feeling as he

was thinking of something.

A complete silence. No one said anything.

There had to be someone to break this silence.

Chen Chang Sheng turned and looked at Luo Luo quietly.

Luo Luo looked down, mumbled, “Master, I didn’t mean to lie to you.”

In the Tradition Academy she had said, as long as Chen Chang Sheng asked, she would definitely say it.

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t ask.

Now, he didn’t need to ask.

But something seemed to be absent.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at little girl’s nervous look, laughed and asked softly, “Who are you?”

She thought and said, “I am Luo Luo.”

Chen Chang Sheng said seriously, “This is not a bad thing. This is something to be proud of.”

“Yes, master.”

Luo Luo looked up staring at the people in the palace. She stepped up calmly.

She was only an ordinary little girl wearing a school uniform who looked pretty but a little immature.

Yet as she walked one step forward, she stood in front of the entire world. She stood in front of everyone.

Her school uniform look as if it transformed into the royal robe. A noble aura was emitting out from her.

Everyone felt the world was lit up.

The entire palace seemed to be actually brighter.

This was the real noble aura.

People subconsciously avoided to look at her eyes. Some even took many steps back.

Not because of fear, but because she was shining.

She was like a rising sun.

Calm but warm, but people had to keep enough respect and stay away enough distance from her.

She looked at people and said calmly and proudly, “My last name is White Emperor. The White Emperor’s last name.”

Yao realm ranged tens of thousands of miles in the West. In the depths of the realm, there was a big city located on the origin of the Forgotten River. The city was very lofty and the Red River of Eight Hundred Miles was flowing around the city.

The city was named the City of White Emperor because the White Emperor lived there.

She was the sole daughter of the current White Emperor.

The two sides of the Red River of Eight Hundred Miles were all her territory.

She was Luo Luo.

She was princess Luo Luo.

Chapter 70 - There's A Youngster

The City of White Emperor at the origin of the Forgotten River. The Red River of Eight Hundred Miles as territory. Who else could she possible be?

The only princess of Yao actually appeared here!

People in the palace were very shocked. Soh Soh, with the sound of friction of clothes, everyone stood up and prepared to salute.

“My mother is the princess royal of Great West continent.”

Luo Luo looked at people and continued speaking, “My father is Bai Xing Ye.” (Bai means White in Chinese)

With these two names, the aura in the palace became even more depressed and nervous. Everyone remained silent as if they were dead.

The two names represented authority and power. These two names were among the five saints.

The couple in the City of White Emperor were at the same level as the Divine Queen and the Pope.

The southern ambassadors all remained silent. After they saw Chen Chang Sheng who was standing behind Luo Luo, they felt

even worse.

People noticed the close relationship between Luo Luo and Chen Chang Sheng a long time ago.

As expected, Luo Luo looked at the southern ambassadors said, “My master is Chen Chang Sheng.”

Mother, father, master.

She said so, which meant that she placed the three at the same height.

Different from what some people previously thought, Luo Luo did not go to the Tradition Academy for fun, but rather she actually wanted to learn. She viewed Chen Chang Sheng as her family member and respectful elder.

People inside the palace were all shocked and wordless. Even Gou Han Shi’s attitude became more serious.

Who is this kid named Chen Chang Sheng? How could Luo Luo place him at the same height as the White Emperor couple?!

“Excuse me, how is my master not as great as Qiu Shan Jun?”

Luo Luo looked at the southern ambassadors asked.

The southern ambassadors did not have an answer because they couldn't answer.

No matter how genius Qiu Shan Jun was, solely from a status standpoint, how can one compare him with the master of a princess?

Luo Luo looked at the pedantic young scholar who spoke earlier, lifted up her eyebrows and asked, "In order to resist the demons, humans need to unite. The south and the north need to make a union. So Xu You Rong must marry Qiu Shan Jun? Only because of the so-called righteous cause, you would force a woman to marry someone she doesn't want to marry?"

The young scholar said with a trembling voice, "Shouldn't we?"

"Of course you shouldn't!"

Luo Luo looked at the person and said confidently, "She's the wife of my master, how can you make her marry another man? I really suspect if you are a demon spy."

The young scholar's face was swollen red. He felt very angry, but didn't dare to say anything.

Luo Luo looked at the people and said, "The righteous cause? I am the righteous cause. My master owned the righteous cause. How dare you use the righteous cause to threaten him? What a joke!"

The young scholar wanted to explain something but after closer thinking, he realized that he couldn't say anything. Sweat poured down like waterfall on his face.

No one in the palace dared to object to Luo Luo's sentence.

It was believed that if Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun were married, the union between the north and south would accelerate.

However, everyone knew that the union between Yao and Humans was the fundamental base to fight against the demon race!

If fighting against the demons was the righteous cause, then protecting the close relationship between Yao and human was the biggest righteous cause!

In disagreement with the young scholar and other shameless people's logic, since Luo Luo definitely would represent Yao to support the marriage between Chen Chang Sheng and Xu You Rong, then anyone who attempted to stop this marriage was trying to irritate Yao to destroy the union between the races. Then what are they if they are not demon spies!

In order to accelerate the union between north and south, are they going to offend Human's most determined and strongest ally? Nonsense!

No one would make this choice. Even the Pope, the Virgin of the

Southern Sects, the leader of the Li Mountain, or even the Divine Queen wouldn't take this action.

The righteous cause? It was just selfish benefit, or another word, power. Think closely, this was truly laughable.

The young scholar was entirely wet. Until now, he saw his intentions hiding under his clothes and the righteous cause.

His face was still red but now it wasn't due to anger, it was due to humiliation.

The palace was wordless. Many people were as humiliated as this young scholar and didn't know what to say.

Gou Han Shi looked at Luo Luo with mixed feelings.

“Anyone who still wants to retain some reputation should leave right now. What's the point of struggling here?”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and mocked, “Just give up. Your oldest senior can't marry her anymore. Or do you dare to kill Chen Chang Sheng in public?”

The disciples of the Li Mountain Sword Sect were standing. Hearing these words, they felt very angry. They grabbed the handles of their swords and then looked at Gou Han Shi.

Gou Han Shi looked at him quietly. His eyes gradually lit up but were not sharp and were not more determined.

The master of the Qiu Shan family remained silent ever since Chen Chang Sheng took out the engagement. But now, he couldn't stand anymore. He stared at Tang Thirty Six and said coldly, "Is Master Wen Shui still good?"

Tang Thirty Six's expression changed slightly and said, "Want to suppress me by using my grandpa? Don't you feel any shame?"

Qiu Shan family was an ancient family in the South. They cared deeply about their reputation. As one of the Wen Shui Tang family, Tang Thirty Six, of course, understood this.

Tonight, many events occurred in the Ivy Festival. There were actually many opportunities for the two sides to modify the tension temporarily by stepping down and leaving. Yet because of some reasons or more accurately, false judgements on the situation, the southern ambassadors made the wrong choices. This led to the current embarrassing situation.

The current embarrassing situation, besides the above reasons, were also caused by Tang Thirty Six and Luo Luo's continuous mockery.

Luo Luo's scolding and mockery of people such as elder Xiao Song Gong were due to their earlier scolding and mocking of Chen Chang Sheng. She didn't like such things but with her background and identity, she had the reason to do something about it.

Tang Thirty Six's scolding and mockery of people such as Xiao Song Gong and the master of Qiu Shan family were entirely due to his personality.

No matter what position in the family hierarchy or other aspects, he shouldn't act this way. He appeared too full of nonsense, too dissipated, and too unrestrained.

Not every unrestrained person was a prodigy who could succeed later. They are more likely to be dandies.(In Chinese idioms, prodigy return to the fold and succeed later)

In many's eyes, Tang Thirty Six acted very worldly and very disrespectful. He made others unhappy unlike the member of a noble family and of course, unlike a young genius of Heavenly Academy.

However, he did it because he disliked these people.

Since he disliked these people, he had no reason not to scold them.

This was his personality.

He was only a sixteen year old youngster, a true youngster. He doesn't feel happy looking at the spring wind, doesn't feel sad looking at the fall rain, doesn't sigh looking at the winter snow, and doesn't feel annoyed looking at summer cicada. He only feels

happy looking at things he likes, only feels annoyed looking at things he hated, only sighs looking at unfair things, and only feels sad looking at pathetic view of one's back under the falling sun.

He likes to stay by himself and likes to sleep, but he doesn't like interacting with others. He is a bit narcissistic, very arrogant and confident. He lives freely and the matters in the world are unrelated to him. He will attentive to things that make him happy, and will be closed to things he likes.

He is a youngster like that. His personality was just like that. Even if he isn't a genius on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, and was only a young beggar taking sunbathes in the corner seeing pretty girls pass by, he would still whistle. Seeing rich people bully the weak, he would still secretly give them two kicks. He wouldn't even care if the guards tried to beat him up later.

Therefore, he didn't have any friends in the capital besides Chen Chang Sheng. Therefore, he offended many classmates in the Heavenly Academy including Zhuang Huan Yu. Therefore, he said long time ago, if he met the little monster from the Priest's Academy who liked to bully ordinary people, he would definitely destroy him. Therefore, he couldn't come to the first two nights of the Ivy Festival.

Tang Thirty Six was a man like this. He likes what he truly likes, dislikes what he truly dislikes. So, people who liked him really liked him such as his grandpa of the Wen Shui family and the vice principal Zhuang of the Heavenly Academy. The people who disliked him really disliked him such as the current angry southern ambassadors.

He didn't care.

But there are people who care.

“How dare you! Apologize to the elder right now!”

A voice came up from the seats of the Heavenly Academy.

Now everyone was standing because they couldn't see who was speaking clearly. Moments later, people realized it was actually Zhuang Huan Yu.

People all felt a little surprised. They didn't understand why he wanted to criticize Tang Thirty Six. What they didn't understand even more was why was he speaking.

Even though Tang Thirty Six's words were worldly and disrespectful to the Li Mountain Sword Sect and the Qiu Shan family, both Principal Mao Qiu Yu and Vice Principal Zhuang were in the field. Why did Zhuang Huan Yu have the right to criticize the student? Although he was the genius ranked tenth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, he was still only a student.

The principal had been remained silent the whole time. Why could Zhuang Huan Yu criticize Tang Thirty Six?

Mao Qiu Yu turned around and glimpsed at Zhuang Huan Yu. His

expression was calm.

Many people's eyes fell on Zhuang Huan Yu.

Zhuang huan Yu's expression changed slightly. He also didn't know why he said that before.

But he already said it. How could he take it back? He closed his mouth tightly and with an angry face, he continued to stare at Tang Thirty Six.

He thought he appeared indifferent and selfless but he didn't know that, in others' eyes, he really misbehaved.

The reason why Zhuang Huan Yu suddenly misbehaved was very complicated. Tonight, many high status people came to the Ivy Festival and even a genius like him had to sit quietly. Yet who would have thought, Tang Thirty Six, whom people normally didn't even bother to take a look at was speaking loudly in front of people. This caused Zhuang Huan Yu to generate hatred towards him subconsciously.

The more important reason was because Luo Luo revealed her identity.

The legend in Heavenly Academy fell back to the reality.

He had imagined infinite times the future he had with the junior but his dream was crushed tonight.

The junior.....was the princess Luo Luo.

No matter how hard he tried, even if he became a genius and surpassed Qiu Shan Jun, it would still be impossible for him to stay together with her.

Deep disappointment and despair all turned into anger. But the love was still hiding in the bottom of his heart. He never told anyone so his disappointment and anger tonight couldn't be released.

At this moment, he saw Tang Thirty Six, the junior that he could criticize normally.

Therefore, he said that sentence.

The palace became strangely quiet.

Everyone was looking at Tang Thirty Six.

Previously when Guan Fei Bai from the Li Mountain Sword sect had been scolded Tang Thirty Six with "How dare you?" Tang Thirty Six returned back, "How dare your mother?"

Now Zhuang Huan Yu criticized him, what would he say?

The southern ambassadors all felt happy thinking that there was

now a problem occurring among the Zhou people. They thought, how would you solve this problem?

Gou Han Shi glanced at Tang Thirty Six and felt somewhat surprised. He frowned.

Guan Fei Bai looked at Zhuang Huan Yu, also frowned and felt somewhat unhappy.

Tang Thirty Six's expression became a little gloomy. He looked in the direction of the seats for Heavenly Academy. None of his schoolmates responded to his look. Mao Qiu Yu sighed and was ready to say something. Vice Principal Zhuang's face was a little pale. He looked at him and shook his head. He wanted to say something but paused, as if he had a problem that he couldn't say.

He remained silent for a while and then laughed bitterly and said, "That's so not fun."

"It's certainly not fun."

A sound came up next to him.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at him and said, "You don't look like your normal self."

Chapter 71 - The Fourth Person

“Not like my normal self?? What do you mean?” he rolled his eyes and asked.

He saw it was Chen Shang Sheng who said it and suddenly, Tang Thirty Six’s expression came alive.

“Just previously, you cursed out your opposition.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a moment and said, “And after you were finished with cursing them out, you would just go back to sleep as if nothing happened.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at the seats of Heavenly Academy and fell silent. He whispered, “After all, some people did treat me nicely.”

During the entrance exam of Heavenly Academy, Chen Chang Sheng saw a few things from afar. He knew that the vice principal cared for Tang Thirty Six and now Tang Thirty Six was looking at the direction of the principal as well. There must be a story behind this, and the vice principal should be the reason that Tang Thirty Six behaved differently than his usual self.

“But, as a person, you should consider yourself before anything.” Tang Thirty Six looked at the seats of Heavenly Academy and thought back to the experiences he endured these recent months in the school. He thought back to the isolation from his schoolmates and what he endured in the first two nights of the Ivy Festival. The corners of his lip raised slightly and a mysterious smile was on his

face.

If it was any other time, Chen Chang Sheng wouldn't have supported Tang Thirty Six's decision due to his personality — even if he was his only friend. But after encountering so much tonight, a lot has changed. Just like Tang Thirty Six fell into a shameless trap in Heavenly Academy, Chen Chang Sheng also barely escaped a Black Mighty Dragon.

He looked at Tang Thirty Six and said nothing, but his calm yet firm eyes supported his decision.

“You want me to apologize to these southerners?”

Tang Thirty Six looked at Zhuang Huan Yu and said, “This is boring, your actions are boring too.”

Shocking discussions were raised in the palace.

Zhuang Huan Yu was ranked tenth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud. He was the leading role of the younger generation in the Six Ivies and he was on the same level of the Seven Rules of Heaven who was dominate in the south. Although his previous behavior was off and was both discouraging and shameful, at the end of the day, he was still the face of Heavenly Academy. As a student of Heavenly Academy, it was disrespectful of Tang Thirty Six to point out his fault so directly.

“It's boring and it's not fun. If it's not fun, why should I stay to

play around? You guys think you can oppress me through my status as a student of Heavenly Academy, use your status as teachers to control me or use the excuse that you are a senior to shut me up? Because I.... I am going to quit.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at his former classmates and teachers and said calmly, “I have decided to leave Heavenly Academy.”

Everyone in the palace, after hearing all the news tonight, was shocked with his declaration.

Heavenly Academy was the best school in the entire continent. Countless formidable xiuxingists came from this school and even the current Pope used to be a student there. Many of the winners of Great Trial were also students from this school. Although in the recent years, the young students of Heavenly Academy were in the shadow of the Seven Rules of Heaven in the south, the Heavenly Academy was still the Heavenly Academy. No one dared to doubt the status of this institution. Everyone was proud that they could enter the Heavenly Academy. Many people struggled and endured so much just to enter the gates of Heavenly Academy. But tonight, someone actually requested to leave Heavenly Academy!

While shock filled the palace, the faces of the students and staffs of Heavenly Academy turned gray. The face of vice principal even turned pale.

“I know a lot of people will ask me why.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at everyone and said expressionlessly, “Heavenly Academy has the best teachers, best students, and I

must admit that I learned a lot from my time here. Even if I endured some hardship, it wouldn't be enough for me to decide to leave. But just like what I said earlier, the current Heavenly Academy is boring."

"It's boring and it's not fun. If it's not fun, then why should I stay to play around?"

It was a sentence that he said earlier and everyone thought back to it.

"Just because I said I'll handicap Tian Hai Ya Er, the teachers and seniors of the academy banned me from participating in the Ivy Festival! Just because I want to challenge Zhuang Huan Yu, someone sealed me in the library for one night! Don't tell me I have to think about the big picture. When did the old Heavenly Academy ever need to worry about other people's big picture? What about the current Heavenly Academy? It's even afraid of the Family of Tian Hai! What is this? This is not the Heavenly Academy I read about in books. This Heavenly Academy is boring and not fun!"

Tang Thirty Six looked at the students and teachers of Heavenly Academy. His words were informal but his expression was serious because they were words he spoke from his heart before his departure.

After hearing his speech, the noises in the palace got louder because this youngster from Wen Shui mentioned the Family of Tian Hai.

This sentence was filled with context, but people only heard Family of Tian Hai.

It's even afraid of Family of Tian Hai!

He even used “even” in his sentence.

He even thought he shouldn't be afraid of the Family of Tian Hai!

Prince Chen Liu lowered his head, two liquor cups were on the table in front of him. The liquor inside reflected the light from the Nightly Pearls and was beautiful. He seemed to be attracted by this sight and forgot about the things happening around him.

Mo Yu looked at Tang Thirty Six indifferently with a teacup in her right hand. The cup was steady.

Tian Hai was the last name of the Divine Queen. The Family of Tian Hai was the family the Divine Queen was born into. After that bloody power struggle a decade ago, Tian Hai replaced Chen to become the most powerful name on this continent — just like Bai for the Yao race. If political strength was considered, then it was without a doubt the most powerful in this world.

In the current Zhou Dynasty, even the people of Palace Li, where the Pope lives, treated Family of Tian Hai with courtesy and respect. Even if millions of people hated the Family of Tian Hai to their guts, no one dared to say such a thing in front of the public.

Who else could be like Tang Thirty Six and point out their flaws straight up?

People were looking at Tang Thirty Six with complicated expressions.

Some respected him, some sympathized him but most of them were thinking of him as an idiot – was this youngster addicted to disgracing other people tonight? He wouldn't even let go of the Family of Tian Hai?

It seemed like Tang Thirty Six didn't even feel the stares and never even considered the danger of his words. He looked at Zhuang Huan Yu coldly and said, "I knew about the struggles you endured when you were young, but it's not a reason for you to blame everyone else. Don't think that everyone in this world owes you something. You pretend to be indifferent in front of people but keep on thinking and blaming inside. You already entered the top ten of Honor Roll of Green Cloud but you still think destiny isn't fair and that you can't be as strong as Qiu Shan Jun. Who are you blaming? I can't stand it. I hate these kind of people. The current Heavenly Academy have too many of these kind of students and therefore, it's becoming more and more like a drama show. Everyone just whines all day and sings soft tunes. Obviously, it's boring!"

The palace got silent and people looked at the seats of Heavenly Academy. They looked at Zhuang Huan Yu.

Zhuang Huan Yu was wordless for a long time. His expression slowly turn calm and he looked at Tang Thirty Six, "Previously I

did misbehave. It's not up to me to judge whether you did wrong or if you cared about the legacy of Heavenly Academy. In addition, although your words are harsh to our ears, they do have some sense in them.....But have you ever thought about the reason why, after you entered Heavenly Academy, the teachers and students disliked you? Why do you feel that we isolate you? Is this because of your pride? No, the students of Heavenly Academy should be prideful themselves. You are the son of Tang in Wen Shui. You were born with a golden spoon in your hand. After you entered the academy, you were cared for by the powerful figures. You could skip class and disobey the rules of the school. But what you got was no less than others. What about your classmates? Only after they worked hard could they reap the reward and so, they disliked people like you, people who take the shorter path.”

Most of the students sitting on the scattered seats were from ordinary families. The dozens of young students of the southern ambassadors were also mostly poor students. The three young men of Seven Rules of Heaven changed their expression after hearing Zhuang Huan's words. Gou Han Shi, who was famous for his low background, fell into a deep wonder.

The vice principal's face wasn't pretty because he knew that the big figure who cared for Tang Thirty Six that Zhuang Huan Yu referred to, was him.

“What you said was reasonable. Heavenly Academy has its own rules and legacies that were kept for thousands of years. Perhaps you and teachers believe that people could only become successful after enduring all the hardship and struggles. But.....my family is just rich. What else can I do? Should I pretend to be poor or should I spend all of my family's wealth? The Divine Queen would

probably be happy from the results of that.”

Tang Thirty Six shook his head, “You have your reasons. I have my habits, and Heavenly Academy has its own rules. Tonight, there is no right or wrong between us but since we are not fit for each other, then this thing will never get interesting, Therefore, I will leave Heavenly Academy.

“You can stop talking!” the vice principal yelled with a very gloomy face.

Wen Shui’s Family of Tang had helped him when he was young. There were a lot of old stories between him and Tang. Since he promised the elders of the Family of Tang to care of Tang Thirty Six in the capital, he wouldn’t just let Tang Thirty Six fall deeper and deeper into trouble. “Enough! Your father told me to take care of you and you really think I won’t discipline you!”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and thought for a while. He scratched his head and said, “Uncle Zhuang, you always say it’s my father who told you to take care of me.....but actually during the trip to the capital, I have already read the letter for you. I knew that my mother told you to take care of me. Therefore, you don’t need to use my father to pressure me.”

Zhuang vice principal was so angry that his fingers were shaking, “You, how could you read.....read the letter!”

For some reason, Zhuang Huan Yu’s face got paler after hearing this.

Tang Thirty Six said, “All things aside, I will leave Heaven Academy tonight.”

Zhuang vice principal said bitterly, “You are such a child. Why don’t you listen? The semi-trial is already over and if you leave the school right now, what could you do about the Great Trial next year?”

Tang Thirty Six was a little stumped as this was a real problem.

“That wouldn’t be a problem.”

Chen Chang Sheng smiled and said, “Just come to my place.”

Tang Thirty Six raised his eyebrows “Go to your place?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “The students of Traditional Academy also have the permission to enter the Great Trial directly.”

He couldn’t make a mistake about this rule. The reason he tried so hard to enter one of the Six Ivies after he arrived at the capital was to skip the semi-trial and join next year’s Great Trial automatically. But for some reason, fate led him to become the first new recruit of the Tradition Academy in many years.

Tang Thirty Six raised his eyebrow higher as if he found something interesting and new.

“How many people do you have now?”

“Three.”

Chen Chang Sheng pointed at Luo Luo and himself, “There is another one left in Tradition Academy for tonight. You saw him before.”

Tang Thirty Six was silent and then he laughed, “Count me in.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought for a moment, “Then we have four people.”

Chapter 72 - Please Enlighten

Dropping out of a school is a big thing. Dropping out of Heavenly Academy is an even bigger thing.

The reason why Vice Principal Zhuang's reaction was so strong was because he knew clearly that if a student left the Heavenly Academy, other schools would not dare to accept him. Yes, Priest Academy, Li Palace, Startaker Academy, and Thirteen Division of Green Light all had their own backgrounds, but ultimately, in the capital, the Heavenly Academy was the special one....

How could he expect such a twist in the sequence of events? The Tradition Academy stepped up to take Tang Thirty Six.

Zhuang Huan Yu saw Zhuang vice principal's worrying expression and felt bitter. He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, "He's a student of Heavenly Academy. The Tradition Academy doesn't even have a principal or teachers yet and you don't know the rules. You can't just accept him like this."

As Zhuang Huan Yu said, Chen Chang Sheng didn't understand the hidden rules and never thought that the Tradition Academy couldn't accept Tang Thirty Six. Nevertheless, Chen Chang Sheng turned around and reminded Luo Luo, "After we return, remember to add his name to the list. Don't forget to get his finger print as well."

After hearing this, Tang Thirty felt a little weird. He thought he just sold himself and was counting money for his owner.

Luo Luo agreed without a trace of hesitation.

The people in the palace were a little surprised, especially the teachers and students sitting in the seats near them. They could see clearly that her attitude toward Chen Chang Sheng was exactly the attitude of a student to a teacher. The crowd was even more shocked. What did this youngster named Chen do to make Princess Luo Luo respect and admire him so much?

“Sadly, it’s a little late.”

Since he said he would join Traditional Academy, it was obvious that Tang Thirty Six wouldn’t take back his decision. He was only a little dissatisfied that he didn’t enter the Tradition Academy earlier because the night would have been more interesting. He would’ve went out of his way to help a friend and maintain the face of an academy in ruins. How cool would that be? But now the entire continent knew Princess Luo Luo was studying in Traditional Academy and just now, he joined the school. He never did maintain the face of the academy, but rather, it felt like he was trying to find a fast way out of trouble.

Chen Chang Sheng knew what he was thinking about and thought he was thinking too much, “Don’t worry about these details. You don’t have to worry about other people’s opinions. Right now, there are only us in the academy where simplicity is at its finest. It’s meaningless to make things complicated.”

Tang Thirty Six thought the reasons were true but he was

irritated that Chen Chang Sheng was giving advice already. Tang Thirty Six mocked, “And now you’re starting to teach me already?”

The people in the palace were looking at these three talking about their business in Tradition Academy. Their feelings were complicated, but they all knew that after tonight the school that once was in ruins will truly gain a new life. Tradition Academy which was forgotten for many years, has officially returned to the eyes of the world. Yes, although the current Tradition Academy only had four students with no principal, no teachers and no servants and it was still as quiet as before, after tonight, who would dare to ignore Tradition Academy like before?

Clapping suddenly started in the palace. It was loud and steady and without a hint of hesitation or fakeness. It wasn’t dragged out intentionally and it wasn’t done in mockery.

After the applause, Gou Han Shi’s voice was heard as well.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and the other two and then said sincerely, “Congratulations, Tradition Academy.”

Everyone’s face froze.

This was the second time Gou Han Shi spoke in tonight’s Ivy Festival.

Previously when Chen Chang Sheng showed his marriage vow

and silenced the entire palace, Gou Han Shi's first words asked Chen Chang Sheng to consider Xu You Rong's feelings and decision. His words were calm and easy, but it pointed to the softest and weakest spots of human's heart. If the white crane hadn't arrive from the north, it would be hard to determine which direction tonight's situation would go.

At this moment, he spoke out again.

People in the palace were a little nervous. They knew something was about to happen.

Mo Yu was thinking of ending the Ivy Festival midway so that she could end the proposal which had already turned into a drama but because of Xiao Song Gong's attack and Jin Yu Lu's shocking appearance, she couldn't do anything. So what was going to happen next?

Tang Thirty Six dropped out of Heavenly Academy and there was internal matter in the Zhou people. He joined the Tradition Academy directly afterwards but all of this was irrelevant to the Southerners. The silence of the Southern ambassadors didn't mean they accepted what was going on. The Ivy Festival did not end, but rather, it had just began.

Gou Han Shi's expression was indifferent as if the South hadn't been embarrassed by Chen Chang Sheng.

“On my way to the capital, I already knew that the Tradition Academy had reopened. I had been thinking, after more than ten

years, the Tradition Academy, a place with such uncommon history, should indeed be revitalized by now. I was very happy about it. But I was curious, what type of person can take on such a great responsibility?

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng and the other two and said, “Tonight I know. Princess Luo Luo is actually at the Tradition Academy, and the princess’s master is actually a student of the Tradition Academy. With this, how can the Tradition Academy not be revitalized?”

“Many people want to know, after all, how far did the Tradition Academy come by now and I am no exception. Thank the Divine Queen for allowing all of the students in the South to participate in the Great Trial and the court for even inviting us to the Ivy Festival this year.”

Upon saying this, Gou Han Shi left his seat and walked a few steps down even though it only got him a few steps closer to Chen Chang Sheng’s group who were standing by the door. But now, he was standing right in front of them. He spoke to them kindly and calmly,

“Tonight is the third night of the Ivy Festival, also the last chance for the Six Ivies and other students who were invited to compete.”

“We came from ten thousand miles away and since we are participating the Ivy Festival, we obviously can’t miss it.”

“I, as a representative of the Li Mountain Sword sect, ask the Tradition Academy to please enlighten.” (In this case, please enlighten is a polite way of asking people to have a fight, or compete)

.....

The palace was very quiet. Although not as dead as before, strangely, people were not surprised by Gou Han Shi’s suggestion. It was like everyone had already guessed that such thing would happen and actually hoped for it.

But before Gou Han Shi said this, people actually didn’t think of it. Tonight was the Ivy Festival.

To the Southern Ambassadors, Gou Han Shi’s suggestion was the best choice.

If he directly challenges Chen Chang Sheng, people would think that the Li Mountain felt angry about their unsuccessful proposal for Qiu Shan Jun and therefore wanted to revenge. He didn’t mention the fight between elder Xiao Song Gong and Jin Yu Lu and the story that happened in the past. He didn’t mention princess Luo Luo’s identity. And he also didn’t mention Tang Thirty Six’s disrespect to his sect but only mentioned the Ivy Festival.

There’s a rule in the Ivy Festival which said schools could challenge each other.

This was not a rule made by the Great Zhou First Emperor and it was also unrelated to the second Emperor. The Ivy Festival was the Great Trial, and both had its history and traditions. Therefore, the rules in the Ivy Festival should still be respected or were the Zhou people ready to break the rules themselves?

The palace was wordless, people remained silent.

At this moment, surprisingly, Gou Han Shi spoke up again.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng said indifferently ,”Yes, what I just said was simply an excuse, or a reason.”

Chen Chang Sheng felt a bit dazed. Luo Luo felt a bit surprised. Tang Thirty Six felt a bit shocked. They all didn’t understand why he suddenly said this.

People in the palace felt even more astounded.

“Tonight, too many things had happened. No matter right or wrong, to us Southerners, to us Li Mountain Sword sect, there not delighting things. More importantly, my oldest senior is not present, to this thing so no one can hear his opinions. I think this is unfair.”

Gou Han Shi looked at Chen Chang Sheng calmly and said, “As a disciple of Li Mountain, I have responsibility to protect the reputation of my sect. As a junior, I want to represent my senior to show his attitude and so although I know the excuse or reason I

used is boring but I still want to do something because we need to calmly leave the palace.”

Lastly, he made a bow to salute Chen Chang Sheng and said, “Please enlighten.”

The entire field was silent, everyone looked to Chen Chang Sheng, Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Gou Han Shi and remained silent for a long time.

He knew Gou Han Shi’s reasoning. Li Mountain sword sect wanted to retain some of its pride by challenging the Tradition Academy and through this process, prove that he was behind Qiu Shan Jun. In fact, Gou Han Shi didn’t hide his thoughts and put everything in front of people.

Was this really justified?

He looked at Gou Han Shi said, “This only seems appropriate.”

Gou Han Shi said calmly, “This isn’t just, but open.”

Yes, his thoughts weren’t justified, but the way Gou Han Shi put everything in the public, the proposal to directly challenge the Tradition Academy, was open and could not be criticized. Therefore, it’s very hard to respond.

Based on Chen Chang Sheng's personality, if he wasn't manipulated by the Dong Yu General's mansion and the high status people in the royal palace, he wouldn't have acted this way against the marriage. If he was by himself, facing Gou Han Shi's challenge, he absolutely would turn around and leave.

But now, he wasn't by himself. He was representing the Tradition Academy.

He already felt attached to the school that had a big banian, a pond, a building filled with books, and an abandoned well.

The Li Mountain sword sect was not challenging him, but the Tradition Academy.

Then, he could not completely follow his own thinking.

He looked towards Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six and wanted to know their opinions but he found out helplessly that both Luo Luo and Tang Thirty Six had strong desires in their eyes. Their eyes were extremely bright and burning to the extent that other people couldn't even look directly at their eyes.

Indeed, people couldn't look directly at the two people's desire to fight and their fearless hearts.

"Eh...fight or not?" Chen Chang Sheng asked.

There wasn't any principal or teacher in the Tradition Academy, only them. When facing such a big thing, obviously, they had to discuss it together.

Luo Luo was still yielding and said, "If master wants fight, then let's do it."

Tang Thirty Six looked at him as if he was looking at an idiot and said, "They already said it already, won't you feel shameful to not fight?"

It seems there wasn't a clear answer. Luo Luo said she would listen to his words. Tang Thirty Six used a question, but in reality, everyone knew their meaning.

Fight.

Chapter 73 - Unwilling

Besides the wall in front of the Mausoleum of the Book, what did the Destiny Pavilion care about the most when evaluating honor rolls such as the Honor Roll of Green Cloud and the Honor Roll of Midas? The answer is the fights between elites on the honor rolls. Anyone that got on the honor roll, regardless of background, would have experienced at least one battle.

Chen Chang Sheng who did not have experience asked, “Then, how do we fight? Who do we fight?”

Luo Luo’s eyes lit up and she held onto the handle of her Falling Rain Whip using her right hand. She walked up and said, “When master has a problem, his disciple will solve it.”

Of course, Tang Thirty Six wouldn’t let her take advantage of such a great opportunity to fight and said, “I am new... so you should let me prove myself.”

Nowadays, the Li Palace Sword sect possessed a special status because its current young generation was very strong. Certainly Tang Thirty Six was a genius, but he still couldn’t compare to his opponents. That is not to say Gou Han Shi or even the three young disciples of the Li Mountain could defeat him easily.

The Seven Rulings were all from the Li Mountain. Everyone of their rank on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud ranked much higher than Tang Thirty Six.

Yet Tang Thirty Six seemed to never think about the difference in ranks. When he looked at Gou Han Shi, his eyes lit up and he became excited.

The word fear was never in his dictionary. He originally wanted to challenge Zhuang Huan Yu who ranked tenth on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud on the second night of the Ivy Festival. His fight was rejected only because the school objected to it. Tonight, he decided to join the Tradition Academy but he immediately got a chance to fight the Seven Rulings. He didn't want to miss this chance.

Yes, this was a good opportunity.

“If I didn't remember incorrectly, the third night of the Ivy Festival is the literary test.”

Gou Han Shi didn't look at Tang Thirty Six, but only quietly looked at Chen Chang Sheng. “Since even the princess became your apprentice, then you should be very knowledgeable. Also I heard you still haven't successfully purified yet, so I think the literacy competition would be a good option.”

He didn't finish his sentence, but everyone understood it.

Li Mountain Sword sect challenging the Tradition Academy was basically Gou Han Shi challenging Chen Chang Sheng.

The palace was silent. Gou Han Shi sounded very reasonable and

showed Li Mountain Sword sect's pity for the weak and pursuit for equity. Gou Han Shi's comment meant that since the third night was a literacy competition, Chen Chang Sheng didn't have an excuse to not compete with him even if he didn't purify successfully yet.

However, this suggestion was in truth not pitiful or fair.

Gou Han Shi read three thousand Scrolls of the Way and learned all the teachings from both the North and the South. Even the old professors who studied the Scrolls of the Way for their entire life in the Li Palace couldn't score better than him on the literacy test. This was a fact acknowledged by the entire continent. If they were only talking about xiuxing, Gou Han Shi wasn't strong compared to those elders who had xiuxinged for hundreds of years because he was younger, but in regards to knowledge, he was the most knowledgeable.

He wanted to compete against Chen Chang Sheng in the literacy competition. How was this fair? This was completely bullying and would be utter dominance by the strong elite.

Luo Luo's look became sharp and she stared at Gou Han Shi. She shouted, "Nonsense!"

Gou Han Shi's expression didn't change. He first made a salute to her and then said, "May I ask, what is nonsense?"

Tang Thirty Six laughed contemptuously. "The entire continent knows that you have read all of the Scrolls of Way and that you are

the most knowledgeable. Where can we find someone comparable to you? You actually want to compete with that kid in knowledge? Don't you feel any shame? To actually suggest it, how is it not nonsense?"

Gou Han Shi looked at him and said calmly, "I am also a commoner. My memory skills are not better or superior to than others'. Since I was a child, my family was very poor. Also I couldn't begin reading (supposed to be xiuxing?) right after I was born. The only thing I can do is read. Reading is my xiuxing. Knowledge is my strength like power is a tiger's strength. I am representing Li Mountain in this challenge to the Tradition Academy. Should I really abandon my strength? I use my strength to live on. Why should I feel shameful? I use my strength to defeat my opponent. How is it nonsense?"

"What a stupid argument! I am best at sleeping. If I want to compete with you on who could sleep longer, will you also agree?" Tang Thirty Six said.

Gou Han Shi smiled and said, "If there is such a competition as the Sleeping Competition in the Ivy Festival, then I will."

Tang Thirty Six got stuck but after a while, he laughed contemptuously, "Then how is the literacy competition going to be? Do you actually want the Bishop to give us tests? Why do we have to get so complicated? Since we all didn't participate in the second night of Ivy Festival, isn't it more straightforward to just have a fight?"

Gou Han Shi spoke calmly, "If you insist, I have no problem with

it...You can decide both competition type and who competes.”

People all felt a little surprised, even Tang Thirty Six didn't expect Gou Han Shi's sudden change of attitude.

Following Gou Han Shi's sentence, Guan Fei Bai and other two young disciples of Li Mountain walked up to him with empty expressions.

Seeing this, people then realized that they misunderstood Gou Han Shi before.

The so called literacy competition, indeed was an automatic win for the Li Mountain, but fighting would be even worse for Chen Chang Sheng because he would have even fewer chances to win.

Among the Southern Ambassadors, there weren't many people coming from the Li Mountain Sword Sect. Beside the elder Xiao Song Gong, there were only four other youngsters.

They were four of the Seven Rulings.

At this moment, Chen Chang Sheng spoke again.

He looked at Gou Han Shi, “I agree with you. Anything obtained from xiuxing is their own ability. Just like how when rice eaten, it turns into energy. It's our freedom to use the energy to do what we want. Fortunately....I am also a commoner and I also have read some books.”

Both were commoners and both had read some books, which was really coincidental. Therefore it's good for them to compete.

“After all you are unwilling.”

The Bishop looked at Chen Chang Sheng and laughed, hiding deep meaning within.

Then he looked outside of the palace.

The fall wind was a little cold. The lights of the Seventh of July were only in the ordinary families, but not in the royal palace making it even colder.

The old man wore his clothes tighter and said, “If the event ends without a fight, Qiu Shan Jun will definitely feel unwilling later when he finds out. Since Tang Thirty Six could not participate in the first two nights of the Ivy Festival, he has been feeling unwilling. Also since the southerners didn't participate in the first two nights of the Ivy Festival, why don't you guys just fight? Since it is already so late, please make it fast.”

.....

The door was opened and the lights from the Night Pearls emitted in the darkness. The square in front of the palace became very bright.

Outside of the royal palace, the the streets in the capital were still crowded. Far away there were people igniting the Eternal Fires. In the southwest corner, there were fireworks burning.

There were hundreds of people who stood on the staircase in front of the palace. They were all looking at the two groups divided into the east and west of the square. They all had feelings. Some were indifferent, some felt worried, some felt happy, but none of them were nervous.

In the Ivy Festival in the recent years, the competitions between schools in the capital hadn't stopped. There were always some dramatic events occurring. In the Ivy Festival this year, the first night was forced to end early because Luo Luo destroyed Tian Hai Ya Er. There wasn't anything exciting that happened on the second night. The third night, everyone thought the main scene would be the proposal from the Southern Ambassadors, but an exciting event had happened. Now, they were finally facing the real fight.

But unfortunately before the fight even began, the result was already known. Because the results were known, none could get nervous.

Gou Han Shi wouldn't fight himself. His xiuxing stage was already much higher than others in his age. Like Qiu Shan Jun, he was no longer in the Honor Roll of Green Cloud but in the Honor Roll of Midas. If he fought Luo Luo or Tang Thirty Six, the match would be unfair.

Previously he suggested to have a literacy competition with Chen Chang Sheng because of the inequity in regards of strength. Since

in the literacy competition people only need to speak, there would be victory and loss but no wounds and death.

In the competition between the Tradition Academy and the Li Mountain Sword sect, the Tradition Academy was allowed to choose both how and who to compete. The Li Mountain Sword Sect seemed to act generous, but actually there's no difference. The disciples from the Li Mountain Sword sect who came to the capital, were all among the Seven Rulings. It's difficult for the Tradition Academy to win anyone of them.

“Originally I was going to challenge the fourth ruling.....this kid know about this.”

Tang Thirty Six pointed at Chen Chang Sheng and said to Luo Luo, “But since tonight is a fight between schools, then I can't just do whatever I want. The fourth ruling is the strongest, obviously I will let you take over. I want to try to defeat the kid named Qi Jian.”

Luo Luo said, “I am fine with it.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought a bit and said, “If we do this, the chance to win is small.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and said sarcastically, “I wanted to use the ancient horse race method. Let our weakest fight their strongest.....but the problem is you are way too weak. We can't even let you get on the field. Obviously we can only try to win two fights continuously, so you don't have to get out and lose face.”

Luo Luo actually felt very confident about Chen Chang Sheng even though she didn't even know where her confidence came from.

At the moment, the people from the Li Mountain Sword sect walked out.

The one who walked in the front was a young man. He was not even fully grown yet but actually looked even smaller than Luo Luo.

He's Qi Jian, ranked last, and also was the weakest among the Seven Rulings.

Qi Jian was Li Mountain Sword sect master's close-door disciple(last disciple he would take). He was very young, but had ranked in the top ten on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, until on one meeting two years ago. He barely lost to Zhuang Huan Yu, so he was dropped to eleventh, but no one dared to look down on him.

Because he's really small.

His rope appeared very loose, blowing up by wind, Hoo Hoo, looked somewhat cute.

Tang Thirty Six saw this scene, sighed and said, "How can I even hit him?"

Chen Chang Sheng sighed and said, “Sounds like you can actually beat him.”

Tang Thirty Six felt very angry, stared at him.

Tang Thirty Six laughed, didn't speak.

Tang Thirty Six suddenly remained silent for a while, then said, “If we can fortunately win two fights, this kid doesn't have to get on. If I lose, then Luo Luo you should just surrender, so we lose two fights continuously, then this kid no longer needs to fight.”

Chen Chang Sheng noticed his word “fortunately.”

Although he's fearless, but it doesn't mean he was blinded by his own enthusiasm.

Tang Thirty Six knew the opponent was strong.

Luo Luo didn't understand, why if he lost, she had to surrender too?

Was it really more important for master to not go up than the loss of the Tradition Academy?

“Yes, the Tradition Academy only got a few sparrows like us, is it really shameful to lose to the Li Mountain Sword sect? Fine, it's

certainly shameful, but that doesn't matter, as long as you don't go up.....If you don't go up, then they can't get back the reputation they lost today.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at the calm person standing in the opposite at the square, said, “Let them feel unwilling!”

After saying this, he held on to the handle of his sword, walked towards the opposite side.

Chapter 74 - The Youngster's Sword

Why did Li Mountain Sword Sect want to challenge the Tradition Academy? Because they came all the way from the south to propose to Xu You Rong, but were stopped by Chen Chang Sheng. They had to think of a way to regain their pride as Gou Han Shi admitted. Only then could they leave the Zhou Royal Palace calmly, although sparsely.

With Tang Thirty Six's schedule, whether the Tradition Academy won two times in a row or lost two times consecutively, Chen Chang Sheng wouldn't need to step into the arena, and therefore, Mountain Li's Sword Sect couldn't earn back their pride. Although Luo Luo thought this action was kind of..... shameless, it was rather interesting. She showed her support through silence. However, Chen Chang Sheng actually really wanted to interact with Gou Han Shi who was rumored to have understood the entire Scrolls of the Way. Chen Chang Sheng wanted to say something to Tang Thirty Six, but he had already entered the arena.

Wind was blowing wildly outside and the palace was getting colder as the night drew on. Tang Thirty Six stood in the field and took out his sword while glancing around. His handsome figure supplemented with beautiful hair that was blowing in the wind attracted the female students of Mountain Virgin and Green Light who were standing on the stairs of the palace. No matter what they thought about Tang Thirty Six, they couldn't have guessed that before he even arrived at the arena, Tang Thirty Six made some meaningless yet irritating gestures.

Tang Thirty Six saw Qi Jian's thin figure from ten yards away

and was stumped. He suddenly remembered something and glanced at Zhuang Huan Yu and sighed, “Look at this child. How small was he two years ago? And you were shameless enough to win.”

Obviously, Zhuang Huan Yu wasn't going to reply to that. He laughed coldly, but it meant the same thing as the previous words Chen Chang Sheng said — and you think you can win against him.

The name, the Seven Rules of Heaven is well known throughout the world, but people who never met them could never have thought that even a small child like Qi Jian was in it. He saw Tang Thirty Six and bowed. The expression on his face showed his nervousness or even shyness.

Tang Thirty Six wrinkled his eyebrows slightly and asked, “How old are you?”

Qi Jian answered, “I will be fourteen years old in two months.”

Tang Thirty Six could never give up an opportunity to insult Zhuang Huan Yu like this. He glanced at his position and scoffed. Then he looked back at Qi Jian and asked, “Since you are so young.....is it fine to not fight?”

Qi Jian's expression turned serious and replied like a small adult, “The Tradition Academy used the princess's status to pressure us, used the marriage vow to pressure us and used the righteous cause to pressure us. My senior isn't here to defend or debate for himself because he's innocent. Therefore as the lower classman, I must

help him regain his pride.

Tang Thirty Six's expression became serious as well, "Wrong. The people who used parent's words and faction's promises to pressure us, are you guys. It's also you guys who tried to use the righteous cause to pressure us. Everything that has happened was all started by your elders. We are simply defending ourselves. And your senior.....he tried to marry Chen Chang Sheng's fiancée and Chen Chang Sheng should be sorry? Do not forget, the marriage vow is still there and the white crane is still here as well."

Behind Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo, the white crane was resting on a bronze statue. Its whiteness contrasted against the night.

Qi Jian was silent and spoke no further. His small hand held his sword handle and slowly, he drew the weapon out of its sheath.

Just from this simple action, a powerful aura was released from his body.

The thin and small youngster gave off the pressure of a master.

The spectators suddenly became silent. Xu Shi Ji and others' expressions changed. Even Mao Qiu Yu's expression became more serious.

Prince Chen Liu praised, "The Seven Rules of Heaven sure aren't an ordinary bunch."

Tang Thirty Six's expression became serious and he drew his sword from its sheath.

He was known for his talent even when he was young. He was prideful and cool. Even after he left Wen Shui, came to the capital and entered Heavenly Academy, he was still the same.

He knew Qi Jian would be the most powerful opponent he faced of his peers. He knew the techniques of Mountain Li's Sword Sect would be more powerful than those of his family's legacy. Perhaps he needed to study in Heavenly Academy for two more years to actually defeat the Seven Rules of Heaven.

But tonight, he still wanted to win.

He lowered his head and glanced at the floor. Wild grass was growing out of the crack beside his shoes.

He raised his head, stared towards Qi Jian and said, "Let's begin."

Qi Jian's expression was serious, "Let's go!"

Their voice echoed through the night in front of the silent palace. The wild grass that was growing in the crack was suddenly blown backward, as if it was tearing apart.

The wind started blowing violently and two shadows appeared

and rushed toward the center of the field.

A loud crash!

Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian met, the swords in their hands also clashed against each other. Sharp wind was swirling around their bodies and it lifted their shirts. It was as if a rain storm had approached and landed on the ivies outside of Palace Li!

Two swords encountered each other in the night. The starlight that was reflected from the two swords were flowing like a stream. For sure, they were no ordinary weapons.

“Sword of Wen Shui!”

Someone realized the identity of the sword in Tang Thirty Six’s hand. The sword that was as clear as a mirror that could reflect starlight was actually the legacy sword of the Family of Tang in Wen Shui – the Sword of Wen Shui!

Grandfather Tang gave the family’s legacy sword to Tang Thirty Six for him to use in the capital. This showed how much he loved his grandson and also proved how much hope he placed on Tang Thirty Six. Furthermore, it showed that he decided to appoint Tang Thirty Six as the head of the family in the future!

Some people were shocked by the Wen Shui Sword, and some were surprised by the sword in Qi Jian’s hand.

The sword in the thin youngster's hand was dark and dull. It seemed to possess no blade and was broader than ordinary swords. It seemed less of a sword, but more of an iron ruler – yes, this sword was the “Iron Rule!”

Iron Rule was the relic sword of the elder in Mountain Li's Sect of Punishment.

The head of Mountain Li gave Qi Jian a relic sword to travel through the continent. This could only show how much hope he placed on this discipline of his!

Tang's legacy sword against the relic sword of Mountain Li. Who would be stronger?

That was what the spectators in front of the palace wanted to figure out.

At least until now, both of these swords seemed to sustain each other's attack.

Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian couldn't hear the discussion of the spectating crowd. All of their concentration and mind was on their swords.

The two swords created a barrier and two oval surfaces appeared in the night sky. They covered up the two youngster's body and

crashed into each other.

The oval surface reflected the starlight from the dark night sky. Countless murderous powers were flowing inside the bright surface.

Millions of hidden power shot out from the back of the two youngsters.

The rocky field beneath them couldn't handle such terrifying power. With cracking noises, dozens of holes appeared on the field and they spread outwards like a spider web.

Principal of Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu, raised his eyebrow slightly. He lifted his sleeve slightly and a pure yet powerful essence covered up the stone stairs in front of the palace.

He was a powerful xiuxingist and was titled "The Wind of Two Sleeves." All of his power was hidden in his sleeves. No matter how intense the fight between Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian was, it couldn't affect the people spectating the fight on the stone stairs. But he didn't care about the people on the field.

The crane gave a cry and it spread its wings and flew. It slashed through the night and landed on the roof of Wei Yang Palace.

Jin Yu Lu stood in front of Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo.

Xiao Song Gong held his sword handle and coughed.

Dozens of cracks appeared at the two sides but it suddenly stopped and couldn't travel no further.

Looking at the scene in the field, the spectators were surprised and shocked.

One of them was a famous young xiuxingst. One of them was part of the well known Seven Rules of Heaven. Both of them are ranked on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud. Even if they were more powerful than peers of their age, that didn't surprise people. What surprised people was the current situation.

Before the battle started, people thought although Family of Tang in Wei Shui was a grand family who lasted thousands of years, their legacy couldn't be compared to Mountain Li. Simply regarding techniques and precision, Tang Thirty Six would lose to Qi Jian. However, since he was older and xiuxinged earlier, at least his amount of qi would be greater than Qi Jian's amount of qi.

Who knew that after the first counter, Qi Jian didn't show a trace of weakness in the competition for the number and pureness of qi!

Many people didn't understand the reason.

Tang Thirty Six himself knew exactly the reason.

Even if he and Qi Jian had the same talent, the xiuxing technique of Mountain Li's Sword Sect was stronger than that of the Family

of Tang's. After a long time of xiuxinging, even the slightest difference would become a great disparity.

And there was the most important point.

He was lazier than Qi Jian.

Although he pushed himself very hard for the Ivy Festival to challenge Zhuang Huan Yu and didn't even visit Chen Chang Sheng because of this, it was only for a few months.

He was the only son of a great family. Just like Zhuang Huan Yu said, he was born with a golden spoon in his hand. He was loved by his grandfather and lived a happy life. Even if he xiuxinged a little harder, his grandmother would rebuke the entire family. His maids would think of ways for him to slack off.....

On the other hand, the disciplines of Mountain Li's Sword Sect were mostly from poor families, and Qi Jian was no different.* Even if Tang Thirty Six thought with his foot, he knew that Qi Jian xiuxinged much harder than him. Although his opponent wasn't even fourteen years old yet, his time spent meditating was probably much longer than his time spent meditating.

Suddenly, a cry was heard in the night sky in front of the palace.

The nightly wind was disrupted and the reflection of the stars on the two oval surface was messed up.

If it was a pool of water, it was as if someone threw a rock inside the pool.

Wen Shui Sword and Iron Rule were separated for the first time since its encounter.

Then they clashed against each other again.

In a single moment, the two swords struggled against each other for dozens of times.

That loud cry was the sound of two swords clashing. Because it was too fast and the noises too rapid, it seemed to not stop in between.

The clashing noise suddenly stopped, and so did the wind.

Two shadows separated from each other and stood on the ground. Just like before, dozens of yards apart.

Tang Thirty Six lowered his head and glanced at the floor.

Now the wind and sword was calm, the wild grass once again stood straight.

Except earlier that grass was beside his heels. Now it was in front of his shoes.

Tang Thirty Six raised his head and looked at Qi Jian who was on the other side. He noticed that thin youngster was still standing in the original position.

“You are good.”

He said, “I thought since I ate two more years of rice than you, even if I’m terrible, I should be on the same level as you. I never thought I would step back half a feet more.”

Qi Jian looked at him and asked seriously, “Are you going to surrender?”

Tang Thirty Six felt insulted, “Do you think I’m a boring person like that?”

Qi Jian was confused and asked, “Then why did you say something like that.”

Tang Thirty Six answered sincerely, “I’m just reminding myself.....I cannot be lazy anymore in the future.”

Chen Chang Sheng was behind him, “It’s not right.”

Qi Jian said honestly, “Truly, it’s no good.”

“But it will be something of the future, I still need to win against you tonight.”

Tang Thirty Six's shirt was floating slightly and his eyes brightened.

Qi Jian's expression turned serious and he waited calmly.

Chapter 75 - Collapse The Clouds

Everyone from the Wen Shui Tang family knew that their young master was not good at long battles, not because he had no stamina, but because he got bored of fighting easily.

Tonight, Tang Thirty Six appeared to very bored of the fight. He stepped out with his right foot. The grass was being blown down by wind. Tang Thirty Six's Wen Shui Sword carried the starlights and was thrust at Qi Jian. The sword Qi broke the air and faintly, fire could be seen.

“Return of Night Cloud!”

Among the spectating crowd, there were people who knew this sword technique and were calling it out.

Tang Thirty Six used all of his qi. The sword qi became more rampant as if it was actually burning under the sky.

Several clouds were slowly floating above the square. They were lit up by the sword and it looked as if they were burning too, like the crimson clouds at the sunset.

More terrifyingly, infinite sword spirits were hiding in the burning clouds — the sharpest sword spirits.

People were all shocked thinking that there was reason for this arrogant youngster to be so arrogant.

Gou Han Shi also became serious. He had thought that, when Tang Thirty Six left Wen Shui to xiuxing in Heavenly Academy for several months, he must have become stronger and was no longer just ranked 36th on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds. But he didn't know that he improved this fast, and was on such high level already.

Above the sky, the clouds were burning. Sword Qi was thrust at Qi Jian's face. His skinny body was shaking and his little face became a bit pale but there wasn't a hint of fear on it.

He shouted and placed his ruler horizontally in front of his chest, like two mountains slowly closing on a river, blocking out all of the sunlight!

Tang Thirty Six continued move up, fire came along his sword. As he walked, his sword got brighter and on its tip, a cluster of white and glaring light was formed!

The dark square was first lit up by clouds and then suddenly, it became as bright as day as if the morning sun had just risen or as if the falling sun was hoisted back up!

“Falling Back of the Setting Sun!”

The spectating crowd again surprisingly shouted!

It wasn't until now could the elites finally ascertain that Tang

Thirty Six had already fully learned the true meaning of the sword techniques of the Wen Shui Tang family.

Return of Night Cloud!

Falling Back of the Setting Sun!

A Sea of Maple!

The Wen Shui Three Movements!

.....

The Wen Shui Three Movements were the strongest sword techniques of the Wen Shui Tang family. This set of sword techniques only had three moves, but it could change the world!

Of course, with Tang Thirty Six's current xiuxing stage, even if he learned this sword technique, he couldn't fully express its power, but it was strong enough.

Even for someone as lazy as him, with four full years of xiuxing and his hard work in the recent several months, he finally mastered it. He was originally going to use it in the Ivy Festival, to destroy Tian Hai Ya Er or in the key moment when he was fighting against Zhuang Huan Yu, but he didn't have the chance. Tonight, he had the chance to use it against Qi Jian.

The crowd was shocked again and began discussing.

Chen Chang Sheng was confused so he asked Luo Luo, “What happened?”

“The three movements are very powerful. It’s the burn to kill technique.”

Luo Luo said, “Besides this, people are shocked because they didn’t expect Tang Thirty Six to use his strongest methods at the very beginning.”

Chen Chang Sheng remained silent as he thought about what was wrong with it.

“No one does that.”

Luo Luo knew that her master lacked experience of xiuxing and fighting. She thought a bit and said, “This.... isn’t normal.”

It was certainly abnormal.

In the square, whether it was Priest Academy or Thirteen Division of Green Light, or the Southern sects such as Mountain Virgin, the elders were getting ready to analyze the details of the battle for their disciples, but how could they know that just as the battle began, Tang Thirty Six would use his strongest sword technique. The result would be out soon.

How would the teachers and elders of the schools and sects even have time to say anything. They could only sigh or be shocked and say nothing.

Xiuxingists rarely use their strongest technique right in the beginning of the battle, not because of temperament but because the strongest technique was the key to victory. Using it meant that the result of battle would be out soon.

Such scene would only occur in battles between people with obvious strength disparities.

Extremely confident elites would use this method or people who were losing and knew they couldn't win would use the method.

Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian had similar strengths. Normally, the fight would take much longer.

He didn't have any reason to take the risk to see the result as the battle began.

.....

Tang Thirty Six wasn't impatient or too confident and of course, he wasn't unconfident either.

He knew that Qi Jian's quantity and quality of qi were slightly

higher than his own. Moreover, the sword technique of Li Mountain Sword sect was probably more sophisticated and stronger than that of Wen Shui Tang family. If he took the time to fight, then he would lose eventually.

He wanted to win so he had no choice but to get on the offense first.

Getting on the offense depended on who would impose his momentum first.

He unhesitatingly used the Wen Shui Three Movements. His Return of Night Cloud connected to Falling Back of the Setting Sun. The two powerful moves pushed towards Qi Jian like mountain and sea to directly shroud him.

This was the so-called momentum.

He had deeply analyzed the battle between Zhuang Huan Yu and Qi Jian two years ago. He knew Qi Jian's weakness.

He believed that although Qi Jian must have become stronger and more mature after two years, he definitely didn't completely fix his weakness.

Because after two years, a twelve year old child (actually 11 and several months) is still a child not even fully fourteen yet.

After all, a child is still a child.

.....

Children were too young, had too few experiences and most importantly, could not stand as much pressure as adults. Not everyone was like Chen Chang Sheng who had been living under the most terrifying pressure in the world since he was ten.

Qi Jian was the smallest disciple of the Li Mountain Sword Sect, but he was one of the two students who faced the most pressure in the Mountain Li. The other was Qiu Shan Jun.

He was not even twelve yet, but he could already fight against the strongest student in Heavenly Academy and although he lost, it still shocked the world. The most epic granduncle of Mountain Li who found out about this event while traveling had evaluated: As long as Mountain Li has this child, it will not fall for a thousand years.

Such high evaluation brought heavy pressure.

Qi Jian had been xiuxinging and studying under this high pressure. Although he was young, he became more and more reticent like a little adult.

But just as Tang Thirty Six anticipated, he was only a child.

Tang Thirty Six used the Wen Shui Three Movements as he first attack to try to trigger the pressure Qi Jian was facing.

He wanted to defeat Qi Jian by simply using this pressure.

.....

Besides Mao Qiu Yu and other elders, only Gou Han Shi immediately understood what Tang Thirty Six was trying to do.

His emotion became more and more serious. He knew that his junior was very talented, but because of his age, he always had a weakness. Two years ago, he lost to Zhuang Huan Yu. People all thought he lost because he lacked experience and didn't xiuxing long enough but he knew that the youngest junior lost the battle because he was not determined enough.

The reason why he wasn't determined was because Qi Jian felt flustered. He was flustered because he had too much pressure.

As if he expected it, facing the sword momentum burn like a cloud at sunset, facing the white light like a setting sun on the tip of Tang Thirty Six's sword, Qi Jian remained calm. His Iron Rule was still stable and he didn't look scared at all. The two invisible mountains were still slowly closing up and Gou Han Shi could see that. He began to become anxious.

Gou Han Shi frowned.

People would probably have thought that Tang Thirty Six's idea of hiding in his sword spirit was shameless because he was tricking

a child, but he didn't think so. Like what he said before, as long as it's one's own strength, then people should use it. Since it was a battle, then regardless of one's mind or capability of taking pressure, all should be attacked.

He just felt unfortunate because his youngster was stronger than the opponent but lost because of his mental state.

Tang Thirty Six already appeared in front of Qi Jian.

His Wen Shui Sword had already ignited all of the clouds on the sky. Even the grasses in the gap between the stones on the square were fully colored red.

Fire was everywhere and the setting sun shrouded the world.

Qi Jian looked determined. He placed the Iron Rule in front of him like a mountain defending the brook in his heart refusing to dry out.

Tang Thirty Six did not give him a chance.

After one roar, Wen Shui Sword drastically shook as if there were tens of thousands of brooks flowing on the sword eventually turning into a river.

The burning clouds in the sky, the setting sun on the tip of sword, the red grasses on the ground all fell on the body of sword and fell into the river to become tens of thousands of gold coins.

Along with the sword spirit, the river gradually flooded the shore. The trees on the shore were firing up like the red maple in the fall.

The last move of the Wen Shui Three Movements!

A river of maple!

.....

A little fear appeared on Qi Jian's face.

Now many people saw it, he was going to lose.

This close-door disciple of the master of Li Mountain Sword Sect did not even have time to fully express the power of Li Mountain Sword Technique and was going to lose sadly like this.

Seeing the daze and pain in his disciple's eyes, Gou Han Shi could no longer stand it.

He shouted to the field, "Flying the clouds on distance and close mountain!"

Qi Jian heard the words but he did not understand why his senior would say this sentence as this key moment.

This sentence a very common move among the Li Mountain sword techniques. More accurately speaking, it was in the Calm Heart scroll that every disciple would learn.

However, just like how he practiced sword techniques before in the Li Mountain, Qi Jian did as what the senior said and did not hesitate at all.

He raised right knee, twisted his wrist slightly, took back his Iron Rule and moved back like a lotus in wind.

As he took back the sword, the two slowly falling mountains paused in mid air.

Tang Thirty Six's sword thrust in, shined in the sky and moved to Qi Jian instantly.

Ca! Ca! Ca! Ca!

Part of Qi Jian's clothes broke and fell off. A cut appeared on his shoulder. He looked shabby, but he actually got away from Tang Thirty Six's sword momentum!

No one had thought of this result.

People were certain now that the key was Qi Jian's retreat.

How was the retreat so great that Qi Jian could dodge the Wen Shui Three Movements?

Qi Jian clearly knew what helped him dodge the Wen Shui Three Movements was his movement method and sword spirit.

But the premise was the retreat.

He must retreat first and then he could stand still again.

The retreat was admitting his weakness and following along with the momentum.

Was the mountain distant or close? Sometimes, was the cloud on the sky coming or leaving?

What Gou Han Shi taught him was not an actual sword technique, but was how to correct face pressure.

Because of age, because of some objective reasons, there would always a moment when one could not take the pressure.

Forcing oneself to stand the pressure was truly brave, but learning how to retreat was more wise.

Gou Han Shi used his wisdom to help Qi Jian remove the pressure from Tang Thirty Six's Wen Shui Three Movements.

Now, it was Tang Thirty Six's turn to bare the pressure.

Qi Jian's expression turned calm and his sword momentum revitalized as sharp as the rock in the mountains.

But different from before, his Iron Rule, followed the clouds and moved up.

The two mountains no longer slowly closed up like before, but rather, they completely fell off!

The wind blew hard. The youngster stabbed his sword forward which broke the setting of the sun. His sword momentum fell down like the cliff!

The cliff suddenly broke which caused the clouds at night to collapse!

Tang Thirty Six hummed as a result. He took his sword back to defend and stepped on a cloud to move back. His move was indescribably casual and smooth.

A noise came up now.

It was the sound of the interaction between Wen Shui Sword and the Iron Rule.

Just in a instant, the situation was changed.

In one round, a wound appeared between Tang Thirty Six's belly and chest.

He fell down, holding the sword at the side. His hand was shaking slightly.

He knew that he's in a disadvantage, but he was not flustered.

Suddenly, a voice came up from behind him.

“Retreat again!”

Tang Thirty Six heard that it was Chen Chang Sheng's voice and he thought, what are you talking about? I was standing with a sword calmly waiting Qi Jian to attack and looked so handsome while doing so. If I moved back again, wouldn't I look awkward?

Although he thought in such way, he instinctively moved back several steps.

Right after he left, a extremely deep fissure appeared on the ground where he was standing.

Tang Thirty Six's expression changed. He then knew that Qi Jian's sword spirit actually came soundlessly to him!

Until now, the opponent's sword spirit was used up!

The mountains suddenly fell, blocked the river and destroyed the maples on the shore but the rock that came out actually flew farther than people saw!

If Chen Chang Sheng didn't warn Tang Thirty Six, he would probably be heavily wounded by now!

.....

Gou Han Shi felt surprised. He looked towards Chen Chang Sheng.

The spectating crowds in front of the palace were all quiet. Everyone's eyes all fell on Chen Chang Sheng.

Tang Thirty Six only had fought with Qi Jian for a few moves but in the few moments that they fought, each had encountered extremely big hazards.

Gou Han Shi could see through the meaning behind the Wen Shui Three Movements and one shout helped Qi Jian to counteract it by using the most common technique of the Li Mountain Sword Techniques. He was able to defend against it through retreating. Such knowledge and such wisdom were truly applaudable, but he was Gou Han Shi, so no one felt too shocked or surprised.

But....why could Chen Chang Sheng see through Qi Jian's sword momentum too? Why did he look like he was so familiar with the

Li Mountain Sword Techniques?

Was he also like Gou Han Shi in that he possessed vast knowledge?

No one dared to believe in this conjecture.

Xiao Song Gong also didn't believe in that. He remembered the old thing that happened several hundreds years ago and looked towards Jin Yu Lu in the opposite side of the square. His look became even more hostile.

The silence in the field only remained for a really short amount of time. It was broken again.

Chen Chang Sheng seemed like he didn't feel the several hundreds of eyes falling on him at all.

He took back his vision from Tang Thirty Six and stared at Gou Han Shi at the opposite side.

“Flipped Golden Tube!”

“Sea Essence!”

“Shadow on the Window!”

“Forest Longsword !”

He spoke these four sentences continuously.

Those were the names of four sword moves.

The four moves in the Wen Shui Tang family’s sword technique.

Chapter 76 - Not Bad

Hearing Cheng Chang Sheng's voice, Gou Han Shi's expression turned serious.

“Split the Ghost of Mountain!”

“Horizontal Star Hook!”

“Essence Dew of Tree!”

He said the three phrases.

They were three combos.

The three combos of the technique practiced by Mountain Li's Sword Sect.

The two didn't look at Tang Thirty Six or Qi Jian who were on the field and they didn't look at the confused crowd on the stone stairs in front of the palace.

They just looked at each other and stated the techniques.

In fact, when Chen Chang Sheng said the first strike, Gou Han Shi started countering him.

Chen Chang Sheng's second attack was a reply to Gou Han Shi's counter.

Their voices floated in the silent Wei Yang Palace and into the arena and darkness of the night.

Their voices weren't loud, but they were clear. Especially in the ears of Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian, their voices were like thunder as it struck down with all its might!

Qi Jian's expression was serious. He held his sword and cried out loud. His thin body left shadows in the darkness because of its extreme speed.

The dark Iron Rule in his hand struck through the night wind silently. It was like a demon with a rock as its snack.

“Split the Ghost of Mountain!”

Tang Thirty Six's became cautious. He raised his sword to hang in front of his body. The second combo that Gou Han Shi called for was Horizontal Star Hook but he didn't know what it was. He didn't know if it would be as strong as Splitting the Ghost of Mountain, but he faintly knew that the three combos used by Qi Jian were of the same technique. They can amplify each other so that their power can reach staggering heights!

If Tang Thirty Six were to use his own method, he probably would take the first two hits, but he wasn't sure if could sustain

the last and strongest combo.

Chen Chang Sheng's voice was still echoing in his head.

Those four words were clear and he was familiar with the four sword techniques.

In this moment, he didn't have time to think how Chen Chang Sheng knew about the sword techniques of his family. He reacted instinctively and followed Chen Chang Sheng's words. He raised the sword in his hand.

Just when he raised Wei Shui Sword, he noticed something wrong.

How could he connect those four sword techniques!

Flipped Golden Tube is the seventh combo of Yuan Feng Technique. Sea Essence was the eleventh combo of Kai Zong Sword. Shadow on the Window was the third combo of Yuan Feng Technique. Forest Longsword was the beginning of Kai Zong Sword!

They were sword combos from two different styles, how could they be mixed and used? The path of qi of these two techniques were completely different, how could he force them to connect? Wasn't Chen Chang Sheng afraid that his qi would travel in opposite ways and get him injured internally? He followed his teacher to practice the Tang Sword when he was young, but he

never heard that he could use his family's sword technique like this.

Even if Tang Thirty Six was confused, he didn't have time to sort it out now.

Qi Jian's sword already arrived and after the terrifying power of Split the Ghost of Mountain, the form of Horizontal Star Hook began to take shape!

Tang Thirty Six made an decision and used Flipped Golden Tube.

Connected it to Sea Essence.

His qi traveled to his wrist and then suddenly dropped. He followed an undiscovered path.

Only this way could the Flipped Golden Tube be connected to Sea Essence.

Tang Thirty Six was mentally preparing himself for the internal injury due to wrong path of qi.

Except.....nothing happened.

His qi comfortably traveled from the acupoint of his wrist into the veins.

He wasn't injured, but that comfortable and open feeling made him want to cry out for joy!

Tang Thirty Six became confident and his sword was slashing like the wind. It stopped Qi Jian's sword and switched from Sea Essence to the Shadow on the Window!

There was still no problem at all!

His path of qi was traveling swiftly. He even felt that those two sword combos were not from two different techniques and that they should originally be used together!

Countless sword clashing noises were heard in the night sky.

The people spectating on the stone stairs saw Tang Thirty Six's body become strangely swift, just like a puppet with broken strings. In the moment of his rush, it seemed awkward, but it gave off a logical feeling!

No matter how powerful Qi Jian's sword was, it couldn't seal Tang Thirty Six inside.

After the sword clashing, Qi Jian finally used Essence Dew of Tree.

This was the last combo Gou Han Shi commanded for.

This combo was an execution combo in the sword techniques of Mountain Li. It took the death and isolation from the snow mountains and single peaks.

Hidden behind the fancy sword technique was the deadly, murderous way.

The Iron Rule seemed to be covered in snow and frost. Pressure was slowing coming onto the field.

Just like the arrival of winter, it was slow, yet unstoppable.

If he didn't hear Chen Chang Sheng's voice, Tang Thirty Six probably would've used the most aggressive combo and tried to end the fight in a tie. Or perhaps, he would try to end Qi Jian and himself in the technique and attack Qi Jian's weakness in pressure.

But he didn't need to do it now.

He just used a simple combo.

“Longsword of Forest!”

It was the beginning combo of Family Tang's Kai Zong Sword.

If it was any other time, this beginning combo of Kai Zong Sword would be useless.

But previously, Tang Thirty Six's sword successfully countered Qi Jian's techniques and therefore, he was ready for the last combo.

No matter what angle, form, path of qi, or state of mind, he was ready for everything.

The forest was covered in frost.

But his longsword hung above the single peaks.

He drew back in the sword with his wrist.

Wen Shui sword was dragged across the Iron Rule and a spark was lit.

The sword couldn't harm Qi Jian, but it started the wind.

After the nightly wind, his elbow hit Qi Jian's sword-wielding hand.

It was a clean shot.

A light clash.

The Iron Rule flew in the air and landed in the depths of darkness.

Tang Thirty Six took two steps back and put his sword back into its sheath.

Qi Jian lowered his head and looked at his empty right hand. He was confused and then a moment later, he realized that.....he had lost.

Just a moment, his eyes were wet. He was sad and disappointed.

Seeing him like this, Tang Thirty Six was irritated, “What are you grieving about? You are still stronger than me. Normally I can’t defeat you, but.....just the Tradition Academy didn’t lose.”

He was a prideful person, and he needed to state the truth – although Tradition Academy didn’t lose, it didn’t mean he won.

Qi Jian shut his mouth tightly and didn’t want to cry. His small face was red and said with a crying tone, “Thank you.”

Then he glanced at his senior, who he respected the most and wanted to understand what had happened.

Gou Han Shi was looking at Chen Chang Sheng,

The entire field was silent.

Everyone was looking at Chen Chang Sheng.

A lot of people didn't understand what happened, perhaps even Tang Thirty Six himself couldn't explain it properly.

Everyone now realized the most important point was the last sword draw and elbow hit. That combo was so delicate and precise that it was strange that it happened.

But everyone knew that what led to that precise strike was the previous setups.

The sword combos that Chen Chang Sheng stated.

Mao Qiu Yu looked at Chen Chang Sheng surprised. Prince Chen Liu looked at him with respect in his eyes. Xu Shi Ji and the head of Family of Qiu Shan didn't look so well, and Mo Yu's expression was complicated. She didn't understand earlier how Chen Chang Sheng could leave Tong Palace. Now she knew that actually everyone underestimated this youngster.

Tonight, many people understood Chen Chang Sheng for the first time.

Including Xu Shi Ji and Mo Yu who have met him before.

The wrinkles on the bishop's face was relaxed and he said, "Not

bad, not bad.”

Everyone knew his comment of “not bad” wasn’t targetting Tang Thirty Six, but rather Chen Chang Sheng.

Chapter 77 - Tell A Story In A Four Nine City

The silence was broken by Gou Han Shi when he looked at Chen Chang Sheng and asked “Is this the story recorded in the Gui Yuan Way of Scroll?”

Chen Chang Sheng nodded and said, “The footnote on the second chapter.”

Gou Han Shi raised his eyebrows slightly, “Indeed the names of these four sword moves are recorded, but the author didn’t mention the order.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Both the West Capital Notes and the You Yang Geography Book mentioned a spectating Taoist monk. According to the Taoist monk, the order of the moves were the order in the Gui Yuan Way of Scroll.”

Gou Han Shi realized that both books did have such record and before Chen Chang Sheng pointed it out, not many people would connect the two books to the story in the Gui Yuan Way of Scroll. The main reason was that the Gui Yuan Way of Scroll was not one of the classics emphasized by the Tradition. Since it was published several hundred years ago, only a few people have read it.

The spectators were all confused because they didn’t understand the conversation that Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi were having.

Even the elites of the Six Ivies and masters of the Qiu Shan

Family felt like they were listening to a book from heaven.

The Bishop frowned and asked Prince Chen Liu who was next to him “Which Way of Scroll are they talking about?”

Prince Chen Liu was not so sure either “Something called Gui Yuan Way of Scroll.”

The Bishop felt angry “How come I never heard of it?”

Of all the people, only Gou Han Shi and Chen Chang Sheng remembered the story from the Gui Yuan Way of Scroll. The story was about an ancestor of the Wen Shui Tang family fighting against a demon elite in the Xin Xiang province. When every spectator thought that the ancestor would lose, the ancestor used four sword moves consecutively and defeated the demon elite immediately.

The four sword moves were: Flipped Golden Tube, Sea Essence, Shadow on the Window, and finally Forest Longsword.

The reason why the battle was recorded as a story was that all the spectators couldn't figure out how the four sword moves could be used as a combo. How could the seemingly disconnected qi transfer between moves, interact with the demon elite's moves and suddenly become so fluent?

“Why did you think of using these four sword moves?” Gou Han Shi asked.

“Flipped Golden Tube was picked because of his personality. He uses abnormal moves that others don’t often use. You countered with Split the Ghost Mountain... which is tough.”

Chen Chang Sheng explained, “Your three moves covered both rising and falling momentums and at last, the starlights will all fall down to cover the mountain fully. The key is that killing depends on the power one exerts.”

Gou Han Shi said, “Right.”

Chen Chang Sheng continued, “I can’t think of any sword moves in the Tang family that could take on your moves. The only possibility was if he used the Wen Shui Three Movements again, but you understand Tang Thirty Six’s personality. He won’t follow through with such actions even if it meant that he would die and I had no time left to convince him.”

Tang Thirty Six felt somewhat mad, “What kind of person did you say I was?”

Chen Chang Sheng ignored Tang Thirty Six and looked at Gou Han Shi. “Actually I just got lucky. I randomly used the Flipped Golden Tube, but countered me so well that you did not leave me with many options. Then I thought of the story on the Gui Yuan Scroll of Way and remembered the four moves used by the ancestor of Tang family.”

Gou Han Shi thought for a bit and said “The demon elite who lost

to Tang family's ancestor indeed used tough and murderous moves, but the moves were all different from that of the Li Mountain Sword Sect. I also remember the four moves in the Gui Yuan Scroll of Way, but I never knew that you could use it the way you used it in the previous situation."

Chen Chang Sheng said, "I wasn't sure if the four moves would work either, but you reacted too quickly and too fiercely. Also Qi Jian himself is a stable xiuxingist so I couldn't think of any other options so this was my best bet."

"Not many people knew the Gui Yuan Scroll of Way, fewer people even remember the four moves, and even fewer people can recall the move and dare try it in the previous situation."

Gou Han Shi looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, "Not bad."

Chen Chang Sheng said, "I went first and gave one more move than you. If you had went first, then the result may be different."

Gou Han Shi said, "Not bad but fortunately, this is only the first round."

Chen Chang Sheng said, "I heard from Tang Thirty Six, you read all of the Scrolls of Way. You are a great person."

Gou Han Shi said, "I said before, I simply read a bit more books than others do."

Chen Chang Sheng replied, “I said before too, luckily, I also had read some books.”

Gou Han Shi stared at him and remained silent for a while. “It seems that you are very confident.”

Chen Chang Sheng’s expression was calm and he bowed to Gou Han Shi “Please enlighten.”

Wind softly blew by, and starlights shined on his face.

Previously in the palace, Gou Han Shi spoke these two words to him.

Now, it was his turn to speak these two words back to Gou Han Shi.

Simply a change in order, but it represented many things.

When Gou Han Shi and Chen Chang Sheng began the conversation, the spectators standing on the stairs were in quiet discussions, but their voices got gradually lower until it was silent.

Gou Han Shi and Chen Chang Sheng did not intentionally play a scene in which heroes appreciate each other.

But to the spectators, Gou Han Shi viewed Chen Chang Sheng as his opponent. This fact was already shocking news.

The second fight, in such atmosphere, started calmly.

Obviously, the one who stepped out from the Traditional Academy was Princess Luo Luo.

Because Tang Thirty Six won against Qi Jian, then in order to help Chen Chang Sheng not have to go out and compete, she needed to win the second battle.

Luo Luo was completely confident in her victory but none of the spectators thought so.

Even Jin Yu Lu frowned thinking that princess may lose.

Because her opponent was Guan Fei Bai.

The fourth ruling of the Seven Rulings.

At the same time, he was ranked fourth on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds.

Guan Fei Bai walked to the field and saluted to Luo Luo. His eyebrows slightly lifted not because of fear but because of gloom.

Luo Luo understood what was he thinking and said “Do you think it’s a very depressing thing to fight me? Because you have to worry about hurting me, you can’t use your power fully. Also your

arrogance and domineering personality doesn't make you seem like the type to regulate his power, so it feels like I am taking advantage of you?"

"No, I don't dare to."

Guan Fei Bai said expressionlessly, "But princess should know, no matter what, I don't dare to hurt you."

"I am a student of the Tradition Academy. Since you, Li Mountain Sword sect wants to challenge the Tradition Academy, of course I have to stand out. It's the best if you treat me as a regular student and fully express your strength. If you can't and think too much before you attack which results in a loss, don't blame me for losing."

Luo Luo looked at him and said "Because that's your own choice."

Luo Luo was very short, much shorter than Guan Fei Bai. But she looked up at him expressionlessly like she was the one looking down on him instead.

Guan Fei Bai's expression turned cold and he said, "Princess's words are reasonable."

Among the Seven Rulings, he was right in the middle but he was the most narrow-minded, arrogant and cold. He was easily irritated and even when facing against Luo Luo, he would become

angry.

“Although everyone says the ranks on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds change frequently, people always forget something. Before the change, the Destiny Pavilion is never wrong.”

He stared at Luo Luo's eyes and said word by word, “Four is four, nine is nine and no matter what, nine can't surpass four.”

Chapter 78 - Another Seven Stars At The Remote Dong Lin

After hearing this, everyone's face was blank. But Chen Chang Sheng was a little surprised – the four and nine in this sentence obviously meant the ranks on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds. So Guan Fei Bai was ranked fourth, and Luo Luo was ranked ninth? He only saw the ranks of the Honor Roll of Green Clouds once on the wall outside of the Priest Academy and he didn't exactly remember who was ranked ninth.

“In the inn outside of the Mausoleum of the Books, I told you, besides Xu You Rong, on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds, there are two other people that I don't want to bother.”

Tang Thirty Six said near him, “One is the wolf bo in the north and the other was... the mysterious girl. Of course, she is not mysterious to you at all, so.....this thing isn't interesting as I thought it would be. By the way, when can you let me show off a bit.”

Chen Chang Sheng now recalled, Tang Thirty Six had mentioned that there was a mysterious girl from Yao race whose rank was even higher than that of Zhuang Huan Yu on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds. Even then, many people had guessed it that that girl should be the princess of Yao. Then he remembered, at the first night of the Ivy Festival, he asked Luo Luo how she knew Zhuang Huan Yu and Luo Luo responded by saying that because her position was so close to Zhuang Huan Yu, it would be hard to not know him.

What position? Now, he understood. She obviously wasn't referring to geographic location because the neighborhood of the Herb Garden was the Tradition Academy, not the Heavenly Academy.

Position was the position on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds.

No matter how little Luo Luo cared about secular things, she would still know the person's name right below her on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds.

Chen Chang Sheng then realized why one as arrogant as Tang Thirty Six would leave Guan Fei Bai to Luo Luo.

Luo Luo's expression didn't change. Holding the handle of the Falling Rain Whip with her right hand, she looked at Guan Fei Bai and said, "If one only looked at the rankings, then why would we even need to hold the Ivy Festival and what is the meaning of the Great Trial? To determine who's stronger or weaker, after all, requires a fight. Otherwise, how could Tang Thirty Six defeat your youngest junior?"

Guan Fei Bai said indifferently, "That's only because someone helped."

Hearing this, Tang Thirty Six got furious and yelled, "Sounds like your senior doesn't have a mouth!"

Gou Han Shi extended his hand to signal Guan Fei Bai to stop. He

looked at Luo Luo and said calmly, “What princess said is reasonable.”

Then he turned around to Guan Fei Bai and said, “Junior, try your best in the fight. Please don’t let the reputation of our sect down.”

Guan Fei Bai no longer spoke a word. After thinking quietly for a while, he took out his sword, looked at Luo Luo and said, “Princess, please enlighten.”

Although the Great Zhou was strong and the capital was big, amongst the young generation, only Xu You Rong could beat this person. If he was only arrogant and angry all the time, how could he be one of the core disciples of Li Mountain and how could he be one of the Seven Rulings?

As he held onto his sword, he suddenly calmed down and all of his arrogance disappeared.

The arrogance all fused into his sword.

It was a very common sword.

Of course, the Li Mountain Sword Sect cared a lot about talented disciples such as Guan Fei Bai. Even if they didn’t treat him like Qi Jian by gifting him the Iron Rule, they definitely had presented him with an extremely sharp sword, but he didn’t accept it. He insisted to use this common sword because he had sworn that

before he surpassed the oldest senior, Qiu Shan Jun, he would never switch swords.

Everyone knew Qiu Shan Jun's sword was called Reverse Scale, but only his close schoolmates knew that the sword their oldest senior used was actually very common. It was made by a regular blacksmith on the bottom of Li Mountain and was worth only three silver coins.

He viewed his oldest senior Qiu Shan Jun as his role model, and a goal that he must transcend, so he only wanted to use a common sword.

The sword was common, but the person wasn't. The people standing on the staircase looked at Guan Fei Bai as he slowly walked to the center of the square. Their expressions changed.

As he walked forward, the arrogant and cold young elite's aura gradually became calm and soft, but the sword in his hand became stronger and stronger.

He stored all of his spirit into the sword.

“Don't you worry?”

Tang Thirty Six looked at Chen Chang Sheng's face, seeing that his expression didn't change, he felt a bit surprised. Only by looking at the steps Guan Fei Bai took as he walked into the center of the square, only by looking at his ability to store qi into his

sword, Tang Thirty Six knew that he definitely couldn't beat him. Although Princess Luo Luo's ranked was higher than his, did she have a chance of defeating him?

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the field and said, "Luo Luo will win. Why do I even worry?"

Tang Thirty Six didn't know how to comment. He thought to himself, only because she calls you master? This kid looked dull, but where does his confident and egotistical personality come from?

Everyone felt the same as Tang Thirty Six felt. Seeing the strong aura revealed from Guan Fei Bai, everyone thought Princess Luo Luo had no chance of winning.

Only Chen Chang Sheng knew what Luo Luo had learned during her several months at the Tradition Academy.

Ranked ninth on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds? That was a thing of the past. Now even he couldn't be certain how strong Luo Luo became.

Looking at Luo Luo who was walking towards the center of the square, looking at the little girl's dress that was softly blowing in the wind, he suddenly felt a strong urge.

Back in the days when it was only him and Luo Luo in the Tradition Academy, the things Luo Luo learned, the improvements

Luo Luo made all stemmed from him. Even though he wanted to be humble, even though he didn't want to take credit, he couldn't help but know that Luo Luo was the student fully taught by him. The strong sensation was the wanting to be recognized.

He really wanted to know, if now Luo Luo fought with Xu You Rong, who would win?

He didn't purify successfully yet and couldn't xiuxing, for now, it seemed like he would never have the right to speak to that girl face to face.

But Luo Luo is his student.

If Luo Luo can defeat her, would that represent something?

This thought suddenly came up, and he could no longer remove it from his mind.

After all, he was still only a youngster, in the adolescent period. How can he not have some competitive feelings?

.....

Yet when everyone thought the second fight between the Tradition Academy and the Li Mountain Sword Sect was going to begin, a voice came up.

Mo Yu looked at the field and said, “Princess has a noble identity. Even if there’s almost no danger, I still won’t agree with the fight.”

Upon hearing this, people became wordless. This was the problem that people worried about before. The Li Mountain Sword Sect also had proposed it, but just Luo Luo wasn’t concerned about it herself, didn’t mean the Great Zhou court wouldn’t care. How should this fight continue?

Gou Han Shi felt the stares from the high status people and understood their request. After being silent for a moment, he said, “Only compete on technique, not on qi.”

Hearing the words, Guan Fei Bai lifted his eyebrows slightly but he didn’t say anything.

Everyone knew the Yao race was excellent at comprehension. Princess Luo Luo was the only daughter of the White Emperor and obviously, her talent was rare. If it wasn’t that Yao couldn’t xiuxing with human methods, her bloodline talent would be on the same level as Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun. How would she be only ranked ninth on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds?

If after she grew up as an adult, she practiced the xiuxing method of the White Emperor family, she obviously would be much stronger, but as of right now, she was not an adult yet. In addition, she could not use human xiuxing methods to run her qi because of her race. Then by just looking at the quantity and quality of qi, she obviously wasn’t as good as the disciple of Li Mountain Sword Sect.

Now that Gou Han Shi proposed to only compete in technique, he just discarded Guan Fei Bai's biggest advantage.

Mo Yu's words and the high status people's pressure, looking from one perspective, were unfair.

However, Gou Han Shi said it himself, and Guan Fei Bai agreed to it silently. Sure enough, the Li Mountain Sword Sect was confident, and the Seven Rulings were arrogant.

Luo Luo didn't expect such change to happen and so, habitually she turned around and looked at Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't say anything. He knew Gou Han Shi's proposal was a choice made under the elites' pressure. This competing method seemed to give Luo Luo an advantage, but only he knew that this was not good for Luo Lou because he had already helped Luo Luo solve her issue of not being able to run qi in her special Yao vessels using the human xiuxing method.

Because of White Emperor's powerful bloodline talent, although it has been only a few months, Luo Luo has already stacked her qi to a very terrifying amount. Speaking from general strength, she was now probably already stronger than Guan Fei Bai and because of this, he was certain that Luo Luo wouldn't lose tonight.

Now the competition only allowed the use of technique and not qi, the one who actually lost the biggest advantage was not Guan Fei Bai, but her.

Luo Luo looked at Chen Chang Sheng.

Everyone also looked at Chen Chang Sheng, feeling confused. It was obvious that the proposal was advantageous to the Tradition Academy so why did it take him so long to agree?

Gou Han Shi thought this youngster didn't want to accept such arrangement because of his pride and said, "You know that this proposal has another meaning."

He didn't say win or lose, neither did he say advantage or disadvantage. He said, Chen Chang Sheng and him.

Only competing in techniques and no use of qi meant that he and Chen Chang Sheng would definitely have to communicate with their teammates.

The last two fights between the Tradition Academy and the Li Mountain Sword Sect were combined into one.

Gou Han Shi wanted to use this one fight to destroy the Tradition Academy.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Luo Luo and nodded.

Luo Luo looked, calmly saluted and then turned around.

Now looking at this scene, people already didn't feel as shocked as they were previously in the palace when she respected this seemingly ordinary youngster so much, because in the previous fight between Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian, Chen Chang Sheng already proved a lot.

Luo Luo walked onto the field.

Guan Fei Bai coldly raised up his sword and placed it horizontally in front of his chest.

His mind was already as calm as frost. In his eyes, there wasn't a cute little girl or the Princess of Yao race, only an opponent.

Luo Luo raised the Falling Rain Whip. The tip of the whip flew up and broke the air. It then paused in the darkness.

The two stood about 33 meters apart from each other. Unless one used qi to form sword waves to attack the other, there wouldn't be any danger.

Seeing this scene, Mo Yu was satisfied and the rest also stopped worrying.

As long as Luo Luo didn't get hurt, no one really cared whether the Tradition Academy or the Li Mountain Sword Sect won.

Instead, the high status people all looked towards Gou Han Shi and Chen Chang Sheng who were standing at the two sides of the

square, eager to find out who would win.

.....

Luo Luo lifted the Falling Rain Whip, but the one who began was not her, but Chen Chang Sheng who was standing behind her.

If she was an arrogant youngster like Tang Thirty Six or Guan Fei Bai, she might have felt somewhat unhappy or at least give some resistance, but Luo Luo wasn't arrogant. In the last few months, her school life in the Tradition Academy seeded a belief in her mind that whatever her master did was always right and that whatever he did was good for her.

So when she heard Chen Chang Sheng's voice, she unhesitatingly used the whip as a sword. She stabbed towards Guan Fei Bai who was around thirty meters away.

“Lift earth.”

This is the first move of the Wind and Rain Sword technique of Mountain Zhong. It was the starting move.

He began the fight with this move which was surprising because it was so normal.

Everyone thought the fight move Chen Chang Sheng would let Luo Luo use would be rarely known or at least be a very powerful move.

Who would think he used this common move?

The wind and rain of Mountain Zhong lifted the earth and caused a small momentum of wind and rain. Where can fear be found and where can crying be heard?

Just like playing chess(the Chinese type of chess), he placed the first piece on the three three spot which was again, not surprising.

Some people even felt disappointed.

.....

The Falling Rain Whip flew up as it broke the air and made a roar that seemed powerful. Luo Luo's qi didn't move and so, this sword move only had its form and no spirit. Because they were around thirty meters apart, it obviously couldn't hurt Guan Fei Bai. But since it was a competition, he had to take the move; so many elders and elites were watching.

Normally when faced with this common sword move, Guan Fei Bai would react it himself, but since the competition tonight was not a fight between individuals, but a fight between the Tradition Academy and the Li Mountain Sword Sect, he had to wait for his senior's advice. It was already humiliating to know that the famous Li Mountain Sword Sect was actually challenging the Tradition Academy that had fallen for more than a decade and that their trustworthy youngest junior actually lost to a student in the Tradition Academy. He was under a great amount of pressure and

had to handle this seriously.

Gou Han Shi spoke as he heard Chen Chang Sheng’s words.

“Third Move of Dong Lin Seven Stars”

.....

A complete silence.

People looked at Guan Fei Bai moving his sword in air and didn’t know what to say.

Chen Chang Sheng raised his eyebrows because he was certain that he never saw this sword technique before.

The Scroll of Way was like the ocean. There were countless sword techniques whose name contained the word star and there were more than ten sword techniques whose name contained Seven Stars.

Yet, he truly never saw this Seven Stars sword technique before, and never heard of it.

He said, “Last move.”

He didn’t speak the name of sword technique but

straightforwardly speaking, the last move was obviously the Wind and Rain Sword technique of Mountain Zhong.

The last move was named: Hug the Rains.

It was a retreating move, a defensive move. The move with most dense defense in the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong.

Chen Chang Sheng never saw the Dong Lin Seven Stars, so he only hoped to defend against it first.

.....

“Great.”

The principal of Heavenly Academy Mao Qiu Yu softly smoothed out his long beard as he looked at the field and applauded.

As an elite in the capital, his comment obviously grabbed many people’s attention.

Xu Shi Ji asked, “Have you even seen this sword technique before?”

“Never.”

Mao Qiu Yu said, “That’s why I said great.”

Suddenly someone shouted out, “That’s the sword technique of the Qing Jiang Sect in the Dong Lin Province.”

After hearing the voice, people looked towards where it came from and saw that the one who said it was an unknown young student from the Southern Ambassadors.

Someone asked, “Qing Jiang sect? How come we never heard of it?”

Many people were staring at the young student so he felt a bit nervous. He explained, “That’s a small sect. I am from Qing Jiang, so I know.”

Mao Qiu Yu sighed and said, “Sure enough, it’s extremely great.”

Chapter 79 - From The Rural To The Temple

People finally realized that Mao Qiu Yu was praising Gou Han Shi instead of Chen Chang Sheng.

Luo Luo's first move, as instructed by Chen Chang Sheng, seemed to be ordinary but it was actually the best choice to starting out a fight. The first person to move has to wait for the opponent to break the first move. This was the reason why the first attack should be defensive — to make it difficult for the opponent to break the momentum.

From Mao Qiu Yu's point of view, it was a great choice but everyone would have thought the same so it didn't look extremely clever.

Everyone could see that Gou Han Shi's counter move was no special technique because what exquisite sword technique could an unknown sect of Dong Lin Province create? However, it was extremely well done, but just like the spectators, Chen Chang Sheng had never seen this sword technique.

Speaking nicely, Gou Han Shi's counter was like a goat hanging itself on a tree by its horns so that its opponent couldn't reach it. Speaking plainly, Gou Han Shi just spread some seeds into a farmland and never tended to it. He, himself wouldn't know what this farmland would look like next year or whether the seeds would grow or not.

Then how would Chen Chang Sheng know?

Rain's Welcome was Chen Chang Sheng's response.

Although it was just a battle without the use of qi, Luo Luo was still concentrated. She focused all her mind on the whip. This move was almost perfect.

Gou Han Shi said another move.

Still, no one knew the origin of this sword technique. Only until a foreign student who passed the semi-trial yelled out in shock did people find out that this sword technique was created by an old xiuxingist from a broken temple in Wen Shui. It was a bit famous in that region.

Tang Thirty Six was not happy because he grew up in Wen Shui and never heard of this sword technique. How did Gou Han Shi know this even when he lived in Mountain Li for most of his life?

"Very nice." A woman wearing a white gown from Mountain Virgin complimented.

Chen Chang Sheng told Luo Luo to defend using the seventh combo of Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong.

Gou Han Shi then said another technique and it was once again, an unknown move from a small sect.

Chen Chang Sheng countered it again.

In just a moment, Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai attacked for dozens of rounds. The spectators on the stone stairs didn't grow silent but rather, the discussions got louder.

People glanced at Gou Han Shi with admiration. It was amazing of him to memorize so many foreign sword techniques.

Xu Shi Ji nodded slightly and the head of Family of Qiu Shan grew calm. He was satisfied with the current situation.

Some people looked at Chen Chang Sheng and thought he did well too. Under his instructions, Luo Luo only used Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong but was still able to defended successfully against the strange and foreign movies of Gou Han Shi. There were two times that she used the same combo but their effects were completely different.

In some people's eyes, another person who performed well was the fourth rule of Heaven, Guan Fei Bai.

The fact that Gou Han Shi knew about this many strange and foreign sword techniques made it clear that he was well read and wise. The world knew that he understood and finished the entire Scroll of the Way and all of Mountain Li's Sword Sect own

treasured sword techniques. Although people admired him, they weren't surprised. However, every combo he instructed was used by Guan Fei Bai without hesitation. What did this represent?

This showed that Guan Fei Bai also knew about these foreign sword techniques and could control and use them properly!

There are thousands upon thousands of sword techniques in this world. People didn't even hear of some strange or foreign ones, but he could use them all!

How much time did it take to practice them? How much determination and preservation did this take?

“Sword Sect of Mountain Li's name is not in vain. It's no wonder that many outstanding young people come from that place.”

Mao Qiu Yu said as he looked at Guan Fei Bai with a complicated expression.

Hearing his words, the spectators woke up from their amazement. The students of Six Ivies, especially the students of Heavenly Academy felt embarrassed.

Just this moment, the situation on the battlefield changed.

Following Gou Han Shi's voice, Guan Fei Bai's sword technique suddenly changed from the foreign ones to the most commonly used Xuan Zong sword technique.

This sword technique was the basic combo of the southern sect. It was very clean and open.

It was Guan Fei Bai's most practiced sword technique as well. In the younger generation of xiuxingists in the continent, Qiu Shan Jun would be the best at using this sword technique while Guan Fei Bai would rank second.

Seeing the bored and common sword techniques being used in the arena and looking at the long sword slashing through the night sky, people finally fell into silence.

A lot of people knew about this sword technique. A lot of people practiced this as well. But not many could use this sword technique in the fashion Guan Fei Bai demonstrated. He was able to show off the sword's spirit completely without using qi.

Tonight, Guan Fei Bai taught a lesson to the young students on the stone stairs by doing so.

Following Gou Han Shi's voice, Guan Fei Bai's Mountain Door sword advanced and the pressure fell on Luo Luo. For the first time, a heavy expression climbed up on her young face. Although the opponent's sword technique wasn't strange, following the foreign sword techniques, a unique rhythm was formed.

Previously, she only used Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong. It started from the Fallen Leaves and finished at the Eastern Mountain. Her rhythm was perfect, but as the opponent

changed his moves, the rhythm stopped and it seemed that she was falling to the opponent's speed.

How could she make a comeback?

Guan Fei Bai looked at her expressionlessly and attacked with the force of raging fire which burnt the entire prairie.

It was her turn to fight back.

Luo Luo felt the pressure, but Chen Chang Sheng endured most of it. He never thought Gou Han Shi would switch from the rural sword techniques straight back to his Mountain Door sword in an unexpected fashion. In just a moment, he thought the situation was out of his control.

Looking at the calm expression of Gou Han Shi sitting on the other side of the field, Chen Chang Sheng admitted that this person was amazing.

The battle between xiuxingists focuses on power and momentum. Power is qi while momentum is another more complicated concept. It could be sword technique, it could be sect, it could be relic items, and it could also be mental state. It's just like playing chess; one's amount of skill is determined by the situation of the game.

The change from the foreign Seven Star sword to the Mountain Door Sword was basically a change from rural to urban. This change of rhythm was quick and deadly. The terrifying thing was that this sudden change enhanced the sword's spirit of Mountain Door. Right now, the momentum was almost solidified. How could Luo Luo break through it with her sword?

It was a simple change, but the undetectable wisdom and experience of Gou Han Shi was hidden inside it.

Chen Chang Sheng knew he was close to defeat. Although he had read and understood the entire Scroll of the Way when he was young and had studied tirelessly in the library of Tradition Academy, he only touched the field of xiuxing for a couple of months. No matter how great his knowledge with different sects' techniques and how experienced he was on the field, he had a long way to go before reaching Gou Han Shi's level.

He didn't want to lose and moreover, he didn't want Luo Luo to lose because of him.

Although it would be difficult to defeat a genius who seemed to know every technique in this world like Gou Han Shi tonight, he wanted to at least break even.

In this kind of situation, he still retained his confidence. However, it was unrelated to his method of reaching the Way — to satisfy one's will. Instead, he had this confidence because he believed that Luo Luo was stronger than Guan Fei Bai.

Then in order to claim victory, he must not lose to Gou Han Shi on the field of techniques.

Countless scrolls appeared in his mind. The xiuxing books and sword techniques in the library of Tradition Academy kept on appearing in front of his eyes. Pages were flipped through by the wind caused by the contacts of the swords. The moves and teachings of the past powerful xiuxingists were turning into images and they quickly flew before Chen Chang Sheng's eyes.

Which move should he use?

Chapter 80 - The Current Epic War?

Rural people rarely walked on the official highway, but the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong had bureaucratic aura. Although temple people didn't like the hard work that climbing up mountain entails, they could find sword moves to respond. Gou Han Shi simply said a move and it seemed like Guan Fei Bai's sword had its own soul. It instantly transferred from rural to temple. His sword was just and open, how could it be countered?

Instantly, Chen Chang Sheng thought of infinite possibilities in his brain but he could not find a single move to respond. Of course, burning and murderous sword moves such as Wen Shui Three Movements should be able to defend against it, but he never taught it to Luo Luo. Furthermore, the other sword techniques that were uncommonly known could not be used by Luo Luo in her current xiuxing stage.

He finally got a feeling that he never felt before. He remembered the sentence that he thought would never apply to him— when it comes to requiring knowledge, you regret not acquiring enough.

He had read countless Scrolls of Way, but he lacked knowledge in xiuxing. Of course, the three thousands Scrolls of Way composed of everything in the world. He only needed two more years to gain absolute confidence in this ability to transfer the records on the Scroll of Way into knowledge in the aspect of xiuxing. If he had done this, he would be confident in his ability to defeat even Gou Han Shi, but now he just couldn't.

He hadn't acquire enough knowledge, after all, he was still very

young.

If he had more time, then he would know more and therefore be able to teach Luo Luo.

But right now, he couldn't find any sword moves to help Luo Luo counter Guan Fei Bai's Mountain Door.

Looking at Luo Luo's immature little face, looking at the dedication at the center of her eyebrows, looking at her absolute trust in him in her eyes, Chen Chang Sheng felt ashamed.

He didn't think that this was because Luo Luo didn't finish learning every sword move he knew because he was the master. After that night in the Tradition Academy where he encountered this little girl for the first time, she gave all her trust to him and let him take all the responsibility.

If he could, he wished he could stand in front of her just like that night, facing the net falling from the sky, or sword.

However, tonight he could only stay behind her, helping her face the enemy.

Suddenly, Chen Chang Sheng's eyes lit up.

He remembered the night at the Tradition Academy and the demon elite. He thought of the solution.

Whether he was going to counter the sword move or retreat temporarily, he had to do what Gou Han Shi had taught Qi Jian before, dodge the first sword that the opponent used to transfer from rural to temple. After the first sword misses, the following sword will be far weaker and the sword spirit would no longer be perfect.

Dodging this sword, however, was a very difficult thing.

If he could find any sword move to break through it, then it would have to be Way of Movement!

“Sunny Snow!”

“Ice Tube!”

“Spinning Fish!”

Chen Chang Sheng stepped in and shouted.

These were the names of three stars in the sky. It represented their three positions and were three dodging moves.

There was only one movement method in the world that could be pointed out so simply and accurately.

Luo Luo held her sword, slightly moved her toe and her body

shook a little.

A soft wind blew in the square.

Suddenly, she appeared around ten meters away!

Guan Fei Bai's sword stabbed into the air!

On the staircase in front of the palace, someone wondered what happened.

Mao Qiu Yu's hand that was smoothing his beard paused a bit.

Gou Han Shi's expression became very serious and he subconsciously walked up.

“Ye Shi Move?”

The movement method Luo Luo demonstrated before truly shocked many people.

The move looked a little like the Ye Shi Move used by the demon elites in Xue Lao City!

It wasn't until the next moment did big figures such as Mao Qiu Yu see clearly that it wasn't the actual Ye Shi Move, but was a simplified version of it or rather, a modified, simple Way of

Movement.

But it was enough to dodge Guan Fei Bai's sword!

Gou Han Shi's expression was still serious and he was shocked.

Even if it was only a simplified version, the fact that Luo Luo could simplify or mimic it, then it showed that she at least understood Ye Shi Move!

Ye Shi Move was the top secret move of a branch of the demon race!

Where did this youngster learn it from?

“Thirteen Returns to the West!”

Chen Chang Sheng didn't care about the surprised crowd. He also did he look at Gou Han Shi as he called out another move unhesitantly.

Using the Ye Shi Move to help Luo Luo dodge the Mountain Sword that Guan Fei Bai used, Chen Chang Sheng knew that it was his turn to call an attack!

When he was speaking the words Thirteen Returns to the West, he looked very confident.

His mind was very calm.

He was calm because he was certain that Luo Luo would win in a moment.

Thirteen Returns from the West was a sword technique from a tribe in the North. Actually, the sword technique didn't have a name but if it needed a name, it would be "Return from the North." It was recorded as Sword of Frontier by an ancestor of the Tradition.

No one knew this sword technique and Chen Chang Sheng only knew it because of a book he found under a cattail hassock in an old temple in Xi Ning.

This book was not even in the Three Thousands Scrolls of Way. It was only in some travel notes, just travel notes.

Previously, Gou Han Shi used the devious sword technique of Dong Lin Seven Stars to give Luo Luo and him a hard time responding and now, he wanted to use a even more devious sword technique to defeat the opponent!

Now that Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai were around thirty meters apart, both were situated at perfect positions at the East star. It was the scene that he had been waiting.

The two people's positions indicated that it was the most suitable time to let the Sword of Frontier shine!

As long as Luo Luo used Thirteen Returns to the West, with her ability she acquired from practice in the last few months, the Tradition Academy would definitely win this fight.

Gou Han Shi had been looking at Chen Chang Sheng since the beginning.

He saw the calmness and confidence in his eyes.

He heard the sword move Chen Chang Sheng said but couldn't remember where this sword move came from.

There is actually a sword move that I don't know? Gou Han Shi thought to himself.

Gou Han Shi felt surprised. He stared at Luo Luo's hand which was holding the sword and was preparing himself for the attack. He felt doubtful of himself at such kind of competition for the first time.

The square was completely silent. There wasn't a sound even while the wind blew.

Many people saw that this was the key move.

Everyone was looking at Luo Luo, waiting to see how powerful Thirteen Returns to the West was.

An unknown amount of time passed by until Luo Luo finally moved.

She looked back at Chen Chang Sheng and said pathetically, “Master, I don’t know how to..”

Mao Qiu Yu sighed.

“Thirteen Returns to the West?....Long time no see.”

On his face, there were some regret, some sadness, and also some happiness.

“If princess knew this move, the Tradition Academy would have most probably won tonight.”

.....

But there was no if. Luo Luo didn’t use the legendary Thirteen Returns to the West, so the battle had to continue.

This was only an interlude.

Chen Chang Sheng felt shocked, but he didn’t feel lost. The interlude actually helped him get rid of his nervousness. He immediately said another sword technique.

It was the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong, again.

Gou Han Shi smiled and responded with Seven Stars of Dong Lin again.

In one round, the situation returned back to the situation before.

Like soft wind and rain floating in the forest, it was reticently beautiful.

But while the spectators just felt a bit calm, the wind and rain suddenly sped up.

“Seventh Move.”

“Eleventh of Mountain Door.”

“Take Back Zhou Zong Sword.”

“Begin Golden Crow Sword.”

“Flipped Crow!”

“Third Sword Move!”

Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi's voices got quicker and quicker!

One person just used a move and another responded right away. Before there still were pauses, and moments when people needed time, but now there wasn't any pause between the two people. No disconnection at all!

The spectators didn't even have time to listen. How could they have any time to think!?

Their voices got quicker and quicker and so, Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai obviously moved faster and faster.

After a while, the two used several dozens of moves.

The sword techniques of various branches in the Li Mountain Sword Sect were all exhibited by Guan Fei Bai using his sword.

On the other hand, the sword techniques in the library of the Tradition Academy were all used today by Luo Luo.

There was no pause. Neither of them paused to rest.

Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi continued to give commands.

Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai continued waving the swords.

The sword spirit was like wind, flying in the darkness. The sword spirit was like rain, pouring out torrentially.

As the time passed, infinite sword techniques, infinite movement methods, all appeared on the square in front of the Wei Yang Palace.

Some sword moves were from different sword techniques, but Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi spoke them out one by one and Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai played them out one by one. The fight was fluent and connected as if they had practiced it together before!

Some sword moves were famous multiple hit techniques, but they were broken up by Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi to appear after more than ten moves later. However, it was surprisingly more effective!

The spectating crowd that was standing on the staircase was dumbfounded. Shouting could be heard occasionally due to shock.

“That works too?”

“What is this move?”

“Teacher, this move is so unreasonable!”

“Elder, do you know this move?”

The night was dark, stars were shining, and the sword waves were crossing the field.

The teachers and students of the schools in the capital, and the southern ambassadors were all enjoying the extraordinary competition between the Tradition Academy and the Li Mountain Sword Sect tonight.

The vast knowledge and wisdom exhibited by Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi was shocking. Also, the people who were actually fighting in the field earned everyone’s respect.

Since the beginning to now, Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi had called for several hundreds of sword moves. With an exception of the Thirteen Returns to the West, Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai used them all to perfection. The battle was perfect. This was such a rare circumstance to come by!

Principal Mao Qiu Yu’s evaluation before, already made students in the capital feel very shameful. Surely Li Mountain Sword Sect’s education to disciples already surpassed the Great Zhou dynasty, and surely every one of the Seven Rulings was determined and hard working. But how about the little girl? As the only daughter of the noble White Emperor, how could she work so hard, and learn so many sword techniques?

The shocking shouts gradually got lower, and the discussing voices gradually disappeared.

The square in front of the palace became completely silent. The silence represented respect.

Mao Qiu Yu looked at the field and suddenly said, “The fight between Zhou Du Fu and the second Emperor in Luo Yang city, was probably at this level.”

Hearing this, the powerful figures near him all changed their expressions.

Xu Shi Ji stayed wordless because he didn’t know what to say.

Prince Chen Liu was shocked, “Why do you say this?”

Who is Zhou Du Fu? The strongest elite acknowledged by the entire continent in the last ten centuries! What kind of figure is the second Emperor! Although the fight between the students of the Tradition Academy and the disciples of the Li Mountain Sword Sect was wonderful, how could it be compared to that epic fight in Luo Yang?

“Obviously they are far away from Zhou Du Fu and the second Emperor now.”

Mao Qiu Yu said, “But during the Luo Yang battle, Zhou Du Fu and the Emperor were already grown ups. How old are these students?”

Chapter 81 - Luo Luo's Sword

Hearing Mao Qiu Yu's words, people now realized the ages of the four people on the field.

Gou Han Shi was the oldest but he was only twenty years old.

Guan Fei Bai was eighteen years old.

Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo were even younger.

They are all young. Some of them were at the Heartseeking stage, some were Meditation stage, some were just like Chen Chang Sheng who didn't even reach Purification yet. Any elder xiuxingists in the spectating crowd could easily defeat them, speak less of Zhou Du Fu or the Emperor in the past.

But they were truly young, so young that no one could determine their future. They have already shown their outstanding qualities tonight, and who could say with confidence which stage they would end up in?

People looked calmly at the raging battle in the field and listened to the names of the different techniques. They were silent and had complicated feelings. In their eyes, the result of the competition tonight between Tradition Academy and Mountain Li's Sword Sect wasn't important anymore, or in other words – there were no losers tonight.

But Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi didn't think so and Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai didn't either. Tang Thirty Six, elder Xiao Song Gong, Tradition Academy and Mountain Li's Sword Sect only wanted to defeat each other.

A long time has passed.

A very long time.

The spectators and the two battling forgot the existence of time.

Although their speed of speaking didn't slow down, Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi's voices became hoarse.

Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai's attacking speed didn't slow down and was as precise as before, but their breathing became more rapid.

Finally, Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi got silent at the same time.

They have finished all movement techniques and sword combos. The water has pierced the white stone.

The dozen feet or so of distance between Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai disappeared before anyone realized.

The two faced each other directly and Falling Rain Whip met that ordinary longsword in the night sky without a trace.

This battle had lasted a long time. Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi took a step forward.

Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai both had used several hundred sword techniques and countless movement techniques to finally cross the ten feet of distance between them.

At the final moment, the two weapons, the whip and the sword met each other.

This wasn't predetermined but rather was out of chance. It was exquisite.

The battle had reached this point, but they weren't exhausted. However, it seemed to be the end of this competition.

Since the Falling Rain Whip and that longsword met and their owners can't use their qi, then obviously, the fight couldn't continue.

Such an intense and fancy battle ended in a draw. This fit the likings of all xiuxingists.

Nothing but silence filled the palace and the crowd.

Even after a long time, it was still quiet.

Then suddenly, an applause was heard.

The person who was clapping was Mao Qiu Yu, the principal.

Then Prince Chen Liu, then the bishop, then everyone including head of Family of Qiu Shan and Xu Shi Ji. Although these two weren't too happy, they couldn't help but give praise to the battle.

The applause got louder and swept through the field like a storm. Praise and amazement filled the palace.

People were admiring Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai's postures shown through this competition, but they praised more about the knowledge and ability Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi showed the world. Especially Chen Chang Sheng – many people were looking at the youngster and thought shockingly, this youngster is worth the respect of Princess Luo Luo. If he can xiuxing, wouldn't he become the second Gou Han Shi?

The bishop spoke a few words to Officer Xin who was standing behind him. Officer Xin followed the command and led his subordinates to give some regenerating medicine of Palace Li to Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi. Many people may think that Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai were exhausted from this battle, but the bishop knew that Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi's minds were actually dried out from overuse of their mental power. Especially since Chen Chang Sheng couldn't xiuxing and couldn't use his qi to nurture his soul, if he doesn't consume the medicine in time, he may get harmed severely and wouldn't be able to reach back to his prime.

But to everyone's surprise, Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi didn't consume the medicine. They didn't even look at the medicine for a second.

They were still looking at the battlefield, they were still looking at Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai.

Only until now the people spectating noticed what was happening on the field.

Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai didn't draw back their weapons. They didn't want to leave the field.

The crowd got quiet once again as they looked at this scene with wonder. They didn't know what would happen.

These two were not willing to accept the draw?

The competition has yet to finish?

Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai didn't care about the countless eyes staring at them because their own eyes were closed.

Falling Rain Sword and the longsword encountered each other in the night sky and never separated.

Their eyes were closed and were focusing on the vibration felt by their palms. They were trying to detect each other's thoughts and next move.

Luo Luo's shirt was covered in sweat and smoke was coming out of the chilling temperature of the autumn night. She seemed to be a goddess.

Guan Fei Bai's eyes were shut and his eyebrows were like swords. A drop of sweat was slowly trickling between his eyebrows. He was like a formidable general.

Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi looked at the field quietly. Their faces were pale but they didn't speak. They have done all they can, but neither Luo Luo nor Guan Fei Bai lost in the previous battle. Now the people who can decide the result of this battle wasn't them, but rather the battling two.

Without a warning, Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai opened their eyes at the same time.

The longsword slashed upward!

Countless white streams appeared in the night sky. They were waves induced by the blade of the sword!

Gou Han Shi's eyes lit up.

He recognized that this sword technique didn't belong to Mountain Li's Sword Sect nor any sect for that matter. It belonged to Guan Fei Bai.

Guan Fei Bai created this sword technique himself, and he put his own name on it – Fei Bai!

Fei Bai is a technique of calligraphy. Its momentum is unstoppable and well connected, but in the middle, there would be a blank space!

This type of calligraphy technique must use a dry brush which means that this technique used the sense of dryness and isolation!

Although this sword technique may not be the most powerful move Guan Fei Bai had, it would be the move that he could use the best!

In and out of the palace, Guan Fei Bai had endured too much insult tonight. He had endured too long. Even during this long battle with Luo Luo, he had suppressed his rage and followed the command of his senior precisely. Until this moment.....

He had gone through too much.

Yes, he was yet to be exhausted because he never used his qi. but his rage and pride inside were dried up by the long wait time.

At the last second, he finally released his momentum that he had

suppressed all night. This momentum was powerful, therefore it can fly, therefore it was dry and isolated!

He didn't need to use qi. Just by his powerful will of sword, he can defeat any opponent!

As Guan Fei Bai move his sword, Luo Luo moved as well.

What kind of sword technique would she use to counter Fei Bai?

Falling Rain Whip was tightened and straightened just like a well sharpened tree branch.

She stared into Guan Fei Bai's eyes and didn't look or care about his sword. She held the whip handle and stabbed in front of her without any hesitation.

Yes, there was no technique or changes. There was only charging up or using the sword's will.

She held the whip as if it was a sword and simply stabbed in front of her.

The Falling Rain Whip was like a tree branch. It didn't need to be lifted and was stabbed in front and dropped.

Just like Chen Chang Sheng poked Luo Luo with a tree branch back in the library of Tradition Academy.

Of course, she didn't use any qi within this stab, but the air was torn apart around the whip.

You could imagine how fast her speed was.

You could imagine how many times she practiced this stab.

People could never understand how Luo Luo was able to do what she did. The students of Mountain Li's Sword Sect were mostly from poor families, therefore they are not tired of practicing and try their best in xiuxing. But Princess Luo Luo was the only daughter of the White Emperor, how could she learn to endure such pain and struggle on the road of xiuxing?

No one dared to mentor her in the city of White Emperor and so, she wasn't taught to study and xiuxing with her best effort.

Although Chen Chang Sheng dared to mentor her, she was so nice and gentle that she didn't need any disciplining.

Although there was a stick of discipline in Traditional Academy, besides Chen Chang Sheng using it to teach her the path of qi, there was no other use of it.

Luo Luo practiced by herself.

Due to a reason she didn't want others to know, she wanted to be strong when she was very young.

This is the reason why she xiuxinged with all her effort and endured the pain of practicing sword techniques.

Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi stared at the field silently.

Although Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai's last move seemed to be unrelated to them, they were in fact, still attached to it.

Their past mentoring and teaching to Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai in Tradition Academy and Mountain Li's Sword Sect will be shown within this last encounter.

In fact, it was their effort so Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai had this chance to use their last move.

If they accept no draw, then there will be a victory and defeat.

Who will win and who will lose? Will the sword be stronger or will the whip be faster?

People concentrated on the field and their expressions were of nervousness.

Guan Fei Bai's sword was like a dried up brush slashing through the sky, it was like the whip held in a god's hand.

Luo Luo's whip pierced through the night sky like a tree branch, it was like the sword held in a god's hand.

The sword rose.

The whip lifted.

The sword fell.

The whip didn't fall.

Pain appeared in Guan Fei Bai's eyes and they were overtaken by amazement.

He lowered his head and looked at his chest. His chest was torn apart and Falling Rain Whip was stabbing through it like a sword. Blood was slowly pouring out of the wounded spot.

He raised his head and glanced at Luo Luo. He was both surprised

and furious. He wanted to ask something but he couldn't open his mouth.

Blood was dripping out from the corner of his lips.

Falling Rain Whip didn't advance. Luo Luo stopped.

His wound was mild. The blood dripping out of the corner of his mouth wasn't due to Luo Luo's whip, but rather his extreme emotions of anger and pride that harmed his veins.

“Thank you for the fight.”

Luo Luo drew back her whip and bowed. She turned around and walked toward Chen Chang Sheng with a calm expression.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Gou Han Shi on the other side and bowed.

Gou Han Shi was silent for a moment, then he returned the bow.

Chen Chang Sheng glanced at Luo Luo. A smile climbed up his pale face.

This competition was finally over at this point.

The result was clear as the daylight.

Luo Luo has defeated the Fourth Rule of Heaven, Guan Fei Bai.

Tradition Academy claimed victory over Mountain Li's Sword Sect.

People never expected such result.

The entire crowd was filled with silence.

Then, suddenly a voice was heard.

“If we can use qi, then your last move wouldn't even be able to stab through my flesh.”

Guan Fei Bai looked at Luo Luo's back. His face was pale and couldn't accept the result.

Luo Luo stopped walking.

Chapter 82 - The Loud Whipping

As one of the Seven Rulings, as a young elite ranked fourth on the Honor Roll of Green Clouds, he had enough strength to be arrogant. The competition tonight was, in his view, not fair. When he actually lost to Luo Luo at the end, his arrogance and confidence became greater.

After he lost, because of his arrogance, he prepared himself to stay reticent. But after seeing Chen Chang Sheng's smile and hearing Luo Luo's laugh, he had different feelings. He felt that Chen Chang Sheng's smile was very disgusting and that Princess Luo Luo's laugh was very sharp. He could no longer hold himself back and so, he spoke the words that hid deep inside his heart.

He was unwilling to accept the loss. The last sword move he used was named Fei Bai, which was fluent and well connected. If he could use qi, then as the momentum formed, an iron curtain would instantly form in front of him and no matter how fast and sharp Luo Luo's last stab was, it could not break through his sword momentum and therefore, would not hurt him.

Luo Luo turned around and saw his emotions. She knew what he was thinking and so, she lifted her eyebrow and said, "If.....we were both allowed to use qi, then on the seventy-sixth move, I would have already broken through your defense."

She said it indifferently and with undoubtable certainty.

Guan Fei Bai's expression slightly changed as he started to recall

the fight. The crowd also began to recall the fight. After a moment of silence, people actually formed the same conclusion. She was right. If they both could use qi, then the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong that Chen Chang Sheng told Luo Luo to use would've been able to thrust right through the middle of his heart and win early.

“The problem is, even if you can use qi, you still can't use that sword move.”

Guan Fei Bai felt that he had thoroughly thought through the entire thing. He looked at her and said coldly, “Not only that move but also several moves of Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong from the beginning. You can't use those moves with your current xiu xing stage!”

Sounds of discussions could be gradually heard from the crowd, including elites such as Principal Mao Qiu Yu. They all admitted that what Guan Gei Bai had said was reasonable.

The biggest problem for Yao practicing human's xiuxing method was the huge difference between the vessels of the two race. The Yao race would have issues when running their qi in their body. The current Yao elites, including Jin Yu Lu who protected Luo Luo previously, all learned human's xiuxing method before they were adults. After they grew up, they still needed to learn the xiuxing methods for Yao.

In the competition tonight, Princess Luo Luo used human sword techniques, so obviously she practiced the humans' xiuxing method. Logically, if she didn't get to the higher stage of

Meditation, then of course she wouldn't be able to use some powerful sword moves in the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong.

No one mentioned this thing before because both sides had set the rule of not using qi beforehand. What the fight really tested was Chen Chang Sheng and Gou Han Shi's knowledge. Of course, it also tested on Luo Luo and Guan Fei Bai's combative ability but even if she could only express the form of those sword moves, it didn't violate any rule so no one brought it up.

Now that Guan Fei Bai pointed it out, people felt that this fight with Li Mountain Sword Sect was more unfair than they had thought.

The wind softly blew by in the night. Above the palace, the white crane tucked its head into the feathers like it had fallen asleep.

Everyone was silent and everyone focused their attention on Luo Luo.

Although there was no criticism, no comments. Although no one dared to reevaluate the result, the meaning behind the stares of the crowd were very clear.

Gou Han Shi shook his head which indicated Guan Fei Bai to come back.

Under the spectator's glare, Luo Luo lifted her eyebrows slightly

and felt unhappy, but she didn't say anything. She turned around and walked to the other side of the field.

Watching her back, Guan Fei Bai laughed contemptuously and turned around.

The two walked towards opposite directions and gradually walked farther apart. When they were about a hundred meters apart and about to return to their own team, Luo Luo suddenly paused.

Then, she started to make a movement.

She held the Falling Rain Whip and lashed casually on ground.

The whip raised up like wind, and fell down like rain. It was the most powerful move of the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong!

Pa!

The Falling Rain Whip filled with qi landed on the ground like a sword!

Suddenly, the entire ground started to tremble!

A huge fissure appeared on the ground!

Dust and dirt bursted out of the fissure under the starlights like ten thousands of moths!

Who said there was an issue for Yao practicing the humans' xiuxing method?

Where did the power that the Falling Rain Whip demonstrated come from!??

Who said she couldn't use the most powerful moves in the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong?

What was this lash!??

.....

Hearing the clear and melodious sound, Guan Fei Bai immediately turned around.

He didn't see Luo Luo raising the whip, but he saw the remaining trace of qi in air. In the next instant, he heard the sound of the earth breaking apart.

Looking at the ground, he saw a fissure extending towards him. The fissure only stopped an inch away from him.

The dust and dirt that bursted from the fissure settled down and cleared up.

His pupils shrunk and his face suddenly turned pale.

He knew what move Luo Luo used from the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong – the move he said that she couldn't use.

During the fight, they were only several dozens meters apart, but now they around around a hundred meters apart.

Even though they were a hundred meters apart, her sword spirit could reach him. What would happen if they were only a several dozen meters apart?

He realized that Luo Luo had some how broke the wall between Yao and humans. She had completely mastered the Wind and Rain Sword of Mountain Zhong!!

In such circumstances, even if they were allowed to use Qi to actually fight, I would still lose? he thought to himself.

In a short moment, he thought of many situations and calculated many scenarios, but he found out that he actually could not find any hope of winning!

Is she actually better than me?

Luo Luo's whip was still echoing in the darkness as it flew away

from the quiet Great Zhou royal court.

The sound was very clear and melodious.

Like a slap on the face.

Guan Fei Bai remembered his arrogant and cold words but now, he only felt ashamed.

His pale cheek turned a bit red.

The spectating crowd was also shocked. They all looked at the fissure on the ground and at Princess Luo Luo who held the whip and stood quietly behind Chen Chang Sheng. For a while, no one said anything.

They felt as if the Falling Rain Whip that Princess Luo Luo lashed before was slashing their own bodies!

They rarely heard of an adolescent Yao who could actually reach the upper stage of Meditation through practicing the human xiuxing method!

How did she do so?

Looking at Luo Luo, Mo Yu frowned. She thought a bit more — was the bloodline of the White Emperor that strong?

.....

“I didn’t expect that princess actually passed that block.”

Gou Han Shi looked at Luo Luo and said, “Congratulation, but I am not sure if.....”

“Yes.”

Luo Luo understood his meaning. She turned around and saluted to Chen Chang Sheng respectfully, said, “Thank you very much, master.”

Gou Han Shi looked towards Chen Chang Sheng and remained silent for a very long time. He then said, “You have earned my respect.”

The respect now, is true respect.

Chapter 83 - The Carriage In The Night

In the field of intellect, no one claimed victory over Gou Han Shi and there weren't many people who earned his respect. Tonight, Chen Chang Sheng accomplished both.

He looked at Gou Han Shi and said, "You are overpraising me."

"You are worthy of my praises." Gou Han Shi said as he looked at the youngster who he had doubted at first.

He remembered his talented senior and the proposal he made. He realized that somehow, his confidence in his senior was shakened up.

"Previously, the last move of Princess....." he started to say but stopped mid-way when he became unsure if it was suitable to ask the question.

"What are you asking? Aren't you going to leave right now so you don't further embarrass yourself?!"

Elder Xiao Song Gong yelled with a grim face and stared murderously at Jin Yu Lu on the other side. He whipped his long sleeve angrily and left.

Gou Han Shi's expression was bitter. He bowed to Chen Chang Sheng and said "Good bye."

Chen Chang Sheng returned the gesture, “See you again.”

“Surely, we will meet again.”

Gou Han Shi calmed himself down, looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said “I will look into your and Tradition Academy’s performance in the Great Trial. I hope you can bring more surprises to us.”

Chen Chang Sheng knew what he was talking about, but he didn’t reply further.

Gou Han Shi turned around and led his underclassmen of Mountain Li’s Sword Sect out. They disappeared into the night of the royal palace.

Nothing but silence filled Wei yang Palace.

So much had happened in tonight’s Ivy Festival. So many surprises had shocked the audience.

While the entire continent expected a success engagement between Qiu Shan Jun and Xu You Rong, a youngster named Chen Chang Sheng stopped the proposal by showing a marriage vow.

He was a student of the Tradition Academy.

Princess Luo Luo revealed her true identity.

She was also a student of Tradition Academy.

The son of Wei Shui's Family of Tang left the Heavenly Academy.

He became a new student of Tradition Academy.

Everything that happened was related to Tradition Academy.

To get back at the Tradition Academy, the powerful Mountain Li's Sword Sect used the rules of Ivy Festival to challenge the school that was in ruins for many years.

At last, Tradition Academy won.

It was a dominant victory.

The tide riding process and unexpected ending was unbelievable to many people at first.

People looked at the direction of Tradition Academy and noticed how young the three students were. They couldn't grasp what had happened tonight.

Most of the eyes were looking at Chen Chang Sheng. Although his status was obviously much lower than that of Luo Luo, as the fiancé of Xu You Rong, teacher of Luo Luo, and representative of the Tradition Academy, he was sufficiently qualified to attract the

crowds' attention.

The crowd realized that after tonight, the once ruined Tradition Academy may regain its past glory. And this new student of Tradition Academy won't stay an ordinary youngster that no one knew about. No, he will become the center topic of discussion of the entire capital or even the entire continent.

People were looking at Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng was only looking at Xu Shi Ji.

Xu Shi Ji knew clearly why the youngster was looking at him and his face became pale.

The bishop smiled and said, "Even if this son-in-law isn't as qualified as Qiu Shan Jun, he's already not too bad."

Xu Shi Ji's face got grimmer.

The bishop laughed, said nothing more and left.

The crowd in front of the palace dispatched slowly.

Principal Mao Qiu Yu stepped down the stone stairs and pulled Tang Thirty Six aside and spoke to him.

Mo Yu walked to Chen Chang Sheng with her eyebrows slightly lifted. She wanted to ask him how did he got out of Tong Palace but she saw Luo Luo staring at her like a hungry tiger and smiled bitterly, "Say, princess. You can't blame me for what happened tonight. I don't have any ways of altering the process either."

Suddenly, the cry of a crane was heard in the night sky.

People lifted their heads and saw the white crane fly away stylishly.

It came to Zhou Royal Palace to deliver a letter and see a person.

Since it accomplished these tasks, it was only natural for it to leave.

As he saw the white crane slowly fade into the distance, Chen Chang Sheng felt that he forgot something.

He glanced at the ruined garden in the depth of the palaces and nodded to show his respect.

A line of carriages was driven to Li Palace.

It belonged to the crew of southern ambassadors.

Compared to their joy and liveliness at their arrival, they were now silent and depressed.

Sometimes a cough or two could be heard from the carriage.

Gou Han Shi covered his mouth with a handkerchief and wrinkled his eyebrows. His face was a little pale.

He didn't want his coughing to disturb other people, especially the elder, Xiao Song Gong, who sitting in the carriage in front of him.

Although he didn't participate directly in tonight's competition, he consumed much of his mental power by controlling Qi Jian and Guan Fei Bai's battles. Even if he used the medicine that the bishop gifted him after he got on the carriage, he would still feel a little sick.

"I never expected this youngster named Chen Chang Sheng to be so outstanding."

Gou Han Shi extended his arm and lifted the curtain as he glanced at the palace behind him. "Thankfully, he can't xiuxing or else it would be big trouble."

The three other disciplines were also in the carriage. After they heard this, their moods changed a little.

Because that youngster named Chen Chang Sheng was the fiance of Xu You Rong.

“Will she actually marry him?”

Guan Fei Bai said with an unhappy face. “The entire south knew how our senior treated Sister Xu, but what was sister thinking? She intentionally sent the white crane to deliver the letter, but did she ever thought about the consequences? How would our senior feel about this?”

“How can we blame Sister Xu?”

Gou Han Shi sighed. He didn’t know who was to be blamed. Plus, it was the decision of the elders of the sect. The disciplines didn’t have the right to judge such a decision.

The carriage was spacious. Gou Han Shi, Guan Fei Bai and the Fifth Rule sat in one row while Qi Jian sat on the other side by himself. The thin youngster’s head was down because he felt pitiful.

Guan Fei Bai looked at him and wrinkled his eyebrows. In a soft tone, he said “I lost to Princess Luo Luo because I was weaker than her. Your defeat to Tang Thirty Six was an accident, don’t think about it too much.”

Qi Jian raised his head. His face was full of shame and sadness.

Gou Han Shi smiled and said, “The Great Trial isn’t too far away. In just a few months you will win back everything you lost tonight.”

The other disciplines agreed calmly because it was something obvious.

Although Mountain Li's Sword Sect lost to Tradition Academy tonight in Ivy Festival, no one really thought Tradition Academy was stronger than Mountain Li's Sword Sect.

The loss was due to the rules and unexpected strength of Princess Luo Luo.

On the day of the Great Trial, the Tradition Academy would have no chance of making a comeback.

Because the rules of the Great Trial would be different, because they are the Seven Rules of Heaven, and because Gou Han Shi would participate in the event himself.

Gou Han Shi looked at the streets of the capital through the window and started coughing again. He wrinkled his eyebrows.

This year's Ivy Festival will be unforgettable for many people. Some won't forget about this event because of the bitterness, such as some of the southern ambassadors. Head of Family of Qiu Shan won't forget because he came with joy and left with shame. Xu Shi Ji won't forget because he got slapped in the face by Chen Chang Sheng with the marriage vow.

Chen Chang Sheng wouldn't hate what happened tonight.

Although he was angry when he was sealed in the ruined garden and he was furious when he was about to die in the Black Dragon Lake, he couldn't hate anyone or maintain his anger because many events occurred that night.

Chen Chang Sheng was in the carriage of the Herb Garden. Because Jin Yu Lu didn't want to sit inside, only two young boys and a young girl sat inside the carriage. They sat on the soft cushions and looked at the lamps outside of the window. They didn't talk for a long time and the silence remained. Only the sound of wheels rolling through the street could be heard. They arrived at a street near River Luo.

Chen Chang Sheng stared outside of the window and suddenly started laughing.

Tang Thirty Six, who was eating grapes when Chen Chang Sheng started laughing, almost spit out the fruit in his mouth. He mockingly said, "You are stupid."

Luo Luo felt that Tang Thirty Six was disrespectful to her Master and was a little unhappy.

Chen Chang Sheng wasn't bothered by Tang Thirty Six and continued looking at the sceneries outside. His face was filled with joy.

For some reason, he wasn't coughing like Gou Han Shi.

Tonight was Qi Xi. It was a romantic time for lovers. As the night got darker, River Luo became less lively. Finally the trees around the river obtained a moment of peace, but the lamp boats floating above the river seemed to be brighter than ever. They were like countless stars and their light shined through the window and brightened up the youngster's face.

Luo Luo rested her chin on her palm as she stared at Chen Chang Sheng's face while it was brightened up by the lights on the lamp boats. She thought to herself, "Master looks good tonight."

After he finished eating the grapes, Tang Thirty Six wiped his mouth with a handkerchief. He stood at Chen Chang Sheng's side. He glanced out the window and felt bored. The view of the capital during Qi Xi wasn't as pretty as the scene of Wen Shui in his eyes.

He looked at Chen Chang Sheng's face and asked, "How do you feel?"

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the surface of the river and was silent for a long time. He thought deeply.

The old temple outside of Xi Ning Village. The old books filled the entire room. That old bamboo dragonfly. That old marriage vow. The insults he received from General's Mansion. The oppression of Heavenly Academy and other Ivies. The exile to the ruined garden. The forgotten Tradition Academy.....many scenes flew past his eyes and disappeared.

Just like the rays emitted by the lamp boats on River Luo.

The last image appeared.

It was the entrance of Tradition Academy after removing the overgrown ivies. The dark floor of the library, the tree around the lake and the little girl was standing beneath the tree. And friends.

“I’m happy.”

Chen Chang Sheng glanced at Thang Thirty Six and Luo Luo and said, “I’m very happy.”

Although he was not afraid to speak, he didn’t like to talk much. Besides, he didn’t know how to talk in a fancy manner.

If he said he was happy, then he was truly happy.

He was happy to be a student of Tradition Academy. He was happy that Tradition Academy won against Mountain Li’s Sword Sect. He was happy that Xu You Rong couldn’t marry Qiu Shan Jun.

Yes, the marriage vow wasn’t important, but respect was.

Lastly. he was happy to know them.

Chapter 84 - A Full Night Talk

The willow trees around River Luo were waving back and forth in the night.

Luo Luo's eyes widened. She looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, "I'm very happy to know you as well."

Tang Thirty Six scratched his head and felt that it was his turn to express his thoughts so he added, "All right, I'm happy to know you guys too."

Chen Chang Sheng was speaking from his heart. When he decided in the old temple of Xi Ning Village to come to the capital, he never thought he would encounter so much trouble and meet so many people. An ordinary youngster like him became friends with the son of Wei Shui's Family of Tang, a genius on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud. It was even luckier for him to meet the only daughter of White Emperor, the most noble Yao Princess in the entire continent.

"Don't think of yourself as an ordinary youngster."

Tang Thirty Six saw his expression and knew what he was thinking about, "That day when we met during the entrance exam of Heavenly Academy, I was sure that you were not an ordinary person. You are a genius.....how am I so sure that you are a genius? Because a genius like myself want to be friends with you."

Chen Chang Sheng thought back to the tavern when Tang Thirty

Six said some similar things. It may seem like he was complimenting Chen Chang Sheng, but whilst doing so, he was praising himself.

Luo Luo thought what Tang Thirty Six said was logical. She always believed that Chen Chang Sheng was the most talented person in the world.

“Plus you are the fiance of Xu You Rong.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and said, “From just this fact, who in this continent would think that you are just an ordinary person?”

Luo Luo clapped and admiration filled her face. “Yes, yes,” she agreed.

Chen Chang Sheng was a little stumped. He looked at Tang Thirty Six and asked, “Why do I feel like this is the most important point you are trying to express?”

“What I am trying to say is that you should tell us about such an important thing next time.”

Tang Thirty Six reached his arm in front of Chen Chang Sheng and said, “Let me see that.”

“See what?” Chen Chang Sheng was confused.

“That marriage vow, of course.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him as if Chen Chang Sheng was an idiot, “It’s the marriage vow of Xu You Rong!”

After showing the marriage vow in the palace, Chen Chang Sheng had already put the paper back into his pocket. But seeing Tang Thirty Six’s desperate eyes, he couldn’t not let Tang Thirty Six see it. However, he remembered that Xu You Rong’s date of birth was on the marriage vow, so Chen Chang Sheng didn’t open the sheet after taking it out. It was fine to just look at the outside.

Tang Thirty Six was more than satisfied by looking at Xu You Rong’s marriage vow. Even Luo Luo came around and looked at it curiously.

Tang Thirty Six touched the surface of the marriage vow with his hand and sighed, “Well then Xu You Rong.....never thought you would be in this kind of situation right?”

Chen Chang Sheng put the marriage vow back into his pocket and asked confusingly, “What kind of situation?”

Tang Thirty Six answered, “Marriage kind of situation.”

Chen Chang Sheng was still confused, “Isn’t it common for girls to get married?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “A woman like Xu You Rong.....always gives off a feeling that she won’t ever marry to anyone.”

Chen Chang Sheng was speechless, but then he remembered that other name constantly mentioned together with Xu You Rong and asked, “What about....Qiu Shan Jun?”

Tang Thirty Six felt that Qiu Shan Jun was boring so he steered the conversation away from him, “We should be happy tonight, why are we mentioning something unhappy?”

Luo Luo asked, “Even if she does marry, why are you happy?”

Tang Thirty said righteously, “I’m happy for the young people who are under her in the Honor Roll of Green Cloud.”

Luo Luo nodded, “You are one of the young people under her.”

Tang Thirty Six was a little embarrassed, “So what? After she gets married, she won’t stay outdoor and fight everyone.”

Luo Luo said, “Why not? Who said that after a girl gets married, she can’t go out anymore? The Divine Queen wouldn’t agree to your opinion.”

“Only one person needs to agree with me.”

Tang Thirty Six glanced at Chen Chang Sheng and said,

“Discipline your wife. Don’t let her come out and bother us.”

Chen Chang Sheng smiled but said nothing in return.

It was deep into the night when they returned back to Tradition Academy. Xuan Yuan Po woke up from the noise and opened the door. Under the lamp, the Yao youngster’s right arm was in a cast and his left hand was using a cane. He seemed to be a wounded veteran who returned from the battlefield and may fall at any second.

“Weren’t you healing him before? How come he’s in a worse state now?” Tang Thirty Six was a little surprised and looked at Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng said, “If you can make him stay in one place for two days and not want to kick rocks and punch trees whenever he sees them, then perhaps his wound will heal more quickly.”

Xuan Yuan Po embarrassingly rubbed his head and said, “I won’t do it again or it would be a waste to skip an event like tonight’s Ivy Festival.”

Jin Yu Lu knew the princess would definitely talk about tonight’s event with Chen Chang Sheng and the other students, so he rode the carriage back to Herb Garden first.

The four walked from the entrance to the library and Xuan Yuan Po asked about the Ivy Festival. Before Luo Luo could say anything, Tang Thirty Six answered, “Yes, we won.”

When he was speaking, his expression was so calm as if he was talking about nothing major. He waved his hands like he was dusting off sand; as if nothing much happened.

Xuan Yuan Po was a honest and simple Yao youngster so he didn't understand such posture and asked, “Who did we win against?”

“Mountain Li's Sword Sect challenged us. And then we came out victorious.”

Tang Thirty Six said, “Oh, by the way. I'm also now a student of Traditional Academy. You can call me Senior Tang.”

Xuan Yuan Po wasn't interested in Tang Thirty Six becoming his classmate. Although he was honest and simple, he wouldn't just call him senior. But hearing Tang Thirty Six announce that Tradition Academy won against Mountain Li's Sword Sect, he couldn't help but say, “You woke me up in the middle of the night just to tell me this joke?”

“It's not a joke,” Luo Luo looked at him and said, “We really won against Mountain Li's Sword Sect.”

Xuan Yuan Po was stumped. He still thought they were telling a

joke, but..... his princess confirmed it. He had to believe his princess.

After they arrived at the library and sat down on the dark wood floor, the Yao Youngster realized that their words were actually true. He thought back to yesterday when he kicked the rock around the lake and broke his foot because he was mad at himself for not being able to participate in the Ivy Festival due to his injury. It was unfortunate for him to miss the scenes that happened tonight.

The night was long but the youngsters couldn't fall asleep. The three who participated in the Ivy Festival were tired, but their spirits were still excited. They had different reasons to be excited. Tang Thirty Six was because of freedom, Luo Luo was because of victory, and Chen Chang Sheng was because of his newfound respect that he earned. All in all, they wanted to continued talking and live in the moment forever.

Chen Chang Sheng took out his long saved barley tea and said, "Drinking this tea at night won't harm our brains and it is beneficial to our organs.

Luo Luo wouldn't let him boil the tea himself. She took the tea leaves and went on boiling the water.

The tea was done after a short while.

"Even if you went, you would've only been able to watch. If you got pressured by the southerners to enter the competition, then we

could've only tied with the opponent. Because you would definitely lose, and Chen Chang Sheng would lose as well."

Tang Thirty Six took the tea cup that Luo Luo handed over and looked at Xuan Yuan Po while commenting casually.

Suddenly, he remembered that this tea was prepared and handed to him by Princess Luo Luo. Immediately, he felt the hotness of the tea cup and almost spilled it.

The tea that was prepared by the princess herself. Even his grandfather never got such an opportunity.

How come Chen Chang Sheng's luck was so good? How come he randomly accepted a female student that happened to be the daughter of White Emperor?

When he was thinking, Tang Thirty Six looked at Chen Chang Sheng differently.

Just at this moment, Xuan Yuan Po said enviously, "I would be satisfied even if I was only looking at you guys in glory."

Hearing this, Tang Thirty Six was more irritated. He put the tea cup down and said, "Glory? All the glory belonged to Chen Chang Sheng. Luo Luo and I were just two puppets."

"Didn't you retreat when master told you to retreat?"

Luo Luo, “You are refuting it now, but your body was honest to your heart.”

Silence filled the library.

Tang Thirty Six forcefully switched the topic, “Aren’t you guys interested?”

“Interested in what?”

“Why I left Heavenly Academy.”

Chen Chang Sheng and Luo Luo didn’t answer and Xuan Yuan Po was drinking his tea. They all expressed their attitude clearly.

Tang Thirty Six was even more irritated. He ignored their reactions and continued, “Zhuang Huan Yu is the son of vice principal Zhuang. He was given birth by the principal’s former wife. Yes, his mother was dead a long time ago and Zhuang Huan Yu lived in poverty when he was young.....The father and son met each other again in the capital. But years ago, vice principal Zhuang and my mother.....well, you guys understand.”

It wasn’t a complicated family history; not much drama. Basically Tang Thirty Six was dragged into this trouble.

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t ask anything because this business was

Tang Thirty Six's personal matter. He was more interested with the relationship between Jin Yu Lu and elder Xiao Song Gong.

Hearing his question, Tang Thirty Six looked at Luo Luo and said, "How could a hero like General Jin be a carriage rider? Even if the princess's status is high, it's still inappropriate.

Luo Luo said, "Uncle Jin enjoys taking care of financial businesses. Even my father couldn't convince him otherwise, what can I do?"

The story between Jin Yu Lu and Xiao Song Gong wasn't complicated either, but it was about blood and iron.

Years ago in that war with Demon Race, Mountain Li's Sword Sect's Xiao Song Gong and his companions were responsible for transporting military supply. However, their delivery was late and the punishment was supposed to be death sentence. Back in those days, Xiao Song Gong and his companions were extremely talented young xiuxingists. They were basically the same rank as the current day Seven Rules of Heaven. The southern generals in the alliance begged for mercy but Jin Yu Lu, who was responsible for the supply deliver field didn't alter his decision. He killed the three people and when he was up to Xiao Song Gong, who was placed the highest hope in Mountain Li, the head of Mountain Li begged the Zhou Emperor to stop him. White Emperor also stepped in and voiced his opinion. Finally, Jin Yu Lu agreed to spare him.

Because of this, the head of Mountain Li gave the entire sword technique of Mountain Li to White Emperor as a gift. But also because of this, after the war with Demon race was over, Jin Yu Lu

never accepted White Emperor's reward and left. He lived in a ranch and became a farmer. Only until the birth of Luo Luo did he return to the royal palace, City of White Emperor.

The story of the past was done. Now it's back to the present.

The joy of tonight has passed and dark clouds will cover tomorrow morning.

The young people in the library started thinking about the troubles Tradition Academy will face in the future.

Chen Chang Sheng sighed and said, "I don't know what will happen tomorrow, but I think there will be a lot of troubles ahead of us."

Chapter 85 - Break The School (Part 1)

The event that happened in the Ivy Festival was significant enough for people to remember it for a long time and enough for the members of the Tradition Academy to feel proud of it for a long time. But it doesn't take too long for the serious consequences of this event to arrive at the heart of Hundred Blossom Street. Would the huge banyans by the lake stand the wind and rain?

The most important thing wasn't that the Tradition Academy defeated the Li Mountain Sword Sect. The two fights were fair, no one could argue otherwise. The real problem was the thing that caused the two fights to happen: Chen Chang Sheng's appearance at the palace to stop the engagement and prove that he was the true fiancé of Xu You Rong.

Before the Southern ambassadors came to propose, they must have formed some sort of agreement with the Great Zhou court. People such as Xu You Rong or even Qiu Shan Jun probably didn't know about it themselves, but the Divine Queen knew. The union between the South and North would be one of the biggest events since the establishment of Zhou — especially during Divine Queen's ruling period.

But Chen Chang Sheng ruined it.

The Tradition Academy reappearance. People saw this as a huge disrespect to the Queen or even a challenge to the Divine Queen's authority. Previously, the Divine Queen may not even have known about an insignificant thing such as the Tradition Academy, but after this event, the Tradition Academy would definitely be under

her radar.

The Divine Queen would definitely get very mad, so the consequence would definitely be very serious.

This was the trouble that Chen Chang Cheng was talking about. Big trouble.

“Don’t look at me. Such trouble, no one can stand against it.” Tang Thirty Six said unhesitatingly.

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Before in the royal palace, hearing your tone, I thought you were not afraid of Tian Hai family at all.”

Tang Thirty Six stared into his eyes and spoke word by word, “How is the Divine Queen and the Tian Hai family the same?”

Chen Chang Sheng felt confused and said, “How are they not the same?”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him as if he was looking at an idiot.

He already couldn’t remember how many times he had looked at Chen Chang Sheng like this.

He knew that Chen Chang Sheng obviously wasn’t an idiot. Anyone who could compete against Gou Han Shi in knowledge must be a genius.

Yet sometimes, Chen Chang Sheng did appear to be very childish. He knew so much book knowledge such as the notes in the Scroll of Way but he seemed to not be knowledgeable of politics and famous historical events at all. Moreover, he always thought that he was right so he appeared to be naive and therefore, idiotic.

“.....This is a very complicated question. Even the professors at Li Palace Academy would need a big essay to explain it clearly.”

Tang Thirty Six said, “You just have to know that although the Divine Queen’s last name is Tian Hai, she’s the ruler of the royal dynasty of Chen.”

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t understand. He thought a bit and then said, “It looks truly very complicated.”

“Master, you don’t have to worry too much.” Luo Luo said, “I have seen the Queen many times. The Queen is a very kind person, also.....in regards to these issues, she doesn’t really care.”

Tang Thirty Six thought the Queen might not care, but the problem was the big figures such as Zhou Tong and people from the Tian Hai family. If they believed the Queen cared, then the Tradition Academy might still be destroyed. On the other hand, Chen Chang Sheng thought, the Divine Queen ruled the Great Zhou as a woman, how can she be a kind person? Although I am not well educated in this aspect of study, I can’t think otherwise. Luo Luo indeed was only a little girl....

Suddenly, they both realized something. Able to see the Divine Queen often....yeah, the little girl sitting by them now was not a common little girl!

Now that the Tradition Academy had the daughter of the White Emperor, there was no need to be afraid of any type of trouble.

“Even if there’s a huge trouble, Princess Luo Luo can still solve it.” Tang Thirty Six looked at her. His eyes were filled with passion.

Luo Luo felt a bit uncomfortable so she shifted a bit towards Chen Chang Sheng.

The thing they had to worry about the most was the possible troublesome future of the Tradition Academy. Yet no matter how big the trouble was, with Luo Luo by their side, they didn’t need to worry about anything.

The dark night was filled with stars, like river, like mountain and like plains. There were also stars connecting together, like strokes, to form five words.

“So next, we have to worry about the Great Trial.” Tang Thirty Six said, “Tonight we are happy. So we can’t let the southerners regain their reputations at the Great Trial.”

Chen Chang Sheng was wordless. He recalled the last sentence Gou Han Shi said before leaving — surprise? Yes, if he wanted to

participate in the Great Trial, he must bring another shock to this world. If he still couldn't purify successfully, he wouldn't be able to go to the test of strength. Even if he got a full score on the literacy test, it didn't matter.

His goal was first place.

Luo Luo said, "I don't have any problem." The little girl look calm, spoke naturally and casually, but she looked confident and powerful.

"Of course princess, you don't have any problems, but I do." Tang Thirty Six said, "There are only a few months left till the Great Trial. I will try my hardest. Even if I don't need this kid's help, by then I still have the chance to defeat Qi Jian, but the rest of the Seven Rulings....I can't beat them." He also spoke calmly and naturally because it was a fact.

"This kid has the biggest issue."

He looked towards Chen Chang Sheng and sighed, "He should be an extremely talented kid, but because he can't xiuxing, he is only a trash in the Great Trial. That's so unfortunate."

From this sentence, Tang Thirty Six expressed how angry and sad he felt about Chen Chang Sheng's bad fortune.

Chen Chang Sheng couldn't solve this problem, so of course, he couldn't answer him.

He stood up and said, “I am going to sleep.”

“Such a bad transition of topic.” Tang Thirty Six said irritably.

Chen Chang Sheng explained, “I really have to go to sleep.”

“It’s such a good night. To celebrate for our victory in the Ivy Festival, to welcome me, the genius who joined the Tradition Academy, shouldn’t we booze up?”

Tang Thirty Six looked at the wheat tea in the cup and said, “Drink some wine, then go to sleep.”

“Drinking wine is not good for your body.”

Chen Chang Sheng turned around and walked out of the library.

Luo Luo always followed him, so she also stood up and left.

Tang Thirty Six looked at Xuan Yuan Po, lifted the wheat tea and said, “Do you know where there’s wine?”

Xuan Yuan Po replied honestly, “I have been searching for it for days.....no wine here.”

Tang Thirty Six moved his eyes slightly, preparing to ask for

something.

Xuan Yuan Po added promptly, “There is no wine for cooking in the kitchen, not even fermented glutinous rice.”

.....

Drinking wine is not good for your health, eating too much fat is not good for your health, being too emotional is also not good for your health, sleeping and waking up early is good for your health, eating fish is good for your health, eating veggies is also good for your health. Chen Chang Sheng had been strictly following “rules to being healthy” to decide what he should do and what he shouldn’t do.

He had lived like this for many years. Only for a really short period of time did he discard such a life style. That period was just while ago. In the dimension under the abandoned garden in the Great Zhou royal court, in front of the Frost Mighty Dragon, he thought he was going to die and he regretted that he had never lived freely for even once in his life, so he decided to do so at the last moments of his life. He shouted towards that terrifying black dragon with tears all over his face. At the same time, he recalled the life that was just started a few years ago.

Yet he didn’t die. Thinking about it now, he felt embarrassed about his action then. Afterwards, he naturally returned to his old ways — living according to those rules again. Of course, he didn’t accept Tang Thirty Six’s suggestion, after all, how much was because drinking wine was unhealthy and how much was not being able to face the problem. He didn’t know the answer himself.

He retreated to his own little building.

He lied on the bed and looked at the sky that was gradually turning blue, looked at the stars that was gradually turning dark, looked at the starry forest and realized that he actually couldn't fall asleep.

He rarely had insomnia, so he felt a bit blank. He didn't know what he should do if he couldn't fall asleep. Should he open or close eyes? Should he think about other matters? Or should he not think of anything and simply count sheep?

One sheep, two sheep, three sheep, four sheep.....

Among the white sheep filling the hill, a black goat suddenly appeared.

He remembered the black goat that carried him to the Wei Yang Palace in the big royal palace, remembered the black dragon that let him leave and felt that what happened tonight was too strange. He didn't recall the middle aged woman who was almost injured by the flower pot.

Then he remembered Qi Jian and Gou Han Shi. He didn't feel proud, only respect.

He truly respected the disciples of the Li Mountain Sword Sect, especially Gou Han Shi.

Gou Han Shi read all the Scrolls of Way, and he also had a high level of xiuxing. How come I don't? Chen Chang Sheng thought.

Like what Tang Thirty Six said, in the Great Trial, what would I do?

He opened up his eyes.

Soft and light starlight slipped through the window and fell on his hand.

He turned over his hand and then turned it over again. Watching the starlights fall on it and then gradually disappear, he sighed helplessly.

Outside the window, a bird tweeted.

This made him remember the white crane that returned from the South.

It made him feel much calmer.

So he gradually fell asleep.

.....

In the morning, Chen Chang Sheng woke up.

He looked outside and saw that it was still early. Although it was a lot later than he was used to, he had slept later than usual last night and he also had a bit of insomnia, so he lacked sleep severely. He could hardly keep his eyes open.

He still got up, not because of the rules of living, but because it was noisy outside.

He was awoken by the sound.

He was not used to such feeling of lack of sleep. He felt so uncomfortable. After he cleaned his face and brushed his teeth, he walked out as he rubbed eyes and yawned.

Tang Thirty Six and Xuan Yuan Po were also awoken by the sounds coming from outside the school. They looked even more uncomfortable than him. It seems that they slept even later last night.

“I didn’t even brush my teeth yet!”

Hearing the noises outside the school, Tang Thirty Six felt gloomy.

“Why is it so noisy in the morning?” Chen Chang Sheng asked.

Xuan Yuan Po thought a bit and replied, “Because we defeated Li Mountain Sword Sect last night, many people are coming to our school to register?”

Chen Chang Sheng felt dazed thinking that this might be a possibility.

Tang Thirty Six sneered, “You think everyone in the capital is as dumb as you, or as naive and idiotic as him? Like what I said last night, since Chen Chang Sheng offended the Divine Queen, Qiu Shan Family, Li Mountain Sword Sect, and Dong Yu General’s Mansion all at once, and didn’t make the Pope happy.....what parent would dare to send his or her kid to study here? That’s just suicide.”

The noises outside the school got louder and louder but it was hard to tell what it was about.

An invisible pressure began to spread out, along with the noises.

Normally, even if Luo Luo hadn’t waken up yet, the breakfast from the Herb Garden would be delivered here by now.

He suddenly had a bad feeling.

Chapter 86 - Break The School (Part II)

Walking to the door, they could finally hear the voices clearly. Some people were shouting, some were yelling, and some were even banging on the door but at least their actions were not too exaggerated. Their words were still polite and their banging was still controlled. Their actions didn't give people a feeling that they were trying to cause chaos. However, there were way too many people outside, it was still somewhat terrifying when the sounds all mixed together.

Tang Thirty six shook his head to suggest Xuan Yuan Po to not open the door. He found a wooden ladder from somewhere and placed it against the wall to indicate to him to climb up and see what was going on. Xuan Yuan Po followed his indication and climbed up. Looking towards the outside, he instinctively became scared upon seeing the gigantic crowd.

Seeing a head stick out from behind the wall, the people got surprised. They all became quiet right away. Looking at this scene,

Xuan Yuan Po felt that his previous conjecture was correct. He shouted to the crowd, "Are you all here to register for the school?"

The people in the front looked into each other's eyes confused. They were wondering how he came up with such a notion.

Suddenly, another head stuck out next to Xuan Yuan Po. It was Tang Thirty Six who could no longer hold his curiosity. Seeing mostly aged people who were wearing simple but not demeaning

clothes, he realized that they were obviously butlers. At same time, hearing Xuan Yuan Po's words, he felt really embarrassed.

“Can we not be so narcissistic? Do you think these people look like students?”

He furiously pushed Xuan Yuan Po aside and supported himself by pushing against the wall.

He spoke coldly, “What do you want?”

The people standing in the front began to introduce themselves and voice their intentions. Immediately, the rest began to shout out too, causing a mixture of noises. Tang Thirty Six got a headache from it. He could only recognize some names of mansions and businesses.

So these people were all here to visit Princess Luo Luo.

After the Ivy Festival last night, the people in the capital finally learned that the White Emperor's only daughter was actually living here and obviously, they wanted to come visit. First of all, human and Yao were in a union and the two were trading partners. Even without mentioning this, it was still such an honor to meet the princess!

Tang Thirty Six understood why these people were so enthusiastic and why they came so early morning. Indeed, he said before, Xuan Yuan Po's thinkings were too naive and narcissistic,

but when he actually found out these people were coming to see Princess Luo Luo, and did not care about him and the rest of the Tradition Academy at all, he felt unhappy.

“To visit the princess, just go to the Herb Garden. Why make noise here?” His expression got colder.

“No one replied to us in the Herb Garden. I heard that princess left last night.” The head of the butlers who was serving the prince mansion said with a sad face. The rest all followed and confirmed his words. Then he said, “Princess is a student of the Tradition Academy. Since she is not in the Herb Garden, then she must be here.”

“Princess is not at the Tradition Academy.”

Hearing these words, Tang Thirty Six felt a bit surprised. If the princess wasn't in the Herb Garden, then where did she go. Standing on the ladder and looking back towards the Tradition Academy, he saw Chen Chang Sheng standing under a big banian. He was looking at the Herb Garden silently. It was hard to tell what he was thinking.

Suddenly, a wagon slowly came from the entrance of the Hundred Blossom Street. The people surrounding the the entrance of the Tradition Academy all saluted to it. They stood by the sides. Tang Thirty Six saw the middle aged man on the wagon and recognized that he was actually the vice principal of the Li Palace Academy.

The Vice Principal of the Li Palace Academy; the title sounded a bit awkward. However, his identity and status were clear. The Tradition Academy's door must be opened.

Chen Chang Sheng and the other two all saluted to this vice principal.

The vice principal took out a letter and delivered it to Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng took out the letter. At the same time, his heartbeat suddenly sped up. He knew that his previous bad feeling was probably going to come true. Lightly rubbing the letter with his finger, he discovered that the seal of the letter was a bit soft. He concluded that this letter was just written a while ago.

The writing on the letter cover was beautiful. It was Luo Luo's handwriting.

Chen Chang Sheng then knew that Luo Luo and her clansmen moved out of the Herb Garden last night. They left soundlessly to

Li Palace Academy. He didn't open the letter. After remaining silent for a while, he looked up at the vice principal and asked, "Why?"

"Last night, the princess's identity was revealed at the Ivy Festival, so it's no longer convenient for her to live in the Herb Garden....It's the same in the Tradition Academy."

The Vice Principal looked at the entrance of the Tradition Academy and said, “You all saw the previous scene.”

“I simply have to not open the door.” Chen Chang Sheng said.

“The biggest issue is security. Last night, I just learned that the princess faced an attempted assassination by the demon elite at the Tradition Academy...Now that the entire continent knows that she is in the capital, no matter demons or hidden danger, all will come for the princess.”

“But after all, she is still a student of the Tradition Academy.”

“I understand what you mean. Do you think the Li Palace Academy will actually fight the Tradition Academy for a student?”

The Vice Principal looked at him and said coldly, “The situation of the continent is always the first priority. We must ensure the princess’s security. The princess is still a student of the Tradition Academy, but she’s just temporarily living in the Li Palace Academy. You don’t have to think too much about it.”

Xuan Yuan Po felt angry. He asked, “How is the Li Palace Academy safer than the Tradition Academy?”

Chen Chang Sheng and Tang Thirty Six patted his shoulder to show comfort. They didn’t want him to continue.

The Li Palace Academy was right next to the Li Palace. They were one set of constructions originally. Moreover, it's only a saying to the outside that Luo Luo was studying in the Li Palace Academy. She would definitely live in the Li Palace.

The Pope was living in the Li Palace and so it was obviously safer than the Tradition Academy, and safer than the Herb Garden.

Besides the Great Zhou royal court, there wasn't a safer place.

Speaking from this perspective, the fact that Luo Luo left the Herb Garden and the Tradition Academy to move into Li Palace was perfectly reasonable.

It was hard to argue.

The vice principal of the Li Palace Academy, ultimately said the most important sentence.

“This is Pope’s intention.”

.....

The vice principal left. Luo Luo and her clansmen moved out last night.

Chen Chang Sheng climbed up the big banyan and looked towards the Herb Garden. It was complete silent — a stark contrast to the

liveliness in the place in the previous months.

He opened up the letter Luo Luo wrote, read it over quietly and stayed silent for a really long time.

“Study hard.” He spoke to the little girl with his heart.

The bottom of the letter was a bit wet. It was probably because in the last moments, Luo Luo finally could no longer hold her tears. She couldn't bear to part.

Chen Chang Sheng also couldn't bear to part with her so his eyes became a little wet.

How can you suddenly leave? I still have some questions to ask you.

He felt somewhat empty. Is this the feeling of being lost written in the books?

He stood on the huge banyan and looked towards the streets surrounding the Tradition Academy. He saw that the people that came to the Hundred Blossom Street to visit Luo Luo also left. It was completely silent.

No matter how many things had happened, as long as she was not here, the Tradition Academy was still a place that people would easily forget.

Luo Luo's safety obviously was the thing that the human world concerned the most. This reason was justifiable, but several months ago, the elite from the demon Ye Shi race had already tried to assassinate her. If this truly was for safety, why didn't the Pope make her move back then?

Why did he want Luo Luo leave the Tradition Academy right after the night when the Ivy Festival ended?

Why was it so urgent? After all, what did this thing mean? Chen Chang Sheng understood, Tang Thirty Six also understood and probably only Xuan Yuan Po still felt blank and still submerged in the pain of not being able to serve the princess in person.

Luo Luo was the Tradition Academy's sign board and amulet. If those big figures wanted to destroy the Tradition Academy, then they had to think of ways to make her leave first.

Her leaving, was the first step to break the school.

The forest in the fall was faintly humid. A soft wind was blowing.

The rainstorm was going to arrive.

"Are you mentally prepared yet?" Tang Thirty Six looked at him on the tree and yelled.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the streets in the capital and yelled back, “Not really.”

Tang Thirty Six was dazed. He yelled loudly, “If you are not ready, then why are you speaking so loud? So dumb!”

Chen Chang Sheng still yelled to the entire capital, “If I speak louder, then maybe someone will hear it, and come to help us!”

Tang Thirty Six yelled, “In your dreammm!”

.....

In the afternoon in the capital, it was raining. The fall rain did not bring too much coldness. The buildings in the Tradition Academy became wet. Raindrops were falling down from the grasses in the corner making the grasses look very disappointed. The broken sculpture looked like it was crying. The liveliness that was just revitalized was short lived.

After the rain, the Tradition Academy would encountered its first trouble.

Chapter 87 - Break The School (Part III)

There was a knock on the door. Xuan Yuan Po went to take a look. After a short while, he came back and although the youngster had a big beard, it couldn't hide his red face. He was nervous and shy because of the young girl holding an umbrella who followed him into the library.

Tang Thirty Six looked at the pretty, young girl and said a little surprised, "Where did this flowerlike girl come from?"

Xuan Yuan Po rubbed his hands nervously and said, "I don't know which mansion's miss she is. When I asked, she didn't answer me."

Tang Thirty Six said, "Then how can you let her in like that? Although last night was the seventh of the July(the Chinese Valentine's Day), you still should not do so."

Xuan Yuan Po immediately explained, "She said she knows Chen Chang Sheng."

Chen Chang Sheng was reading. After hearing this, he put down the Scroll and looked up. He actually knew her. She wasn't the miss of any mansion, she was the maid of the Dong Yu General's Mansion. Her name was Shuang Er.

He obviously wouldn't point it out to Xuan Yuan Po. He stood up, walked out and said to Shuang Er, "Long time no see."

Indeed, long time no see. Since the last time Shuang Er came to the Tradition Academy to look for him, several months have passed.

Shuang Er closed the umbrella and indicated him to follow her to the corner.

“What’s happening?” he asked.

Shuang Er looked at him and recalled what she heard about the Ivy Festival last night. She had a complicated feeling. After thinking a bit, she said, “I heard about you. I must admit that you certainly shocked many. Madam and I didn’t make a correct evaluation of you.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “You have your standpoint, so you don’t have to apologize.”

He spoke truthfully right from the start. He could only speak truthfully.

Shuang Er’s thin eyebrows lifted up a bit and she said, “Don’t misunderstand. Maybe my view towards you is incorrect, but that doesn’t mean I support you and miss staying together. Even though you are knowledgeable, you can’t xiuxing. After all, you are still.....”

Although she didn’t like Chen Chang Sheng, she wasn’t a mean

person. She restrained herself from saying the two words, “useless trash.”

Yet everyone knew her meaning.

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Whether you support it or not, your opinion holds no meaning in this marriage.”

Shuang Er felt a little angry, she said, “I and miss are like sisters. I care about miss’s happiness more than everyone else. You took out the engagement at the Ivy Festival and acquired your reputation, but have you ever considered that miss and Qiu Shan Jun were the best match originally? You ruined it, how could you?”

“So, you are here to defend Qiu Shan Jun?”

Chen Chang Sheng looked at her said, “You should know, in the Ivy Festival last night, your miss let the white crane bring a letter.

In the letter, she admitted the engagement herself, but now you seem to have a different viewpoint on it. Are even trying to defend another man?”

“Does your miss know what you are doing here?”

Shuang Er couldn’t say a word. She didn’t know why miss would do that.

Chen Chang Sheng said, "Is there anything else?"

"Indeed I shouldn't have said my last sentence." Shuang Er now calmed down. She lifted her arm to wipe off the raindrop in her hair and said, "Miss has a sentence for you."

"What sentence?"

"Please don't misunderstand."

Hearing this sentence, Chen Chang Sheng remained silent for a very long time. Previously, Shuang Er had said similar words which hurt his feeling a lot. So what did Xu You Rong mean by that?

He asked, "Misunderstand what?"

"I don't know." Shuang Er looked at him and said, "You should understand it yourself."

Last night, the white crane carried the letter over ten thousands miles back to the capital. In the letter, Xu You Rong revealed her attitude towards the marriage clearly. Although he understood it clearly, it was impossible for Xu You Rong to actually want to marry him. There must be a hidden meaning. Regardless, he hated her less because of this.

However, after hearing the message sent to him, he didn't feel too good.

"That's all?" he looked at Shuang Er to suggest her to leave.

Shuang Er said, "Miss also said, if you have anything to say, you can write a letter to her directly."

With a flutter, a white crane flew down from the sky. While flapping its wings, it landed outside of the library. Water slowly flowed down from its feathers.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the white crane and nodded.

The white crane moved near him and touched his right arm using its neck. It appeared to be very affectionate towards him.

"Did you live well all these years?" he spoke to the white crane.

White Crane tweeted as if it was answering.

Seeing this image, Shuang Er was very surprised.

Last night when the white crane flew back, Chen Chang Sheng felt that he had forgotten something. Back then, he thought it was the black dragon under the abandoned garden but now he recalled that he should write a letter and let the white crane take it to Xu You Rong. There were many things to say so it's better to

communicate directly.

Shuang Er had been playing a role in the communication between Xu You Rong and him, he didn't like that.

From the time he arrived at the capital, he had only received one letter from Xu You Rong. In this letter, there were only three words and it was very concise, "Please behave yourself."

Chen Chang Sheng held pen and thought for a while about how determined, meaningful, and arrogant the words he wrote should be, so that he could reply to her without losing his honor.

This was the first letter he wrote to her after ten years.

However, after all this thought, he only wrote a normal letter, with normal words about normal things.

He didn't really want to get in a fight(not physical) with little girl.

Even if she was Xu You Rong, even if she was only three days younger than him, he considered her a little girl.

In the South, ten thousands miles away, it was the Mountain Virgin.

The land under the Mountain Virgin was all forbidden. But three

hundred miles away, there was a small town. The inhabitants were all commoners. There were blacksmiths, a liquor store, a meat store and a casino. Usually, people play dice or dominoes, but in the depths of this casino, there was a simple room. In the room there was a table.

People were playing Mahjong there.

Sitting at the East hand was a beautiful girl.

The girl was around fourteen. She was so beautiful that it seems as if she wasn't a regular human.

The other three people at the table knew she definitely was a regular human.

Two years ago, the boss of the casino was going to do something evil to her. The fact that she looked young and small and therefore weak, made it even easier to arouse a person's desire to commit a crime. He died in a very scary way. The dealer then took over the casino. He was the middle aged man sitting at the west of the table.

Since that day, after a period of time, this girl would come to the small town and play Mahjong. She wouldn't stop without playing continuously for two days and a night.

The simple room would only open once in several months. The people who were playing Mahjong with her were the three from the very beginning. Nothing changed. The three people were

commoners, how could they expect to meet such special thing?

From the endless fear in the very beginning to eventually playing without trembling their hands, they played a very long time. By now, they could already naturally get along with that little goddess. In game, they would no longer go easy, but would play for real and sometimes, they even dared to complain.

Being able to play Mahjong with such a pretty goddess, how fortunate were they?

And sometimes, they could really win money.

A crane's tweet came up outside the window and little girl said, "I have something to do tonight, can't play anymore."

The three people were very surprised. They all thought: What happened? She actually ended it so early this time? How about the rule of playing continuous for two days and a night?

The girl took out several golden leaves and left them on the table as compensation. She then turned around and left.

The three stared at each other. A lady worried and said, "It seems that something happened to the girl. She's not so interested in the game."

On a cliff away from the small town, Xu You Rong unfastened the letter from the white crane's leg and opened it casually.

Under the starlights, the paper could be seen clearly. The words were common, the handwriting was clear, and the paragraph wasn't long but she took a long time to read it.

Among the words and handwriting, she saw reservedness. She didn't see any hatred or negative emotion at all.

She could hardly imagine how a youngster, after experiencing so many troubles in the capital, could still remain calm.

If she was him, she definitely couldn't do so.

She remembered that he was only three days older.

She looked towards the direction of the capital and said, "If this letter isn't fake, then this person is either a gentleman or a forthright man."

The white crane tweeted. Obviously, it didn't agree with her saying. The disagreement here was pointed to the word fake.

Xu You Rong felt a little helpless. She said "Why do you like that dude so much? I can't even remember how he looks like. Why is he worth your liking?"

White crane tweeted twice to remind her of her previous words about being a gentleman and forthright man.

“No matter gentleman or saint, both are not people who I can live with for a long time on the way of xiuxing. It will be too boring.”

She looked at white crane and said, “I don’t want to live a boring life.”

White crane slightly leaned its neck aside. It felt confused as it probably thought: Miss, if you don’t want to marry Chen Chang Sheng, then why do you write that letter? Why do you admit this marriage to the world?

Xu You Rong didn’t explain. She had her own thinking. No matter parents or elders, Pope or Divine Queen, all couldn’t tell what she was thinking.

Then she opened up Shuang Er’s letter and began reading. Next, she learned about the things that happened at the Ivy Festival last night.

She slightly her eyebrows slightly, feeling surprised.

Since the engagement was already announced to the public, then would she be able to at least live calmly for a while?

She found this person really surprising.

Then she saw the conversation that Shuang Er reported between her and Chen Chang Sheng.

She put her hands behind her back and looked towards the direction of the capital again. She was wordless for a very long time.

“I suddenly remembered...when I was eleven, I had secretly written a letter, and let you take it to Xi Ning.”

White Crane nodded; that was the last time it went to Xi Ning. In the entire Dong Yu General's Mansion, no one knew.

“I think I said in the letter, I won't marry him.”

“He didn't write anything to object, so what is he insisting now?”

What Chen Chang Sheng insisted was never the marriage. Besides his master or senior in the old temple in Xi Ning, in this world, only the black dragon in the dimension under the royal court knew. Of course, he didn't know that the middle aged woman he met by the lake also knew.

For that thing, he even discarded his habit of sleeping and waking up early. He used the entire night to meditate and absorb starlight to purify. Although it seems like he couldn't proceed, he would never give up trying until the last moments of his life.

In the early morning, he woke up in the library.

Like yesterday, he was awoken by loud noises.

A terrifying huge sound came from the front of the Tradition Academy.

He pushed up the door of the library and went there with Tang Thirty Si and Xuan Yuan Po.

The Tradition Academy's door was broken.

The Tradition Academy's door was broken by someone.

The door that was just cleaned up a few months before, fell as a wagon bumped against it.

Wooden fragments and rocks were all over the ground. It looked very pitiful.

A horse fell on the wet floor, opened up its blank eyes, and pedaled slightly with its hoofs.

The dust gradually settled down.

Around ten rides appeared outside the Tradition Academy.

The riders were dressed in fine clothes and had well-groomed

horses.

The horses were not common.

The knights looked cold, obviously they were not commoners.

A young knight, looking at the broken door said expressionlessly,
“What’s the point for this old, broken yard continue to exist?”

Chapter 88 - Counter Strike Of The Youngsters Of The Tradition Academy

The knight was around twenty years old. His eyes were thin and gentle but a trace of indifference and nobility could be seen inside the pupils. The moment he said the phrase, his eyes were fixed on the ruined entrance of the Tradition Academy. It was as if he didn't even see Chen Chang Sheng and the other two who arrived in a hurry. It was very obvious that he was an extremely prideful person.

Chen Chang Sheng and the other two arrived in a hurry. Tang Thirty Six lifted his hair with his hand and saw the scene in front of him and was stumped. When hearing the words said by the knight, he winked his eyes slightly and didn't say a word. He turned around and walked back into Tradition Academy.

Xuan Yuan Po didn't see the knights. All he saw was the barely living battle horse in the pond. Ever since he was a Yao youngster, his wounds healed exceptionally quickly. Although his right arm still needed helping from Chen Chang Sheng, his left leg was all good and the cane wasn't even necessary anymore. He walked there slowly.

Chen Chang Sheng stood in front of the Tradition Academy's entrance alone and looked at the knights and the cold yet prideful young noble.

Breaking one's door and destroying one's pots and pans is considered a very violent actions. If the two sides didn't have unsolvable hatred towards each other, they probably wouldn't

have done such a thing. Although Chen Chang Sheng didn't know this young noble, he could guess where he came from. He slowly formed fists with his hands but suddenly realized that he had forgotten his short sword in the small building.

Xuan Yuan Po walked toward the severely wounded battle horse and squatted down. He looked at this once-majestic creature now lying pitifully in the rain. He looked at the blood flowing out of the battle horse's lips. The eyes of the Yao youngster turned deadly cold.

There was a drizzle in the morning. The rain landed in the pond and made some tiny splashes. Some rain drops landed on the body of the horse and made it colder. Xuan Yuan Po placed his hand on the gradually dying body of the horse. He reached his right arm out, held onto its neck and snapped it.

The rain continued on but the battle horse closed its eyes as it received a swift and painless death.

Xuan Yuan Po stood up and glanced at the young noble on the horse, "If you wanted to break our entrance, you could just use stones or trees. Why would you use a horse to crash into the door? Just because you think it makes you powerful? No, it only reveals your shamelessness."

The young noble didn't bother with his comment because although the Yao youngster was related to his reason to be here, he wasn't his main target today. He looked down at Chen Chang Sheng and asked coldly, "Are you Chen Chang Sheng?"

Chen Chang Sheng didn't answer because a wind blew past his side.

The swift wind slashed through the drizzle that was hitting Tradition Academy and swirled into the crowd of knights outside of the academy.

The person doing this was Tang Thirty Six. Previously, just like Chen Chang Sheng, he had left his sword in the small building.

After he saw what happened outside of the school, he didn't speak a word and returned to Tradition Academy. He wasn't afraid or trying to find help, he returned to take his sword.

Only when his sword was in his hands could he eliminate his enemies.

Without any words, Tang Thirty Six held his sword and rushed out of Tradition Academy. Without any hesitation, he rushed towards that young noble and the dozen knights and attacked.

Wen Shu Sword emitted light and a sun appeared in the gloomy morning drizzle. The red light rays spread around the surroundings; they weren't warm, but rather murderous.

Setting Dawn.

The entrance of the academy was destroyed on purpose. What kind of infuriating thing is this?

Tang Thirty Six was in rage so he used his most powerful technique, the three combos of Wen Shui.

The cloudy entrance in the rain was suddenly as bright as noon.

The young noble raised his eyebrows and his mount moved backwards a few steps.

Two knights appeared in front of him and turned their wrist. Two long spears made out of exquisite iron appeared in the wind and rain. They striked against the sword of Tang Thirty Six.

Only the most powerful North Army of Zhou Dynasty was qualified to equip these kinds of spears.

Seeing these two iron spears', Tang Thirty Six knew that these knights who seemed to be explorers were actually the elites of North Army. However, he didn't care. He followed through with this strike at the young noble.

As the blade of the sword slashed through the sky, rain drops were transformed into white steam.

Two ear deafening crashes were heard in the drizzle.

Dang, Dang.

The two iron long spears were chopped into four pieces and the pieces flew into the distance. It hit the ground hard and water splashed everywhere as the skill pierced through the ground and destroyed the outer wall of another building. The broken edge of the iron spears were slightly red and the raindrops that landed on it were vaporized immediately.

This was the true power of Setting Dawn — one of the three combos of Wen Shui Three Sword.

Last night's fight between Tang Thirty Six and Qi Jian in Wei Yang Palace was a competition rather than a death match. With

Chen Chang Sheng instructing by his side, he felt limited. Now that he was furious, he could actually use all of his strength and power all at once.

Of course, the two knights were elites of the North Army of Zhou Dynasty. Even if Tang Thirty Six did strike out of rage and destroyed their iron spears and put them onto the ground, he was nonetheless injured as well. The previously tied-up hair was now scattered on his shoulder and his face was slightly pale.

He held the Wen Shui Sword and stood in the rain. He looked at the knights and the noble with a prideful yet cold expression as if he wasn't hurt from the earlier contact.

Just a moment earlier, he raised his qi to its maximum potential. It was as if lava was flowing through his veins and gave birth to a new sun. As raindrops fell on his dark hair, body, and sword, they vaporized into steam.

He was standing in the middle of a mist.

The young noble looked at Tang Thirty Six and knew who he was. He squinted his eyes slightly as if they were willow leaves. His eyes turned sharper and keen words came out of his lips, “You dare do this, you dare to.....”

But he didn’t finish his sentence because Tang Thirty Six yelled, “What are you waiting for? Don’t let him finish.”

Just when he was saying “What are you waiting for,” Xuan Yuan Po had already picked up a huge piece of wood from the rain.

The door of Tradition Academy was built years ago. Previously when the Department of Education decided to maintain the school, the door wasn’t replaced with a new one because it was sturdy enough. The door was as high as two people and as thick as two palms. If it wasn’t crushed by that battle horse with all its might, then it wouldn’t have broken off.

Now the academy entrance was broken and picked up by Xuan Yuan Po. It was still as tall as two people and as thick as two palms. When it was stood upright, it looked just like a man-made mountain.

Even xiuxingists who Purified their body very well would have trouble picking up this door using pure strength.

Although Xuan Yuan Po's right arm was injured, his left arm was still perfectly fine. By using the unique trait of his Yao race, he barely picked up the academy door.

Some of the knights noticed his action and moved toward him to ensure the safety of that young noble.

At that exact moment, Tang Thirty Six finished his sentence.

Xuan Yuan Po screamed furiously and threw the mountain-like door that he picked up with one arm towards the young noble.

With a loud bang, a large cloud of dust rose from the ground against the rain.

The floor in front of Tradition Academy shook slightly and the water ponds on the ground seemed to jump into the air.

A second bang.

Two knights became two black dots and flew towards the distance and crashed into the ground.

Although they were still holding their iron spears, their weapons were bent.

The mount of the young noble reacted out of instinct and backed up a little. The noble wasn't hit by Xuan Yuan Po and obviously wasn't injured. But his cloth got splashed by the dirty water and dust from the ground. He couldn't maintain his previous cold eyes and attitude. His face became pale and his right hand that held the saddle was shaking.

But it wasn't out of fear, it was out of rage.

His eyes were on the three youngsters outside of Tradition Academy.

Tang Thirty Six was holding the sword in the mist.

Xuan Yuan Po was holding the door in the rain.

And Chen Chang Sheng was standing under the broken roof of the academy. He didn't do anything, even his cloth didn't get wet.

The noble was furious.

He wasted the life of a battle horse and cracked open the entrance of this ruined academy. He felt this action was suitable for his noble and powerful status. He was waiting for the people inside to come out so that he could rebuke them and let them experience living hell.

But the result wasn't what he expected. He didn't even finish his sentence and four of his subordinates were severely injured.

Even the door that he broke was used against him.

The momentum from cracking open the entrance was put down so forcefully that he wasn't comfortable with it. He was very angry.

Everyone in the capital knew what kind of terrifying result would come of his anger.

When he was infuriated, even Zhou Tong needed to keep his silent.

He looked at the three youngsters in the rain as if they were three dead corpses.

“Very well, very well.....”

The young noble was so angry that he started laughing. A trace of red appeared on his pale cheeks. It seemed both unhealthy and creepy.

Before the young noble spoke again, Tang Thirty Six whispered to Chen Chang Sheng, “When he starts to speak, don't let him finish.”

Xuan Yuan Po also looked at Chen Chang Sheng. Previously he and Tang Thirty Six had some action, now it was his turn.

Chen Chang Sheng looked back at Tang Thirty Six and asked confusingly, “Why?”

“Don’t let him have the chance to rebuke, make him suffer from restraint.”

“Just like what you planned last night?”

“Yes.”

“This is important because I’m not happy and I can’t him be happy either.” Tang Thirty Six looked at the broken door of Tradition Academy and answered expressionlessly.

Just this moment, the young noble’s voice was heard in the drizzle, “Very well, very well.....”

Chen Cang Sheng made a decision and raised his head while glancing at the noble.

He said the sentence, but when he spoke, he was a little slow and felt conflicted because he had never said this kind of sentence before in his life. But besides this, he didn’t know how to stop the words of the young noble. Just as Tang Thirty Six, the broken door of Tradition Academy made him angry as well.

“Well.....

He looked at the young noble and said sincerely, “F*** your grand aunt.”

From Xi Ning Village to the capital, he never cursed. Chen Chang Sheng hardly ever yelled at anyone. Therefore when he cursed, he was inexperienced. He even stopped midway a few times. It was as if he was a child starting to learn how to speak. The syllables followed one another slowly.

Speaking logically, the young noble had time to stop Chen Chang Sheng’s sentence, but he didn’t.

Chen Chang Sheng thought he finally succeed even though it was a bit sloppy.

He glanced at Tang Thirty Six for some compliments, but he noticed the atmosphere of the field was a little strange.

Silence filled the entrance of Tradition Academy in the morning drizzle. Even the dust from the crashes were put down by the wetness of rain and couldn’t swirl in the air anymore.

Chapter 89 - The Scattered Curtain Of Rain

After cursing, Chen Chang Sheng finally felt relieved. But he suddenly realized that the atmosphere around the entrance got even heavier. What was strange was that this heaviness originated from Tang Thirty Six and Xuan Yuan Po. The expressions on their faces were awkward, especially Tang Thirty Six's. He looked at Chen Chang Sheng with such a surprised look as if Chen Chang Sheng was an idiot.

The young noble was also severely shocked. He thought to himself, perhaps there are people in the capital who dared to yell at him, but who dared to bring shame to his grand aunt? The knights never thought such a thing would happen either. They were so surprised that they forgot about their rage. A weird silence filled the entrance of Tradition Academy.

“Do you know who he is?” Tang Thirty Six walked toward Chen Chang Sheng and whispered.

Chen Chang Sheng answered, “Who else could he be? He's probably a member of the Family of Tian Hai.”

“You knew that he is a member of Family of Tian Hai and dared to curse like that?” Tang Thirty Six said while breathing heavily.

Chen Chang Sheng was confused, “Aren't you not afraid of Family of Tian Hai? Plus you also said that the Divine Queen and Family of Tian Hai are two different things.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at him stumped. He stared at him for a long time and finally realized that Chen Chang Sheng didn't really understand. That curse was just a coincidence, or rather, a mistake. If weren't for the serious situation Tang Thirty Six was in, he would have started laughing. But since this was serious, he held it in. Tang Thirty Six's face got all red from his effort to keep himself from laughing out loud.

“What happened?” Chen Chang Sheng was still confused.

Tang Thirty Six patted on his shoulder and sympathized, “Family of Tian Hai isn't the same thing as Divine Queen, but this person's grand aunt.....is the Divine Queen herself.”

Chen Chang Sheng was stunned. He didn't know what to say. Of course he knew Divine Queen's last name was Tian Hai but he never thought that his random curse – or more precisely, his first curse would target the Divine Queen.

His expression was a little odd. He wanted to travel back in time but obviously that wasn't possible. He couldn't take the words back either so he could only lower his head and watch the raindrops hit the ground and pretend nothing happened earlier.

That young noble finally came back to his senses and looked at Chen Chang Sheng with a strange look. Perhaps he was so furious that a smile climb up to the corner of his lips, but his voice was colder than the autumn rain that was falling from the sky. He praised, “Such an outstanding youngster.”

Anyone who dared to curse at the Divine Queen on the streets of Zhou capital was obviously outstanding. And usually, the people who are standing out of the crowd would die first.

This young noble's name was Tian Hai Sheng Xue. His grandfather's name was Tian Hai You Guo. His father's name was Tian Hai Cheng Wu.

Tian Hai You Guo is the elder brother of the Divine Queen.

The Divine Queen is his grand aunt.

The third generation of Family of Tian Hai included around a dozen people. The most famous of them were the four brothers of the elder wife. They were named the Four Sons of Tian Hai. One of the sons is in the government court, one of them is in the military, one of them is in the business field, the last one is.....fooling around. Tian Hai Sheng Xue is the one who was in the military. He's also the most powerful xiuxingist in the third generation of Family of Tian Hai. He used to rank twelve on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud but now, he's a xiuxingist who's on the Honor Roll of Midas. Furthermore, he's a strong competitor for the championship of next year's Great Trial.

Just yesterday he came back to the capital from the northern frontier and heard about what happened in the capital. He also heard news of his cousin, Tian Hai Ya Er, who was disabled after the night of Ivy Festival. He quietly waited one night and made sure Princess Luo Luo left the Tradition Academy for the Academy of Li Palace. Then the first thing he did after waking up was go to the Tradition Academy.

He broke the door of Tradition Academy first and next, he will make Tradition Academy close its doors. He came to the school today to release his anger.

But he never expected his outlet of rage to be interrupted by the youngsters of Tradition Academy. They never played according to the rules; they didn't say a word, they just held their swords and picked up the broken door and started rushing. Four of his knights were severely injured and lastly, that youngster...cursed at his grand aunt in front of his face.

Tian Hai Sheng Xu had a handsome complexion and his skin was white. Countless girls in the capital and the northern plains fell for him. Now his face got even paler because of the drizzle landing on his skin, just like a pearl. However, only people who are close to him knew that this represented that his anger has reached its maximum point.

Luo Luo's departure for Academy of Li Palace was the first step for some particular power in the capital to destroy the Tradition Academy. Chen Chang Sheng and the others knew that they will face some big trouble and prepared themselves mentally yesterday under the big tree. Even so, they never knew that the first wave of destruction would come so suddenly and intensely.

This isn't how the plot of other stories go. In those stories, the enemies would start out weak as mosquitoes and the righteous main character would defeat them. Then, the powerful enemies would come out and start trouble. In this case, the powerful enemy came out in the introduction.

“You came out too early.....but, it’s more interesting this way.” Tang Thirty Six picked up his Wen Shui Sword and stood on the stone stairs in the rain.

He suddenly said one word to Chen Chang Sheng who was standing beside him.

“Run.”

A true battle was about to begin. It will be completely different from the competition that occurred last night in the Ivy Festival.

Chen Chang Sheng’s presence in the field would be completely meaningless because he can’t instruct his friends like he did last night. Even if there would be no fatalities in this battle, there will probably be severe injuries. How could Chen Chang Shang’s weak body handle such an immense threat?

And for the chance of victory..... Tang Thirty Six was calm enough to realize it was impossible for such result to occur. Tian Hai Sheng Xue alone could easily defeat three of Tang Thirty Six. Even if Chen Chang Sheng stayed, all three of them together couldn’t win against one arm of their enemy.

But he didn’t hear any foot steps or the splashing noise of boots stepping on water. He turned around and saw that Chen Chang Sheng was still standing in his original position. Tang Thirty Six wrinkled his eyebrows and yelled deeply, “Why are you pretending? Even if you stay, you will be deadweight. You can’t

help us, you will only drag us down.”

Xuan Yuan Po nodded but didn't say a word.

“You don't have to care about me.....I know running away would be the best choice right now, but I just can't start walking.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Plus you guys are not running either, so it doesn't count as me dragging you guys down.”

Tang Thirty Six thought for a moment and knew he couldn't convince this guy. He stopped talking, took out Wen Shui Sword and walked out of the entrance. He stepped on the water on the stone stairs. He slapped his Wen Shui Sword on his leg while his feet walked on the pond. Both actions made a clear splashing sound.

Following his slap, the rain water left the blade of the sword like pearls and scattered everywhere.

After been cleansed by rain water, the Wen Shui Sword was bright again. The Setting Dawn that would be used later will be prettier than the first one.

It is hard for them to move their feet when walking backwards. It was much easier to charge forward.

Chen Chang Sheng followed Tang Thirty Six and walked out of the entrance of the Tradition Academy.

Xuan Yuan Po looked at the wooden board that was once the door of the academy. He thought for a moment and didn't let it go, but rather he kept it in his arms and followed them out.

Outside of Tradition Academy, dozens of knights from the North Army awaited.

But the three youngsters were fearless.

“Crush them.” Tian Hai Sheng Xue commanded expressionlessly with his right hand holding onto the saddle lightly.

He himself would be enough to defeat these three students of Tradition Academy.

But he knew that although it was early in the morning, there were a lot of people in the streets outside of Tradition Academy.

These people wanted to see how Family of Tian Hai would treat the Tradition Academy.

He will crush them directly, he will sabotage Tradition Academy.

He will prove it to the entire world that the honor of Family of Tian Hai is untouchable.

Suddenly, the rain intensified. The raindrops got bigger and

landed on the marble floors of Hundred Blossom Street and were scattered into pieces.

The curtain of rain got denser and blocked people's visions.

Horseshoes were tapping on the ground as if they were booming thunder. Dozens of dark shadows ran towards the entrance of Tradition Academy like arrows.

The battle horses were of unique breeds. They had the bloodline of magical beasts which was why they could accelerate into such a terrifying speed in such a short distance.

Observing this scene, Tang Thirty Six thought to himself, previously when he was getting his sword, he drank a cup of hot tea so why was he feeling so cold now?

Rain fell onto Xuan Yuan Po's face and moisturized his beard while sinking into his lips. He was confused as to why he was shaking.

It was due to nervousness, and probably fear as well. Even if they were prideful youngsters, they never faced the danger of death.

Chen Chang Sheng's expression didn't even change one bit probably because he was under the constant threat of his doomed fate.

Suddenly, a wild wind started in the Hundred Blossom Street.

The direction of the rain tilted all over the places.

A shadow with unimaginable speed appeared in the field and passed Chen Chang Sheng while charging at Tian Hai Sheng Xue and the dozen of knights.

A dozen of long spears were broken in half and the knights were thrown onto the ground covered with rain.

No one saw clearly what had happened.

When the sound of broken spears disappeared, two feet landed on the pond of water on the marble floor. In the thick curtain of rain, it scattered.

How fast did that person go?

Naked eyes couldn't capture his speed, only when he passed the rain did he leave a mark on this world.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue's pupil contracted. He felt an aura of danger.

He never thought there would be a hidden powerful figure in Tradition Academy.

He didn't back off, because he knew that no matter how fast he went, he couldn't escape the opponent.

He screamed and thrust the iron spear in front of him into the curtain of rain.

The place that he targeted was the frontmost location of the scattered curtain of rain.

The qi inside his body rushed out and cooperated with the momentum of the spear and broke through the intense rain in front of him.

Countless raindrops turned into thin strings and circled around the tip of the spear.

Suddenly a fist appeared in the air and crushed into the tip.

When that fist appeared, all of the attention on the iron spear was taken away.

The rain strings swirling around the spear head scattered and disappeared.

That fist broke the boundary of rain and crashed into the head of the spear.

The iron spear of Tian Hai Sheng Xue was obviously no normal weapon. Especially the spear tip which was crafted by the master ironsmith of Zhou Dynasty. It was made of meteorite iron. Who knew how many demon warriors were pierced and killed on the northern plains by this spear. But the tip of the spear was bent

from its contact with the fist.

A formidable strength transferred from the spear back to its owner.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue's hands started bleeding and he couldn't hold onto the handle of the spear anymore. The iron spear shook violently and shot out backwards like an arrow.

If the weapon landed on his chest, even if he didn't die, he would've been injured badly.

Just this moment, another hand appeared in the air.

It was a thin and dry hand.

That hand landed on the shoulder of Tian Hai Sheng Xue.

Chapter 90 - Faster, Harder, Stronger

The thin hand carried Tian Hai Sheng Xue's body off his horse and moved towards the end of Hundred Blossom Street. Tian Hai Sheng Xue's body moved as fast as an arrow as it cut through the rain. A clear mark was seen on the marble floor as the hand and Tian Hai Sheng Xue traveled several dozens of yards away.

The hand belonged to a tall and thin elder. His attire was casual and his shoulders were high. He looked ancient but there was a trace of a warlike scent. Under his thin hands, Tian Hai Sheng Xue looked like a child.

The blank spots in the curtain of rain rushed forward and finally stopped in front of the battle horse. A person appeared and it wasn't until he appeared did the rain from the sky finally start dropping again. The previously broken rain curtains connected and became dense again.

Just from these scenes, you could already tell how fast this person was.

He was just a very normal middle aged man. His shirt was filled with pictures of gold coins and he wore several gold rings on his fingers. Golden light was flashing from his body and he seemed to be a regular rich man often seen in villages or the countryside.

Just from his appearance, no one could guess that the punch came from him. He appeared suddenly in the morning rain and sent dozen of knights flying. His single punch easily broke through

Tian Hai Sheng Xue's iron spear and made a thin and tall elder come out as well.

The Officer Jin of the Herb Garden. His true identity was revealed just last night at Wei Yang Palace. He was Jin Yu Lu.

The thin and tall elder looked at Jin Yu Lu. His white eyebrow raised slightly while raindrops started to sink into his hair. The atmosphere was heavy. He opened his lips to speak.

Jin Yu Lu's appearance made Tang Thirty Six realize that there would be no trouble for the Tradition Academy today. He was in extreme joy but as he saw the tall elder about to speak, Tang Thirty Six yelled, "Talk after we fight."

This sentence was targeted towards Jin Yu Lu. Normally, at Tang Thirty Six's age and generation, it would be disrespectful for him to yell at such a legendary figure but Jin Yu Lu didn't mind, he just replied, "True."

Right after he finished his sentence, Jin Yu Lu disappeared once again into the morning rain.

The pond on the marble floor splattered and foot marks appeared on the wall of Hundred Blossom Street. Several dozens of blank spots broke through the intense rain curtain. In a flash, he was dozens of yards away.

People who were watching this scene couldn't believe their eyes.

How could a person in this world be this fast?

The thin tall elder squinted his eyes slightly and his expression turned heavy. As an elder who participated in the previous war, he obviously knew how powerful Jin Yu Lu was, especially in the aspect of speed. The elder therefore, used his ultimate technique without hesitation.

He raised his thin hands and pushed forward. A cold but powerful aura mounted Hundred Blossom Street immediately and the rain started falling slower from the sky. In the duration of their landing, frost appeared on the surface of the rain drops. When they fell onto the marble floor, they flashed and scattered like pearls.

The rain curtain transformed into a ice curtain. This curtain was formed to defend against Jin Yu Lu's attack but even so, multiple frozen spheres were crushed and thrown into street walls by Jin Yu Lu.

Just as the shadow appeared, Jin Yu Lu's hands were already raised. He stared at the elder who was sealed behind the ice curtain and squinted his eyes slightly. The pupil of his eyes lost focus and dark light seemed to emit from its terrifying coldness.

Countless friction sounds were heard on Hundred Blossom Street. Thousands of flashes appeared and vanished on the street.

Those flashes were slightly curved and extremely sharp. If someone looked closely, they would notice that the flashes

appeared to be claw marks of some kind of beast.

The tall, thin elder used his powerful and dense qi to set up a durable defense wall and froze the rain curtain into ice. Surely it effectively slowed down Jin Yu Lu's terrifying speed, but it couldn't hinder Jin Yu Lu's attack patterns. No matter how tough his defense was, he couldn't stop a string of rapid blows.

In just the brief moment of few water drops landing on the ground, Jin Yu Lu launched several hundreds of blows into the rain curtain. Of course Tang Thirty Six, Chen Chang Sheng and the knights in the pond couldn't see these scenes. These two were truly powerful xiuxingists.

A tearing sound was heard and the dense rain curtain was pierced through. Jin Yu Lu passed the defensive line and arrived in front of the thin tall elder. He swunged his arm and the elder yelled while blocking Jin Yu Lu's fist forcefully with his thin palms.

Shock waves splashed the raindrops everywhere and cracks started to appear on the walls of the streets.

Although Tian Hai Sheng Xue was protected behind the tall, thin elder and he wasn't harmed by the direct impact of the shock wave, he still felt the damage and let out a deep moan as his face turned even paler.

On the other hand, the tall, thin elder felt the immediate impact. The enormous strength of Jin Yu Lu's fist was endured entirely by him. His face grew pale as blood started flowing out of the corner

of his lips. The elder's legs shook slightly.

Jin Yu Lu looked at him expressionlessly but he stopped attacking. He placed his hands back into his pockets, turned around and walked in the direction of Tradition Academy.

His walking posture didn't present himself as a rich man anymore, but rather more of a farmer.

The battle between the powerful figures happened quickly and ended quickly. It was faster than any observer imagined because Jin Yu Lu was very hasty. His speed was out of this world. It was even faster than flying birds that were famous for their immense

speed. Even in the entire continent, his speed could be ranked at the top.

“What is a farmer like you doing here and not harvesting crops in the eastern fields?”

The tall, thin elder looked at Jin Yu Lu's slightly curve back and yelled angrily.

After they fought, they could talk especially since they knew each other from a long time ago. Jin Yu Lu didn't turn back. He continued walking with his hands in the pockets, “Fei Dian, what are you doing here and not sweeping snow in the north?”

Hearing the name “Fei Dian”, Tang Thirty Six's expression

changed slightly and some noise was heard in the depth of the street.

That tall, thin elder was Fei Dian!

Fei Dian was the one of the oldest and most powerful Generals of Zhou Dynasty. He participated in the previous war against the Demon race, and his contribution and recognition was huge. Even the most famous General right now, Xue Xing Chuan, would bow in respect when encountering him.

Who knew such a powerful figure would appear outside of Tradition Academy in the morning and help Tian Hai Sheng Xue.

But no one expected that such a powerful figure would lose to that middle aged man.

All citizens of Zhou Dynasty knew that Fei Dian learned and practiced the Way of Cold Hawk. He was recognized for his swift and deadly speed. But that middle aged man was even faster and more powerful than him.

The people who didn't know the identity of the middle aged man were shocked. They wondered, who is this man?

But Chen Chang Sheng and his crew obviously knew.

“Even after all these years, you, Jin Yu Lu, still rely on your strength and speed.” Fei Dian looked at his back and mocked.

Only after hearing this, the people in the street knew who Jin Yu Lu was. They were shocked without words.

After last night's Ivy Festival, many people knew that Jin Yu Lu followed Princess Luo Luo and settled in the capital. The Yao General that even Emperor Tai Zong admired became a living legend so many years after the War. If he's the middle aged man, then the outcome of this battle was determined before the fight even started.

No matter how fast Fei Dian was, he couldn't be swifter than him.

Jin Yu Lu's speed could rank amongst the top five in the entire continent.

Hearing Fei Dian's swords, Jin Yu Lu still didn't turn around, "Seven hundred years ago, you said the same words. Seven hundred years later, you haven't changed a bit.....You specializes in strength and speed, but you are worse than me in both fields. What can I do about it?"

Truly talented young members of great background were protected by powerful people to insure their growth of becoming real xiuxingists. For example, when Tang Thirty Six came to the capital from Wen Shui, the principals of Heavenly Academy cared for him which is why no one from his family followed. But it was clear that his family didn't expect him to leave Heavenly Academy after such a short period of time.

For three hundred years Fei Dian and Tian Hai Family had a good relationship. He was responsible of guarding the Northern Border so the Tian Hai Family sent Tian Hai Sheng Xue to the Northern Border so that he could learn and mature. Obviously Fei Dian became the protector of Tian Hai Sheng Xue in the Northern Border. Even after they returned to the capital, the relationship stayed the same.

This morning when Tian Hai Sheng Xue came to Tradition Academy to punish Chen Chang Sheng and his crew, Fei Dian didn't say anything. He just followed behind with stealth because he knew something was off. As he expected, the three students of Tradition Academy were extraordinary, and at the end, even Jin Yu Lu appeared.

“If I remember correctly, you should be in Academy of Li Palace right now.”

Fei Dian accepted the handkerchief that Tian Hai Sheng Xue handed over and lightly wiped off the blood in the corner of his lips

At the same time, Jin Yu Lu reached the entrance of Tradition Academy. He took the handkerchief that Chen Chang Sheng handed over and wiped the rainwater off his face lightly. He turned, glanced at Fei Dian and said, “Why do I have to be in Academy of Li Palace?”

“Princess Luo Luo is currently living in Academy of Li Palace.

This was requested by the Pope and the Queen.”

Fei Dian squinted across the dense rain curtain and said.

Jin Yu Lu laughed a little and asked, “And what does it have to do with me?”

Fei Dian wrinkled his eyebrows lightly, “You should understand, Emperor Bai let the Queen take care of your princess, therefore the words of the Queen is the same as the commands of Emperor Bai. That’s why even Princess Luo Luo needs to listen to her. You, as an official, dare to disobey the command of Emperor Bai?”

“The commands of Emperor Bai.....I stopped obeying them several hundred years ago. If I remember correctly, you were also present at that moment. Have you forgotten?”

Jin Yu Lu’s smile vanished as he said expressionlessly, “Starting from the day my emperor announced that command, I was no longer an official of him. I’m not under the control of his orders anymore. My princess listened to the Divine Queen’s words because she’s the elder and Emperor Bai agreed to it. I don’t have to listen to the Divine Queen’s words because I’m not a Zhou Citizen, and the Queen isn’t my elder. Plus, Emperor Bai can’t command me anymore.”

“I’m an officer of my princess. I only listen to her words.”

“My princess told me to look after Tradition Academy, so I came

to look after them.”

“Is there a problem?”

Fei Dian looked at him and his mood was complicated. He knew which command of Emperor Bai Jin Yu Lu was talking about. It was the one which members of Mountain Li delivered the military supplies late, and that they should be prosecuted. At that time, this event was known throughout the entire army and it split the force into two sides. It nearly destroyed the alliance between humans and Yao race.

Fei Dian sighed, “After several hundred years, your personality is still so stubborn. Your tone is still so forceful.”

Jin Yu Lu said expressionlessly, “At that time, I was responsible for carrying out military punishment, I killed countless people. I didn’t listen to Emperor Bai’s words, Emperor Tai Zong couldn’t handle me either. Why is this? Because I’m right. If I’m right, then why should I not be stubborn? Why should I not be forceful?”

Silence filled the Hundred Blossom Street. The only sound that could be heard was the noise of raindrops landing on the marble floor.

Of the dozens of people in front of the entrance of Tradition Academy and the hidden crowd in the depths of Hundred Blossom Street, no one spoke out.

Chapter 91 - The Entrance Of Academy And Heart Of People

Jin Yu Li dressed like a rich man and had long sleeves covering both hands like an old farmer. Nothing on him looked out of the ordinary until he spoke these words.

After hearing these words, everyone felt different. Chen Chang Sheng had the strongest feeling, especially the last sentence – I didn’t do anything wrong, so why can’t I be tough, and why can’t I be daring?

When he had just arrived in the capital, in Dong Yu General’s mansion and outside of the Priest’s Academy, he had said similar words.

Because of the reactions from the others, he had been worrying. Am I really too different, or put another way, is what I insist really because of stubbornness or bitterness as how others see it or is it just a really strange thing? Upon hearing Jin Yu Lu’s words, he realized that were actually many people just like him.

This made him happy.

.....

“Has elder been protecting the Tradition Academy?”

Tian Hai Sheng Xue walked out, staring at Jin Yu Lu coldly.

Jin Yu Lu said calmly, “Why not?”

Tian Hai Sheng Xue said, “As the Official of the Red River, don’t you need to take care of princess? Don’t you need to be concerned about the princess’s safety?”

Jin Yu Lu squinted and said, “You Zhou people said the Li Palace is the safest place, so I let princess move out from the Herb Garden.....so obviously you Zhou people need to be responsible for princess’s safety. What do I need to worry about?”

Tian Hai family wanted to destroy the Tradition Academy. Their first course of action was to get an excuse to move Luo Luo out of the Tradition Academy.

Now Jin Yu Lu was actually using this reason to not stay at Li Palace and to instead stay at the Tradition Academy.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue couldn’t argue against it.

Suddenly, several wagons appeared on Hundred Blossom Street.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue took his subordinates to the Tradition Academy. He chose to do it early in the morning because he knew clearly that there were some people in the capital trying to protect the Tradition Academy. On this rainy morning, he wanted to destroy the Tradition Academy swiftly before anyone realized.

However, he didn't expect the three youngsters in the Tradition Academy to respond in such a tough way and he didn't expect the appearance of Jin Yu Lu. As the time passed, the people who were secretly observing this fight went to report the situation back to each of their masters. The masters rushed here.

Several wagons arrived in the rain urgently.

When Prince Chen Liu got out from the wagon in the front, he had even buttoned his clothes improperly. It could be imagined how hurried he was.

A thin middle aged man held the umbrella to shield him from the rain as they walked to the entry of the Tradition Academy.

Just by seeing the current circumstance, he already knew what had happened. He looked at Tian Hai Sheng Xue, frowned and said, "Go back."

If only talking about position in family hierarchy, Prince Chen Liu and Tian Hai Sheng Xue were in the same generation. As a matter of fact, Tian Hai Sheng Xue was older than him, however, Prince Chen Liu was part of the Chen royal family and most importantly, the Divine Queen was closer to him than her nephews in the Tian Hai family, so he didn't speak to Tian Hai Sheng Xue in a friendly way.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue took a glimpse at him coldly. His look was unspeakably reluctant, yet he didn't say anything to object.

To this member of the Chen royal family who lived in the royal palace for a long time, the youngsters of the Tian Hai family were envious and jealous. Several years ago, there were people trying to kill him, but the Divine Queen got very angry and since then, no one dared to disrespect him anymore, at least on the surface.

The person who got out of the second wagon was Officer Xin.

Yesterday the entire capital knew that the Pope had called Princess Luo Luo to the Li Palace Academy to study. The Tradition Academy was shaking in the wind and rain, so his heart was also shaking. He couldn't feel safe thinking, before when I saw that recommendation letter, I offered many helps to Chen Chang Sheng and the Tradition Academy, am I wrong? So today in the morning, after knowing what happened to the Tradition Academy, he didn't arrive at the first time, but went to Bishop's house, because he worried that he misunderstood the Pope's meaning again.

Bishop was smiling, without saying a word, which made him feel even more scared, was the Bishop's thinking different from the Pope? Was the Bishop actually going to reverse a verdict for that thing? Was he actually going to stand in the opposite side of the Pope? Was the Tradition actually going to split?

Officer Xin was very scared but he realized he had no way to go back because the entire capital and the entire Li Palace all knew why the Tradition Academy had obtained the opportunity to revitalize and being invited to participate in the Ivy Festival, was all his doing. Who would believe that he was only an executor?

Now he could only stand by the Tradition Academy, so must stand by the Tradition Academy.

Such fear of being forced to take a stand usually would make one very brave because he had already put all his eggs in one basket. With no way to step back, Officer Xin actually appeared even tougher than Prince Chen Liu. He paid no attention to Tian Hai Sheng Xue's reputation at all and criticized him harshly!

Tian Hai Sheng Xue's face turned more and more pale as he became more and more angry.

When Prince Chen Liu and the people of the Department of the Traditional Education all arrived, he lost his chance to destroy the Tradition Academy.

Jin Yu Lu stood in front of the Tradition Academy's gate.

Most importantly, the three students of the Tradition Academy did surprisingly well.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue looked at the three people, lifted up his eyebrows slightly, took over the rope his soldier delivered and shouted, "Go!"

"Go?"

The same word at different pitches represented completely different meanings.

Tang Thirty Six held his sword, looked at him and asked, “You want to leave just like that?”

In the battle this morning, the students of the Tradition Academy wounded four Tian Hai Sheng Xue’s soldiers, and Jin Yu Lu wounded many and even hurt Fei Dian. With this, Tian Hai Sheng Xue himself felt a little scared. On the other hand, the people of the Tradition Academy were not harmed at all. No matter what way you saw it, it’s the Tradition Academy that gained advantages.

But Tang Thirty Six still didn’t want to just let them go – Prince Chen Liu frowned slightly. Glancing at this playboy of the Wen Shui Tang Family and remembering that the night in the Wei Yang Palace, he disliked how this kid acted impolitely and disregarded the general situation of the continent completely.

“We need an explanation.”

The fall rain gradually stopped. Chen Chang Sheng walked up two steps, pointed at the ruined gate behind him and said.

Why would Tian Hai Sheng Xue come to break the Tradition Academy’s gate and even plan to completely destroy the Tradition Academy? Because he wanted to avenge for his cousin Tian Hai Ya Er. Although he was not so close to Tian Hai Ya Er, he was still family, his own family. Tian Hai Ya Er was crippled by the the Tradition Academy.

But that was the fight on the Ivy Festival, a fair fight. If he lost, then he lost, why could he avenge here? Moreover, even if he wanted to vengeance, he should go fight Luo Luo. Instead, he expressed his anger on the Tradition Academy and this reason was not enough for the students.

There was another intention that was hidden deeply which was to solve some trouble for the Divine Queen. However, this reason definitely couldn't be announced publicly.

Also, the last reason couldn't be mentioned either.

Chen Chang Sheng knew the opponent couldn't say his reason, so he asked him for an explanation.

Tian Hai Sheng Xue's face turned gloomy.

Fei Dian sighed, looked at the rain that was getting weaker and weak, pointed at the water that was building up on the street and said, "It's raining so the road is slippery. The carriage is destroyed and people died. How about this explanation?"

The carriage that broke the Tradition Academy had the best compartment and the best war horse. Even if in a Snow Barrier, where snow is constantly falling such that the ground was frosted, it still wouldn't cause such a severe result due to slippage.

This explanation was very shameless but because it was shameless, it was another way of apologising.

Chen Chang Sheng and Tang Thirty Six both didn't know what to say.

“I will come back again.”

Tian Hai Sheng Xue got on the horse and said to Chen Chang Sheng.

Chen Chang Sheng thought a bit and said, “If you want to come to the Tradition Academy, I won't accept you.”

Tian Hai Sheng Xue laughed but he was extremely angry. He didn't say much more and left.

Fei Dian shook his head as he looked at Jin Yu Lu and said, “You are not Zhou Du Fu, you can't change anything.”

Jin Yu Lu covered his hands with his sleeves again. He paid no attention to Fei Dian. The rain in the morning finally stopped. The people surrounding Hundred Blossom Street gradually walked away.

From the early morning to now, the thing that happened in front of the gate of the Tradition Academy was witnessed by many.

From the surface, this was a clash between Tian Hai Sheng Xue and the Tradition Academy. In fact, people all knew that this was a

battle between the Great Zhou's new powers and the old royal family. It was also a fight between the Pope and other elders in the capital. It was just that the power that Tradition Academy belonged to was obviously much weaker.

The opponent simply sent out Tian Hai Sheng Xue who had just came back from the Snow Barrier but on the other end was Prince Chen Liu and the Department of the Traditional Education. Both came here to protect the Tradition Academy which one could say, showed how much Prince Chen Liu and the Department of Traditional Education valued the Tradition Academy, but actually, on the Tradition Academy's side, there was simply no one else who could step in and help.

Prince Chen Liu saluted to the three students of the Tradition Academy.

Chen Chang Sheng returned a salute, but he didn't say anything thankful. Instead, he said, "In the palace Prince, you had said that this was a thing between you big figures, and that an insignificant figure like me, was to be disregarded by you guys, so I won't thank you."

"Thank indeed, is not necessary." Prince Chen Liu looked at him and smiled. He added, "But....after the Ivy Festival, the entire continent knows you are Xu You Rong's fiance so you are no longer that common youngster. You will no longer be ignored by us, so I won't feel sorry for you either."

Chen Chang Sheng became quiet. At this point, he finally remembered the influence of revealing the engagement.

Many people didn't want him to marry Xu You Rong and of course, the Tian Hai family didn't want it either.

What happened in the morning today was probably caused by this reason.

"If there's anything, just let me know."

After saying this sentence, Prince Chen Liu didn't intentionally stay to show his kindness, he just left calmly.

The thin man glanced at Chen Chang Sheng and followed holding the umbrella.

Officer Xin came and spoke several sentences. Then he harshly scolded Tian Hai family's savageness with Tang Thirty Six and left.

It wasn't until now that Xuan Yuan Po finally put down the door.

He had carried the heavy door plank for so long and although he was a Yao, it still made him very tired.

"I'll go bury the horse in a bit. When do we fix the door?" he asked.

Looking at the ruined gate, Chen Chang Sheng shook his head and said, "We don't fix it."

Tang Thirty Six said, “If you want the Tian Hai Family to fix the door, then you should force them to give away their reputation before.”

“What if they actually gave away their reputation and fixed it, what should we do?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “It’s pretty good to just leave the gate broken like this.”

Xuan Yuan Po rubbed his head. Looking at the wooden pieces and rocks, he couldn’t find a reason why this was good.

“You are improved.”

Jin Yu Lu smiled and said, “You finally learned how to obtain the biggest profit.”

If the gate of the Tradition Academy was left unfixed, day by day, people in the capital would gradually feel that the Tian Hai family was rampant and savage.

Chen Chang Sheng remained quiet for a bit and then said, “Elder, I don’t like such improvement.”

“I don’t like it either.”

Jin Yu Lu patted his shoulder, consoling him, “But what should we do? There are so many villains in the world. Unless you mimic me and hide in mountain to farm, there will always be some changes that you have to accept.”

Chapter 92 - The Watchman, Conversation, And People On The Bed

Chen Chang Sheng thanked Jin Yu Lu. If it wasn't for him, no matter how bravely Tang Thirty Six and Xuan Yuan Po fought, they wouldn't be able to protect the Tradition Academy before Prince Chen Liu and Officer Xin arrived. Jin Yu Lu looked at him and smiled, "Since you are the teacher of my princess, then you are one of us."

Hearing this, Chen Chang Sheng felt a little embarrassed. This man standing in front of him was a truly legendary character and the only reason why he was present at the Tradition Academy to help helped these three youngster was because of Luo Luo's request. Although Luo Luo wasn't in Tradition Academy right now, her heart was still here. This made Chen Chang Sheng joyous.

"Are you going to stay at Tradition Academy?"

Xuan Yuan Po looked at Jin Yu Lu and inquired with respect. Chen Chang Sheng and Tang Thirty Six thought to themselves, although Jin Yu Lu had said to Tian Hai Sheng Xue that he had no reason to be at Li Palace, he still needed to take care of Luo Luo. How can he stay here? They suggested Xuan Yuan Po not say any more.

"It's not impossible for me to stay." Jin Yu Lu saw the looks between the three youngsters, laughed out loud and said, "I have never done anything wrong in my life because I don't have anything that I really like except money."

Chen Chang Sheng saw the coin figures on his clothes. He laughed knowing that Jin Yu Lu was ready to stay. Chen Chang Sheng bowed to show his gratitude.

Tang Thirty Six came close to Jin Yu Lu. He held Jin Yu Lu's moderately coarse hand and shook it many times. He said, "You definitely know my family. My family doesn't have anything, besides money. We lack anything but money."

Wen Shui Tang family was a famous and rich family. After thousand years of saving, it had a endless amount of money. During the rebellion around ten years ago, the old royal family found Tang family for the first time and tried to get their support. Although they didn't succeed, but it could be imagined how rich Tang family is.

"Excluding princess, the Tradition Academy already has us three students. We just need a teacher."

Chen Chang Sheng looked at Jin Yu Lu, bowed down and said, "Sir, please stay to teach us."

Jin Yu Lu's xiuxing stage was even higher than the elder of Mountain Li, Xiao Song Gong. He was probably at a similar level to the principal of the Heavenly Academy, Mao Qiu Yu. In addition, with his vast experience in xiuxing, he was more than qualified to be a teacher in the Tradition Academy.

However, he didn't accept Chen Chang Sheng's request. He

laughed, shook his head and said, “How is it reasonable for a student to ask someone to be a teacher?”

Feeling helpless, Chen Chang Sheng said, “Right now, the Tradition Academy only has students. We don’t even have a principal.”

Jin Yu Lu looked at him and said sincerely, “Since the Bishop gave both roster and key to you, then he obviously had his own thoughts.”

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t know what the Bishop was thinking. He was only focused on what role Jin Yu Lu should play during his stay at the Tradition Academy. He frowned and pondered.

“According to your wish, I think the gate won’t be fixed at least any time soon. It will be like this for a long time.”

Jin Yu Lu looked at the broken gate and said, “Since it’s a school, the most important thing is to study. Even if there are only three students, your regular learning time shouldn’t be disturbed. Since your gate is broken, you probably need a janitor?”

Understanding his meaning, Chen Chang Sheng felt surprised. How would he agree to that?

“I farmed in the East Hill outside of the White Emperor’s city for several hundreds of years. What do I need to be afraid about as a janitor?”

Jin Yu Lu smiled and said. He did not give the three youngsters any chance to refuse. He told them that he was going to get some materials to build a small room by the door and left.

Xuan Yuan Po felt very happy. On the other hand, Chen Chang Sheng and Tang Thirty Six looked at each other and remained wordless. They both thought to themselves, did they really just let such an epic figure like Jin Yu Lu be a janitor? If they did, then they were setting the standard way too high. From now on, who would dare to disturb the Tradition Academy?

The fall rain had already stopped and the fog of the morning gradually disappeared. Xuan Yuan Po went to the east wall to dig a hole and bury the horse. He didn't need Chen Chang Sheng's help so Chen Chang Sheng thought a bit and realized that he was lacking sleep. He decided to return to his small building to sleep, but he was dragged to the front of the library by Tang Thirty Six.

"Before when Tian Hai Sheng Xue and his soldiers arrived, I was actually scared." Tang Thirty Six looked at him and said.

Chen Chang Sheng said, "Everyone is afraid of death. It is a very normal thing. You don't have to feel down on yourself."

Tang Thirty Six looked at him and spoke seriously, "Yes, everyone is afraid of death so when faced against that situation, everyone should be scared....But back then, I glimpsed at you and I actually didn't see any fear on your face. I was shocked."

Chen Chang Sheng thought a while and said, “You know that I am kind of dull. Maybe I simply didn’t show fear on my face yet.”

“No.” Tang Thirty Six shook his head and insisted. “I could tell that you were not scared back there.”

Remaining silent for a while, Chen Chang Sheng asked, “So? What is your point?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “Under such circumstances, since you were not scared at all, then there can only be two possibilities. The first is that you guessed that Luo Luo would send Jin Yu Lu here and didn’t need to be afraid. But obviously, you also didn’t know that Jin Yu Lu would come help.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “Then what’s the other possibility?”

Tang Thirty Six replied, “The second is that you are not afraid of death at all.”

Chen Chang Sheng rubbed his head and said, “As I said before, everyone is afraid of death.”

Tang Thirty Six felt very worried. He said, “I have been believing this too, so I think you definitely have some sort of secret or something must have happened recently.”

Chen Chang Shang sighed and said, “You think I look like someone that wants to die?”

Tang Thirty Six responded, “Certainly not. Plus, since you can have Xu You Rong as your wife, then there’s no way you want to die.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “So what are you worrying about?”

Tang Thirty Six gazed into his eyes and asked, “Are you sick?”

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t know that this kid was actually this smart. He couldn’t believe that Tang Thirty Six was able to guess it after observing so many little details. But of course, it was also that this kid cared a lot about him. He felt a bit warm inside, but his face turned cold. He replied, “You are sick.”

Seeing his face turned cold, Tang Thirty Six then realized how inappropriate his words were and how much nonsense he was saying. He suddenly remembered another thing and he asked seriously, “In the beginning, did you really not know that Tian Hai Sheng Xue was the Divine Queen’s grandnephew?”

Chen Chang Sheng stayed quiet for a while and said, “I knew.”

Tang Thirty Six thought to himself, I knew it. Although you lived in remote village and after arriving in the capital, you also spent all your time in the Tradition Academy studying xiuxing, since you could guess that he was from the Tian Hai family, then surely you could guess Tian Hai Sheng Xue’s identity based on his age and temperament.

“Why?”

He was asking why Chen Chang Sheng pretended to not know that he cursing at the Divine Queen in front of so many people.

“Because I wanted to know Divine Queen’s attitude towards the Tradition Academy.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “If the Queen really doesn’t want the Tradition Academy to continue to exist in the capital, then all she needs to say is one sentence. The Tradition Academy would disappear so there would be no conflict at all?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “They are guessing the Queen’s thought.”

“They can guess, but I don’t want to guess,” Chen Chang Sheng said. “I come to the capital to study xiuxing. I want to participate in the Great Trial, my time is very precious. The Tradition Academy is facing a lot of trouble, one after another. This is too troublesome.”

Tang Thirty Six lifted his eyebrows and asked, “So?”

“I cursed at her directly so the words will definitely be delivered to the palace. No one dares to keep it hidden.”

After taking a pause, Chen Chang Sheng said, “Then we should

know the Queen's attitude towards the Tradition Academy soon."

Tang Thirty Six suddenly felt a bit cold and said, "You want to see whether or not the knife will fall? Do you really want to die?"

Chen Chang Sheng looked at him and said, "At least it's better than having a knife always hanging right above your head."

"So I didn't say anything wrong. You truly are not afraid of death."

Looking at him, Tang Thirty Six said shockingly, "What kind of disease do you have?"

"I don't have any."

Chen Chang Sheng smiled and said, "I know how to cure diseases."

There was a sentence that he still hid in the bottom of his heart: The incurable disease was no longer a disease, but fate.

"Fake, too fake."

Tang Thirty Six said continuously and then he explained, "You are about to surpass that prince's status."

Chen Chang Sheng didn't expect him to suddenly mention Prince Chen Liu. He felt a bit surprised so he asked, "How did Prince Chen Liu offend you?"

Tang Thirty Six said, "Didn't you notice? Previously when he got off the wagon, he mismatched one of his buttons."

"So?"

"If not, then how could he demonstrate his hurry and his concern for the Tradition Academy?"

".....You think too much."

Chen Chang Sheng admired this kid's observation skills but he disagreed with his thinking.

"Anyway, I don't like Prince Chen Liu. He's too fake."

"Or maybe that's because he also doesn't like you?"

"I am so real. If he doesn't like me, then it is because he is fake."

"You can replace the word real with unrestrained."

"Whatever, he's still fake."

“If you weren’t a pinhole like yourself, who would notice the detail that Prince Chen Liu mismatched one of his buttons?”

“In the code of ancestors in my family, there were similar words – it’s most accurate to look people through coin holes.” (There are holes in ancient Chinese coins.)

Chen Chang Sheng shook his head and stopped saying anything. He thought to himself, even if Prince Chen Liu’s action was intentional, as the only Chen royal family member staying in the capital, he was lonely so it was understandable that he wanted to gain the support from the elders of the Tradition by helping the Tradition Academy.

After Xuan Yuan Po buried the horse under the east wall, he came back and heard the two people’s conversation. He kept shaking his head and said, “You guys are so young but you already think things are so complicated. Humans are indeed too guileful and can’t interact with you.”

Back to the bedroom in the small building, Chen Chang Sheng felt his eyelids were heavy. He was very sleepy.

His feeling was also very heavy because his clear and calm studying life, from now on, was gone and would never return. He was worried about the Divine Queen’s attitude after his words this morning were passed to the palace. No matter what way it was looked at, a good thing was not going to happen.

In the discarded garden in the royal palace, Mo Yu had said that

he was using others and that he was manipulating but actually, these were all taught by Luo Luo.....after all, she was the only daughter of the White Emperor. Although she didn't have any siblings and she didn't experience any palace competitions, as a member of the royal family, Luo Luo knew such things innately.

But how about him? He was excellent at calculating, not manipulating. (Author's trying to make a pun, sorta, calculating in Chinese pronounced, Ji Suan, Manipulating, Suan Ji.)

Like how he said to Jin Yu Lu, he truly disliked it. This made him very tired.

He walked to the bed and was about to rest a bit more but suddenly, he stopped.

He went to the closet next to the window, took down the short sword and then walked to the bed again.

No pause. It was very natural.

That, that person didn't even react.

Chen Chang Sheng looked at the bed. The joints on his fingers holding onto the handle turned somewhat white.

There was someone hiding under the quilt.

Chapter 93 - Blame It On The Rain

The next moment, Chen Chang Cheng relaxed his tension a bit because he saw long black hair on the bed. He did not relax because the person was female, but because if she was indeed an assassin, she wouldn't have revealed her location this easily and she definitely wouldn't have slept on someone's bed.

Raindrops hit the window and the splashing sound disturbed the lady on the bed. She turned around but didn't wake up. Faintly, silk earplugs could be seen through her hair. Her complexion was just as beautiful as usual, but perhaps due to her state of sleeping, her usual coldness and power was nowhere to be found.

Looking at her beautiful complexion, Chen Chang Sheng was shocked. He never would've thought this person was Mo Yu. As the person most trusted by the Divine Queen, she should be very busy. Why was she in this small building of the Tradition Academy and why was she napping on his bed?

Mo Yu really needed some sleep. For some reason, she slept sweetly and didn't even need to think of plots and strategies in her dreams. She was extremely relaxed and she snored softly. Sometimes, her tongue would reach out and lick the corner of her lips. This was not to seduce anyone, but it was more like an act of an innocent child.

Chen Chang Sheng wrinkled his eyebrows. He couldn't understand what was happening. Looking at the make-up that was leftover between her eyes and was surprised that this cunning yet beautiful woman had this innocent and tired side.

He placed the short sword back into its sheath. If Mo Yu was here to kill him, he would be dead even if he held the Legendary Frozen Spear. He pushed Mo Yu's body a little. Although his finger didn't touch her body directly due to the separation of the blanket, he still felt the sensation from his fingertips. Her skin was soft and silky.

Just when his finger landed on the blanket, Mo Yu opened her eyes.

Although she didn't nap for too long, it was still of good quality. She slept much better here than at the royal palace or the Orange Garden. She was satisfied and her eyes were half shut. They were like the willow leaves around the lake, filled with joy.

Then she saw Chen Chang Sheng and remembered where she was, what she was going to do and why she slept. Her eyes became serious and her joy became like the shadow of willow leaves on the surface of the lake as they are destroyed by a silly kid throwing a stone.

Her expression turned seldom and the joy in her eyes vanished. Instead, it was replaced by chilling glares.

She blinked and was now fully awake. She was calm as usual. Not laughing, not cold and not seductive, just calm.

In just a short period of time, she turned from an innocent kid to a cold, powerful figure and then to a regular woman. The

transition was quick and flawless. Looking at this scene, Chen Chang Sheng was impressed. If she was wearing so many masks in her life, will she remember her true self in the end?

“What time is it?” Mo Yu asked.

Chen Chang Sheng answered her.

Mo Yu glanced outside of the window and saw the wet leaves in the autumn rain. She said, “The sound of autumn rain falling on the window is making people falling asleep.”

After finishing her sentence, she stood up and walked towards the bronze mirror next to the window. She took out a comb from her sleeve and started brushing her hair. Her actions were naturally and she didn't show a sign of embarrassment or nervousness.

It was as if she wasn't in the Tradition Academy, but rather her own house in the Orange Garden.

Chen Chang Sheng's eyes moved from her pretty belt around her waist onto her face reflected from the mirror. He saw the leftover make-up on her face and the fatigue between her eyes and said, “You seem to be very tired.”

He was sure that only people who are truly tired and under constant stress could sleep as sweetly as she did earlier.

Mo Yu's hand that held the comb froze for a moment. Then, she continued to brush her hair. She mocked, "What does a child understand?"

From her perspective, Chen Chang Sheng was just a child.

Chen Chang Sheng replied, "Even a child wouldn't go to another person's house to sleep."

Mo Yu's hand that held the comb froze again.

"I heard Tradition Academy would be lively today so I came to check. But I didn't expect it would be so boring that I would fall asleep." she answered calmly.

In fact, she was a little embarrassed but she couldn't let Chen Chang Sheng know that she was embarrassed or else the situation would be even more embarrassing for her. Just like what she did earlier, right after waking up, she blamed the autumn rain for making her fall asleep.

In truth, even she didn't understand why she was sleeping, and why on Chen Chang Sheng's bed. She could only think of reasons such as Chen Chang Sheng was just a kid and he was unrelated to the business in the court. Therefore, she was relaxed when facing him and the scent of the blanket.....was really good.

It was the scent of sun, but not as harsh. It was the smell of rain, but not as humid. It was the taste of apple, but not as sweet. All in

all, it was a pleasant smell.

Mo Yu realized she was thinking too much and she wrinkled her eyebrows. She was a little confused. Then she looked at her face in the bronze mirror and was a little displeased. She said, “I never expected such a big mirror in the room of a youngster. I don’t see any makeup on your face, and you don’t seem to be a person who cares about appearances that much.”

“With a mirror, one can adjust their clothing, but they can also adjust their attitude.” Chen Chang Sheng explained.

“True.” Mo Yu stopped for a moment and continued combing her hair.

Few moments later, her dark hair was as smooth as before. She reached her finger out of the window. Although she was far from the rain, a drop of water formed on her fingertip.

This scene was beautiful. If an ordinary people who knew nothing about xiuxing saw this, they would think it was a miracle.

Chen Chang Sheng knew this was the powerful control of Starfusing xiuxingists on their surroundings. But he didn’t understand why she did this.

Mo Yu pressed her fingertip slightly on the space between her eyebrows and rubbed slowly. The leftover makeup came off as the water spread around her face as if a blossoming tree scattered its

flowers.

Chen Chang Sheng then realized why she used her power and perfect precision to form the water drop on her fingertip; she used it to take off her makeup. He was confused by the actions of a woman. For this, he had a very different opinion, but after some thought, he held his tongue.

“Do you know what the Queen said?” Mo Yu asked after she took off the leftover makeup from last night.

Chen Chang Sheng was silent. Previously, he had told Tang Thirty Six that he wanted to know the Divine Queen’s opinion but now that it was actually happening, he suddenly didn’t want to know anymore.

“The Queen said, ‘kids just like to fool around.’”

Mo Yu didn’t turn around, but she continued, “Although you are also a kid, the Queen wasn’t talking about you.”

Chen Chang Sheng knew that perhaps even until today, the Divine Queen never heard of his name. The kid she talked about was Luo Luo.

“Emperor Bai and his wife sent Princess Luo Luo to the Queen to take care of her. The Queen is her elder and therefore if she is mentoring her, Princess Luo Luo must obey her words. Previously the princess was studying at the Tradition Academy and

recognized you as her teacher. The Queen didn't want to bother with your business because she regarded this as a game but you guys made too big of a mess at the Ivy Festival."

Mo Yu looked into the mirror and saw the reflection of the youngster, "the Queen doesn't want the princess to fool around with you anymore."

Chen Chang Sheng lowered his head and stared at the floor. He was silent.

"Don't rely on Princess Luo Luo's name. You will be left with nothing if the Queen spoke even a word against you. You must understand this.

"I never had anything in the capital and so, I have nothing to lose." Chen Chang Sheng replied.

"What about your life? I'm surprised that you are still standing in front of me. It seems that Tian Hai Sheng Xue is more careful now than before.....oh right, you know nothing about that guy. Don't be mistaken, although he seems like a sane person, Tian Hai Ya Er isn't even close to his level when Tian Hai Sheng Xue goes crazy. If he never went training in the Snowing Gate and concealed his temper, you would've probably died in front of Tradition Academy's door this morning."

Chen Chang Sheng raised his head and looked at her in the mirror, "General Tian Hai's temper is still not good. This morning, he truly wanted to kill me. The reason I can still stand here right

now isn't because he showed mercy, but rather because he couldn't kill me.....”

He continued, “Just like last night, I was able to show the marriage vow to the entire world. It's not because you showed mercy, but rather because you couldn't seal me.”

Mo Yu raised her eyebrow slightly. She wasn't particularly happy.

“Usually you don't talk as much.”

“I also think it's strange. No matter in front of Wei Yang Palace, in the ruined garden, or right now, I always talk more when facing you.”

Mo Yu turned around and looked at Chen Chang Sheng quietly. For some reason she shook her head.

She didn't understand. Although this youngster was so ordinary, why Princess Luo Luo respected him so much? Even Xu You Rong sent letters herself to talk about him. Even if Chen Chang Sheng behaved extraordinarily at the Ivy Festival, she still couldn't understand.

What she cared and was most confused about was still that question.

“How did you leave the Tong Palace?”

Chen Chang Sheng didn't answer, he just looked at her.

At that moment, Mo Yu had already taken off her makeup. Her skin was white and smooth. Her eyebrows were sharp and her eyes were lively. She seemed to be a lady around twenty eight years old.

But she wasn't a naive lady. She was the most powerful official of Zhou Dynasty.

She was behind the plans of Luo Luo leaving Tradition Academy for Academy of Li Palace, and she hinted the members of Tian Hai Family to come this morning.

She was the mastermind behind all this and she was also the biggest enemy of Tradition Academy right now.

“Some people think the rise of Tradition Academy and you symbolize something. But both you and I know that it is all a coincidence.”

She looked at Chen Chang Sheng and said, “Previously, Xu Shi Ji requested me to do something, but his daughter sent me a letter as well. I didn't know how to handle this situation after thinking about it for a long time. Therefore, I forced you into the Tradition Academy and waited for nature to take its course. But I never expected that you would encounter Princess Luo Luo here and rise from this graveyard.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Yes, this is how things went.”

Mo Yu’s expression gradually turned cold, “One of my random actions made such a mess. But how can this trouble me? I don’t care about the existence of the Tradition Academy. I only care about the completion of my goal.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “What are you trying to do?”

“Everything will end the same way it began and so will this. Since this trouble started from the marriage vow, then let’s end it with the marriage vow. Take out the marriage vow and disband the agreement. It’s your best choice to start over.”

“Xu You Rong has recognized this marriage vow.”

“Did you ever think about the reason why she recognized this marriage vow? Do you really think she likes you? You really believe that a woman like her would marry a stranger just because of her parents’ words? Or do you think that she really cares about keeping promises?”

Mo Yu looked at him and said, “Since you were able to debate with Gou Han Shi, you are obviously a smart person. The moment you saw the letter brought by the crane last night, you should have already realized her intention. Why are you pretending to know nothing about it? Aren’t you ashamed of being used as an excuse?”

Chapter 94 - Fight The Whole Capital (Part 1)

Chen Chang Sheng understood what she meant — if the rumor was true and Xu You Rong actually didn't want to marry Qiu Shang Jun or for that matter, anyone at all, then the best excuse was to refuse anyone other than him. This allowed her to perfectly shut everyone's mouth.

That piece of paper would be her best reason and he would be the indestructible signboard behind her.

Yes, this explanation described the current situation the best, and also perfectly corresponded to the words that Xu You Rong specifically wanted Shuang Er to bring to Chen Chang Sheng — 'please don't misunderstand'. However, Chen Chang Sheng didn't agree with Mo Yu's words regardless of their meaning only because she said it in such a harsh way.

"It looks like the relationship between you and the Miss of Xu Mansion is not as good as I imagined." Chen Chang Sheng offered.

"This has nothing to do with whether or not our relationship is close or not. Demons have already rested in the North for several hundred years, so the human world needs to maintain the union with Yao and also maintain its union internally. The connection between the South and the North is a very essential thing. Xu You Rong and Qiu Shan Jun's engagement may not actually change this relationship, but it was at least a symbol. Also, it was the symbol that the entire continent used to judge her thinking and actions as very unwise."

“But you can’t do anything to her, so you say these words intentionally to agitate me?”

“Don’t you think this is the truth?”

“Any truth needs to be confirmed as truth after it actually happens.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought about the words he spoke in the discarded garden. It could be not nullified because he didn’t want to waste another’s youth and life, but he encountered too many things in the capital. It taught him to not believe in things too easily and that some words needed to be heard in person to be considered true.

“To make me to cancel this engagement is actually not too difficult. Just tell Miss Xu to talk to me herself.”

He looked at Mo Yu and said, “Everyone says she has the tolerance of a phoenix, but at least on this thing, I don’t see it.”

Mo Yu suddenly said, “Actually, I am making this more complicated than it actually is.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “This thing troubles me too.”

Mo Yu’s black hair gradually spread out and her thin eyebrow

looked like sword. She stared at him and said, “If I could, I would rather kill you using one finger.”

Even at a young age, she was already an elite at Starfusing stage, and had the Divine Queen’s trust. In the Great Zhou dynasty, it could be said that she was only below one person and above everyone else. She was truly a great person but she was forced to manage this engagement. There were also some other reasons why she couldn’t do things freely which contributed to her gloominess.

Chen Chang Sheng sensed the danger. Just now, he remembered that the beautiful girl in front of him was not a commoner. He gazed at her eyes and asked, “You came to the Tradition Academy today and had people from the Tian Hai family do what you wanted them to do. Does the Queen know about this?”

Mo Yu laughed contemptuously but didn’t say a word. She could acquire the Queen’s trust, and in only a few years, could climb to the peak from being just a common official. Besides her own ability, the most important reason for this was because she was good at understanding the Queen’s intention.

There were many things that, for a variety of reasons, the Divine Queen could not outwardly show and sometimes when the Queen couldn’t reveal her true intention, Mo Yu would work on it silently behind the scenes to help the Queen accomplish them properly.

Such as this engagement representing the connection between the South and North.

Mo Yu had never failed in this aspect and she understood clearly what the Queen wanted.

“The Bishop in the Department of the Traditional Education, the other elders in the Li Palace and other people who had a lot of authority in the Tradition seemed to want to protect the Tradition Academy, but they actually were just using you. Don’t you see this?”

“I was arranged by you to study in the Tradition Academy.”

Looking into her eyes, Chen Chang Sheng said, “If the elders of the Tradition really wanted to use me, and eventually used me successfully, then before the Queen’s anger fell on my head, it should fall on you first. Is this why you are so urgent in forcing me to cancel the engagement? To compensate your own fault?”

Mo Yu’s feeling changed slightly. It was unsure if this was because he spoke out the thing she was worried about but then she laughed out contemptuously, “The Queen’s trust in me is known to the entire continent. Little kid, you actually think these few meaningless words will have an impact?”

Chen Chang Sheng replied, “Yes. It’s only by chance that you arranged me into the Tradition Academy. The Queen probably will not suspect any other intentions of you but she will remember this. It’s your random decision that is causing her honor to be challenged. Right now the Queen still likes you and trusts you, so there’s no problem, but one day in the future, if the Queen no longer likes you and trusts you, then this event will come back to get you.”

Mo Yu slightly raised her thin eyebrows, emitting a stronger sword spirit.

“Indeed, the current situation of the Tradition Academy is somewhat tense, but the situation you are facing is actually not so good either.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Just like the day I said in the garden, I will not cancel the engagement on my own unless she comes and discusses it with me. In this regard, you do not have any power so please return to your mansion and think of some other methods.”

Mo Yu thought what she heard was very interesting. Her thin eyebrows slowly simmered down, and her voice slowly turned calm,

“A little kid like you dares to tell me to leave?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “No I don’t dare to, I am asking you to leave.”

Mo Yu laughed for real because she found it very surprising, “How dare you treat me like this?”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “Dissidence of opinion makes it useless to talk.”

In this conversation, he appeared to look like an adult but in reality, he was only a youngster. It looks like he is well-spoken because of his ability to speak sharply but with his still immature face and his swinging of his arm, he actually looked very cute and very dull.

To Mo Yu, only cuteness and dullness were true about Chen Chang Sheng. So Mo Yu also became angry for real. She perceived the previous words as words to speak against her but at last, she became certain that Chen Chang Sheng actually wasn't scared of her.

Since she began to serve for the Divine Queen, no one dared to treat her like this. In addition, no one dared to tell her to leave — not the prime minister, not the nobleman in the Tian Hai family and not even the big figures in the Tradition. Even the Pope treated her kindly, but Chen Chang Sheng did it.

“Are you really not afraid of death?” she bit her lip and said harshly.

Chen Chang Sheng said honestly, “If you can kill me, then last night next to the Black Dragon Pond I would already be dead. And since I didn't die, then there are definitely reasons why you can't kill me. So I am afraid of death, but..... I am not afraid of you.”

The more real the words are, the more it hurts people, so his words hurt the most.

Mo Yu's eyes turned colder and colder.

“True, I promised someone that I can’t kill you....but there are still so many other people who want to kill you. Even if there is an engagement arranged, so what? It’s impossible for you to marry Xu You Rong, and it’s impossible for her to marry you. Because she’s the unique phoenix of the continent, her status is holy and her marriage with Qiu Shan Jun has been talked about for years.

Everything related to her, in people’s hearts, should be the finest. Now, a dirt like you appears and thinks people will be fine with it?”

Looking at Chen Chang Sheng, she sneered, “Do you know what you are doing? You are destroying everyone’s beautiful imagination or expectation. These imaginations and expectations are admittedly childish, but if you successfully make the entire world unhappy, do you know how this world is going to treat you?”

.....

With that, Mo Yu left the Tradition Academy. Chen Chang Sheng, as the owner of the Tradition Academy, sent her away. He didn’t walk with her to the entrance, but instead, he stayed in the school in the depths of the forest. He watched her pass through forest and eventually disappear. He stood in place for a long time.

There’s a wall in the forest. It is the wall between the Tradition Academy and the Herb Garden. The wall extends into the depth of the forest. Faintly, the evidence of erosion on the wall can be seen

and there was a thick layer of moss on the bricks. Between the bricks, there was a gate that had not been opened for a long time.

That was the wall to the royal palace. Mo Yu returned to the royal palace through that gate.

Normally, standing on the lake or big pagoda tree, he could faintly see the structure of the royal palace so he knew that the royal palace was near. But today, he found out that there was actually a gate in the depths of the Tradition Academy. He didn't know that the royal palace was actually so close.

Because of the Ivy Festival, he went to the royal palace once. He remembered the huge group of buildings, he remembered the middle aged woman by the pond, and of course, he couldn't forget about the Frost Almighty Dragon who was imprisoned by iron chain under the Black Dragon Pond for countless years.

He had promised the black dragon that he would go visit when there was time to chat. He didn't forget about his promise, but he didn't know when he could go to the royal palace again. However, after finding out about the old door covered with mosses today, he suddenly realized that it was actually possible.

Yet the royal palace was huge. Even if he took the risk to sneak in, how could he find that discarded garden? That night when he was able to find the Wei Yang Palace, he owed it to the black goat. Now that he didn't have the black goat, he didn't dare to go in blindly.

.....

The words that Mo Yu said before leaving soon became real.

After the rain stopped, several hundreds of youngsters came to the entrance of the Tradition Academy. There were students from the Heavenly Academy, workers in the Thirteen Divisions of Green Light and scholars from the capital but the majority of them were common people. The group was very diverse, but they all had the same idea.

People surrounded the Tradition Academy's broken door. They waved their arms furiously and shouted.

“Tell the kid with the last name Chen to roll out!”

“What a villain, everyone can kill him!”

“Who do you think you are!? How dare you want to marry Xu You Rong!”

“You think you are Qiu Shan Jun!”

“Give up the fake contract!”

“Countryman, get out of the capital!”

“You are only an ugly toad compared to Xu You Rong. How dare you eat the phoenix!”

Harsh scoldings echoed in the entrance of the Tradition Academy. The sound became louder and louder. The words became harsher and harsher. Countryman, shameless thief and at last, it turned into dirty curses. More and more people came to the entrance of the Tradition Academy to either join in the cursing or to spectate the rage....

After all, by now, the entire capital didn't show any kindness to the Tradition Academy.

Chapter 95 - Fighting The Whole Capital

(Part II)

Where did the hatred of the entire capital towards the Tradition Academy or more accurately speaking, towards the youngster of the Tradition Academy come from? Obviously it was because of the engagement.

In the capital, Xu You Rong is a name that cannot be profaned.

Because of her identity as the successor to the Virgin of the South, her innate phoenix bloodline, the Divine Queen's favor and most importantly, her beauty, in the eyes of the Zhou people, she was perfect. Obviously she had many, many young men and even women adoring her.

Yet at the same time, because she was so perfect, the adoration ultimately turns into respect such that people only dared to imagine about her at night. They didn't dare reveal any thoughts in public because that would only provoke others' laugh. It was a blasphemy. When the news of the event that happened at the Ivy Festival spread throughout the entire capital, the situation changed drastically. Among the men who loved Xu You Rong, the older ones could still remain calm, but the younger men could no longer suppress their inner emotions. They decided to go to the Tradition Academy to express their anger.

Years ago, no one would go to protest near the mansion where the Southern Ambassadors were stationed in capital and of course, no one would scold or curse Qiu Shan Jun. Why? Because Qiu Shan Jun was also perfect. The relationship between Xu You Rong and

him was acknowledged by the government and the public.

This thinking was very complex and somewhat hard to explain. Because of Chen Chang Sheng and the engagement that caused Xu You Rong to be no longer as perfect, and Qiu Shan Jun to be no longer as invincible, the young men began to use their furor as excuse to announce their existence.

The most important reason was still because the youngster with the engagement was named Chen Chang Sheng — a kid that no one heard of. People gathered some information about him, and knew that he was only a freshman at the Tradition Academy. He was very common but when they gathered some more information and found out that he actually couldn't xiuxing, they saw him as trash.

How could they stand this? We were incomparable to Qiu Shan Jun, but who was that dude named Chen Chang Sheng?

A simpler saying is 'if even a Taoist monk can touch her, then why can't I'?

A young taoist monk from Xi Ning town wants to marry Miss Xu?

Just like the sentence that people used the most at the entrance of the Tradition Academy: You are only an ugly toad compared to

Xu You Rong, how dare you eat the phoenix!

The voice of hatred and curses got louder and louder. It passed

from the entrance to the library.

Holding a scroll named Fa Hua Way, Chen Chang Sheng read silently, as if he didn't hear the voices at all and was oblivious of what was going on.

How could Tang Thirty Six stay as calm as him? He had already taken his Wen Shui Sword out of its sheath, and held it in his hand. The sword reflected the color of the green sky in the fall and appeared indescribably cold.

Xuan Yuan Po also walked down the staircase preparing to use the door again.

Seeing that Chen Chang Sheng had no reaction, Tang Thirty Six said angrily, "How can you still bear it? If you don't do anything, after today, you will become the most famous, ugly toad in history! Then what is the Tradition Academy? A pond cultivating toads?"

Xuan Yuan Po added, "Yeah, are we supposed to be like you? Are we all toads?"

Looking at Tang Thirty Six, Chen Chang Sheng said, "Is it true that I will become what they call me? Then if I call you brute, will you really grow into a monster?"

"This joke is not funny at all. If I will get cursed, I would rather get cursed as a brute than an ugly toad. After all, a brute did some brutal things so he deserves to be called that. But how about you,

you didn't harm Xu You Rong in any way and you have a legal engagement, how can you still let them scold you like that?"

After saying this, Tang Thirty Six stopped bothering to care about him. He just marched up to the entrance with his Wen Shui Sword.

Seeing this situation, Xuan Yuan Po immediately lugged the door that was about two men tall and followed up.

Chen Chang Sheng was dazed. He put down the scroll, stood up and began walking to the entrance to take a look. After all, this was his own matter.

"Give the Chen dude up!"

"Kick him out of the capital!"

"How dare you fake the engagement!"

"Why don't you take a look at yourself at the mirror. For making such a big lie, aren't you afraid of getting punished by heaven?"

"Dong Yu General's mansion wouldn't bother to care about what you did, but we, in the name of justice, will teach you what's right and wrong!"

More and more people surrounded the entrance of the Tradition

Academy. By the afternoon, there were actually more than a thousand people. It was a huge crowd. The voice of cursing and scolding became louder and louder which caused the atmosphere in the field to become more and more chaotic.

In the morning, the Tian Hai family had sent people to break the door so the school was free to enter. Moreover, the people in the Tradition Academy didn't respond to those people at all, so the young men couldn't control their emotions any longer. As the righteous ardor rose up and filled their brains, they shouted, "Let's go in and take the villain out!"

Young people often become passionate and agitated easily for no reason, and they could also be easily triggered to break things. Along with the shout, hong, the huge crowd all ran into the Tradition Academy.

Immediately, hong!

Infinite waves of qi violently shot out from the entrance of Tradition Academy.

The remaining rain water on the ground was triggered by qi, floated up and shot out like infinite arrows leaving the bow. They made thousands of holes in the leaves near the street.

The young men who were running towards the Tradition Academy all cried in pain and fell down. They had to push against the ground to support themselves which caused bruises on their hands. The people who ran the fastest and had already ran into the

Tradition Academy, were all pushed more than thirty meters back by the wave. They fell unconscious. Blood was over their body.

No one knew if they were still alive.

The cursing and yelling that had been going on for over half an hour outside the Tradition Academy suddenly stopped.

The street suddenly became quiet. Only the young scholars' painful cries could be heard.

Jin Yu Lu, wearing an expensive silk robe, slowly walked out from a small house next to the entrance of the Tradition Academy.

He held a precious and well-known soil pot from Xuan province with his left hand, and rubbed two jewel balls with his right hand. He looked very relax and casual.

He stood on the stone staircase, looked up at the sky and applauded.

The fall rain stopped a long time ago, so now it looks like the blue sky had just being washed. It was truly beautiful.

However, he looked back at the huge crowd in front of the entrance, turned cold and said, "Do you want to die?"

He didn't use any qi when saying this sentence so when the

people heard it, they didn't feel like the spring thunder had just arrived, but the silent street looked like it because of the pathetic situation on the ground made an annotation to his sentence.

At least several dozens of people had scratches on their head with blood flowing down, and there were even a few people who had blood coming out all over their bodies remaining unconscious.

“Who....who are you?” a daring youngster among the crowd said with a shaking voice. “How dare you cause violence and....kill people?”

Since someone initiated, following up was a relatively easy thing. So a few more voices came up. Seeing their friends' tragic situations now, people became more and more angry, and their voices got louder and louder. The silence was broken and the atmosphere became agitated again.

“Criminal!”

“Report him now!”

Today, the Hundred Blossom Street was so crowded that even water couldn't penetrate through to hit the ground. Hearing the words in the front, there were actually some people in the back left. They were probably going to the police department. There were also enthusiastic residents helping the wounded people to stand up, and there were even some doctors that tended to the fainted people.

If you ignored the reason why these people surrounded the Tradition Academy, then the scene actually looked a bit touching.

Since when was the capital so collaborative?

Collaboration is power. There were already people going to report him. Later on, the court would definitely send people here to punish this criminal who wore like a countryman. Such confirmation is also a power. People no longer felt as scared, and ran towards the school again.

Jin Yu Lu took a bamboo chair from somewhere, sat down and drank a bit of tea from his pot while facing at the crowd.

Some people already came around ten meters away from the stone staircase however after glancing at him casually, they suddenly felt scared and retreated back as fast as possible without even caring about stepping on people's feet behind them. The huge crowd suddenly started a wave of retreat. Just a glance was so powerful. Jin Yu Lu obviously wouldn't feel proud of such little thing. Looking at people, he said indifferently, "I am the janitor of the Tradition Academy. The Tradition Academy is a serious place for education. Please don't come in without permission. Anyone who dares to step in will be made as examples."

People then remembered, this middle aged who wore like a rich businessman, previously walked out from the little house next to the entrance.

Yet.....which school would have such strong janitor? Even the

Heavenly Academy wouldn't!

From yesterday to today morning, the fall rain continued. The temperature suddenly dropped, and the weather gradually turned colder.

People looked at their friends crying especially at those who were fainted. Then they looked at the middle aged man who claimed to be a janitor and suddenly felt even colder. Only the people who were hiding deep in the crowd dared to curse a bit, but who dared to walk up even for one step?

Suddenly, a warm wind came and dryness followed.

The leaves that looked yellow on the tree sticking out of the wall suddenly withered.

A red cloud fell down from the sky.

Red Cloud kylin descended soundlessly. It stepped on the green stone ground and the pondings near it instantly vaporized.

A middle aged man sat on the back of the kylin wearing bloody armor. He looked very serious.

Seeing this person, Jin Yu Lu stood up and placed the pot on the armrest of the bamboo chair to show respect.

People saw him and guessed his identity. They all kneeled down to pay respect.

The Yu Tian General of Great Zhou, Xue Xing Chuan, owns a Red Cloud kylin as his mount and uses a bloody knife!

He ranked second among the thirty eight Generals in the continent!

He was deeply trusted by the Divine Queen and had been leading the Forbidden Soldiers for years. He had the right to rule over anything that happened in the capital and had the ability to do so. Seeing Xue Xing Chuan's arrival, some felt very surprising.

Even if people went to the police office to report, they couldn't have got there that fast. Moreover, how would the police office have the authority to send this big figure here?

However, remembering that General Xue Xing Chuan was known for being fair and just, people regained their hope. They shouted one after another, "The Tradition Academy just murdered people! Please hold the justice for us!" After a while, a team of Forbidden Soldiers walked into the Hundred Blossom Street to separate the people. They walked to the entrance of the Tradition Academy. In front of the stares of thousands of people, Xue Xing Chuan slowly walked up the staircase to where Jin Yu Lu stood.

At this moment, Chen Chang Sheng and the other two people also arrived.

Chapter 96 - Fight The Whole Capital (Part III)

“Senior, why bother with these little kids?” Xue Xing Chuan looked at Jin Yu Lu and said expressionlessly.

His words surprised everyone. The entrance of Tradition Academy suddenly became silent.

Everyone noticed that although Xue Xing Chuan was expressionless and cold, he sincerely respected Jin Yu Lu and he didn't hesitate to show it. Anybody who knew Jin Yu Lu wouldn't find it awkward. Even Fei Dian, the oldest of the Thirty Eight Generals of Zhou Dynasty was of no older generation than Jin Yu Lu. Even though Xue Xing Chuan was one of the Generals of Zhou Dynasty, it was still suitable of him to address Jin Yu Lu as his senior. Since the youngsters in front of the Tradition Academy's entrance didn't know this, they were shocked.

Jin Yu Lu smiled, “Someone wanted to barge in, I could only stop him.”

Xue Xing Chuan turned around and looked at the young man who was covered in blood. He wrinkled his eyebrows and said,

“Aren't you being a little too rough?”

Jin Yu Lu shook his head, “I was a soldier and my responsibility was to guard my nation's territory. If the demon race dared to

invade, my job was to push them back regardless of my actions and methods. Now, I am the door guard of Tradition Academy and I'm responsible for watching over this entrance. If anyone wants to barge into the Tradition Academy, I'll fight them back no matter the cost."

Xue Xing Chuan was silent. He knew the value of Jin Yu Lu's words.

Just this moment, a young vice-general walked towards him and whispered something.

Xue Xing Chuan raised his eyebrow slightly and said, "this thing is getting into a mess and it's not looking good for anyone."

Jin Yu Lu pointed to the crowd in front of the entrance which was showing some signs of unrest and replied, "What can we do? They have already been here for a while and are disturbing the peace. I'll leave the court out of this even though it should be here to put down the disturbance but should we stop maintaining the peace of our property as well?"

Xue Xing Chuan wrinkled his eyebrows even more. Tradition Academy went through a lot of messy events today but they were just meaningless riots, especially this one. If the government hadn't asked him to come out here to contain the situation, he wouldn't even be here.

The young vice-general spoke, "Sir, we should just stand aside and watch. If anyone dare to violate the law of Zhou, then it

wouldn't be late for us to punish them.”

Hearing this, Xue Xing Chuan was satisfied. The suggestion from his vice – general was an appropriate action.

He didn't hesitate. He walked towards a tavern in the Hundred Blossom Street and was prepared to be a spectator of the situation. The Red Cloud Kylin looked around confused but it followed up. The rest of the army just lined up near the entrance of Tradition Academy. They showed that their intention was not to help any side, but that neither side should step outside of their lane either.

Xue Xing Chuan was satisfied with the current situation, but the two sides inside and outside of the entrance of Tradition Academy wasn't.

The rioting crowd felt that since many people were already severely injured, it was unfair for Xue Xing Chuan and his army to disregard the criminals who harmed them. Tang Thirty Six felt that Xue Xing Chuan had been unfair because the crowd was still in front of the Academy and was still disturbing the peace.

No matter which side the people were on, both felt that the decision was unfair and illogical.

Xue Xing Chuan felt that it was unfair for him to have to come here to solve this situation so he stopped caring about fairness and logic. Since the Forbidden Soldiers were here, no one would dare to barge into the Tradition Academy again. The students of Tradition Academy would also stop hurting the crowd due to his

presence. This was good enough for him to report back.

There are only two places powerful enough for him to report to, the Royal Palace and Li Palace.

But Xue Xing Chuan never thought that although the three youngsters of Tradition Academy may care about his presence, they cared more about restoring peace to their home.

Looking at the Forbidden Soldiers standing firmly in front of Tradition Academy, the rioting crowd realized that the government wouldn't interfere as long as they didn't rush into Traditional Academy. Some daring ones quickly started cursing again.

Chen Chang Sheng could hear their words much more clearly at the entrance than at the library. Hearing their insults and accusations that the marriage vow was fake, Chen Chang Sheng's mood worsened. Tang Thirty Six's face got colder and his hand held the sword handle tighter than before.

“Are you deaf? Can't you all hear this nonsense?”

Tang Thirty Six shouted at the young vice-general of the Forbidden Army.

The young vice-general turned around and looked at him expressionlessly, “We can hear it very clearly, why?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “If you can hear them cursing, why aren’t you doing anything to stop them?”

The young vice – general was silent for a moment as if he was giving the question some thought, then he answered, “Why should I stop them?”

Tang Thirty Six’s expression turned even colder and he replied, “then if I say I want to sleep with your sister, is that fine too?”

Hearing his words, the soldiers of Forbidden Army became furious. They glanced at him angrily. Since the General was resting at the tavern, if the vice-general commanded them, they would go up and teach the youngster a lesson.

Strangely, the young vice-general wasn’t angry. Instead, he asked seldomly, “You sure you want to do that?”

Tang Thirty Six thought back to his sister’s violence of her younger days and calmed himself down forcefully, “I’m just joking, why so serious?”

“You are not brave enough to do as you say and now you aren’t even cursing back when thousands of people are pointing at your nose. You are worthless.”

The young vice general looked at him and mocked, “Go back to Wen Shui and cry in front of your grandfather.”

Tang Thirty Six was furious after hearing this. He pointed at the vast crowd outside of the academy and said, "You must think I'm stupid enough to argue with a thousand people just by myself."

The young vice general then said with a serious face, "Then there is nothing I can do. They have control of their own mouths and the sound is only heard in the Academy. Who can do anything about this?"

Chen Chang Sheng felt that there was something wrong with this conversation so he walked to Tang Thirty Six and whispered.

"You know him?"

"I'll explain after getting rid of these people." Tang Thirty Six answered.

People saw Chen Chang Sheng and thought he was similar to the rumor's description. His attire was ordinary while Tang Thirty Six's clothing was luxurious. Their discussion and whispers quickly got louder and they were determined that the person they saw was indeed the Chen Chang Sheng from the rumor. Suddenly, the yelling and cursing got louder as if it was about to reach the sky of the Capital.

Tang Thirty Six's face became gloomy and he made a small gesture with his left hand.

The previously destroyed door of Tradition Academy was moved

into the back. Mysteriously, Xuan Yuan Po had left without anyone seeing him. He followed Tang Thirty Six's order. He followed along the wall of the Academy and went a long way south.

Then he used a ladder to flip over the wall to join the crowd in Hundred Blossom Street.

Although the crowd was big, no one could stop the strength of a Yao youngster. Just in a few moments, he pushed his way through and arrived twenty yards away from the entrance. Even so, no one noticed him because everyone was too caught up in the chaos.

There was a stone in his hand.

When he saw Tang Thirty Six's gesture, Xuan Yuan Po knew that it was time to act. Even though he was a little nervous, when he saw Tang Thirty Six's cold stare, he knew that if he didn't do as he was told, then the Tradition Academy would face more trouble.

Finally, he made his choice.

He raised the stone in his hand and threw it at the entrance of Tradition Academy and yelled, "Kill this bastard!"

The cursing crowd was silent for a short moment. Everyone heard the words and saw the stone flying towards the entrance of Tradition Academy. They even saw the projectile path of the stone. Some people were about to cheer and some people became pale.

Was this riot finally turning into a big mess?

Bang!

Followed by a loud crash, that stone crushed down heavily onto the stone stairs in front of the entrance of Tradition Academy. It shattered into pieces and bounced off the floor and landed squarely onto the ground.

The stone was only a few inches away from Chen Chang Sheng's feet. Chen Chang Sheng was lucky enough so that the shattered pieces didn't hit him.

Tang Thirty Six praised Xuan Yuan Po silently. The Yao race's control of strength was definitely a natural talent. Xuan Yuan Po threw so accurately!

Xuan Yuan Po, who was standing in the crowd, was sweating and his heart was racing. He thought to himself, how come I used a little too much power?

No matter what they thought, the stone had landed.

The business in front of Tradition Academy had turned from a word fight into a physical battle.

"You guys dare use long ranged weapon?" Tang Thirty Six yelled angrily as he picked up the stone on the ground and threw it at the crowd.

The whoosh sound as the rock passed through the air was followed by a painful moan.

A man held his forehead and fell backwards. Blood was flowing through the gap of his fingers.

Tang Thirty Six's second stone quickly followed. Another man's teeth was knocked out and his mouth was filled with blood.

The crowd outside of the Academy finally realized what was happening and screamed for doctors. Some people yell angrily and wanted to counter attack and some people rushed to the Forbidden Army and pointed at their bleeding companions. They wanted the army to capture the criminals. The field was filled with chaos.

Finally, some people started fighting back. They picked up random items from the ground and threw them at the entrance of Tradition Academy.

The field turned into a battleground and the Forbidden Army standing in front of the wall of Tradition Academy couldn't do anything to stop either sides.

Earlier when the crowd was picking up stones, Tang Thirty Six and Chen Chang Sheng had left the entrance and climbed up the wall using a ladder. Tang Thirty Six asked Chen Chang Sheng to pass stones from the ground to him. There was a flower garden behind this wall and a thin layer of rocks was beneath the garden. Their supply of rocks was limitless.

But the situation outside the Tradition Academy was completely different. The Hundred Blossom Street was always well cleaned, and it was hard to find rocks on the marble floor. What could the crowd do but shovel the marbles out of the ground? It may be faster for the crowd to go back home and get their knives from the kitchen.

Some people looked at the broken entrance of Tradition Academy and noticed that there were many rock pieces and leftover wood fragments as well. They wanted to go and gather some ammunition, but Jin Yu Lu was still sitting on his chair. Who could walk past him?

One side was well prepared while the other not. The winner of this fight would be decided quickly.

Tang Thirty Six occupied the top of the wall. Every time he threw a stone, one person would fall.

Painful moans never stopped and several dozens of people were injured by the stones.

Just this morning, Tradition Academy's door was crushed by the carriage of Tian Hai Family and now the entire capital was cursing at the Academy. Tang Thirty Six endured long enough and he finally found a chance to relieve that stress. He didn't hold back and the stones flew off his hand to bring pain to the crowd.

Some people stood in the back and thought he couldn't hit them.

They widened their eyes and cursed loudly, but moments later, stones flew from the wall of Tradition Academy and hit them on the head. The crowd was immediately put down.

.....What was Tang Thirty Six thinking when he was enchanting the power of qi onto the stones to throw them at people?

“So refreshing!”

He stood upon the wall and yelled while swinging his hand casually. Every stone that he threw hit someone.

The young genius on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud was using qi to fight against these rioting ordinary civilians. Was this not bullying?

He had already entered the peak of Meditation stage and it could be said that he was one of the best xiuxingists of the younger generation. Even if he didn't use qi intentionally, the stones threw from his hand made a large impact. How could the people in the street handle them?

The cursing in front of Tradition Academy was replaced by painful moans. The loud insults already changed into cries.

The crowd in front of Tradition Academy was already running away trying to dodge Tang Thirty Six's attack. Blood was spilled on the ground and dusts swirled in the air.

In just a few moments, the enemy of Tradition Academy was eliminated.

“Too much, too much.”

The young vice general of Forbidden Army saw the situation and finally had enough. He turned around and yelled at Tang Thirty Six who was on the top of the wall.

Speaking of which, Tang Thirty Six knew exactly what he was doing. He didn't stand at any other places but right on the top of the wall that the Forbidden Army was standing in front of. Previously the crowd did gather some stones from the ground, but when they counter attacked, at least half of them were afraid of hitting the army and didn't use much force.

Tang Thirty Six didn't stop throwing and asked, “What's too much?”

The young vice general said reluctantly, “You have already injured the crowd, is this not too much?”

“You previously said that they control their mouths and the voice can only be heard in the Academy so you couldn't do anything. Now if the stones are mine, the hands are mine and the rocks are flying outside of the academy by accident. What's the difference between the two? Plus, they threw the first rock.”

After saying these words, Tang Thirty Six glanced at the crowd and made sure Xuan Yuan Po had already left. He was reassured and he continued hitting the crowd with rocks.

The street was filled with dust and cries. People helped each other and ran away. The situation was helpless and they looked like soldiers who had just lost in a battle.

Although the crowd was scattered, Tang Thirty Six was still not satisfied. He squinted and held a stone while focusing on the person in the back of the crowd. He remembered clearly that this person had said Chen Chang Sheng only relied on women. He couldn't let him run away with only a scraped head.

Due to the marriage vow, the entire capital was showing their hatred toward Tradition Academy and Chen Chang Sheng.

Tang Thirty Six threw away the hatred and his stress through the stones in his hand.

Chen Chang Sheng didn't do much. He just kept on passing stones from the garden to Tang Thirty Six. If it was his usual self, he might have thought it was all a waste of time and life but today, he was happy. He didn't even notice that his shirt was pierced by the thorns of the flower.

He realized that there are many ways of life, or many ways of living life.

Perhaps there are meaningless ways, but nevertheless interesting ways.

Plus, it was easy to be happy this way.

Chapter 97 - Fall Rain Tradition Blood Case

Suddenly, the young official jumped on the wall and blocked him from proceeding. He scolded in a low voice, “Enough. If you really kill someone, then it won’t be good for anyone. Xuan Yuan Po is big, did you really think no one would recognize him?”

Tang Thirty Six shrugged, threw the rock back into the garden near the wall and said, “Thanks.”

If the young vice general and the Forbidden Guards hadn’t been here today, he still wouldn’t have allowed the crowd to continue humiliating the Tradition Academy and Chen Chang Sheng. But no matter what, he wouldn’t have been as happy as he was now and he didn’t have to be concerned with the consequences.

The young vice general said expressionlessly, “You don’t need to thank me. I only hope you remember what you said.”

Tang Thirty Six’s expression changed slightly. He said, “I said many words today.”

The young vice general patted his shoulder and said earnestly, “You mentioned my sister, and affronted my family. At least you should take some responsibility?”

Tang Thirty Six said without hesitation, “I am concentrating solely on xiu xing now. So I decided to not consider marriage before fifty.”

Hearing his words, the young vice general's expression suddenly changed. He said angrily, "What the fuck, then how about my sister?"

Tang Thirty Six smiled apologetically, "I mean, isn't my grandma your grandma? This is improper, cousin."

The entrance of the Tradition Academy was now completely empty, only rocks and some traces of blood remained. There were also some plum tree branches. This was probably because previously when Chen Chang Sheng was busy delivering rocks, he accidentally mixed in some plum tree branches with the rocks and delivered both of them.

Cheng Chang Sheng looked at the Forbidden Guards that were about to leave and said, "So that's why."

Tang Thirty Six sighed helplessly, "You don't understand, my cousin is scary." (the cousin here refers to is his cousin's sister.)

Then, Xue Xing Chuan walked out of the restaurant and got on his Red Cloud kylin to prepare to leave. From his expression, it could be seen that he felt satisfied with the result.

As the General ranked second in the continent, Xue Xing Chuan ruled his soldiers strictly. How could he not know the background of his important subordinate, the young vice general? He obviously knew the relationship between Tang Thirty Six and him, but he still let the young vice general handle the situation so his attitude

was very clear.

As people left, the street became empty. Xuan Yuan Po sneaked back too. After thanking Jin Yu Lu, the three young men walked back to the Tradition Academy.

Chen Chang Sheng felt confused. He asked, “Why would General Xue help the Tradition Academy?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “In such short period of time, so many people gathered up to protest. Although one reason is because you are too good at drawing hate from others, there’s definitely someone behind this.”

Chen Chang Sheng asked, “Who?”

Tang Thirty Six said, “Who else can it be?”

Even Xuan Yuan Po knew. It was definitely the Tian Hai family that attempted to destroy the Tradition Academy but failed to do so this morning.

Chen Chang Sheng felt even more confused. He said, “General Xue is definitely one of the people whom the Divine Queen trusts the most, otherwise there’s no way he would be allowed to rule the Forbidden Guards.”

“I told you before. The Divine Queen and the Tian Hai family are not the same.”

“Why?”

“Simply speaking, she’s married into the Chen family. Although her last name is Tian Hai, her son’s last name is Chen. Her next generation will also have the last name of Chen. In the rumor, the Pope had spoken to the Divine Queen and said he have never heard of a case in which a nephew would visit his aunt’s grave.” (It’s a culture in China for one to visit one’s parents or grandparents’ graveyard on particular holidays.)

“But in the rumor, the Divine Queen doesn’t have any of her own....”

“Be quiet.” Tang Thirty Six looked directly to the front and said. “There are some matters that you can’t speak of.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought a bit. No longer wanting to continue talking about this issue, he just said, “Thanks.”

He was giving thanks for how Tang Thirty Six defended him earlier.

Tang Thirty Six said, “Nope.”

Besides the few people in the Tradition Academy, and the Yao who leaned towards them due to Luo Luo, no one in the continent wanted to see Xu You Rong marrying Chen Chang Sheng. Many high officials also expressed their worries and their objections to

this. Their opinions didn't contain any degree of resentment and envy; they were simply concerned for the general situation of the human race. They talked about fighting against the demons and making a union between the South and North. From the Primary Emperor to the current Divine Queen, the union between the South and the North, the true agreement among humans, had always been the most important policy of the Great Zhou.

At the court conference today, because of the expected marriage between Chen Chang Sheng and Xu You Rong, the officials argued feverishly. The officials who leaned towards the old royal family liked to see such a thing happen but against the officials who cited the righteous cause, they were losing ground. Ultimately, the court conference reached one conclusion – the marriage would need to be discussed in greater depth until it actually becomes a reality.

Of course, their opinions were not important because marriage was a private thing. No matter how much power these high officials held, they still couldn't actively intervene. They could only express their attitudes. As long as the Pope's print was still on the engagement document, and the Divine Queen didn't say a word about it, no one could negate this marriage.

Immediately, news of the bloody event that happened at the entrance of the Tradition Academy quickly spread over the capital. Some professors furiously hit their desks and stood up immediately after hearing this, some high officials harshly criticized Xue Xing Chuan for not regulating this thing fairly, and some citizens even started a march to express their anger. They gathered in front of the Department of the Traditional Education to ask the Bishop to suspend Chen Chang Sheng, and to kick him out of the capital.

Suddenly, everyone's eyes were focused on the Department of Traditional Education. People all wanted to know how the Bishop who seemed to never sleep enough would solve the complicated situation given the Divine Queen and the Pope's ambiguous intentions.

Surprisingly, the Bishop did not concern himself with the Divine Queen's and the Pope's attitudes at all. Unlike how people imagined that he would procrastinate, he instead used the most simple and direct method — dispelling the people in front of the department.

The Bishop ordered the guards of the Tradition to ride their horses straight into the crowd. Dust went all over the place. Some people cried and countless bones were broken. The crowd dispersed. It was just like the scene that happened in front of the Tradition Academy except this was more bloody and more terrifying.

Everyone felt shocked and speechless to what had happened in front of the Department of the Traditional Education. It wasn't until now that they realized that the Bishop was actually so tough. The fact that he deployed so many guards of the Tradition without consulting with the Pope had some people thinking that the Bishop was far stronger than they had imagined him to be.

According to statistics, from the two events that happened in the Tradition Academy and the Department of Traditional Education, three people died, more than three hundred people were injured, and more than seventy people were heavily wounded. Compared to

the number of casualties, the actual scene was more bloody and violent. Its impact would be immense.

On that day, there was a fall rain. This case would be recorded as the Fall Rain Tradition Blood Case.

In the back of this Fall Rain Tradition Blood Case, many people saw the trace of the Tian Hai family.

There was a quiet manor in the west city of the capital, the base of the Tian Hai family.

A middle aged man, sitting on the bamboo chair next to the trees, looked in the direction of the Department of Traditional Education and said, “Look, some elders finally couldn’t wait to act.”

Standing next to him, Xu Shi Ji frowned slightly. No one knew what he was thinking.

Chapter 98 - Listen To The Queen

The middle aged man's name is Tian Hai Cheng Wu. He became the head of the Tian Hai Family twenty years ago after his father, Tian Hai You Guo, passed away. Under his lead, the Family of Tian Hai grew prosperous and powerful. Sometimes people would even forget that he was the nephew of the Divine Queen.

It's high praise for him to achieve such a thing under the ruling of the Divine Queen.

“The old generation is powerful. Even I dare not disturb them.....Sheng Xue's actions were too naive. You are his uncle but you didn't do anything to stop him. Did you want to see how much blood would bleed out of the capital?”

Xu Shi Ji walked towards the chair in front of him and sat down. He glanced over of the wall expressionlessly and said, “The Bishop will compensate for these lives.”

Xue Xing Chuan controls the Forbidden Army of Zhou Dynasty. As a trusted subordinate of Divine Queen, he became responsible for the safety of the capital after he was switched in from the frontline. It would be impossible to gather so much people in front of the Department of Education without his consent.

“What compensation? Are you saying that he will be kicked out of the Department of Education? You all are fools. If the relationship between the Bishop and the Pope worsen, the Bishop position will become stronger. Why? Because only the Bishop can

compete with the Pope in terms of history. Therefore my aunt.....needs him.”

Tian Hai Cheng Wu said, “Whoever my aunt favors, he or she will be famous such as Xu You Rong and Mo Yu. Whoever my aunt trusts, they will be prosperous like you and Xue Xing Chuan. But none of them compare to need.....because needing is unique; it represents a mutual relationship.”

“Don’t ever try to aggravate that sleeping fox in the Department of Education again.”

He stared at Xu Shi Ji and said, “I watched Mei Li Sha for several dozen years, and I still can’t figure him out.....How could a young man like Sheng Xue be his opponent?”

Xu Shi Ji was silent for a moment. Then he said, “So we shouldn’t do anything?”

Tian Hai Cheng Wu knew what Xu Shi Ji was worrying about. He glanced at Xu Shi Ji and said, “The marriage vow is already known to the world. These little tricks will be useless after you use them too frequently. Furthermore, they will only make matters worse because if the situation gets messy, it will be hard to clean up afterwards.”

Xu Shi Ji wrinkled his eyebrow slightly and remained silent.

“I still don’t understand, it’s been months since that youngster

arrived at the capital. Why didn't you kill him from the beginning? Why did you wait until the Ivy Festival where he took out the marriage vow? This isn't your style of doing business."

Tian Hai Cheng Wu looked at him and said irritatedly.

Xu Shi Ji hardly ever saw such emotion from Tian Hai Cheng Wu's face. He knew that he was angry.

The Tian Hai Family always had a good relationship with the southerners. It may seem as if the family was trying to follow Zhou Dynasty's policy of bounding the north and south, but any wise person knew what the head of Tian Hai Family really wanted – the support of the southerners. This would be a key factor to when he tries to ascend the throne for emperor in the future.

From this point of view, regardless of the business of the dynasty, the family, or the throne, the marriage between Dong Yu General's Mansion and Qiu Shan Family would be an important component. But now, the component is in a mess and that mess was supposed to be cleaned up by Xu Shi Ji long ago.

"You Rong sent a letter that said that she didn't want to harm him." Xu Shi Ji said after a moment of silence.

Tian Hai Cheng Wu slapped the handle of the bamboo chair and said irritatedly, "She's your daughter."

Xu Shi Ji's expression was bitter, "She also sent a letter to Mo Yu.

I'm not exactly sure if the Queen read it or not."

The bamboo forest was quiet.

After a long time, Tian Hai Cheng Wu sighed deeply, "Everyone thinks the Tian Hai Family was just using Ya Er as an excuse, but not many realize that I actually wanted to rip Chen Chang Sheng into pieces."

"True, Ya Er is of the outer six sects. He's pretty far from the Elder sect but that kid really has some potential.....he entered the upper stage of Meditation at such a young age. You should understand what this means. If he was ranked in the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, he could easily rank in the top twenty."

The capital never knew the true strength of Tian Hai Ya Er. Only until the first night of Ivy Festival did the public see his power. But seeing is different from the admittance of the head of Tian Hai Family. Xu Shi Ji's expression turned serious.

A gloomy flame was burning in Tian Hai Cheng Wu's eyes, "In terms of xiuxing potential, he's better than Sheng Xue. Heck, he's much better than the three siblings of Sheng Xue. He entered the upper stage of Meditation at such a young age and if everything goes smoothly, he can reach the door knob of Heartseek. If he enters the Heartseek stage successfully, then he will be.....younger than Qiu Shan Jun when he entered Heartseek. But now he's handicapped."

Xu Shi Ji's expression was solemn, "What are you trying to say?"

“I want Chen Chang Sheng dead.”

Tian Hai Cheng Wu looked at him with a faint smile, “No one can touch Princess Luo Luo, and it will be difficult to harm Chen Chang Sheng at the moment. But you are different, you are his future father-in-law. You have more access in terms of doing things to him.”

Hearing this, Xu Shi Ji’s expression turned ugly. After the Ivy Festival, he became a joke of the capital – everyone thought he liked the rich and despised the poor. Although the truth may not be this simple, it’s similar to the fact that the marriage was a slap to the face.

As long as the Tradition Academy exists in the capital and Chen Chang Sheng lives in this world, this shame will follow him everyday. He has no good feelings about Chen Chang Sheng, or in fact he’s the person who wants Chen Chang Sheng dead the most. However, at the same time, he’s also the person who can’t do anything about it.

Countless people are watching Dong Yu General’s Mansion and they want to see how he will react. The elders in the Tradition are especially waiting for him to make a move. If he actually dares to touch Chen Chang Sheng, another big storm will arise and this storm can even drag the Divine Queen in.

Xu Shi Ji would never put himself in such a situation. He stared into the eyes of Tian Hai Cheng Wu and wanted to see what the

bold and powerful head of Tian Hai Family really thought, “In the past, it would be easy to kill him. But now? Not anymore.”

“Does the General not want to help the Family of Tian Hai?” Tian Hai Cheng Wu stood up and looked at him expressionlessly.

Xu Shi Ji knew what he meant. He was silent for a moment and replied, “Sir, I’m the General of the Divine Queen.”

After finishing his sentence, he turned around and walked out of the garden.

Tian Hai Cheng Wu looked at his back and said, “Is that right? Then what did you talk about when you met Prince Chen Liu last time?”

Xu Shi Ji didn’t stop for a moment as if he didn’t hear the words.

Following the morning rain, Tian Hai Sheng Xue arrived at the entrance of Tradition Academy and broke through the door. Chen Chang Sheng and his crew stopped him and Jin Yu Lu stepped into the situation. They forced Tian Hai Sheng Xue to leave without victory. Then the public rioted against the Tradition Academy. Now, battle horses are screaming in front of the Department of Education while the citizens are bleeding.

In such a short period of time, the old and new forces of Zhou

Dynasty are colliding with each other because of Tradition Academy and Chen Chang Sheng. Although the collision isn't necessarily brutal and devastating, the momentum is forceful and sharp. The atmosphere of the capital tightened and many people are starting to recall the events that happened dozens of years ago.

Luckily the impact and level of collision are under strict control. The new and old forces are still calm because the Divine Queen and Pope have yet to say anything. The entire capital is under pressure while the Tradition Academy's involvement in the matter grows.

The fate of the Academy and Chen Chang Sheng and whether or not the marriage vow will be nullified by the powerful figures depend on the Divine Queen and the Pope's decisions toward the entire situation.

"The former Emperor was in power for four hundred years. He was constantly sick and enjoyed pursuing his hobbies rather than tackling governmental issues. That was why the queen started helping the emperor with the dynasty's business. If we count precisely, she has already been in control for two hundred years. The entire court is under her control and many officials and Generals are under her ruling. Or else how would she have become the Divine Queen after the former emperor passed away?

Regardless of the rage and opposition of the emperor's family and government officials, they still obeyed her after the massacre." Tang Thirty Six said to Chen Chang Shang.

"The Divine Queen is outstanding. How outstanding? I don't know. The only thing I know is that a wild and rebellious man like

my grandfather stayed in Wen Shui for so many years and insulted the people of Tian Hai Family as if they were dog shit.

However, whether he was in the public or private, living room or hidden space, he dare not speak a word against the Divine Queen.” he added.

He continued, “The entirety of Zhou Dynasty will follow the attitude of Divine Queen. Although she’s still in her prime now, she needs to think about the future. Who will become the next emperor of Zhou Dynasty? The Queen can oppress the court officials with her boundless reputation and even the Pope is keeping his silence. But if the throne isn’t returned to the hands of the Royal Chen Family, then even the best of the Tian Hai Family, Tian Hai Cheng Wu or the most experienced, Tian Hai Cheng Wen, doesn’t have the ability to oppress their opposition. But if she does return the throne back to Royal Chen Family, after she dies, the Family of Tian Hai will be cleaned up. At last, her last name is Tian Hai, how would she want to see such a thing happen? Therefore the Queen is also hesitating now. The clashes between the new and old forces are due to the hesitation of the Queen. They saw their chance but they also saw the danger that came along with it. Unfortunately, we, the Tradition Academy became a symbol for the collisions. The Pope brought Luo Luo back to Academy of Li Palace which means he is showing hints of his attitude. Now, if Divine Queen also holds the same attitude, then the Tradition Academy is in great danger. Forget Princess Luo Luo, if the Divine Queen really wants to kill someone, even the White Emperor can’t do anything.”

Tang Thirty Six looked at Chen Chang Sheng and finished, “If I were you, the first thing I do now is to find ways to locate the

Divine Queen. Then I would kneel before her, wrap my arms around her legs and cry. Finally, I will request her to judge this situation fairly.”

Chen Chang Sheng thought about it for a long time and then he said, “So, how can I find her?”

Tang Thirty Six was quiet for a while, then he yelled irritatingly out of the window, “Is dinner still not done?”

Chapter 99 - The Way Of Xiuxing Is Greater Than Life And Death

Xuan Yuan Po walked in with a plate of food on his head. Since the people in the Herb Garden were gone, no one sent in the meals anymore. The Tradition Academy had to cook meals themselves and unfortunately, the Yao youngster was responsible for cooking in the first few days.

The starlight shone through the windows of the library. It was as bright as the meals were tasteless.

During lunch, Jin Yu Lu had tried Xuan Yuan Po's dishes and told them that they didn't need to wait for him to start the meal.

Tang Thirty Six put down his chopsticks, looked at Xuan Yuan Po and asked sincerely, "Did you forget to add salt again?"

Chen Chang Sheng looked at him and laughed, "Just as you say often, you switch the topic too suddenly."

Tang Thirty Six didn't change his expression. He defended, "That's because your question was too ridiculous."

After finishing the tasteless dinner, the three people started walking around the lake of Tradition Academy. Faintly, they could see the candlelight from the newly built house. They could also smell the tasty roast chicken and liquor from the opening of the door.

Sensing the smell, Tang Thirty Six was jealous of Jin Yu Lu's dinner. He suggested to buy takeouts starting tomorrow because both he and Chen Chang Sheng had money. No matter how much Xuan Yuan Po could eat, their pockets wouldn't be bothered.

Xuan Yuan Po wanted to accept the suggestion but Chen Chang Sheng objected. He argued that the food from takeouts were full of oil and salt which wasn't good for their health. Although Xuan Yuan Po's food was tasteless, its ingredients were healthy.

Tang Thirty Six and Xuan Yuan Po were used to Chen Chang Sheng's strict and disciplined lifestyle. Besides shaking their heads, they didn't bother arguing with him. The three continued walking around the lake until the night darkened and stars illuminated the surface of the lake.

A tree's branches reached all the way to the lake. It was shaking from the wind and it seemed like the branches were trying to pick up the reflections of the stars.

Chen Chang Sheng saw this scene and started thinking about Luo Luo.

Although they have only been separated for two days, he was missing her already. Is she happy in the Academy of Palace Li?

Who's teaching her to xiuxing? Did she break the barrier in her Zuo Er Vein? Is she.....thinking about this lake and the tree growing beside it?

Tang Thirty Six and Xuan Yuan Po thought about Luo Luo when they smelled the food from the small house.

Without Luo Luo, there was no one at the Herb Garden, no tasty food, and no pretty girl. It was sad that they couldn't see the princess and that the troubles they were facing were so complicated. When are you coming back? Come back quickly, your master can't hold it anymore Chen Chang Sheng wondered to himself.

After they were finished walking, Tang Thirty Six was ready to walk around the streets. But he saw Chen Chang Sheng entering the library to xiuxing and Xuan Yuan Po testing his strength on the trees around the lake. He felt embarrassed.

He thought for a moment, walked next to Chen Chang Sheng and sat down. He closed his eyes and slowed his breathing. His two hands rested casually on his knees and his palms faced the night sky. Tang Thirty Six started to meditate and xiuxing as well.

After a while, he opened his eyes and felt the flow of qi in his veins. He used his mind as his eyes and he carefully observed the situation in his body. This was the inner sense of Meditation stage. As the inner sense continued, a thin layer of light shined from his pupils.

Since the process of inner sensing could be detected from his outer form, it meant that he have achieved the peak of Meditation stage. A xiuxingist who reached the peak of Meditation stage at

sixteen years old will be the focus of any faction or sect, whether it's the Heavenly Academy or the Mountain Li's Sword Sect. But now, he was just xiuxing by himself at the Tradition Academy.

Tang Thirty Six didn't regret his decision, but without a teacher guiding him, the process of xiuxing will slowed down and it will influence his confidence in breaking the barrier of xiuxing.

Just this moment, Chen Chang Sheng opened his eyes. Tang Thirty Six looked at him and thought, "Since you taught Princess Luo Luo, why would it bother me to ask for your mentorship?" As he was thinking, he asked several questions of xiuxing that bothered him for a while.

Chen Chang Sheng thought seriously for a long time and said, ".....I don't understand."

Tang Thirty Six was irritated, "You can solve such difficult problems like helping people of Yao race control their path of qi.....if it weren't for Luo Luo and Officer Jin, I bet the White Emperor would have already ordered people to capture you and have you sent back to the Red River. Now you are saying you don't understand my question?"

"Yao's body structure is special and in Princess Luo Luo's case, even more so. Due to her uniqueness, I was able to think of some solutions.....because I had already spent years researching the functions of one's veins. But your question is about the inner sense of Meditation. I have yet to reach that stage, how am I to help you?"

Chen Chang Sheng looked at him and said, “To be honest, I don’t think you have to worry too much. You have already entered the peak of Meditation at such a young age, and the barrier of Heartseek is only inches away from you. You just need to xiuxing at your own pace and one day, you will break the limit. It’s best for you to not disturb your flow.”

“It’s not about the Great Trial.”

Tang Thirty Six saw his eyes and knew he misunderstood. He stood up and walked to the window and glanced at the countless stars in the night sky. Tang Thirty Six was silent for a moment and said, “Xiuxing is like rowing a boat in an opposite stream. It will get harder and harder as you progress. Although I have already entered the peak of Meditation stage and my achievement may seem outstandingthat barrier is hard to cross.”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent.

When he was in the old temple of Xi Ning Village, he knew nothing about xiuxing. Now that he had already studied for half a year in Tradition Academy, he knew what Tang Thirty Six wanted to say. But since he was yet to enter Purification, his distance to that barrier was still vast. Therefore, he never really thought about it.

It will be harder and harder to progress in the path of xiuxing, and it will get even more dangerous. From the inner sense of Meditation to the Heartseek stage was the first mountain that

xiuxingists needed to climb. From that point onwards, xiuxingists climb an ever sloping mountain. However, most people fail at the first mountain because the xiuxingists at that time are inexperienced.

Countless years ago, the Scroll of the Way appeared in the world and people's wisdom expanded. Humans began to xiuxing, and in countless years, countless geniuses appeared. Some of them were able to reach Purification and Meditation stage when they were youngsters, but they failed in front of the Heartseek barrier. They paid with their lives.

Those geniuses were just like Tang Thirty Six, their names were on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud and they were recognized by the world. But if they didn't cross that barrier and died, within a short time, their names would be forgotten by the people in this continent and their spot would be filled by new youngsters.

Why are Qiu Shan Jun, Xu You Rong, Gou Han Shi and even earlier, Mo Yu, Tian Hai Sheng Xue treated as true geniuses and are treated specially by the elder generation? Because they were able to cross the barrier of Heartseek when they were very young.

These people were able to cross the most difficult stage. Although they could still fall during the path of xiuxing and their souls could vanish, the possibility of them becoming truly powerful xiuxingists was more probable than anyone else's.

Tang Thirty Six didn't want to die, neither did he want to be forgotten. In order to enter meditation stage and claim victory at next year's Great Trial, in order to rank up in the Honor Roll of

Green Cloud, he left his hometown to go to the capital and study at the Heavenly Academy.

Only truly prestigious factions and academies like the Heavenly Academy and Mountain Li's Sword Sect could provide their students with the best resources to increase their chance of breaking the barrier.

Now, he left Heavenly Academy and switched to the Tradition Academy, a school with only students and no teachers. Who could help him?

Although Officer Jin is powerful, his path of xiuxing is of the Yao's method. He can't help Tang Thirty Six.

Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a long time and said, "If you trust me, then perhaps, I can try to find ways to help you."

Tang Thirty Six forced a smile and laughed, "Are you trying to experiment on me?"

"Are you not willing to do so?" Chen Chang Sheng laughed and asked.

Tang Thirty Six said, "I'm very daring."

Chen Chang Sheng said, "I think you are just very confident in me."

Tang Thirty Six was wordless, “If I remember correctly, you have still yet to reach Purification.”

He didn’t need to remember anything, he just needed to see.

Chen Chang Sheng’s hands and hair were no different from any ordinary person, in fact, he couldn’t be anymore ordinary. If a dull knife slashed lightly on his wrist, a thin red line would definitely appear and he would bleed out a few moments later.

“I don’t understand either.”

For half a year, he meditated every night to absorb the starlight for the use of purification. Every step was precise and correct but nothing was gained. Even a person as determined as he was would eventually get tired of it. He stared at the stars outside of the window and shook his head,

“Maybe it’s just my talent.”

After hearing him describe all the details of absorbing the starlight to purify, Tang Thirty Six reached out his hand and grabbed Chen Chang Sheng’s wrist. He closed his eyes and carefully detected the situation in his body and noticed that there was no star energy in his body. He was confused as well.

He was always convinced that Chen Chang Sheng was a true genius and his belief grew stronger after learning of the marriage

vow between Chen Chang Sheng and Xu You Rong. But he could never understand how a genius would have a problem in the path of xiuxing. How could he not be able to reach Purification?

“Perhaps, there’s problem with your veins.”

A voice was heard near the door of the library. Jin Yu Lu walked in and looked at Chen Chang Sheng, “Even when we Yaos xiuxing, we need to bathe in starlight. But since our vein structure is different from that of humans, our methods are different. I don’t know if it’s the same situation with you.”

Chen Chang Sheng was silent for a bit. Then he spoke, “Yes, there are some problems with my vein structure.”

Tang Thirty Six was confused. He asked, “But earlier you said it’s talent.”

“Vein structure is determined when you are born. Naturally, it’s a type of talent.”

Chen Chang Sheng didn’t explain all the details because that would reveal his biggest secret. If Tang Thirty Six kept asking, he wouldn’t know how to answer. That shadow would give too much pressure and he knew clearly that he didn’t want any other person to endure such a burden.

Jin Yu Lu looked at him quietly and spoke suddenly, “The heaven is truly never fair.”

Yes, the way of Heaven is always fair but never fair. One phrase says it all, “It harms the abundant and supplies the limited.”

Chapter 100 - The Age Of Blossom Over The Mountain

People of the Yao race were known to be innately strong. They did not need to purify their bodies because their vessels were naturally simple and unobstructed; they could directly absorb starlight and transform it into qi. However, their method also had an disadvantage: they can't use most of the strong xiu xing methods humans have created. Even though occasionally there were a few geniuses who could use them, they did it through the same way Chen Chang Sheng taught Luo Luo. Because it was merely a simulation, when they reached higher stages, they encounter many difficulties.

Human vessels were as complex as the sea of stars. They could use their qi to simulate nature and demonstrate countless fantastic techniques. The shortcoming was that the human body was relatively weaker so they needed a long time to absorb starlight to purify and they risk their lives when trying to overcome stages.

Demons were regarded as perfect, from their body structure to their intelligence. It was as if they were born to xiu xing but maybe because they were too perfect, heaven felt sort of jealous. Their birth rates are very low and they also have some very troublesome problems.

There is no perfection in the world, and there is deficiency everywhere. This was very obvious regarding the particular case of Chen Chang Sheng.

He read all of the Scrolls of Way since youth. He could

automatically understand the books' meanings if he read them a hundred times which cultivated his spirit to a very high degree. If he could successfully purify, he would undoubtedly be the second Gou Han Shi. Unfortunately, as of right now, he couldn't even break through the first stage of xiuxing.

“Heaven sure is high and far away, so it is too intangible to evaluate. We should try our best to learn, so we can improve.”

Chen Chang Sheng said, “This is the quote my senior told me. I always keep this in mind.”

“Your senior must be a great man.”

Jin Yu Lu applauded. He then looked at Chen Chang Sheng and Tang Thirty Six and said, “In the future, you two will be great as well.”

Tang Thirty Six was a genius ranked highly on the Honor Roll of Green Cloud, but the reason why he could get praise from an epic figure like Jin Yu Lu was because of his personality. Jin Yu Lu appreciated his determination in dropping out of the Heavenly Academy and how he treated things. He would definitely be uncommon in the future with such an attitude.

Not only Tang Thirty Six, but Jin Yu Lu also anticipated Xuan Yuan Po to achieve great heights because of his excellent talent. If not for his talent, he wouldn't have had been accepted by the Startaker Academy. In addition, he met Chen Chang Sheng who was a great teacher that could help him improve swiftly.

But the one he valued the most was still Chen Chang Sheng because he was his princess' teacher. He clearly knew just how much the princess improved in the several months that she studied at the Tradition Academy. These improvements were all due to this seemingly common youngster.

Most importantly, these three kids seemed to not know what fear and frustration were at all. They had their perspectives of the world and they hold onto their ideals firmly. Their hearts were as transparent as stained glass. As the sun fell on them, they would reflect the light more colorfully and dazzlingly.

Jin Yu Lu thought with mixed feelings. Although the Tradition Academy looked broken and deserted now, these three great young students would revitalize the Tradition Academy soon unless a great external storm suddenly destroys it.

Hearing the elder's applause, Chen Chang Sheng felt a bit shy so he kept waving his hand. On the other hand, Tang Thirty Six felt like they deserved such praise. He grabbed Jin Yu Lu's hands that were full of callus and shook them constantly. He praised, "Your eyes are as bright as fire."

Jin Yu Lu took back his hand, placing them on his back. While walking out of the library, he laughed and left a sentence.

"Each age will bring forth new talented people to this land and each will rule its own domain for years to come."

Yes, the development of this continent was never a straight line. Elites never appeared consecutively based on year. Sometimes even in hundreds of years there wouldn't be any elite that would reach the Starfusion stage. However, other times it would take a little more than ten years before several saints appeared.

Just like the wild flowers on the hill. In the summer, fall, and winter, there are no flowers at all, but when spring comes, they all suddenly appear. However, the sprout of flowers was related to the weather, what was the birth of elites related to?

Such phenomenon was very strange. There's no pattern and no reason. There could be peace that lasts for several hundred years as if the continent was taking a rest and then suddenly, the peace would be disrupted as if the continent thought it was time for activities and elites would appear suddenly.

In the recent thousand of years, there were two huge increases in the number of elites on this continent. At first the Great Zhou replaced the former dynasty and established the Tradition. In the several hundred years before this, when the world was in tremendous chaos, the continent was divided into sections. Countless elites seized a region and fought continuously against each causing many elites to pass away. Several hundred years ago, when the demons invaded, the second Emperor united with the former White Emperor. They lead countless elites to fight against the terrifying demons. Because of the war, immeasurable amount of stars that shined in the sky fell.

Those were the two great ages when stars shined and fell.

The Divine Queen, the Pope, the current White Emperor, the host of the Li Mountain, the Virgin of the South, Jin Yu Lu, Fei Dian, and Xiao Song Gong... they were all elites left from the last great age. That age was already several hundred years ago.

The continent had also been peaceful for several hundred years now.

Since several decades ago, more accurately speaking, ever since the Divine Queen was about to ascend the throne, the frequency of appearances of elites on this continent accelerated. Of course, this didn't mean that suddenly, the continent had many elites on the high stage of Starfusion or even saints, it meant that many talented youngsters appeared.

Some talents are the youngsters on the Honor Roll such as Qiu Shan Jun, Mo Yu, Xu You Rong, Gou Han Shi, the wolf boy in the North, Luo Luo...and more.

When compared to the several hundred years of life a xiu xingist has, they were all considered youngsters. They may be only in the Seethrough stage now and mean nothing when compared to the elder elites, but everyone could see their potential and envision their future. Everyone knew that they could walk very far on the way.

In the recent years, the two Honor Rolls of Green Cloud and Midas, the Ivy Festival, other activities held by the sects, and the Great Trial are being valued more heavily. The sects and schools also pay much more attention to their young disciples or students because everyone notices this trend.

Jin Yu Lu believed, because of various reasons, that the three youngsters of the Tradition Academy would probably not walk an easy path like other youngsters would, but in the future they would definitely exhibit their own color and ignite their own glory.

Walking out of the library and standing on the staircase, the elder, who experienced fighting against the demons, stared at the various stars quietly in the sky. When he remembered an event, his emotions became heavier.

According to Zhou Du Fu's words, the frequency of appearances of elites on the continent was related closely to fate. In the several hundred years after the war with the demons, the continent was peaceful so the number of elites that appeared was little.

Now the young elites appeared drastically. Did that mean peace would end soon?

Because absorbing starlight to purify never worked, recently Chen Chang Sheng would make a habit of not meditating the whole night. This was not out of frustration, it was because he had a more efficient way of using his time. When he stopped meditating, Xuan Yuan Po also stopped his physical training.

Xuan Yuan Po's right arm was severely injured, so he temporarily still could not xiu xing, but he could still do some physical training. Even though Chen Chang Sheng felt sorry for the big trees next to the lake that suffered, he wouldn't slow down the curing process

for Xuan Yuan Po. Because Tian Hai Ya Er was too harsh and cruel, Xuan Yuan Po's right arm was completely broken. Because a Yao's body was different from a human's body, it was also difficult to cure. The difficulty was so high that even the guest doctors from the royal palace had no idea how to treat it. Although he recalled some methods from the old medical documents, these methods would still take too long to completely cure him.

Washing his hand using warm water and wiping the sweat on his forehead, Chen Chang Sheng told Xuan Yuan Po to take a break.

However, he couldn't fall asleep himself even though he was so tired. Seeing that the stars were bright tonight, he went to take a walk in the forest next to the lake.

He climbed up to the big pagoda tree and looked towards the streets outside of the school.

Standing on the tree to see the landscape had already become a part of his life and had also become a landscape in the Tradition Academy.

There were countless stars in the sky. There were tens of thousands of families of light in the capital as well, intersecting with each other as far as you can see. You couldn't actually figure out which side was the sky, and which side was the earth.

He stared at it for a long time because he wanted to ascertain which part of the tens of thousands of family lights belonged to the Li Palace. He wasn't sure if there was anyone there staring back at

the Tradition Academy now.

Although Luo Luo only left a few days ago, the number of times he climbed up the tree increased a lot.

Suddenly, he heard a low voice coming from far away. He turned around and saw only the darkness in the forest, but a dull light penetrating from a very far away place. It should belong to the Herb Garden and it looked like someone was there.

He felt a little surprised since Luo Luo and her clansmen had all moved into the Li Palace. There should be no one in the Herb Garden. After a few dark nights, why did light and sound suddenly appear there? He subconsciously looked towards the entrance.

Seeing the new little wooden house was still lit up, he thought Official Jin should be still in the house, so who was in the Herb Garden?

Was it Luo Luo?

He knew that such a possibility was too small – if Luo Luo really left the Li Palace, then she definitely would come to the Tradition Academy first. Because he hoped on it, he jumped down from the branch and walked towards the light.

Coming down to the ground from the big pagoda tree, he could no longer see that dull light. It was blocked by the high wall between the Tradition Academy and the Herb Garden. According

to his memory, he continued walking until he came to the wall behind the building. He pushed the door.

That was the door that Luo Luo opened up.

Since the appearance of this door, the Tradition Academy and the Herb Garden were basically connected together.

Chen Chang Sheng opened up the door. He looked at the runner vines and the stone hallway in front of him. He remained silent for a while, then walked by.

The Tradition Academy and the Herb Garden were only one wall apart — connected by a door. However, for some reasons, in the past he didn't want to get too involved in Luo Luo's life. Before, he didn't want to know Luo Luo's real identity to avoid creating embarrassment between them so this was actually his first time walking into the Herb Garden.

As the former royal garden, the later place that was managed by the Tian De Palace of the Tradition and used to cultivate rare herbs, the guards of the Herb Garden was obviously strict. However, they were all concentrated on the walls close to the Blossom Street and the East and South direction. There were actually no one near the Tradition Academy.

There's way more than hundred types of plants in this garden. With the starlight, Chen Chang Sheng easily saw countless rare herbs recorded on medical notes. He also saw precious fruits such as Red Fruit slowly swinging on the branch along with the wind.

He wasn't new to these herbs and fruits. In the past several months, because of Luo Luo, he had eaten lots of them.

The ground of the forest was stacked with fallen leaves. Because it was a little wet, footsteps were silent.

He followed the road in the forest that was formed by other's steps as he got closer and closer to the dull light.

Finally he came to the front of the light.

There was a simple stone table in the forest. Above the table, there was a normal oil lamp.

The one sitting next at the table was not Luo Luo, but a middle aged lady.

The oil lamp shined on her face. Although it was only a common face, it gave him a very mysterious and uncommon feeling.

Or, was it because the forest was too dense and the light was too dull?